



OTHERWORLDLY EVIL MONARCH

BOOK 05

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Otherworldly Evil Monarch

(异世邪君)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Jun Xie was the number one assassin in modern earth. His skills and knowledge in the field of assassination were unparalleled, his accomplishments unprecedented, his reputation terrified the entire underworld. However, during a mission to retrieve a mystical treasure, a mishap occurred...

He is now Jun Moxie, a sixteen year old super level debauchee, sole heir to the declining Jun family. A family of valiant heroes, left with an old grandpa, a crippled uncle and a debauchee as the sole heir! Accepting the world's criticism and cold stares with a smile, his new journey begins! His life will be carved by his own will! Rise to the top! Evil Monarch Jun Xie!

“This cup I toast to those I’ve killed in my past life. Forgive me, for there is no chance for you to have revenge. Gulp!

This cup I toast to those whose life I will take in my new life. Forgive me, for you are fated to die by my hands. Cheers!”

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Novel Saga @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Novel Saga @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 401: Help Me a 'Little' if You Aren't in a Rush?

"Fight you...?" Baili Luo Yun smiled bitterly. The usually calm and attractive Baili Luo Yun showed signs of turning blue.

Baili Luo Yun's guts had left him. [This Young Master Jun's fighting prowess is unbelievable. You killed two out of our five people a moment ago. And, one of those two was a Spirit Xuan expert. Moreover, you did it while being a Sky Xuan expert. Why the fu*k would I fight with you?]

[I think very highly of myself. But, my brain isn't filled with water. Nor have I been kicked by some animal that I wouldn't know the difference between heaven and earth. I would never fight you!]

[I'm fully aware that I'm no match for you. So, wouldn't any attempts to fight you indicate that I have a defect in my brain or something...?!]

The Baili Family would've perhaps been destroyed countless times if Baili Luo Yun could challenge and prevail against someone as strong as a Spirit Xuan expert. And, why would he have waited all these years and gone through such endless and terrible suffering if he could've done something like that?

Baili Luo Yun looked at the two corpses that lay on the ground. The two once-renowned elders of his family had complicated expressions in their lifeless eyes at this time. Those men had used their tyrannical strength to intimidate and bully him for the many years of his childhood. They had always looked at him with displeasure... no matter how hard he had tried, and no matter how much devotion he had showed towards the Baili Family. In fact, they would often expend their energies in finding a reason to torment him...

However, they were ice-cold as they lay on the ground at this time. And, they had turned into lifeless lumps of flesh. The two of them were somewhat closely related to him in terms of bloodline. But, Baili Luo Yun still harbored a lifetime-worth of hatred towards those two men.

"There's no need for us to compete. I will follow you my entire life in the light of what has just happened! My life is yours from now on!" Baili Luo Yun straightened his body, and looked at Jun Mo Xie. His eyes were full of fire.

Raging fire!

Baili Luo Yun looked at the two men who lay in front of him, and he felt that he had been freed from the shackles which he had always faced difficulty in breaking away from. He had always felt emptiness deep down in his heart. But, it was quickly being replaced with an immense desire to fight. And, it seemed that this desire to fight had been ignited from the very bottom of his heart.

[I'm sure that my life will be very interesting as long as I follow this young man.]

"What do you need me to do?" Baili Luo Yun asked.

"It's too early to ask these questions," Jun Mo Xie flashed a faint smile, and turned away before he said, "I told everyone to enjoy the scene as spectators. You have seen enough, right? The big play has ended in case you feel that there's more coming..."

"Ha ha ha..." there was a burst of laughter as seven men appeared. Dongfang Wen Dao stuck his thumb upwards, "Mo Xie, you've become very ferocious! You've actually managed to get rid of a Spirit Xuan expert! How did you do it? Your uncle is very curious! And, when did you enter the Sky Xuan realm? You have genuinely amazed me! I would've been dead if you had used this method against me that day! A Sky Xuan has defeated a Spirit Xuan today! You have created a legend!"

Everyone looked at Jun Mo Xie as he said those words.

"Ha ha... it's not so magical... this mystery has a reason to it..."

Jun Mo Xie's eyes turned as he said, "My master has a unique technique. It can even be called the most unique technique in the entire world. A person can overdraw his potential for an extremely short period of time with its help. Moreover, it has another advantage... its usage has no after-effects. So, the user will be restored after he has rested for three to five days. It's not like those other 'secret' techniques which drain one's strength quickly... or cause injury... or shorten one's life and what not... Those techniques are trash! Moreover, I had heard that Baili Xiong Feng had a running stomach right now. And, he didn't have any strength left as a result. Otherwise, I wouldn't have been able to defeat him despite my breakthrough.

Everyone gnashed their teeth in annoyance. [What bullsh*t explanation is this?! Baili Xiong Feng had a running stomach? Who has ever seen a Spirit Xuan having stomach problems? A Spirit Xuan won't have stomach problems even if eats a belly full of highly toxic food!]

However, the explanation he had given before was very shocking! That secret method can help one overdraft their ability for a short period of time... This was astonishing in itself. However, the fact that was even more astonishing was that the price of using this ability was only a rest of three to five days. [What kind of secret technique is this? It's not surprising that he has no regard for anyone in this world. This technique is too much!]

[However, it's a secret technique. So, how can he reveal it to us?]

The seven experts had their hands tied in this regard. After all, that secret technique involved someone else. And, they couldn't dare to provoke such a powerful and mysterious person.

"There's another matter I wish to discuss. I have a small request for the two seniors," Jun Mo Xie smiled merrily, and turned

towards Duanmu Chao Fan and Sikong An Ye as he cupped his hands. Then, he continued in a polite manner, "It can be assumed that the two seniors are about to leave this place and return to their families. But, would they be willing to help me a 'little' if they aren't in a rush? Moreover, the two seniors would have to expend very little effort to help me with this thing..."

"What's the matter? I, Sikong An Ye will not decline as long as it's within my capabilities!" Sikong An Ye seemed vigilant as he asked that question. He had only met that youngster a few times. But, he knew that this youngster was a small fox. [I will be caught in his momentum if I'm not careful. So, I have to be careful! I told him that I won't decline as long as it's within my capabilities. But, I'm very sorry if don't have any power over that matter.]

"No... no... no need to ask. You... you... you don't have to hesitate to request," Duanmu Chao Fan was a very genuine person. So, he didn't think much into it. He stroked his beard, and took on the airs of a senior expert who'd take the charge.

He had only said that he needed a 'little' favor from them. But, how could they have guessed that he would ask them to commit murder and arson for him? However, they had made their promise. So, they would have to keep their word. Moreover, the situation surrounding the Jun Family wasn't the same as before.

Jun Mo Xie obviously smiled as he heard them. He then said, "It's nothing big. And, I will send fifty guards with you when you leave. That will help avoid any unnecessary trouble and harassment that this young one's request may cause..."

"There's no need for that. We both aren't that great as experts, but we don't need any escorts. So, the Third Young Master needn't inconvenience himself. But, we appreciate your kindness," Sikong An Ye shook his head and declined.

Everyone else also thought that this youngster's words had sounded somewhat unreasonable. [What is he saying? Two great

experts of Spirit Xuan realm would be travelling together. Why would they still need an escort? Who would try to rob them even if they were to be careless? Wouldn't that be a moronic situation?]

Everyone was thinking along these lines when they heard Jun Mo Xie speak-up, "I request the two seniors to hear me in entirety. The guards I'm sending to escort you will return after you pass from the Baili Family. They will help you pass conveniently, and won't hamper your speed in any way. He he... I hope that the two seniors won't take offense at this small matter... and won't form a negative opinion of my request..."

Everyone became silent. [Damn! This guy's shamelessness knows no bounds! The thickness of his skin has reached levels which are unheard of!]

Six of the seven men shifted their gazes and locked their eyes on Jun Wu Yi. Their thoughts seemed rather evident... [Is this brat genuinely of your blood? And, the only one of his generation at that? How can your upright, plainspoken, and straightforward family not see this...?]

[And, why would we need to charter a 'route' through the Baili Family? Do you or do you not know that the two of us will have to travel thousands of kilometers extra over this matter. Moreover, he has tried to act like a beneficiary, and has even tried to add emotions to this matter. However, the real purpose of these escorts will be... This is extremely shameless!] Sikong An Ye and Duanmu Chao Fan cursed in the secrecy of their hearts, and this reflected in the bitterness of their expressions.

[The two of us personally witnessed you kill the two elders of the Baili Family with your hands. And, we now have to go and meet the people of that family. The two of us have some status and influence in the society. But, this matter isn't pleasant to hear...]

"I can't do this..." Duanmu Chao Fan resembled a rattle-drum as he shook his head. This leader of the Duanmu Family didn't stutter

when faced with such a huge problem, and managed to decline very quickly. Moreover, his enunciation was perfect. In fact, it sounded like that of a teacher or a lawyer.

"The two seniors needn't be so polite. The two of you had stepped forward in Jun Family's hour of need, and disregarded the dangers for our sake. I genuinely admire the divine nobility the two of you have embodied. This Mo Xie only wanted to show his respects. And, I won't let this trivial matter delay the two of you in any way..."

It seemed as if Jun Mo Xie hadn't heard his refusal. He smiled as he continued, "I'm sure that the two seniors would never care about a little delay. We must note that the two seniors are unrivaled fighters. Moreover, they are also righteous. They are heroes, and real men! They would undoubtedly draw their weapons and run to the aid of anyone they see being bullied and humiliated. Third Uncle, Senior Solitary Falcon... tell me... isn't this true?"

Jun Wu Yi nodded seriously and replied, "It's true. These two seniors treat your Third Uncle with the utmost dignity. They are good men. I myself am a witness to it."

The Solitary Falcon's expression was also solemn as he spoke-up, "Their reputations are genuine. We have gotten along well in these few days. They aren't immoral men!"

Sikong An Ye and Duamnu Chao Fan were left open-eyed and open-mouthed. In fact, the two had become speechless. [These men are unreasonable! That uncle-nephew duo and Solitary Falcon are singing the same tune! How can we be considered immoral men if we refuse to accept their task or not do our best to complete it? In fact, we won't even be considered men if we were to decline...?]

[This is too lowly! Jun Wu Yi used to be straightforward and upright. His sense of justice had transcended the clouds! But, even he has become crafty because of this cunning nephew of his'?]

The two of them felt so gloomy that they wanted to hit a wall. How could they not agree after all this had been said? They simply couldn't say 'no' in this situation. [Damn it! You kill a man, you dig his grave in the corner, and then you want us to clean up after you? And, you don't just wish for us to clean up... you want us to clean it spotless? And, you don't just want us to clean your mess spotless... but you also want us to go the extra mile after it? What the fu*k is this?!]

They were being pushed, but they couldn't push back. Duanmu Chao Fan and Sikong An Ye stared blankly for a while before they suddenly jumped-up and said, "Damn it! We should start on our journey and get to work! We have to take quick advantage of time. Otherwise, who knows what will happen if they receive the news of these deaths from the rumors? We must quickly be on our way! We admit defeat after having faced you uncle and nephew, haven't we?"

The two men quickly turned around and fled. In fact, they left in such a hurry that it seemed as if they were two fishes trying to escape from a net. [We shouldn't stay in the company of this uncle-nephew duo any longer. God knows what they will ask us to do further. They might just sell us off for a good price...]

Chapter 402: Good and Evil Will Eventually Be Distinguished! The Heaven's Justice Can't Be Escaped!

Jun Mo Xie laughed out loud. Then, there was a whistling sound. Fifty members of the Heaven Destroyer Team had already been ready to escort the two experts away from Southern Heaven City.

It was when they had gone about fifty kilometers away that Sikong An Ye and his companion became gloomy. And, this had happened because they had realized something. They hadn't brought anything with them for this trip... They had forgotten their luggage bags. In fact, they had even forgotten the basic necessities. The money and everything else was inside those bags. Moreover, they couldn't function on an empty stomach. After all, even Spirit Xuan experts needed to eat... And, how could they eat good food without paying money for it?

The two of them turned around as they realized this. However, they saw that the fifty men were silently following them in strict order. And, each one of them was carrying things that seemed somewhat familiar. [But, we are seeing these men for the first time. So, why do the things they're carrying look familiar?]

[That can't be... right?]

[Those are our things!]

[Damn! This brat Jun Mo Xie managed to predict our reactions to accuracy! He had already asked these guys to pack stuff from our luggage so that they could carry it. Moreover, the way they're carrying our things is quite good...]

The looked at the fifty men carefully. The strongest of them was only at the Gold Xuan realm. But, all of them were uniform in that regard. And, this was because all of them were at the Gold Xuan realm... they only differed in terms of internal levels of the realm.

Moreover, each one of these men looked grim and tough. They had a fierce look in their eyes. In fact, it seemed as if a cruel aura was spreading from their very souls...

[Are these a group of men? Are they merely Jun Mo Xie's bodyguard? Damn! These people are more like ferocious wolves on a cold winter night. They're covered in murderous aura!] The Spirit Xuan Sikong An Ye was both terrified and moved at that sight. [It wouldn't have been surprising if only one or two of them were like this. Many powerful families train a few cold-blooded warriors of the highest quality like these men. But, this Jun Mo Xie has managed to train fifty of such men? This is shocking!]

However, this wasn't that strange in reality. These originally hapless guards had been waiting for their deaths to come. However, the extremely powerful Third Young Master Jun Mo Xie had made them go through a cold and cruel transformation. So, how could an ordinary guard compare to them? It wouldn't have been an exaggeration to say that those men were like killing-machines at this moment...

This team was headed by a man with cold and sharp facial features. He had a towering stature, and a dark skin-tone. He was the captain of this team, and he was named Li Tie. His name meant 'Tower of Iron', and he did full justice to his name... Particularly with that towering stature and dark skin-tone...

They looked-on as Li Tie took a step forward. He then spoke-up in a respectful manner, "Our Young Master had told us to give you both a small thing before our departure. We sincerely thank the two seniors for coming to the aid of our Jun Family when it was in dire need. So, we give you this little thing," he scrambled his hands over his body after he spoke this, and fished out two small jade bottles. He then handed them over to the two Spirit Xuan experts.

"What's this?" Duanmu Chao Fan and Sikong An Ye looked the bottles over in a curious manner.

"These are our Young Master's secret ten years' pills. Each bottle has three pills. These pills can increase the Xuan cultivation of any Xuan expert by ten years," Li Tie's eyes had a fervent shine to them.

And, the only reason behind that was the faith his Young Master had placed in him.

[This is a unique thing. Who wouldn't consider it as an exceptionally valuable treasure? People would keep it close for the fear of losing it. But, the Young Master had given it to me for passing it on to other people. Moreover, he didn't just give me one pill... he gave me two bottles which had a total of six pills in them...] This was a matter of glory for Li Tie. Moreover, it showed how much faith his master had placed in him.

"Oh? Is this true?" Duanmu Chao Fan and Sikog An Ye were startled by this. [Our cultivation will grow by ten years after we've consumed one pill? Is this genuinely some kind of a legendary magical elixir?]

"These aren't fake. I had heard the Young Master say that his Master-himself had refined these miraculous pills. I may even dare to say that these are most unique treasures in the entire world. The Young Master had also said that the two seniors are of the highest noble character, and had rushed to help our Jun Family. We will never be able to return the favor. So, he gave three pills each for both the seniors... in the hope that they won't decline them," Li Tie said solemnly.

"Decline them? It's only that these gifts are too great! How can we decline them?!" Duanmu Chao Fan and Sikong An Ye heard that Jun Mo Xie's Master had personally refined these pills. And, their eyes suddenly became so fervent that it seemed as if these jade bottles were the legs of their first love...

[These are divine pills!]

The two men embraced the "precious items" tightly. They then

patted the items, and looked around somewhat sneakily... in case there was another person around who was at the Spirit Xuan realm.

They hadn't expected the wily and treacherous Jun Mo Xie to be so wonderful. The two men became extremely relaxed in a split second. And, their previously gloomy appearance vanished into thin air. Sikong An Ye waved his huge hands as he brandished the treasure and said, "Let's go! You and I will go to the Baili Family, and meet their people! Ah! Come, this way!"

These men had obviously been given their orders very clearly. However, their orders had nothing to do with...

"This lowly man gives his many thanks on behalf of the Young Master," Li Tie spoke-up in a manner that was neither rude nor servile.

Duanmu Chao Fan and Sikong An Ye had become quite 'affable' as they continued-on with their journey. The two men began afresh in excitement, but they again became depressed as the journey progressed.

The reason was rather simple... The fifty men who were escorting them behaved in a way which made them seem like fifty pieces of wood if they weren't eating and sleeping. They made no sounds. They obviously didn't talk either. In fact, Sikong An Ye had to resort to talking with Duanmu Chao Fan to make himself feel better since this was the only way he could hear another voice... or any other form of sound...

Communicating with Duanmu Chao Fan and his stutter was hard. But, it was at least worth a fart. However, those fifty escorts were as good as fifty mute people.

"You're Jun Mo Xie's personal guards?" Sikong An Ye had asked in a spirited manner.

"...yes," Li Tie seemed to cherish every word like gold. The others

didn't even say "yes." Their expressions were blank. In fact, it seemed as if they hadn't even heard what had been said.

"It seems that the guards trained by the Third Master Jun are very skilled. How did he train you? How did you train to become so good? Tell me, and I will listen. I genuinely wish to learn," Sikong An Ye was genuinely interested. He wanted to use those training methods so that the Sikong Family would...

"..." Li Tie merely stared.

"What training do you do every morning?"

"..." only a stare in reply.

"Is the training very tough?"

"..." Silence.

"Does Jun Mo Xie have more men like you under his command?"

"..." Wooden silence.

"The Third Young Master's Master is very fierce..."

"..." Li Tie's eyes had started to seem impatient by now. [This Spirit Xuan expert is nagging like a woman! He still hasn't stopped...]

"The Jun Family..."

"..."

"..." Sikong An Ye finally became silent. [Who wants such men under their command? I will choke and die if I had such men! You won't speak a word! I'm not asking your secrets! I'm a Spirit Xuan expert who is showing you some respect. I'm showing respect by asking these questions to a lower leveled Xuan expert! But, you're being rude to your senior! You're genuinely annoying me...]

However, the people who genuinely felt 'annoyed' were the ones following after him...

They eventually met with a group of robbers some time later.

Sikong An Ye had been feeling very gloomy, and these robbers were just-in-time for him to vent his anger. He revealed his imposing strength to some extent, but didn't make them kneel for forgiveness that instant. [Let me show you Gold Xuan brats what the tyrannical strength of a Spirit Xuan looks like!]

Who would've thought that the guards would instantaneously raise their power with the intention to kill? The ten robbers were turned into ground meat in a split second. In fact, the entire fight was over in the blink of an eye. After that, the ground was cleaned, and their bodies were buried. In fact, even half-a-lump of their bodies couldn't be seen by tea time...

Sikong An Ye was left stupefied by this. However, he wasn't amazed at the fighting strength of those guards. After all, each of these guards was a Gold Xuan expert. In fact, they could even create some trouble for a Spirit Xuan expert like him. However, he was stunned because he had seen one of them face a bandit. That guard had walked to the side with a steamed dumpling stuffed in his mouth. And, he had then started to fight. In fact, his mouth was still stuffed with that dumpling while he had fought his opponents. He had eventually hacked three of them to their deaths. The blood had splashed all over his body. Even the stuffed dumpling in his mouth had been dyed red with blood. In fact, some blood had even started to drip onto the ground from the dumpling. That guard had then walked back, and shoved his sword into the scabbard at his waist. He had then opened his mouth, "munch, munch, munch," and had resumed eating that stuffed dumpling. He had swallowed his fill, and given a cry of relish from the very bottom of his heart...

"Bluegh..."

Sikong An Ye couldn't resist the urge to vomit even though he was at the Spirit Xuan realm.

[These guys are too disgusting... I will never eat with them on the same table...]

... ..

"Are you feeling reassured now?" Jun Mo Xie asked Baili Luo Yun after the two Spirit Xuan experts had left.

"Many thanks, Young Master Jun!" Baili Luo Yun's eyes were full of gratitude. Those men had hailed from his father's family, and this fact had been giving him some trouble.

However, Baili Luo Yun didn't have any misgivings anymore.

Would the Baili Family not show respect if the heads of the Duanmu and the Sikong Families were to arrive there? After all, those two families were-in-no-way weaker than the Baili Family!

"'Thank you'... never speak these words to me again. You must understand that I wouldn't have expended so much energy if this matter were a waste. After all, they call me the Young Master... the no-good Young Master of the Jun Family and what not!" Jun Mo Xie smiled. He then took out a folded sheet of paper from the sleeve of his white robe, and handed it over.

"This is what you need to accomplish over the next two months. And, this must be done in two months only. You can come and find me in the Tian Xiang City afterwards," Jun Mo Xie smiled as he continued, "We will look after your family even if you aren't able to finish this task in two months. However, there's no need for you to return if you're unable to complete the mission." Jun Mo Xie's eyes shot a sharp and oppressing glint.

Baili Luo Yun's body shook as he took the white paper and unfolded it. Then, he looked up at Jun Mo Xie in shock before he looked down again and read it carefully.

"The names given here are fifty in number. Officials, rich merchants, Xuan experts etc... each person has some reproachable crime to their name. I want you to kill these fifty people within two months and succeed in making your own name. Listen carefully — make your own name. Do you understand?"

Jun Mo Xie continued slowly, "Good and evil will eventually be distinguished. Heaven's justice can't be escaped. A hand from the Heaven has descended to kill the vile."

Baili Luo Yun shuddered. Then, a thick murderous aura emerged from his eyes. He had finally understood what Jun Mo Xie had wanted from him.

"You must remember another thing. You mustn't leave any evidence behind after you've killed them. No injuries... no nothing! Nothing except for those words! And, no man must know that it was you. But, you have to create the greatest uproar."

The Young Master Jun continued slowly, "You can come and look for me in Tian Xiang after your mission with these fifty people is done. And, I will make you an indispensable part of my life when that time comes!"

Baili Luo Yun nodded solemnly. He then folded that piece of paper very slowly. In fact, he did it carefully and delicately. The young man's face was still as calm as before. And, he was still looking down. But, a fire had already lit-up in his eyes...

Chapter 403: I Will Never Shirk Away!

Baili Luo Yun's mind had formed a target in a flash. He even had a plan by now. But, he didn't talk about it. He was simply going to execute it.

The plan would seem incomplete if he were to talk about it. So, talking about it would be no better than empty words. So, there was nothing to talk about. In fact, it would be meaningless even if he did talk about it.

He had to kill fifty people within two months. So, time was of the essence. Baili Luo Yun carefully placed the white paper inside the chest pocket of his robe. He then looked up at Jun Mo Xie. The young man seemed somewhat relaxed as he smiled and spoke-up, "I'll get to it then."

"The sooner the better." Jun Mo Xie smiled as he patted the other's shoulder and said, "You must go."

Baili Luo Yun nodded, turned around, and took a step. It was obvious that he didn't wish to waste any time.

"Wait. Take this!" Jun Mo Xie raised his hand, and dropped a small jade bottle into Baili Luo Yun's. "There are two kinds of pills in this bottle. The yellow ones can dissolve a hundred types of poisons. And, the red ones can increase your cultivation by ten years."

Baili Luo Yun clutched the jade bottle tightly. He didn't turn around as he pressed upon the hilt of the sword that hung at his waist. However, his body stopped, and his face had started to belie the emotion and surprise of his heart. But, he showed no signs of hesitation as he suddenly took large strides forward and disappeared from everyone's vision in a flash.

Jun Wu Yi, Solitary Falcon, and the three Dongfang Brothers hadn't said a word to interrupt while Jun Mo Xie had been talking

to Baili Luo Yun.

The five experts knew that today's conversation was Jun Mo Xie's means to increase his personal influence... just his own personal influence. However, Jun Mo Xie would never ignore them. In fact, even the very thought of ignoring them would never cross his mind. And, the five hidden experts felt very satisfied in this knowledge.

They knew that their interruption would've affected Jun Mo Xie's authority. The five of them were cunning individuals in their own merit... So, how wouldn't they have known this?

They saw that Jun Mo Xie was finished with his matters. Jun Wu Yi glanced at the three Dongfang Brothers and said, "Come here, Mo Xie. We have something to tell you."

The Solitary Falcon smiled and spoke-up, "You guys talk. This old man will take a stroll," he said this, spun around, and disappeared without a trace. He had more-or-less guessed what those people were going to talk about. But, the Solitary Falcon had no interest in it. He only wanted to advance through his cultivation's barrier and forge ahead with his new moves. [What do I care about relationships between men and women? What do I care about 'making love'? That's their business.] The Great Master Solitary Falcon was in no mood to participate. So, he slipped away. In fact, he was so lithe that it seemed as if his soles had been oiled.

Jun Wu Yi and Dongfang Wen Qing looked somewhat embarrassed. After all, they wanted to discuss a tabooed subject with someone from the younger generation. In fact, all four uncles seemed embarrassed.

Dugu Xiao Yi and Guan Qing Han were standing at a distance. They looked at each other when they saw the five people move towards the big tent. Then, they also started to move towards it in silence. After all, they also wanted to know why there had been such a big transformation in Jun Mo Xie?

The difference in this ‘before-and-after image’ was too great! Moreover, it was too strange...

Both of them had watched the recent battle from their position of hiding. And, both of them had distinct thoughts at the sight. Dugu Xiao Yi thought; [He’s very fierce! He had endured so much for such a long time. But, he has finally jumped out. I have the best eyesight. I had seen brother Mo Xie first! But, who won’t wish to snatch him away...?]

However, Guan Qing Han’s thoughts were far more complicated than those of Dugu Xiao Yi’s. In fact, she was in a daze as she looked at Jun Mo Xie’s back. She thought; [He used to let me...]

[The social position of a woman has always been lower than that of men. Which man would’ve wanted to be bullied by a woman? To think that I have troubled Jun Mo Xie for so many years...? I’ve beaten and scolded him so very often. Moreover, I’ve never had a good impression of him. But, this man of great skill has always been patient. He had behaved in a manner that was held contemptible by everyone else in his attempts to get close to me...]

She recalled that Jun Mo Xie had always trained seriously. But, he had only laughed and behaved like a hoodlum whenever she’d bully him. Guan Qing Han couldn’t help as her heart was suddenly filled with a warm feeling...

[He’s a proud man. But, he was willing to suffer so much for the woman he loves. Aren’t such men rare to come by?]

[It’s easy to discover a valuable treasure. But, it’s rare to find such a lover.]

[However, this man has shown his true abilities at this time. Moreover, he’s about to reveal his exceptional bearings to the world. And, a coincidence I was helpless in made me become his woman. Moreover, he was the first one to acknowledge me as his woman...]

[Could this be fate?]

[But, how could this be so simple? How will we face this later?]

Guan Qing Han's mind was left perplexed as she began to ponder over her troubles. And, this was when Dugu Xiao Yi pulled her along, and they made their way to the entrance of the Supreme Commander's tent.

Jun Wu Yi and the others seemed very worried as they took their seats. The four adults looked at each other, but none could speak a word. They didn't know how they were supposed to say it... or what they were supposed to say in the first place... Moreover, the individuals inside the tent were aware that the two girls were eavesdropping on them from the outside. But, they didn't deem it necessary to hide this matter from them. After all, those two had also been involved in it all-along.

Jun Mo Xie was baffled as he looked at his Third Uncle, "What happened? Why is everyone looking like this? Did something bad happen at home?"

"Whatever bad has happened at home... is because of you, you brat!" the four men shouted and cursed in unison. It could be assumed that their coordination wouldn't have been this great on an ordinary day. In fact, even they couldn't help but look at each other after they finished...

"Mo Xie, this is regarding you and Qing Han. Your Three Uncles and I were talking about it a moment ago," Jun Wu Yi had a very complicated expression on his face as he helplessly continued, "I have adopted Qing Han as my daughter. And, I have annulled the old engagement of hers'. But, the world doesn't know about it yet. In fact, even your grandfather doesn't know about this matter..."

"Huh? What is this? What do you wish to say, Third Uncle?" Jun Mo Xie wasn't stupid. But, he hadn't thought about this. Guan Qing Han was his woman as far as he was concerned. He knew that there might be some slanderous gossip once the matter came out.

But, he hadn't expected it to be very serious.

[The woman's identity doesn't matter. Her husband, that is, my brother is dead...! You can't expect a beautiful woman to live as a widow for her entire life! It's not like we have to go through a public courtship... we don't even have to go through a ceremony if we don't want to... So, what kind of reasoning is this?]

[Who wouldn't wish to pursue lifelong happiness? The Jun Family intends to return Guan Qing Han her freedom. In fact, the Jun Family has already done that. And, Guan Qing Han would obviously wish to marry someone else after some time. It has to happen sooner or later. She will have to marry someone else! So, why can't I marry her?]

This is how Jun Mo Xie had been thinking on that matter. And, he had always thought that it wasn't a big deal. These thoughts had obviously birthed from the thought-process of his previous world. However, he had unknowingly been ignoring the strict customs that regarded to the male-female relationships of the world he was current a resident of. Moreover, the concepts of etiquette and morality were taken very seriously in this world. And, they were entirely different from the world he had left behind!

"I don't know what you're thinking, brat. But, even an idiot can predict what will happen once your grandfather comes to know of this... his anger will strike like a thunderstorm!"

Jun Wu Yi looked at his nephew and continued, "The Guan Family's Lord will also be ashamed. Therefore, I have spoken to your Three Uncles. And, we have decided that you will follow your uncles to the Dongfang Family once the army strikes camp. You will see your mother, and meet your grandmother... After all, it's been ten years since you've met them. You will continue to get love from your own blood over there. Meanwhile, I will try to resolve this matter as quickly as I can. You will return only once your grandfather's rage has been pacified. Otherwise, I don't know

what your grandfather will do in anger..."

Jun Mo Xie frowned. He hadn't 'gotten the hang' of what he had heard, "Third Uncle, what do you mean that I should go away till everything calms down?"

"You aren't an idiot you brat! You know well what I meant!" Jun Wu Yi sighed and replied, "This matter will result in a lot of things. So, we will have to negate many negative effects from this matter..."

"What negative effects? What will grandfather do in anger? Third Uncle, what are you saying?" Jun Mo Xie burst out, "What effects will be there? Is this matter genuinely that big a disgrace to our family?"

Guan Qing Han was standing outside the tent. Her delicate hands covered her mouth as two tears fell from her eyes.

The three Dongfang Brothers and Jun Wu Yi believed that this brat was usually very quick on the uptake. So, they couldn't understand why he was acting so confused at this time... The four men knew that neither Jun Mo Xie nor Guan Qing Han could be blamed for what had happened. But, the result was still the same. And, it was a huge mistake...

This was a complete mistake since the world-at-large hadn't recognized Guan Qing Han's new identity.

"Third Uncle is doing this for your good!" Jun Wu Yi's eyebrows shot up, "I don't want you to run and hide either... But, you have to know that not everything in this world happens like you want it to. We have to work very hard for everything. And, I'm sure that it won't be long before everything calms down! Moreover, don't you wish to meet your mother and grandmother?"

"No! That's totally different! I want to visit mother and grandmother! But, I can't do it right now!" Jun Mo Xie firmly refused, "I will never escape and hide behind the Dongfang Family,

and wait for things to run their course! Jun Mo Xie doesn't not do this!"

The four men hadn't expected such an impassioned reaction from him. In fact, they were stunned by it. [This is obviously the best way to resolve this embarrassing matter. So, what's the issue with this brat?]

Jun Mo Xie suddenly stood up, "I don't know a damned thing about this world's customs! And, it doesn't matter how people will regard what happened. I won't discuss this any further! I won't yield or make any compromise! I will never shirk away!

"Don't tell me that this woman will abide by the customs and remain a widow her entire life? Don't forget that this woman didn't even see her husband much... nor did she have a marriage ceremony... let alone derive the pleasures that come from it! What is the meaning of such a marriage? Can't a woman even pursue happiness for herself?!

"The Jun Family has already decided to return her happiness to her. We've allowed her to marry again. So, why can't she marry me? Am I not a man? Can't I bring her happiness? Moreover, she is already my woman!

"Why should we care about other people's views... or what they will think? What do they have to do with us? Those rotten nobles are no better than farts! I will conquer the land and burn each one of them if they ever offend me! I will destroy their very roots! All of them will be finished!" Jun Mo Xie was somewhat mad. And, a crazy killing intention had risen from his eyes!

Chapter 404: I Will Protect My Woman Myself!

"Don't get so emotional, Mo Xie. I never said that I won't allow the two of you to be together. I'm only saying that we must postpone this matter for some time. Yes, your relationship with Qing Han is that of husband and wife now. This is a fact that doesn't need reminding. Each one of us wants to facilitate this. And, none of us wishes to hinder it. And, you have to understand that!"

Jun Wu Yi pounded his hands on the desk, "But, this thing will take time! You need to give us some time for mediation! Wait till Qing Han's new identity is known to the world. After that, I will personally take charge of your wedding! Let her live with honor and dignity as your wife! Can't you even wait for such a short period of time? Do you want everyone to be reviled? Do you want that our family perishes and everyone sneers at us? Will you be pleased then?"

"How would that happen?" Jun Mo Xie didn't yield an inch. He looked up and replied, "Third Uncle, who will bear the pressure of these mistakes if I avoid these problems and hide like a turtle in its shell? Who will bear it?"

Jun Mo Xie had a quick idea. He turned around, and a streak of blue light emerged from his fingertips. It streaked across to the tent's entrance, and cut its flap like a blade. The flap floated down, and revealed Guan Qing Han's tear-stained face. Dugu Xiao Yi stood beside her with a panic-stricken and helpless expression.

Silence reigned inside the tent. No one spoke-up. [Who will bear it? Is it even necessary to say it?]

"I will leave, and I will relax. And, I will escape all punishment. After all, the infamy will have nothing to do with me if I'm not around. But, that doesn't mean that it won't find anyone's

doorstep! Someone will still need to bear those onslaughts. And, that someone will be her — Guan Qing Han!" Jun Mo Xie strode over, grabbed Guan Qing Han's arm, and pulled her inside.

"This woman will have to bear the dishonor if I escape! This woman... who has already suffered so much for the Jun Family!" Jun Mo Xie had turned somewhat red. He did his best to control his anger. But, he was unable to stop it, "Will my woman have to bear everything for me?!"

Jun Mo Xie looked at his uncle in a serious manner. His eyes flashed with light, "You're an experienced man, Third Uncle. How could you not know the power of slanderous gossip? There's no end to the envy of so many people! How could a delicate young woman bear those accusations? Wouldn't that pressure hound her to death?"

Guan Qing Han's delicate body seemed like a dead leaf that was floating-about in the autumn wind. She was even shuddering in a light manner. Her otherwise cold face seemed helpless at this time. She was strong, and she could bear much more than an average woman could. But, she still wouldn't be able to stand up to the entire world once they'd start deriding her virtue.

"She's my adopted daughter, and my nephew's wife! I will protect her! I will hide her inside our home, and I won't allow her to hear a single strand of those slanderous gossips! She can wait to show her face. And, everything will have become calm by the time she does that," Jun Wu Yi was moved somewhat, "Do you think that I wouldn't even have known this much?"

"Will this situation ever calm down?" Jun Mo Xie snorted and said, "How many of those people could you call 'resolute' individuals? There are many who are bored out of their minds! There are many who can sleep with prostitutes, yet they act high-and-noble on the outside when they criticize others! Am I seeing less here? This crisis will perhaps never be resolved unless I assert myself! They won't stop unless Guan Qing Han kills herself! They

will only stop once her blood has wiped this matter clean. Therefore...

"I will protect my woman myself!" Jun Mo Xie's voice was extremely sharp. He seemed to be brimming with a murderous aura as he straightened his back, and gazed loftily at the four men, "This is my responsibility! I won't avoid it! I'll never do that!"

"I don't care about her previous identity. I only know that she is my woman now! And, she became my woman to save me!"

Jun Mo Xie's shining eyes were full of killing intention. And, they shone even brighter as he continued, "I don't care what happened before! And, neither do I care about what my feelings were at that time. I only know that Guan Qing Han is my woman! She is Jun Mo Xie's woman! And, no one can ever even dream of harming her!"

Jun Mo Xie's voice was sonorous. And, it resounded in a powerful manner, "Would I be able to call myself a real man if I hide from the truth and make my woman deal with the mountain-like burden of an ocean of criticism in my stead...?"

Jun Mo Xie sneered and continued, "Would I be regarded as a real man if I run and escape from my responsibility? Would I still be 'me'? Don't forget the Jun Family's teaching; 'Having b*lls doesn't make you a real man. It is the indomitable spirit that does!'

"So what if everyone comes to curse and criticize us...?"

Jun Mo Xie smirked with arrogance, "I will support my woman in this world! I will continue on my path... even if I have to kill everyone else in the world! I won't retreat even after ten-thousand deaths have stained my path!"

Guan Qing Han suddenly-and-involuntarily broke down, and started to cry bitter tears. And, her weeping was loud...

She had been worried about this matter since the previous evening. In fact, Guan Qing Han didn't know how she would face

everything if Jun Mo Xie were to go into hiding... she perhaps would've killed herself...

However, each word of Jun Mo Xie's was strong and resolute. In fact, each of his words was a decisive blow which could kill any enemy...

[This man isn't speaking with honeyed words. And, he isn't pledging his undying love either. But, he's ready to set himself against the world for my sake. Moreover, he's even ready to fight against the morals and ideologies of the society at-large!]

[He will fight the entire world for my sake!]

[Which man would ever have taken such a step for his woman?]

The misgivings of Guan Qing Han's heart had vanished in an instant.

Dugu Xiao Yi looked at Jun Mo Xie's upright body. His words seemed like a declaration of war. His eyes seemed to have been brimming with affection. And then, she saw Guan Qing Han's expression. The little girl obviously couldn't help became envious. [If only he does something like this for me one day...]

"Ha ha... good!" Jun Wu Yi's serious voice had suddenly changed. His face had started to brim with admiration. He clapped and said, "Good! You are worthy of being called Jun Wu Yi's nephew! This is the indomitable spirit of a man who deserves praise! This is a real man!"

The three Dongfang Brothers also looked at Jun Mo Xie with a sense immeasurable satisfaction in their eyes. Dongfang Wen Dao laughed and spoke-up, "Good spirit! You're truly worthy of being called the Son of the White Commander Jun Wu Hui! Very rarely can we find a man with such determination! You're worthy of being my nephew! You're heroism overshadows the heavens! Your uncle will always take your side in this matter... even if the whole world stands against you!"

Jun Mo Xie was stumped. He stammered as he asked, "Were you guys testing me from the start?"

"It wasn't a test," Jun Wu Yi was very pleased as he looked at his nephew, "We are very helpless in this matter. And, it would've ended at that if you had agreed to hide. After all, the customs and values of this world are very strict. No one would dare to take them lightly! So, hiding from this matter is also understandable. However, it has always been a Young Master's job to take such responsibility on his shoulders. And, especially if that Young Master is a real man from the Jun Family! He he... not many people in this world would've taken this responsibility. But, you've made your uncle proud, Mo Xie. My nephew didn't disappoint me! You are a real man with indomitable spirit!"

"And, don't worry! Your uncle will do his best to help you. And, we will get the desired results! But, your grandfather is also there... So, you will have to suffer some pain from that side. I can't help you with that..." Jun Wu Yi smiled.

Jun Mo Xie nodded and gnashed his teeth as he said, "Don't worry, Third Uncle! Your nephew will remain steady! I have taken this path. So, I will have no regrets even if I have to kneel. I'm willing to go to any extremes!"

"Good! Good spirit!" Jun Wu Yi and the three Dongfang Brothers cheered loudly.

Guan Qing Han looked at Jun Mo Xie's determined expression. And, she couldn't help but erupt with a feeling of tenderness. An indescribable sense of security had bubbled up in her heart. She couldn't help as she silently lowered her head, and blushed...

Dugu Xiao Yi was pouting at her side. Her cheeks were very bloated, and her eyes showed that she hadn't resigned to what was happening...

Jun Wu Yi seemed in high spirits. He bent on his desk, and scribbled something on a paper for a while. He then threw his quill

away, and shouted, "Someone, come in!" A personal guard hurried inside.

"Quickly send this letter by an eagle to my father in the Capital. This is top secret, and very urgent!" Jun Wu Yi ordered coldly.

"Yes sir!"

"I, the Supreme Commander give a first-class order to the officers and men of the army. Keep your lips sealed. I will act in accordance with the military law, and I will execute the entire family of the man who dares to divulge this secret. In fact, I will extinguish them to the ninth generation!" Jun Wu Yi's voice was full of killing intention.

That Blood General had exceeded his authority for the first time, and he had issued a non-combat order for the happiness of his nephew and the future of the Jun Family. But, the killing intention in his voice was so strong that anyone who heard it would realize that Jun Wu Yi wouldn't care about the amount of blood on his hands if they disobeyed that order. He would easily make a mountain of corpses, and run rivers 'red with blood' if he had to...

"Yes sir!"

The order passed quickly to the twenty-thousand officers and men, and left each one of them to shiver. The two squads who had been besides Jun Mo Xie's tent trembled even more than the others...

They had been acting recklessly, and had been discussing this matter since that day. It hadn't gone out yet, but they had still been talking about this matter in some detail. However, the members of those two squads had fully understood the meaning of this order the moment it was relayed. In fact, each one of them felt as if they had started to hover close to the very gates of hell...

Those two squads suddenly became extremely orderly and disciplined. In fact, they could even be considered a 'model' squad

now...

It seemed that two lowered voices had been discussing something on a distant tree while Jun Mo Xie had spoken those words. It was also evident that the two voices were in disagreement...

"This is very unexpected, Elder Sister! That Jun Mo Xie was very serious and honorable. He also took the responsibility! How's he the despicable and shameless person that Elder Sister said he was? Did Elder Sister misunderstand him?"

"How can I misunderstand? This brat is very despicable and shameless! He must be acting..."

"Really... are you sure?" the reply sounded very skeptical.

"He has obviously discovered us outside. So, he's putting on an act for us to see."

"This... how can this happen?"

"Anyway... he's not a good man. He's not a good man."

"But... I'm not sure... he seems like a good man... how can this be...?"

"Humph..."

The army struck camp once Jun Wu Yi gave the order. Their banners fluttered as they began their triumphant march back to Tian Xiang City.

Chapter 405: Everyone has their own Issues

Jun Wu Yi and the commander of the Southern Heaven City's defenses — Wan Wu Yan — earnestly bid farewell to each other. In fact, it seemed as if they were reluctant to part since these two had hit it off like they were old friends.

"Third General Jun, this Wan Wu Yan appreciates your kindness. However, the people of this Southern Heaven City have suffered the same fate as my Wan Family for many years. So, my family would be loath to leave. Besides, it is possible that the taxes might increase if I leave. So, wouldn't it be tough for the Southern Heavenly City's elderly if I leave? I'm content to guard this city till I die!" Jun Wu Yi had proposed he would petition for Wan Wu Yan to be transferred to him at a later date. However, Wan Wu Yan had flatly refused without any hesitation.

"I won't put this proposal forward if that's the case. Moreover, this Wu Yi will try his hardest to ensure that General Wan Wu Yan retains his position as the commander of this city's defenses if the Ministry of War ever decides to transfer you!" Jun Wu Yi cupped his hands and spoke-up in a profound manner.

"Many thanks, Third General Jun!" Wan Wu Yan was overjoyed. He cupped his fists as he stood up and said in a solemn manner, "This Wu Yan can't accompany the Supreme Commander unhindered throughout the world. It's a matter of real pity. But, I have no regrets. I only hope that the Supreme Commander's heroics spread far and wide like the wind. And, may he accomplish great fame and glory! May my Tian Xiang conquer all! Take care, Supreme Commander. We shall meet again!"

The two men made their salutations in a heavy manner since they were reluctant to part. The sound of the hoof-beats rose like a whirlwind. They started slowly, but they quickly sped up and formed a powerful torrent of steel. The army's fluttering banners made whistling sounds against the autumn wind as they moved.

This mighty army had set on its course northwards!

Tiang Xiang's army moved in a long and snaking formation. It surprisingly maintained good order as it flew northwards to mark its triumphant return.

Not a single regular soldier had been lost in that battle at Southern Heaven City. Everyone had come prepared for bloodshed. And, all of them had readied themselves to sacrifice their lives. Therefore, everyone was overjoyed at this time.

Everyone had thought that going to this battle had meant a certain death. A soldier's career is one of blood and steel. Orders are like mountains, and death isn't to be feared. However, all men have a fear of death. Even the most ferocious of soldiers aren't an exception to this. Any man would feel sorrow when the thought of his death would cross his mind. Moreover, this army had been sent to face a force that could wipe out an army ten-times-stronger!

However, no one had thought that the infamous, powerful, and lethal Xuan Beast uprising would cause no great casualties to their numbers. Even the opportunity to send troops from reserve force hadn't arisen. In fact, many hadn't even suffered scratches. It could be regarded as a 'strong start but weak finish'. And, the troops were now making their return to the Capital. However, no one celebrated as they marched back. In fact, it was like everyone had woken up from a nightmare. However, everyone was happy since they were returning home. So, their strides were long and brisk.

And, the Young Masters from the powerful houses who had been named by the Emperor to participate in this war were also feeling like they had escaped death. Moreover, their party had also lost only a few guards. They had journeyed out for the first time. Yet, it seemed that they had made a huge contribution...

The three-hundred soldiers who had gone to battle also contained guards from many powerful families. And, the surviving

members from other families were very dissatisfied with their Young Masters. But, they couldn't express it. [Young Master Jun will give two-hundred taels in silver to each survivor from his guard. Moreover, he will look after the families of those who had died in battle!]

[You must know that we've also come here for your sake... Otherwise, who'd come to this area to throw away their life? Who wouldn't wish to stay home and hold his wife as he slept...?]

[Our devotion for our Young Master would've been better rewarded by others... perhaps even strangers!]

[There is a genuine disparity between these men!]

However, these negative emotions were completely lost on the various Young Masters since they were in an excited state of mind. Anyway, they wouldn't have bothered even if they had noted those feelings...

After all, these Young Masters had grown up in extreme luxury, and an environment of constant self-importance. Moreover, they had known that their chances of survival in this battle had been nine-to-one in the beginning. And, this had left them to feel wronged and gloomy... [Why are some brothers enjoying a comfortable life at home while we were sent here to risk our lives? Which one of us doesn't have an influential father? Which one of us wasn't raised by a caring mother? So, why are we worthless dirt while those other Young Masters were treated as precious gold?]

Moreover, some news had come through from the Capital. And, it had said that each powerful family was facing turbulence due to the internal contest for seeking the next heirs to the position of the Family's Lord. Furthermore, the rumor had said that the Young Masters who had been sent to battle had already been renounced. In fact, they hadn't even been nominated...

One or two people had guessed that this news was perhaps false. But, what would happen when a hundred people said that it

wasn't? Therefore, everyone had started to believe it soon-enough...

And, this had left the many Young Masters who had gone to war extremely angry...

[Why?!]

[Why?!]

[You piles of trash can stay at home comfortably. Yet, you still receive the nomination for the seat of the family's Lord. We go to wars and face grave dangers on the other hand. However, even our very nominations are cancelled despite everything?!]

[You're trash! We're heroes!]

[This glory has come in-exchange of following orders! We didn't take to the battlefield. But, that was because we had no opportunity! But, this doesn't mean that we didn't try hard-enough. In any case, we were at the battle! And, that too at the cost of our life...!]

[We are coming back! And, with an outstanding military service to back our merit!]

Therefore, the Young Masters of the various families had turned into fighting-cocks. Moreover, their fighting spirits seemed very high. In fact, the eyes of each one of them shone and produced a cold killing intention which couldn't be subdued. And, this killing intention was obviously directed towards their families... particularly towards their brothers who had reaped without sowing. So, they gnashed their teeth and prepared themselves for the fight.

One could imagine that these young men would be like a pack of crazed red-eyed wolves when they'd return to the Tian Xiang City. They would show no quarter to those in their families who had schemed to covet the family's top seat.

They would launch an unending and ceaseless struggle for

power.

However, they were completely unaware that their brothers in the Capital had been in a state of panic ever since the news of the army's safe-and-triumphant return had reached the city. This news hadn't even subsided when everyone had started to heap glory on the Young Masters who had gone to war. People had obviously started to say that those Young Masters would be the ideal heirs to the family's top position once they'd returned. In fact, it didn't even matter if they had genuinely taken to the field or not. They had done an outstanding military service since they had put their life at risk by participating. And, this illustrated the problem rather clearly...

Therefore, the Young Masters who were left behind were also prepared and waiting.... for the battle! [Those damn brothers of ours didn't die. And, they are now returning!] There would inevitably be a conflict between opposing factions. And, this would give rise to a civil war within the families!

Both sides were already ready and waiting for war. They were separated by thousands of kilometers, yet they were already battle-ready. [Are you ready? ...I'm ready! Who is scared of you?!]

Obviously, there were some exceptions to such matters. Not every family's Young Masters were like this. The Dugu Family, and the Li Family were two such examples apart from the family which had profited the most from this war... And, that family was obviously the Jun Family!

However, the Third Master Jun Wu Yi and his family members were still in the most serious frame of mind. In fact, they were even more serious than the Young Masters who were chasing after the power of their family's top seats.

The thing that had happened between Jun Mo Xie and Guan Qing Han had been too unfortunate...

Jun Mo Xie would have to face an offensive torrent of slanderous

rumors. In fact, Jun Wu Yi reckoned that the first wave would surge so powerfully that it couldn't be controlled...

Jun Mo Xie was the crowned debauchee of the Tian Xiang City, and no one could stand him. Moreover, he had offended the great scholars during the Scholarly Feast. And, it was important to know that those scholars had huge influence inside the city. In fact, many in the Imperial Censor Board had come from their ranks...

The Young Master Jun was in an official military position. And, any promiscuous behavior within that capacity was strictly prohibited. And, ignoring this rule was extremely dangerous. So, it would be hard to offer an excuse even though the war had ended at the time of the incident. Moreover, Guan Qing Han and Dugu Xiao Yi weren't a part of the army. In fact, it could be said that even the Supreme Commander Jun couldn't escape censure in light of the strict military provisions. So, what chances did Jun Mo Xie hold...?

Moreover, the rules regarding male-female relationship were very strict. And, Jun Mo Xie had violated his elder brother's wife. So, the justice for that crime would obviously be very harsh. How could they allow Jun Mo Xie to be at ease with so many grounds on their hands? Moreover, the Jun Family had delivered many outstanding military leaders. However, it was important to note that the Civil and Military leadership had always stood against each other. In fact, they had never been to each other's liking. And, this was a rare and huge opportunity to attack. So, no one knew how this matter would turn out. However, things didn't seem very optimistic from the outset...

Moreover, Jun Wu Yi had determined that the news of the scandal had already been passed-on to the Capital. He had given a closed-lips order. But, there were many spies and informers in the army. And, these people belonged to other families as well as the Imperial Court. So, why would they privately follow his orders? Therefore, it could be presumed that many people in the Capital were already preparing to make attacks of denunciation...

Therefore, the victorious and glorious Supreme Commander Jun Wu Yi was quite concerned at this time. In fact, he had been frowning the entire journey. His nephew was a brilliant and divine talent. But, how would he remain unruffled in the face of the tongues of men throughout the world? Moreover, how could the delicate Guan Qing Han survive these stormy seas?

[The accumulated hatred could rise as high as a mountain if all the enemies of the Jun Family team-up and launch attacks on us. In fact, I'm certain that they won't miss such a good opportunity.] The more Jun Wu Yi thought about it... the sadder he became.

However, Jun Mo Xie had managed to remain calm throughout. It didn't even seem like he wasn't on the eve of facing an earth-shattering offensive of public opinion. In fact, there wasn't a strand of botheration in his eyes. He was very relaxed. In fact, he had even used the remaining of his personal guards to act as vanguard once again...

Jun Mo Xie's objective was simple. [My teams won't walk on the main road on this return journey from the Southern Heaven City. Moreover, we won't leave a single bandit on this road. All of them should be eliminated. Kill as many as you can find. The more... the better! But, don't touch the innocent. We will sweep-clean the entire route on our way to Tian Xiang as we return!]

The Young Master Jun would often separate from his guards. He would even follow after Guan Qing Han in a mischievous manner during the day time. And, sometimes he would listen to Dugu Xiao Yi as she'd brag. However, no one would be able to spot his shadow after nightfall. So, no one knew what this brat was up to after nightfall...

No major incident had happened throughout the journey. However, there had been some strange occurrences. The weapons of every Young Master's soldiers were being stolen every night. And, it was extremely strange that those weapons were being stolen without a trace. In fact, it seemed that they had vanished

into thin air. But, these weapons weren't a part of the military's stock. So, the military didn't care about these incidents even if they were being stolen. And, they merely recorded each and every theft... nothing more. However, it would've been a major event if the army's weapons had been stolen...

They would put these incidents on record every day. And, they would even assign a team of men to guard these weapons every night. However, the thefts continued to happen every night. And, any efforts made in defense would go in vain. In fact, they never even found a shadow out of place!

In fact, the guards had begun to lose their mind over this matter as time passed... [Damn it! This guy loves to steal stuff. And, it doesn't seem like we'll be able to catch him. I don't care what he loves to do as long as he doesn't steal away my skull! It's not like they were some divine weapons anyway! So, forget about them now that they are gone...]

Chapter 406: The Truly Divine Weapon

One genuinely couldn't blame the guards for not being mentally and physically alert. In fact, you could even say that one sword was being guarded by fifty men. So, the security was airtight. However, the-said sword had still disappeared in front of thousands of watchful eyes... How could they guard against the disappearances that were so strange and mysterious in nature? Moreover, this hadn't just been the case with one or two weapons that had gone missing. Many others had been stolen in this fashion. In fact, this event was so inexplicable that everyone was at a loss...

[It's impossible to guard against this...]

[Forget it... it's just a single blade, right?]

The men who would lose their weapons could only comforted themselves by cursing out loudly, "You want to steal weapons? Steal them from the Emperor's arsenal! There's plenty there. Are you genuinely so jobless that you wish to steal a few damaged swords?!"

[This is hard to understand! This is bullsh*t!]

Dugu Xiao Yi had been expending the entirety of her efforts to initiate an early offensive on Jun Mo Xie over these past days. That bold little girl's eyes had been reeking of urgency ever since she had seen Guan Qing Han achieve her goal...

The little girl cared for her future and life-long happiness. Moreover, she didn't care about what the others thought. Why would she care about their thoughts? In fact, the battle-returned Dugu brothers had foamed from their mouth in anxiousness when they learned of this. However, it had no effect on her...

On the contrary, Guan Qing Han had returned to her normal ice-cold state after the discussions on that huge incident. Jun Mo Xie hadn't dismissed that matter in any way. She was consistently

avoiding him. But, that didn't seem to have deterred Jun Mo Xie in any manner. In fact, it seemed as if he was enjoying his defeat instead of getting tired.

The Young Master Jun's skin was very thick. In fact, it was as thick as a city's walls. And, many people had come to learn of this fact over these past few days.

Jun Mo Xie didn't annoy Guan Qing Han. He would go for a stroll in the morning. And, he would greet any officer or soldier who was present in the vicinity. Then, he would eventually knock on the door to her tent. However, he would be refused entry without exception. After that, he would return to chat with the men. Then, he'd go smiling to the two women, and say a few words to them once they had come out after having freshened up. He would return happy if they'd pay some attention to him. However, he wouldn't seem bothered if he were ignored. And, this process would consume most of the early morning time...

However, Dugu Xiao Yi would come over to see him once he was done with his side of the play. In fact, she'd sometimes come to bother him even before she had gotten ready properly. The little girl would use the exact same method which Jun Mo Xie would use on Guan Qing Han. And, Jun Mo Xie would react exactly the way Guan Qing Han had. He wasn't neither too distant, nor too intimate. He only kept a reasonable distance. However, Dugu Xiao Yi became extremely bold as time passed. And, she continued to fight-back despite the setbacks. And, this entire process would continue to play in a loop. In fact, their attempts had become increasingly potent as the frustration had increased. However, the three individuals continued to circle around each other in this fashion...

This cycle would continue throughout noon. And, it would start in the evening all over again...

However, the soldiers eventually lost interest in watching this drama as time passed. [You three can't make any substantial headway! You're always wrangling like this! Don't you feel vexed?

Damn! We feel vexed when we look at you even if you don't...]

However, there was another very strange thing that had been happening of late. Most people would be lively early in the morning; they wouldn't seem dispirited to say the least. However, the Young Master Jun had been looking tired after he'd wake up over the past few days. In fact, it seemed as if a good night's rest hadn't done any good to him. Moreover, this had been happening every day for a few days. In fact, it seemed as if he had started to lose weight. However, he would gradually regain his spirits after he'd eat a meal and take some rest.

Everyone was obviously baffled by this. [The Third Young Master appears less tired at night. But, he's alone at night. So, why is he so tired in the morning? Moreover, we don't see him doing any work during the daytime. So, what's going on? Young Ladies Guan and Dugu also go to sleep early. So, it can't be because of them either. Then, who is it?]

His uncle Dongfang Wen Qing endured these anomalies for a while at first. However, he eventually called Jun Mo Xie to the side, and cautioned him in secrecy, "Mo Xie! Young people must learn to restrain themselves! Your uncle knows that this is the first time you're experiencing such a wonderful feeling. And, I'm not interrupting to give vent to my discomfort. Your uncle was also young once upon a time. So, I understand that this is very natural. But, you're comforting yourself like that every night... Moreover, it's also very important to keep a check on how many times you're doing it. You won't die if you hold back for one evening. I understand that doing it several times in one night is a lot of fun. But, it's also very injurious to the body... especially for those of us who practice martial arts. Moreover, it isn't good for the progeny either. So, you must learn to control yourself!"

Jun Mo Xie's eyes went wide at he heard this. He was stupefied at the heartfelt advice, and didn't know whether to laugh or cry...

"Uncle, you're thinking too much. I'm not..." The Young Master

Jun quickly tried to resolve matters. [Good heavens! What's going on!]

"What 'I'm not'?! " Dongfang Wen Qing glared at first. However, he then sighed and decided to serve him with an example, "Everyone here is a man! And, I'm your uncle! You think you can't speak-up because your narrow-minded uncle won't understand? Are you embarrassed? It's normal for grown youngsters to have such needs. Your uncle is also an experienced person... I was also young in those days. And, I didn't have much control either. Alas... in other words... In other words... won't I know about things related to this? Your uncle is telling you these things for your benefit! Don't say it's nothing! Just listen to me and comply!"

Jun Mo Xie's face had been riddled with dark lines. He had been rendered speechless, and couldn't help but feel very gloomy. [Uncle is telling me to learn from his mistakes...? So, how can I talk-back? How can I dare to talk-back?]

"Ha ha! Everyone understands. Young people have a massive fire within them! So, control it as much as you can. And, don't make it public..." Dongfang Wen Qing amiably patted his nephew's shoulder. Then, he returned to assuming the very solemn bearing of a Spirit Xuan expert. After that, he walked out in a very arrogant manner. In fact, the expert felt very satisfied after having educated a young individual...

[It's fortunate that I've discovered this early. My nephew hasn't become addicted to it yet. So, I have managed to instruct him quickly. It would've been too bad if it had become an addiction. In fact, it could've become similar to what had happened to me back then. And, one can't change what has already happened.] Dongfang Wen Qing's face had pride on it. However, some traces of sadness were also visible on his face as walked in a leisurely manner.

Jun Mo Xie later inquired from his other two uncles, and found out that his eldest uncle had many wives and concubines.

However, he also learned that the man didn't have any children... there was no one to call him 'father'. So, he continued to take-in more concubines since he couldn't achieve the desired results. However, the negative results also continued to pile-up along with the increasing number of concubines he took in. And, this had eventually turned into a vicious cycle...

It was said that the number of wives and concubines Dongfang Wen Qing had... had already reached between forty to fifty...! This was a terrifying number! In fact, he could change the duty roster every night... however, it would still take him two months to...

[So that's how it is...]

Jun Mo Xie laughed in the secrecy of his thoughts at first. However, a thought occurred to him later... [I can use my medical expertise to help restore Uncle's ability to reproduce. It is possible! But, how will I explain it?]

The Old Man had gone out of his way to help the Young Master. And, he had consequently attached a bad name to himself. Thus, assisting him at this point wouldn't be proper. In fact, this wasn't even something which should be mentioned at this time. Moreover, he was the Young Master's maternal uncle. Therefore, his position in society was much higher than the Young Master's. Then, there was the prospect of what the others might say... Well... That matter could be handled until they got to the Dongfang family... After all, this matter wasn't extremely urgent in its nature...

Jun Mo Xie quickly returned to his tent after he watched his uncle walk into the distance. He turned his wrist, and a bright and shiny sword appeared in his hand. The length of that sword was marginally under two-and-a-half feet. It was six inches shorter than the traditional three feet sword. Its thickness was also somewhat lesser, while its breadth was moderate. Its hilt was unadorned, and its overall shape was oddly average, and very ordinary.

However, its tip and edges radiated light in all directions.

The act of merely brandishing that sword had made the tent's temperature to suddenly drop to a chilling degree. In fact, the tent's temperature had started to resemble what one would experience during the twilight hours of evening even though it was a sunny noontime outside.

It seemed like the tip and the edges of the sword were sending out cold flames. In fact, it didn't seem to be radiating rays of light from it. This sword could act as a divine deterrent amongst the soldiers even if it would stay stationary in the Young Master's hands. In fact, this sword would make them feel that it had been casting many profound rays of light for a long time.

Jun Mo Xie moved his finger along the blade. And, a clear and impassioned roar was emitted as a result. It seemed as if a cruel and bloodthirsty dragon that had been asleep for thousands of years had woken up from its dreams, and had roared out thereafter...

The sword's roar suddenly filled the air.

People in a radius of over thirty meters heard it. And, they could help their hearts throb heavily as a result. The countless horses which were stationed nearby went mad with fear and neighed loudly. They felt as if an ancient demon had descended amongst them... the terror they felt was indescribable.

Jun Mo Xie picked up the sword that had been hanging on the tent's wall. It was of average length. He raised it with its tip pointed upwards. Then, he brought it down in a nearly free-fall manner...

"Screech! Snap!"

There was a soft noise as the blade shook and a cold light flashed through it to its tip. Then, it broke into two pieces... almost like it was made out of tofu. After that, it fell to the ground. It had been

ruined!

It sounded as if a sharp sword had swiftly embedded itself into wood. In fact, it was almost inaudible. However, a sword that had been into many battles had been snapped into two by now...

Jun Mo Xie lightly extended his sword, and leisurely caressed its spine as he muttered, "What are those glorious sharp weapons in front of you? You're like a King of Weapons! A Monarch of Swords!"

The sword remained silent.

"Three-hundred-thirty-three blades, three-hundred-thirty-three sharp swords, and three-hundred-thirty-three halberds! Those nine-hundred-ninety-nine weapons have combined to create you! How much blood would be needed to feed your appetite?" it seemed as if Jun Mo Xie was talking to a real person in a slow and gentle tone.

However, he knew that the sword understood! It genuinely did!

And, that was because this treasured weapon had a soul. After all, real divine weapons possessed a soul.

The sword trembled a little. It didn't move, but a strand of strange light moved from the hilt to the tip. It then returned, and came to a stop at its spine. It seemed like the soul of a bloodthirsty serpent was moving back and forth...

Jun Mo Xie carefully kept the sword in his arms, and stroked it in a gentle manner. A strand of blood flowed out, and ran through the sword. It spread throughout the blade... both back and forth. However, the sword seemed as clear as a lake in autumn. It was untainted... not even a speck of dust could be seen on it. It appeared smooth, bright, and clean...

This action of Jun Mo Xie's was very slow, serious, and deliberate. It was like... he had cherished this action...

[I nourish my sword with my blood, and venerate my divine

weapon with my soul!] This was an ancient traditional ceremony of Chinese swordsmen! This ceremony has existed for thousands of years... as long as swordsmen have existed. However, the warm weapons had risen, and the cold weapons had waned. And, this ceremony had edged towards extinction!

However, Jun Mo Xie had shown his great devotion to his sword, and had performed such an ancient rite on his own initiative. He had used that method to convey his love to his sword. And, he had also reminded himself...

[I'm Chinese... no matter where I am! I am the blood of China!]

[Even if I'm the only one in this world!]

Chapter 407: The Blood of Yellow Flame

There was no doubt and no room to question the fact that Jun Mo Xie had been behind the entirety of those thefts over the past few days. It was a very obvious thing. He was the only one who had the skill to be that divine thief.

However, this so-called ‘obvious’ matter could only have been known to us. The other people didn’t know anything about it.

The ‘thieving’ Young Master Jun would go out and steal things whenever he’d have some free time. Who in the world could stop him when he’d use those methods? He could stretch his hand and grab whatever he wanted. His skills had been growing and developing this entire time as well. Moreover, his spiritual strength had reached a very profound level.

He would only need to make one mental action, and he would go inside the Hong Jun Pagoda in case he came across the owners of those weapons. This method had taken him into a different league. And, he wouldn’t leave any trace or evidence behind as a result. In fact, he was convinced that even the premier scientists from his previous life wouldn’t be able to figure anything out if they were to research this case.

He would then use the ‘turning ordinary iron into wonderful gold’ method inside his tent later at night once he was finished acquiring whatever he wanted. This destroyed any evidence of the theft by making structural changes into the weapons.

It would be hard to describe the amount of pains the Young Master Jun had been taking while using the Yin Yang methods to escape into the five elements in order to steal these weapons. Then, one has to consider that these weapons were very ordinary in their make. And, the material used in them wasn’t of some exceptional quality either. It was merely ordinary steel that was used to make ordinary weaponry...

One could even say that the Jun Family's Young Master Jun Mo Xie's prodigal ways had transcended all previous notions that could be used to scale that very word. In fact, he had nearly lost himself in his extravagant endeavor!

Jun Mo Xie had used his skills for several nights whilst being lost in this extravagance. However, he hadn't spared any effort in doing so. Consequently, he had used his amazing skill-set to collect nine-hundred-ninety-nine weapons, and had then used the 'turning ordinary iron into wonderful gold' on each of them to forge only one sword in exchange.

It could be said that this was the first sword which Jun Mo Xie had personally forged in this world. However, it could also be said that he had used such an extreme method to forge his ultimate sword. This was because he had used his energy three-hundred-times-over over the past few days while making that sword. And, this was an exceptionally huge consumption by any notion!

The Young Master Jun would perhaps still use the 'turning ordinary iron into wonderful gold' technique to forge a sword. But, he would have to pay a huge cost in terms of the drainage of his spiritual energy whenever he'd forge a new sword.

Even someone with Jun Mo Xie's perseverance would find enduring such energy consumption a difficult task. Besides, he also felt that he may not have the courage and time to do something like this at a later stage in his life...

The enemies he'd face in the future would continue to become more formidable as his strength would rise. They wouldn't be weaklings anymore. And, they wouldn't allow him the time it takes to consume such energy. Jun Mo Xie could perhaps hide the fact that his energy had been consumed. But, his relatives and underlings probably wouldn't be able to. So, even the slightest of carelessness could bring about irreparable tragedy and death.

He had extracted the quintessence of each weapon!

Jun Mo Xie had stubbornly worked towards perfection!

And, this is how this new sword had come into existence!

The Young Master Jun would steal those weapons, and then proceed onwards to forge his weapon. Then, he would repeat that cycle again, and endlessly at that. In fact, he had worked day and night without a proper break. And, he had done all of that in order to forge that sword.

The cycle had continued in this manner, and he had continually used his amazing power. He would over-draft his energy first. Then, he would restore it. The vessels within his dantian and meridians resembled a hilltop reservoir. Both ends would be blocked at first. Then, the lower end would suddenly be opened, and the water would rush out. This would leave the reservoir empty momentarily...

Subsequently, the top end would be opened once the reservoir had been empty for a while. Thus, the reservoir would quickly fill with water. And, this cycle would continue in this fashion. This cycle had become increasingly fast after the first use. And, it had also become increasingly efficient. Moreover, the capacity of the reservoir also increased very marginally with every cycle of assault from the water. The capacity of the reservoir continued to increase as the frequency of these cycles increased. However, the reservoir would still be able to replenish its supplies in a very short period of time regardless of the scale of its expansion...

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie's strength had increased very significantly because he had successfully refined that sword. In fact, his Xuan skills and cultivation had also surged up.

He had already reached close to the middle level of Sky Xuan realm in accordance with the Xuan Xuan Continent's standards. It was only a rise from the starting level to the middle level from one perspective. However, this was a huge progress if it was taken into consideration from the standard Xuan cultivation norms. The

Young Master had entered the basic level of the Sky Xuan realm a few days back. But, the circumstances over the past few days had allowed him to fly up and reach the verge of breaking through to the middle level. This matter was so alarming that it would make a man lose his teeth in shock. This was 'a never seen before' speed of Xuan progression. In fact, even the 'legendary figures' in the 'legends' hadn't been this 'legendary'.

In addition, the Young Master Jun had also become more proficient at using his amazing new powers. In fact, it wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that he had become very familiar with them. The Young Master Jun's skill-set was no longer limited to merely the extraction of the material. He could even try to manipulate this technique into reducing the length of a sword to half... or perhaps make tiny sword in order to make it sharper and stronger. He could even melt three or four swords to make one sword or a knife...

It was important to know that it was comparatively easier to release remarkable power in a fit of rage. But, to exercise pin-point precision was a feat that required absolute workmanship. Perhaps the Young Master Jun couldn't control his power in its entirety. However, he had been ceaselessly studying the power, and had been working to develop his workmanship...

However, this consumption of energy for an extended period of time would still leave Jun Mo Xie somewhat tired. The Hong Jun Pagoda would continuously replenish his physical energy. But, this workmanship also required a huge amount of spiritual and mental energy. And, the best means to replenish spiritual and mental energy was a 'sound sleep' at the end of the day. The Young Master Jun's achievements were great, but they still couldn't replace the benefits of sleep. And, the lack of sleep would inevitably result in a 'worn-out' expression on his face...

And, it was because of this particular reason that Jun Mo Xie was forced to endure his dear uncle's lecture since the said-man wanted

to lead by example...

Jun Mo Xie felt both good and ridiculous at the same time. But, the entirety of his negative feelings were alleviated the moment he saw his sword...

The Young Master Jun only had eyes for this sword at this moment!

Jun Mo Xie had used the 'Yellow Flame Ceremony' for the first time. And, this was also the first time that he had used the blood sacrifice method to forge such a powerful sword. Moreover, he had forged that sword himself. And, without the use of any tools at that! In other words, he had created this sword out of thin air. In fact, it was like he had suddenly begotten a child. Perhaps, one could say that it was like a good friend who he had reunited with after a long time. But, the said friend would never leave his side again...

[You have my blood in you. I am a descendant of the Flame and Yellow Emperors! I'm a blood of China! I will keep it in my mind forever... in this life, and forever after!]

Jun Mo Xie gave his sword an exceptionally gentle look. This gaze had a hint of longing and melancholy in it. There was also a bit of nostalgia in that gaze. It was like he had passed through endless space and time to return to a place he loved. But, his gaze was as resolute as before.

"You shall be called the 'Blood of Yellow Flame' from now on," Jun Mo Xie's manner of speech was very heavy. And, his eyes were fervent with passion. It seemed as if his blood had started to burn, "I have come to this other world. And, you shall be my companion. You shall be my partner. I shall praise the name of 'Yellow Flame' for my achievements as the Evil Monarch. We shall behead everyone we don't like. Only one sword and one man shall stand unhindered on this land!"

"I will nourish you with the blood of my enemies in this world.

You and the 'Blood of Yellow Flame' shall become an eternal legend!" Jun Mo Xie's voice was low and serious; it was very serious. In fact, it didn't sound like a whisper at all. It sounded like pledge!

It was an earth-shaking pledge!

An oath which would survive till the end of time!

The sword cried out loudly as it heard this. And, this sound was like the cry of a dragon and the roar of a tiger!

In the Capital

The Jun Family was bustling with activity these days.

Princess Ling Meng had been visiting the Jun Family's residence everyday ever since the army had marched. And, she would stay there the entire day. Even her Majesty, the Empress, started to tag along with her from time to time as time passed.

The Old Man Jun knew everything about the matter, but he didn't bother much. He merely waved his hand at it. In any case, Guan Qing Han wasn't residing in her accommodation for the time being. So, her quarters had been made ready to host the Empress and Princess Ling Meng.

The Empress always stayed at Guan Qing Han's accommodations whenever she visited. She would often take out her jade flute, and play a gentle song. Then, the Empress would remain there quietly... without moving even a bit. She would always play her flute whenever she wanted to leave. And, she would leave once she had played her flute again. She would never stay over.

The anxious notes from the flute seemed cold and resentful. In fact, it was so mournful that it would leave the listeners weeping and broken-hearted.

The Empress's expression was very serene. It could even be said that her face had frozen up. She only appeared devoted to playing those few tones. Her face would always be heavy. It would seem as

if she was using her entire spirit to play those tunes. No man could resist feeling gloomy after having witnessed that serene grief.

In fact, the Empress's eyes would sometimes reflect... a gentle despair... or a helpless sorrow when she'd play her flute.

Ye Gu Han would be lying in Jun Mo Xie's courtyard. However, he would become extremely peaceful whenever the sound of the flute's music would arise. He could get up and move-about to some extent nowadays. He could even take a few steps. But, his body had suffered serious injuries, and his meridians were severely damaged. Moreover, his right arm had been chopped off from his shoulders. So, his superb sword-play had been put to rest forever. His dantian had also suffered severe injuries. And, this had resulted in the obliteration of his Sky Xuan cultivation.

Ye Gu Han had already become thin and diseased by now. His Sky Xuan strength had disintegrated and reduced to the Xuan Qi of a crippled person. In fact, he had become an out-and-out cripple...

This massive change in situation had brought the once-proud Ye Gu Han to the brink of insanity. He didn't regret this loss. Nor did he regret becoming a cripple for Princess Ling Meng's sake. In fact, he had no regrets as far these points were concerned. But, he still blamed himself for not dying on the spot that day. And, he blamed himself for having survived with that destroyed body he now possessed. His arrogance couldn't accept such a shameful fate. So, he would everything in his power to seek death.

However, even the berserk Ye Gu Han would become like the most obedient child when the sound of the flute would reverberate. He would sit calmly like the people next door, and would pass his time in that manner...

Chapter 408: Old Man Jun's Extreme Joy turns to Sorrow

Ye Gu Han's expression would become complicated whenever this would happen. And, he would consequently turn listless and melancholic. There was a sense of loss within him... But, it was also accompanied with a sense of... happiness. His eyes were full of emotion and attachment; they were full of pain and happiness. His lips would repeatedly chant a name in silence. He didn't utter the words, but those two words would still remain on his lips... [Xiu Xiu...]

Ye Gu Han would frequently mutter a poem as well. It was the same one that he had recited when he was about to die that day. He would often speak that verse again...

[Don't regret such deep affection,]

[I willingly fall and wither into loneliness;]

[The regret of my beloved can haunt an eternity,]

[I shall give up on the heavens, but not on my beloved.]

However, Ye Gu Han had changed the final few words, "If the next life is not enough... I shall give up on the heavens, but on my beloved." Ye Gu Han had modified those words a little. And, those words no longer spoke of hate, but of hope for the next life...

The next life... had become a beautiful and cherished dream...

These two individuals were merely separated by a wall. But, it seemed like a long and difficult road spread across the entire human world lay in-between them.

It seemed that this huge wall was a massive eternal chasm which couldn't be crossed.

['If the next life is not enough... I shall give up on the heavens, but on my beloved.' My dear Xiu Xiu... You used to love this verse

when we were together. And, I'm finally getting to hear it now...]

Ye Gu Han had become teary-eyed with sadness.

"Uncle Ye, I never knew that mother could play the flute. Moreover, she's so good at it." Princess Ling Meng propped her cheeks, and her eyes became misty, "This is the first time I'm hearing mother play the flute."

"You said that this is the first time you're hearing your mother play that tune?" the unintentional speaker from the audience was the trembling Ye Gu Han. He raised his head, and his eyes suddenly shone with a brilliant splendor that reflected his unexpected contentment.

"Yes. I've never seen mother fiddle with any instrument. In fact, I've never even heard her sing a verse. I had always thought that she didn't like music. Today has been a surprise for me!" Princess Ling Meng replied in an innocent manner.

Ye Gu Han smiled. And, this smile had stemmed from the bottom of his heart.

He was feeling very satisfied at this moment. He wouldn't have asked that question otherwise.

One tune was, "Listening to the wind with a King," and the other was, "A world away from tears."

[Thank you, Xiu Xiu.]

[I possess something very beautiful in this world... your affection...]

[Thank you!]

[I already had the reward I had craved. And, the price I've paid for that was worth it!]

[I'm content, I'm really content!] Ye Gu Han had been leaning against a tree at that time. Its dead leaves fell swirling around the heroic man. His appearance had changed into something different

and calm... something different yet peaceful.

Ye Gu Han had been crippled due to the destruction of his cultivation. However, he didn't look lonely from then on. He didn't look exhausted either. The man didn't go berserk again. Ye Gu Han didn't even mind the unbearable pain he was suffering. In fact, he didn't even groan...

And, that was because Ye Gu Han had realized that the price he had paid... had been worth it. [I'm no longer in misery. I'm no longer alone. I don't feel lonely anymore. I have no regrets...]

[Because... I have you...]

The news from Southern Heaven City also started to come in from that day. And, it continued to come every day since. The Emperor also started to visit the Jun Family every day from that day onwards. He would come to share to warm and cordial chat with Jun Zhan Tian. And, this left the Jun Family's household to bustle with even more activity. It was obviously put under heavier guard as well.

The Emperor would also get to hear that distinct sound of the flute's melody on occasions when he'd arrive. He would sigh whenever he'd hear that music. His vision would get a little blurry, but he would sit calmly whilst he would drink his tea. In fact, he would even feel a little guilty if the past would flash by his eyes whenever he'd hear it...

[We get tangled in grudges. The world of mortals is very fickle...]

However, most of the families had to deal with the internal strife at this time. But, Old Man Jun would only stroke his beard and look calm. He would even smile as he'd watch the great drama unfold in the court. In fact, he could almost feel himself bursting with happiness...

Jun Zhan Tian would be exhilarated at the sight of it. In fact, it was like he was getting to watch his favorite drama. His numerous

contemporaries and rivals were full of anger, but they were also having cold feet. Old Man Jun's face was calm on the surface, but his heart was rejoicing in their troubles. [Hah! You old-timers used to joke about my grandson! Now, all of you shall suffer!]

All these events had left the Old Man Jun to feel very happy. He didn't like going to Imperial Court in the past. But, he had started to wander-in there every day these days. Nearly everyone present inside the hall used to look anxious. But, Jun Zhan Tian's hearty laughter never seemed to cease. It was like the Old Man Jun Zhan Tian was taking pleasure in someone else's sadness. In fact, it seemed as if he was finally getting to scratch that hated-itch on his chest. But, it genuinely wasn't easy for those other old men. Who would wish such a thing to happen to their posterity?

In fact, Grandpa Jun saw Murong Feng Yun narrow his eyes and wrinkle his nose one day. So, he left a sarcastic remark for the Old Man of the Murong Family...

"Why is the wily Head of the Murong Family so angry? What is there to get angry for? It's a good thing that the younger generation is striving for the position of the family's head! What's that called...? That's right! It's called the virtuous cycle! Ah! That explains the Murong Family's prosperity!

"This reflects their motivation! This shows that they have the spirit to struggle and forge ahead! You should be happy, you bastard! This Old Man genuinely envies you! Just look at me... I'm so old! And yet, I'm still struggling to support the Jun Family. I'm genuinely worn out! I would raise my limbs and gladly welcome the situation if Wu Yi or Mo Xie were to come after my position! I've thought about it in my heart... why haven't they tried to take my position? They should hurry up and do it! I will step down and retire if that were to happen...! Look at you... look at you... What's it called...? 'The man is in his coffin, and he's still reluctant to hand over the power to his family?' You should give your young ones a chance! Don't be so stingy!"

These peculiar words had obviously left Old Man Murong to tremble with anger. His glare had affixed to its target, and his limbs had gone cold. Even the white hair on his head and in his beard had started to tremble. In fact, it was like they were dancing, "You philistine Jun! You're just babbling on! Do you know anything except for taking joy in other's sorrow from the sidelines? Damn! Your Jun Family has nothing! There isn't a fart that can compete! I have thirty here! Take my place and see! You want to try that?!"

"Haha! You Murong barbarian! You actually have thirty! I genuinely admire you!" Jun Zhan Tian spat and continued, "You Old Murong bastard, didn't you use to flaunt about your grandsons? What did you once say about three years ago? You had told me in front of all these old fools that, 'My family is going to grow and prosper. I have thirty-three grandsons who can fire their weapons and grow the family'!"

Jun Zhan Tian continued to clatter loudly, "You still have like thirty weapons in your arsenal, right? But, they are filled with silver-wax cartridges. They look impressive, but they're useless in reality!"

Old Man Jun then looked disdainfully at the other old men, and pointed with his finger at them as he laughed heartily, "You also, you, you, and you...humph! You people used to brag about how big your families can grow! You used to tell me that you would have someone to hold either of their hands even if your sons only give birth to one son each. You used to give me such sermons whenever we'd meet for a merry gathering! How are things now? What happened to all that noise? Where are those words now? Have you guys withered? Aren't you going to show off now? Ha ha ha... this Old Man is indeed very relaxed! My grandson is like an accurate firing weapon! He can bring me ten victories; maybe even a hundred! Ha ha ha ha..."

Jun Zhan Tian felt extremely pleased with himself as he sang and

created that drama. And, this obviously gave rise to a lot of anger from the other side. In fact, seven or eight old men literally charged at him to attack. But, Old Man Jun just laughed and fled.

He had been forced to evade and flee from the scene. But, he had also been able to let out the anger that had been accumulating and chocking him for decades. Jun Zhan Tian was now at ease, and extremely happy as a result.

However, the Old Man Jun had started to rejoice too early.

Extreme happiness is usually partnered with equal degrees of sadness.

Heavy downpour would follow violent winds. He could've never anticipated that the grandson he was immensely proud of... and was talking big about... had been 'firing' around on his own. In fact, this grandson had even managed to create a huge hole.

Old Man Jun returned home while happily humming a tune. And, he was welcomed by a compendium of documents. He opened it, and his smile vanished. His face froze, and his mouth became open like that of a thirsty carp.

"My mother! How could this happen?!" Jun Zhan Tian managed to utter those words after some time had passed. His eyes had opened wide like huge bells. His posterior then went downwards as he fell onto the sandalwood chair. However, the chair broke into pieces from the impact. However, his posterior continued to crouch until he was finally sitting on the ground. But, it didn't seem like he was aware of it.

"Ah! My grandson! I've been waiting for this for half-a-year. It would've been fine even if it had happened two or three months back! But, why did such a thing happen at such a critical time? Your grandfather will die because of that joke... where will I show my face now? The whole gang of them is offended... they are thoroughly offended..."

Old Man Jun was shocked. In fact, the old man was so stunned that he had even used some foul words. However, the old man anxious about losing honor in front of his contemporaries in reality... [This is going to be a nerve-racking problem...]

"My lord... what happened?! Is it something to do with the Supreme Commander and the Young Master? Didn't we receive a message that they had gotten through safely? Weren't they about to return?" Old Pang jumped in a scare, and rushed over to help him up.

"What happened...? Something big happened!" Jun Zhan Tian stood up trembling. He let out a long sigh before he raised his hand in an absurd manner. He then hit the table with his palm. The table was obviously smashed to pieces as a result.

"Huh...?" Old Pang's expression changed, and he started to emit a murderous aura, "Could it be that the Supreme Commander and Young Master have had a mishap?"

Jun Zhan Tian got up slowly. The old man had managed to recover his usual composure after the initial shock. His face had also become calm at first. However, he then started to paced back-and-forth with a frown on his face.

He eventually sighed and said, "You'll understand when you look at this." Then, he pressed the letter towards Old Pang's hands.

Old Pang gave a cry after he read it. His eyes became increasingly wider, and so did his mouth. He cried out in pain after a while passed. He did so because he had managed to dislocate his jaw...

Such an outrageous thing hadn't been seen or heard of since ancient times!

It was bold and imaginative. Old Pang groaned with pain as he quickly set his jaw back. He then burst into laughter. This situation was too funny for him to handle.

In fact, the comical degree of this matter had left the old

housekeeper to overlook the upcoming troubles...

Chapter 409: You're Our Kin?

General Jun Wu Yi had described everything in extreme detail in his report. Moreover, he had done so in a very straightforward and unobtrusive manner. The report read that Guan Qing Han's engagement-based relation to the Jun Family had been revoked. He then stated that she had also been adopted as his daughter. It further said that Dugu Xiao Yi is now devoted to Jun Mo Xie, and feels threatened. Therefore, she had caused a lot of trouble owing to her jealousy. She had planned to commit the un-mendable act of 'cooking rice' using a very heavy drug...

However, she was unable to keep up with Jun Mo Xie's advances because she didn't have full knowledge of the matter. She had then escaped at the time of committing the act. However, Jun Mo Xie had lost his mind with desire. But, Guan Qing Han had arrived at the spot at that moment. And, she didn't hesitate to sacrifice herself to save his life. And then, the act was committed...

Later on, the report put emphasis on Jun Mo Xie's behavior. The incident where he pointed out the Jun Family's ancestral teaching of 'a real man takes responsibility' was also noted in particular. The report further said that he's coming to the Tian Xiang City to face the criticism from the world, and that he's prepared to deal with it head-on.

There was a lot written there.

"You still feel like laughing?" Jun Zhan Tian looked at his old brother-in-arms in bafflement, "Is it still funny? Do you know how big this problem is?! Do you know that our Jun Family will drown in disaster if we don't handle this matter properly?!"

"I'm laughing because... this Young Lady of the Dugu Family... is just too much! Hahaha..." Old Pang paused for a bit before he continued, "She wanted to 'cook rice', and even administered the drug. But, she backed away at the last moment. This is just too

much! It must be very difficult for Dugu Zong Heng to have such a granddaughter..."

"Huh? The Dugu Family...?" Jun Zhan Tian's eyes lit up. He then clapped his hands, and puffed his beard, "Isn't it? Damn! How can that old fool Dugu Zong Heng not be involved into this when such a huge thing has happened? After all, this happened because of his granddaughter's meddling! I won't be able to rest in peace if I don't drag him down with me on this one..."

"However, that little scoundrel Mo Xie can't be let off cheaply now! I won't see him when he returns!" Jun Zhan Tian's mood had brightened up. He moved in circles and snorted for a while. However, he didn't speak a single word.

"Ahem, My Lord... This matter... isn't the Young Master's mistake... or that Young Lady Guan's... But, it's still not a trivial matter. Those Imperial Censors won't let this off easily. They may use this as a pretext to rise against us. In fact, even those gifted scholars may rise against us en-mass. Those scholars don't care about the long run. They only care about the immediate results..." Old Pang said cautiously, "...after all, Young Lady Guan is still the Young Master's elder sister-in-law in their eyes... So, this..."

"Those rotten scholars know nothing! My grandson is much more powerful than them! He's worthy of being my grandson! He's worthy of being a man of the Jun Family! He's a real man!"

The Old Man Jun waved his big hand like he was swatting a housefly, "Those shit-scholars only have the capability to make shit outside of writing screwy poems and romances. They're only worth a fart! I will ride my horse against the world with nothing but a sword! I will climb mountains and wade into a forest of blades, and return alive! And, I will make a mountain of corpses and an ocean of blood while doing that deed! There's no need to pay heed to the chatter of those defenseless officials. I will purge them if they dare to provoke me. And, it will be an extraordinary clean up! They will be removed from every part of the city!"

Old Man Jun not only had a haughty and heroic aura to him when he was speaking... he also had a roguish charm! He had said that he didn't care about the matter at hand. But, the fact was that he cared. In fact, this matter had unexpectedly brought back his brutish behavior from decades ago...

He was very similar to his grandson. He wanted to conquer the world, and he wished to burn those scholars. He wanted to ride upon his horse and purge the Imperial Court. And, he wanted to achieve all of this with a blatant, bloody, and powerfully ferocious method. The grandfather and grandson Jun were very ferocious men!

"I will go and find Dugu Zong Heng!" Old Man Jun quickly walked out, "That demon's granddaughter has caused me a lot of trouble! How can I forgive him so easily? He must be dreaming if he thinks that he can stay out of it!"

"Good idea, My Lord!" Old Pang blindly followed suit, and walked after him. He grabbed a cloak, and quickly draped it over his master's shoulders. After all, it was already early winter, and the weather had become very cold. He then respectfully saw the master off. The majestic Jun Zhan Tian was ready to move out. And, his palanquin-bearers came with the palanquin when they saw him. But, the Grandpa Jun waved his hand, "This Old Man will ride his horse today!"

Jun Zhan Tian turned and mounted his steed once it was brought over. He was about to shake his reigns and leave. However, he then stopped and lowered his head to look at Old Pang. After that, he asked in a somewhat exhilarated tone, "Old Pang, do you think that the seed Mo Xie shot into the earth will bloom into a flower? Will it be possible for this Old Man to hold his great-grandson this year?"

Old Pang was at his master's side. However, he was frowning since he was deeply worried. [This impending matter isn't trivial by any means. I hope it gets over in a smooth fashion. Otherwise,

the tyrannical powers of the Jun and the Dugu Families will end-up clashing over this...] He was praying to the Gods when he heard the surprising words that were spoken by Jun Zhan Tian. He couldn't help but lift his head. He had been left stupefied and speechless by them. Old Pang obviously hadn't expected these words at this moment. After all, Jun Zhan Tian thought process... was too bold...

"What? No... wouldn't that be too big a coincidence?" Grandpa Jun had been looking forward to this for ages. And, Old Pang had always been aware of this desire of his master's. Therefore, it was rather coincidental that his reply was very different from his master's desires. In fact, his answer was poles apart from what Jun Zhan Tian had been expecting...

"You old fool! It feels like you've splashed cold water over me! My grandson has always been brilliant! Do you think he would miss the target?!" Old Man Jun puffed his beard, and gave a hateful glance downwards. It seemed like Old Pang's words were akin to declaring Jun Zhan Tian's great-grandson 'dead'. Old Man Jun kicked his horse. Consequently, the horse neighed and darted forward.

The Dugu Family's guards saw old man Jun Zhan Tian arrive astride his horse in an aggressive manner. In fact, it appeared as if he would tear down the Dugu Household. Therefore, one guard ran inside to inform his superiors, while the remaining seven braced themselves for the new arrival.

Old man Jun Zhan Tian pointed with his horsewhip, and cried out in a loud voice as he stood atop his horse, "Where is that old bastard Dugu Zong Heng?"

The guards replied respectfully, "His Lordship has returned to his residence..." Who would lie when facing Jun Zhan Tian...? However, the guard hadn't even finished speaking when Old Man Jun tightened his reigns and burst through the Dugu Household's entrance. He then swung his whip as he roared, "Dugu Zong Heng!

I have come for you! Come out! Hurry up and come before me!"

The obviously horse shot-in brutishly in the face of that whipping.

The Jun Family's guards dismounted and followed after him. However, they advanced slower in comparison since they had jogged in. Jun Zhan Tian could obviously charge-in on a horse. However, they couldn't dare to burst-in in that manner. In fact, they were well-aware that even the Lady of the Dugu Family would step out of her palanquin when she'd arrive, and would only proceed inside on-foot. Who would dare to provoke the infamous family which was a gathering place for hoodlums and a den of troublemakers?

Only Grandpa Jun Zhan Tian had the courage to do that in the entire empire. Excluding this Old Man... even the Head of the First Family of the empire — Murong Feng Yun — would arrive here in a polite manner.

The Dugu Family's household had turned into a chaotic mess for a moment.

General Dugu Wudi hurried out in an anxious manner. He had returned only moments ago, and had then comfortably lain down at the thigh of a young concubine. However, it was then that he had heard that great roar. And, he had obviously been frightened by it. General Dugu rushed down the stairs in 'threes-and-twos' when he saw the Great General Jun Zhan Tian burst into the Dugu Family's large courtyard alone and astride his horse. It seemed as if the Old Man had boldly charged through the enemy's door...

A myriad of exotic plants had been planted in their courtyard. Moreover, these plants didn't even wither in the winter. The Dugu Family had obviously spent a lot of effort and money to grow those evergreen plants. However, they had been reduced to a mess at this time. Everything had collapsed and muddled. General Dugu's mouth was left to twitch at its corners when he saw that scene...

"Uncle... Uncle... you must calm down... you must really calm down... what's the matter?" Dugu Wudi ran to the front of Jun Zhan Tian's horse. His rough face appeared nervous as he spread his hands and stepped back since the horse continued to advance.

"Move away from me, boy!" Jun Zhan Tian shouted loudly. His voice resounded like a thunderclap, "See that I don't remove you from duty. It will affect your military career!"

[Huh? Remove me? My career would be affected? What relation does this have with my military career being affected?!]

"You're so mighty and awe-inspiring! You're amazing! You bastard Jun! You're becoming increasingly excessive today. You've actually come to my house and trampled it. And, you're still strutting around! And then, you threatened to remove my son from his position...? Tch... I never knew that you had that much official authority. Don't I owe you some money? You're excessively tyrannical! Affect his military career...? Explain to me... how will you affect his military career? And, you can consider that money I owe flushed down the toilet if you don't have a good-enough explanation for this debacle!"

A voice filled with rage echoed as the old man Dugu Zong Heng slowly arrived. His roar was equal to that of Jun Zhan Tian's. His head was covered in a square hat, and his beard resembled the whiskers of a lion. His hands were folded across his chest. He sneered back at Jun Zhan Tian when he saw his contemporary sneering at him.

There was a time when Old Man Jun would come and take a stroll at the Dugu Family's courtyard. This was because Dugu Wudi owed the Jun Family a large sum of money due to the 'wine' incident. That Old Man Dugu obviously didn't wish to see the Old Man Jun during that time. However, Jun Zhan Tian had arrived one particular day, and had started to ramble about random stuff. However, the Old Man Dugu had later managed to obtain some information which could be used to wipe out his entire debt...

"Ah... my kin has arrived! What difference does a little money make? All of us are on the same side! What's a little money when it comes to family? Your family is my family, and my family is your family!" Jun Zhan Tian laughed and jumped off his horse rather uncharacteristically. He then proceeded to greet Dugu Zong Heng in a very affectionate manner.

"What? Family...?" Dugu Zong Heng and Dugu Wudi's eyes opened wide in a blank stare.

"Wait! Jun Zhan Tian, you're our kin?" Dugu Zong Heng's brain couldn't comprehend these words. He immediately extended his hand, and pushed backwards to avoid contact. In fact, he couldn't even help himself as his body stumbled one step backwards. This had happened because Grandpa Dugu had suddenly contemplated a very dreadful possibility...

Chapter 410: The Matter Is Something like This

"This Old Man is calling you his kin. So, he's obviously referring to you. Who else would it be in this case? Anyway, how many others in this Tian Xiang City do you think are capable of being my kin?" Jun Zhan Tian looked bewildered. In fact, it seemed as if his expressions were saying, "Are you an idiot?"

"Bah! When have I made you my kin by marriage? Don't spit your bile and take a piss wherever you want! Your Jun Family has only you, one son, and one grandson. Your son is a cripple, and your grandson is a debauchee. So, your family's seed has basically withered. Do you still think that I would look for a relation with your family? You're delusional!" Dugu Zong Heng's facial muscles twitched. Moreover, there was an ominous light in his eyes, and it seemed that he would flip out any moment.

Old Man Jun would've become very angry if he had heard his counterpart say, "Your son is a cripple," on any other day. In fact, he may even have launched an attack on Old Man Dugu over such a remark...

However, at that moment...

Jun Zhan Tian unexpectedly didn't get angry. He instead started to smile as he spoke-up, "You are my relative, but... It doesn't matter now... even if you don't want to... come... come... Listen to me carefully. The matter that I've brought up is quite simple in reality. In short... the 'un-mendable act' has been done! The rice has been cooked! Do you understand what I mean? I'll give you the details. Wu Di, you also listen to this. After all, your offspring happens to be my most direct relative..."

Dugu Zong Heng's face became green when he heard the term "un-mendable act." However, it then became purple when he heard his granddaughter's reference in this regard.

"Uh... I just remembered that the officers were looking for me over something important in the barracks. I need to go and deal with it. Otherwise, the military's plans will be severely affected. And, that would be a felony by law. Human life is very important. I can't miss out on this... I just can't..."

Dugu Wu Di realized that things weren't looking good. So, he figured that the best strategy would be to lay low. And, he had given a good reason as well. After all, human life was invaluable...

"You will stay here with me, you brat!" the already-purple Dugu Zong Heng stared wide-eyed, and issued a sky shaking roar, "I will break your legs if you try to leave before the proper explanation of this entire matter is given out! In fact, I will break your legs if I hear another sound from your mouth!"

Dugu Wu Di had turned around a moment ago, but he now stood still. He didn't even dare to utter a single word. In fact, he even maintained the posture he had while he was attempting to leave. So, one of his legs was in front of the other at this time. Moreover, the reddened man had started to drench in his sweat. In fact, he had begun to resemble someone who had stomach problems, but had no option other than waiting outside a toilet since he couldn't go in.

"Please, Jun Zhan Tian!" Dugu Zong Heng's eyes were narrowed, while his head was tilted as he looked at Old Man Jun. His hands were raised in a gesture that indicated, 'Let's not talk about this matter here. Let's do it inside... behind closed doors.'

"You brats wait here. Don't let anyone inside. Kill anyone who's rash-enough to approach in an attempt to eavesdrop on these secret military talks!" Jun Zhan Tian turned and gave the order.

Dugu Zong Heng felt that the issue was something unusual when he heard Jun Zhan Tian give such an order. So, he followed suit, and ordered his own family's guard to join forces for standing guard. The two sets of guards replied their understanding in an

orderly manner, and quickly scattered to critical points.

Then, Old Man Jun started to walk inside as Old Man Dugu took the lead once they had set everything in order.

Dugu Wu Di followed slowly at their heels. However, his thoughts had started to become increasingly clearer. [The Un-mendable act...? It can't be, right? Good Gods! My maiden daughter... has my daughter has been pushed over that fiery pit?!]

"You Jun bastard, speak whatever you wish to! Let that fart out! And, don't speak in riddles!" Dugu Zong Heng's complexion had turned black. He seemed impatient, and was becoming increasingly ill-tempered after looking at his son's expression.

Dugu Wu Di usually had the aura of a general about him. However, he sat restrained in a corner at this juncture. It seemed like he was a 'bullied' young mistress. His tall and sturdy body seemed to have caved in... and gone underground thereafter. He kept wiping his sweat. It was early winter in Tian Xiang at this time. However, it seemed that General Dugu was living in a mid-summer territory.

"Your daughter Xiao Yi... ha haha... is a very good girl... this time in the Southern Heaven City, she..." Jun Zhan Tian didn't mince any words as he started to speak. However, he was suddenly interrupted by Dugu Zong Heng at the very beginning.

"Stop!" Dugu Zong Heng raised his hand, and turned to look at Dugu Wu Di. He then asked in a very fierce manner, "Didn't you say... that Xiao Yi is at the Imperial Palace with the Princess? So, how is she in the Southern Heavenly City? Is this scoundrel lying to me?"

Dugu Zong Heng was a man of many years of experience. So, he had understood Jun Zhan Tian's words very clearly by now. But, he still had some hope inside his heart. After all, Old Man Jun talking about the 'un-mendable act' was a bit too shocking.

"This... that..." Dugu Wu Di's forehead had become even sweatier. In fact, the sweat was ceaselessly flowing down at such a fast speed that it was almost obstructing his eyes. However, he continued to wipe it as his face turned black... red... and then, white. He appeared to be in a dilemma. And, it didn't seem as if he could speak properly. In fact, the General had literally caught up with the famed Mr. Duanmu Chao Fan!

Dugu Xiao Yi had followed Guan Qing Han to the Southern Heaven City in secrecy. And, General Dugu hadn't come to know about this matter until several days after she had left. But, his old man would've peeled his skin off if he had come to know of this matter. Therefore, Dugu Wu Di had arranged three of his powerful nephews to go there in order to guard his daughter. He had prayed to the Gods a million times in the hope that no mishap would occur. After that, he had prayed a million times that the women would return safely, and without any incident.

However, things were turning out contrary to what he had wished for. And, it seemed that his treasured daughter had created a big mess over there. Well... it was rather evident from Jun Zhan Tian's expression.

Dugu Zong Heng's hopes started to crumble as saw his son remain silent and wiping his sweat to no end. So, he said in anger, "I'm old. I'm very old. So, my family is treating me as a blind man now."

"Father... this... that..." Dugu Wu Di started to whimper, and his mouth became like a tea-pot. He was finding it difficult to explain this matter. In fact, he couldn't even squeeze out half-a-sentence.

"Shut up, you bastard! I will really break your legs!" Dugu Zong Heng shouted loudly, "You continue with your story, Old Man. There are some details that can't be leaked!"

"...ahem, you guys know the relationship that the maiden Qing Han has with our Jun Family at this time... Xiao Yi saw that Qing

Han was no longer Mo Xie's sister-in-law. And, she got anxious since she's very fond of Mo Xie. The little girl then devised a plan, and made the accompanying family guards to get her some aphrodisiac. The amount wasn't a lot... only a packet; that's all. But, she made Mo Xie consume the entirety of it. So, Mo Xie can't be on guard against her under these circumstances, right? He drank every drop of it... but, the little girl wasn't able to handle him on her own under such critical circumstances... The benevolent Guan Qing Han feared that Xiao Yi may have a mishap. So, she was looking for her. The outcome... he he... a serious mistake was made... and, that's how it is...

"...Old Man Dugu... you said that we aren't kin by marriage, right? Well, it was your granddaughter who took the initiative. Bah! It doesn't matter who took the initiative! That brat Mo Xie will take responsibility for this," Jun Zhan Tian smoothened his beard. He deliberately hadn't clarified the important parts, and had intentionally spoken in a very vague manner. He then put stress on the Young Master Jun's initiative to take responsibility.

After that, he took on the appearance of a victim, and sighed.

In fact, the Old Man Jun had spoken only the truth. However, he had done so in a very misleading and suspicious manner. For example... the words, "she wasn't able to handle him on her own under such critical circumstances..." It was true that Dugu Xiao Yi hadn't been able to handle the Young Master Jun at the time. However, this sentence didn't clarify the matter properly. But, this sentence was still enough to get people wondering and talking in a particular direction. And, the two Dugu men were no different...

Dugu Zong Heng and Dugu Wu Di obviously thought that... [Jun Mo Xie had consumed so much aphrodisiac because of Xiao Yi. And, that silly little girl has no experience in these matters. So, she wouldn't have been able to handle him on her own. And then...]

They continued to think along these lines. And, the eventually ended-up forming a fixed notion about the incident. [Jun Mo Xie

would've begun an intimate relation with Dugu Xiao Yi. However, she wasn't able to handle the matter on her own. It was then that Guan Qing Han must've arrived to save Xiao Yi. However, she too would've paid with her honor to save Dugu Xiao Yi...]

This was the most normal deduction to make from those words. Dugu Xiao Yi's means of escape had been cut-off since she had used that medicine. So, how could she have escaped?

The eyes of the father-and-son duo became extremely enlarged as Jun Zhan Tian continued to recount his story. And, the sound of their echoes became louder and louder until their throats started to issue "Hu Hu" "Hu Hu" sounds of heavy breathing.

It was a long while before Jun Zhan Tian finally finished speaking. However, the father-and-son duo was still staring wide-eyed, and panting heavily. Jun Zhan Tian was very happy to note that he had accomplished his task. So, he didn't ignore their plight any further, and poured them a cup of water in order to help them calm down.

"Ah, I'm very angry!"

Unexpectedly, the one who jumped up was the listless General Dugu Wu Di. He literally danced out in rage. Even his face had distorted due to excessive anger, "Jun Mo Xie, that little bastard! He did this... I... I... I... I will castrate him! I will cut him into many pieces! Damn it! I... I..."

He stammered for a long time without coming to stop. However, he then received a heavy slap on the face, and went down like a gold pound. He then lay there with his limbs hung in mid-air.

"You... you bastard... what are you saying?! Your mother... ah! Didn't I say that I will break your legs if you uttered a single word! Are my words nothing but fart?!"

It seemed like Dugu Zhong Heng was about to burst open. His face had become very purple. He slapped his son repeatedly, and

continued to curse that entire time. "You raised your precious daughter in that manner. You spoiled her. People are going to frame your daughter for this. And, people will mock you to your face. Do you think that people will blame Jun Mo Xie for this?! You... you... you're making me crazy! I... I... I will break your legs! Argh!"

Chapter 411: The Earthquake at the Dugu Family...

"You... you... you raised your daughter in that manner... I... I... I... Dugu Zong Heng am this family's misfortune! I've raised a bunch of evil creatures! You cheated me...? And, now there's a disaster at our hands because of that! Are you happy? Are you delighted now?" Dugu Zong Heng jumped up. He looked like a hungry wolf that was circling around in his currently enraged state. He took a round and found nothing to vent his anger on. He then suddenly shouted, "This Old Man is mad!"

He jumped and kicked Dugu Wu Di ferociously. That kick was extremely powerful. "Bang!" General Dugu's majestic body broke through the opposite wall, and flew into the distance as a result. And, it eventually landed inside the great courtyard. In fact, he had fallen flat on the ground.

The Dugu and Jun Family guards were on standby. So, they quickly turned around in their alertness. The two old men had given serious orders some moments ago... 'Kill anyone who dares to come near in order to eavesdrop on the military secrets'. This was no joke. So, they thought that someone had come to eavesdrop when they heard that whooshing sound. However, they then saw that an exceptionally sturdy body had crash-landed between their two groups. This unexpected event shocked everyone present, and left their mouths wide open.

No one knew what was happening. They suddenly heard another whooshing sound. Then, they saw Old Man Dugu dash forward and kick General Dugu violently with a twisted mouth and narrowed eyes. He didn't even pay any heed to their presence as he violently kicked and cursed, "Fu*k you! I fu*k your mother! Fu*k you!"

It seemed that Dugu Wu Di had honed himself a long time ago

when it came to facing these beatings. And, he put his experience to good use at this time. He used his arms to protect his head. And, he then curled into a ball-like shape in order to use his head to cover his crotch. However, he continued to shout loudly as he received this beating, "Good, beat me! Hit me properly! Leave a million bruises! Beat me up fiercely! But, I'm also very furious! I'm very furious! Damn it!"

The two groups of guards stared blankly while remained stationed on either side. However, their eyebrows had shot up violently. They didn't know what was happening. [What's happening? Why is the General being beaten up so badly?] Forget about the Jun Family's guards... even the Dugu Family's guards had never seen such a thing. So, this was big news to everyone! And, all of them were thoroughly shocked!

The guards started looking around at first. Then, they started to gossip. It was then that Jun Zhan Tian came rushing. He then shouted loudly, "What are you people doing here? Get lost! Don't you know that this matter is a top-secret? I will kill the family of anyone who peers around or divulges any information!"

[What?! Even this is a military secret...? What nonsense is this?!]

[Forget about it! This is a high-level secret between two houses. We small fries shouldn't get involved...]

Bang! The two sets of guards scattered in different directions.

However, Dugu Zong Heng still hadn't finished. His fist continued to hammer-down like a meteor as he beat and cursed to his heart's content. The more he cursed... the more saliva he spit. But, was this beating genuinely that fierce? Dugu Wu Di wasn't also someone to be trifled with either. So, he was able to put up with the beating...

Jun Zhan Tian narrowed his eyes as he looked at the father-son duo. They were both crying themselves hoarse. However, they still looked very energetic.

"That's enough. That's enough. Listen to me Old Dugu. That's enough. Beating him up isn't going to solve anything... Listen to me... It's okay to curse him... that's justified... But, you're taking it too far... You've already beating him senseless... He's your son dammit..." Jun Zhan Tian decided to mediate once he felt that they had vented their anger out to a considerable degree. It's not that he didn't wish to intervene earlier. However, he also knew that it was necessary for this father-and-son duo to give vent to their anger. Otherwise, it was very hard to say what a man of Dugu Zong Heng's temper might end-up doing...

He was trying to mediate the situation. But, it seemed like he was adding more fuel to the fire.

"What happened? Are you trying to break this house?! Do you know what it is?" a shrill, sharp, and dignified voice echoed in the surroundings. A group of magnificent women had arrived inside the large courtyard. They were led by their Lady. Her face was stout, and her figure was graceful. She was Dugu Zong Heng's wife. She was the Lady of the house... Old Lady Dugu.

The wives and concubines of Dugu Wu Di were at the rear of that group of women. The members of that elegant party were no less than seven or eight in number. And, all of them seemed distressed at the sight of Dugu Zong Heng beating his son into a pitiful state. But, they didn't dare to face Old Man Dugu's wrath by attempting to mediate between the two. However, they couldn't help but cry in distress. So, they could only look towards Old Lady Dugu for help.

"What's going on?! Old Lady Dugu struck the ground hard with her walking stick, and shouted in anger, "What's the matter here? What is this? Did you beat him into this condition? Don't you know how to control yourself?"

Then, she glanced sharply at Jun Zhan Tian. [Don't speak or mediate, you idiot! You're only making it worse! And, your sarcastic tone is even more disgraceful! I will deal with you later.]

Old lady Dugu was no less than men in any regard.

"You want to know what happened?!" Dugu Zong Heng looked at his wife as he finally retracted his hand. But, he still couldn't help as he gave another kick to his son's posterior. He then continued in anger, "This un-filial brat has made me very angry! Don't stop me today! I won't kill him. But, it would be a good thing if I did. And, I'll still be at peace even if I do kill him! However, I will break this brat's legs for cheating me even if I don't kill him!"

The many ladies saw that Old Man Dugu had finally given rein to his hands at Old Lady Dugu's interjection. So, they rushed forward like a swarm of bees with tears in their eyes. Then, the seven or eight of them helped General Dugu to his feet. Dugu Wu Di's nose was bloody, his clothes were in tatters, and his face was swollen...

Suddenly, there was a loud cry. Then, a beautiful and graceful lady rose into the sky and fell to the ground. "Ah!" she cried out in pain. She had been rendered breathless. She looked astonished, and tears had started to flow down her face. She was completely confused, and felt very wronged. This was Dugu Wu Di's first wife, and Dugu Xiao Yi's mother...

"That's so shameful! What's the matter with you? Have you lost your mind?" Old Lady Dugu hit Dugu Wu Di's shoulder with her walking stick in anger, "You beat your own wife to vent your anger?! Are you not a man?!"

Dugu Wu Di rose up, and cried in anger, "You don't know about this matter mother! This vile woman birthed and raised such a daughter! And, that girl has created a big scandal now! I will kill her! And, that will still be an easy punishment! I won't regret it either!" The beating General Dugu had received didn't seem to have inhibited his anger. In fact, it seemed that the Father should've beaten his son a bit more...

"Xiao Yi...? What's the matter with Xiao Yi?" The women suddenly became nervous. The Dugu Family only had one

treasured daughter. So, everyone cherished her like a gem. And, any mention of a daughter obviously referred to Dugu Xiao Yi. General Dugu suddenly found himself surrounded by that group of women.

"What's the matter, my husband? What happened to Xiao Yi? Hurry up and tell us!" Lady Dugu was still in pain. And, she was still feeling wronged at being thrown into the air. However, she eagerly crawled to her feet as she asked in a nervous manner, "What happened to Xiao Yi? What happened to my daughter?"

Dugu Zhong Heng looked up and sighed as General Dugu twisted his mouth and narrowed his eyes. Then, the two men muttered with grief, "Ah! Our family is ruined!"

Jun Zhan Tian scratched his nose, gathered himself, and cupped his hands as he faced Old Lady Dugu. He then chuckled for a bit and said, "Ah, my kin by marriage... please accept my greetings..."

Old Lady Dugu hadn't looked at Jun Zhan Tian directly before this. However, she then heard the term, "kin by marriage," being spoken. And, she nearly lost her breath at the sound of it. She coughed severely as a result, "Jun Zhan Tian, you bastard! Your... your scoundrel grandson... what did he do to my treasured granddaughter?!" Old Lady Dugu was a mature and sophisticated lady. So, how could she speak like this? However, she couldn't help herself when she heard Old Man Jun say, "Kin by marriage," Consequently, those words shot out of her mouth like an arrow from a bow.

The power of the words, "kin by marriage," was truly great.

The eyes of the seven or eight women had suddenly turned into big search-lights as they started to stare at Jun Zhan Tian in an imploring manner.

Old Man Jun's facial expressions wouldn't change if he were to face an army on his own. And, he had felt nothing when he had faced the Dugu father-and-son. But, his scalp had started to feel

numb in the face of that group of women. In fact, he suddenly went dizzy with admiration for Dugu Wu Di... [This Dugu Wu Di is amazing! He manages to deal with so many of such women every day! He's nearly as good as I used to be in those days...]

Jun Zhan Tian coughed and spoke-up, "Speak with caution, my kin. My grandson hasn't done something to your granddaughter. Instead, your granddaughter has done something to my grandson. Xiao Yi was the one who boiled the pan, and "cooked the rice"... This is a serious matter. You must understand it properly before you talk about the hows-and-whys of it..."

Old Lady Dugu started to sway because she had suddenly thought of many possibilities. However, she quickly regained her composure, and her face got enveloped in a frost-like cold mask, "I have seen the information that has been coming from the Southern Heaven City!" Lady Dugu cautiously looked at her mother-in-law as the Old Lady whispered, "I've read every letter of the information which came from the Southern Heaven City. But, I didn't read a word about Xiao Yi."

This was also reasonable from one angle. The three Dugu youngsters knew of it. And, they were very courageous. However, they couldn't dare to relay this information to their home either. Basically, they were all in-on-it, and no one wanted to poke the hornet's nest.

It was what they called... 'Sweeping the bad news under the rug.'

In fact, the Dugu Brothers had already made their contingency plans. [We'll slip away the moment we return home. Perhaps we can hide out in the frontier posts. Then, it won't matter what cacophony this matter creates. After all, it isn't related to us directly...]

Old Man Dugu burst out in anger, "Great! So, the whole family knew that the little girl had gone to the Southern Heaven City. And, the entire family had concealed this from me! It seems that

this Old Man is the outsider, and all of you are one family! Great!"

"Bullsh*t outsider! Stop with your whining! Who would ever tell you about this matter with that beastly temper of yours?! Wouldn't we obviously have to hide to hide this from you?!" Old Lady Dugu spoke-up in a harsh manner. Then, she returned to the matter at hand, "Hurry and tell me the entire story from the very beginning. I want to know how I'm a kin by marriage with this Old Man Jun."

Old Man Dugu was shaking with anger, but he was still helpless against his wife. He had always been powerless to lash out... even when he had wanted to. And, that was because the 'enemy' had always been too overbearing...

Chapter 412: The Two Military Families Join Hands

The father-and-son duo stopped when they heard the Old Lady Dugu's question. However, they didn't reply.

"You, tell me!" Old Lady Dugu pointed her finger towards Dugu Wu Di and asked.

However, Dugu Wu Di still didn't speak-up. He merely trembled in anger as he thought about the matter. He was gasping with difficulty while attempting to suppress the rage in his heart. It could be said...

The man told her that the little devil of a girl had lost her mind, and had made her guards bring her a hundred grams of aphrodisiac. She had then tricked Jun Mo Xie into consuming the whole packet. Wouldn't this have been enough for Old Lady Dugu to guess what had happened afterwards? Dugu Wu Di hadn't even finished speaking, but she had already started to sway. Then, her walking stick fell from her hand, and fell on the ground with a "Bang!" And, the Old Lady was now on the verge of collapsing...

Dugu Wu Di and his wife rushed forward to catch her. And, they called out to her repeatedly as they did so.

"It's a sin..." Old Lady Dugu got a hold of herself before she opened her mouth and cried out. She didn't doubt this news one bit. She knew Dugu Xiao Yi's personality very well, and she also knew about her feelings for Jun Mo Xie. So, she knew that it was entirely possible.

Moreover, would someone like Jun Zhan Tian lie about such things? And, particularly on the eve of the army's return at that...? How long could the Old Man Jun maintain such an irrefutable lie even if he were to lose his self-respect and lie? Wouldn't he be ridiculed by the world if he were to do something like that?

Moreover, Dugu Xiao Yi had always had a favorable impression of the debauchee Young Master of the Jun Family. And, this matter was no secret for the Dugu Family.

However, the main problem still hadn't been dealt with. So, General Dugu braced himself and finished narrating the second part of the story. The details had been light until now. And, the important stuff was still to come... And, that part was regarding Guan Qing Han. The expressions of all the women present on the scene became heavy as they heard about it...

"What are you planning to do?" Old Lady Dugu looked like she had drowned as she looked at Dugu Zong Heng and Dugu Wu Di.

"What can we do? I don't agree with any of this! That Jun Mo Xie is a debauchee and spoilt child. In fact, he's someone who looks for prostitutes in broad daylight! He doesn't do honest work! The brat is a true wastrel! How can Xiao Yi marry such a brat? Thirty generations of our family will feel wronged if that happens!" Dugu Wu Di spoke-up in anger, "I will castrate that boy the moment he gets back! I'll do it!"

"Your mother's fart! This thing has already happened! Can Xiao Yi ever marry someone else now?" Old Lady Dugu was mad and gloomy, "And, you still want to castrate him? You... you idiot... Are you that stupid? How dare you even think of this?"

"Humph... you want to castrate him...? Hehe... I will give General Dugu this authority. But, will he dare to do it?" Jun Zhan Tian spoke-up while tilting his head. The Old Man held out his hands and snorted, "This Old Man's grandson has always been courteous and considerate. He's refined and gentle. He's talented, and his genius touches the sky! How could you even say something like that about him? I don't know if it's you or that girl Xiao Yi who is blind..."

"You still have the nerve to speak those words, Jun Zhan Tian?" Old Lady Dugu gave a hateful look to Old Man Jun. "Do you not

feel ashamed while speaking such words about your grandson? What would a little girl understand? A few sweet lines would've been enough to fool her!"

"Oh my dear Kin, ask your conscience when you speak those words. That brat Mo Xie had never taken the initiative for Dugu Xiao Yi. Xiao Yi was the one who had taken the initiatives for Mo Xie! And, everyone knows this! Am I right? Moreover, I had heard a certain-someone say something very particular at the beginning of the auction at the Aristocratic Hall —'I will repay with my daughter if I don't have the money! I can always pay my debt by making her your wife!'" Old Man Jun leisurely spoke this as he brought-up the old debts.

Old Lady Dugu shifted her glare to Dugu Wu Di and asked, "Did you say this, you beast?!"

General Dugu had been thoroughly stunned by this. However, he tried to deny in the face his mother's overbearing presence, "That... that brat had run amok... I had spoken it without thinking... no one would've taken it seriously..."

"Bah! Who won't take it seriously? Didn't you feel any shame in speaking those words?!"

Old Lady Dugu was at a complete loss for words.

However, Jun Zhan Tian saw the chance, and pressed for an advantage.

"Oh my dear Kin, a real man doesn't fight with a woman. I haven't come to you to fight. We need to act at this time. And, the biggest problem we have at hand is... ahem ahem... that those two have lit the fire and committed the un-mendable act. And, I have come here to seek your opinion on that matter."

Old Man Jun sneered, and quickly changed the subject, "It's unpleasant to hear it... But, our Jun Family isn't necessarily seeking your daughter if your Dugu Family insists on not marrying

her off to us. In clearer words, we're not dying to take her if you're not willing to marry her off to us. Would Mo Xie still use the aphrodisiac on your daughter if he had commitments? Youngsters as talented as my grandson are rare. But, there is no shortage of suitable women. The Imperial Princess Ling Meng visits our home every day these days. Your Dugu Family isn't the only one which has a daughter in the Capital. Wouldn't becoming the relatives of the Imperial Family be better than marrying my grandson to your Xiao Yi? Plus, Qing Han is already perfect for the position of his wife. Moreover, she has also committed the same sin..."

Jun Zhan Tian had spoken this in a very confident manner. Dugu Wu Di had been very rude when he had talked about castration. And, Jun Zhan Tian's approach was different that cursing in a direct manner. But, the effect was the same.

"I'm here to ask you about what you plan to do in this matter. And, I have a second purpose as well. Your granddaughter's actions have also involved Mo Xie and Qing Han. Our family has revoked Qing Han's relations to us as a daughter-in-law, and she has been taken-in as Wu Yi's adopted daughter instead. But, only a few people know about this. So, she is still our eldest daughter-in-law in the eyes of most outsiders. We can't officially hide this matter. So, we must solve it! This matter involves an elder sister-in-law. So, it is a huge scandal! Therefore, your Dugu Family must give me a statement over this incident even if you won't marry off Xiao Yi to our family!

"Ah, and, there's a third matter as well! We don't have a problem if your Dugu Family doesn't wish to get involved with us. However, you can still help us out with some money! I don't mind if you use a little money to resolve this matter. So, quickly handover the money you owe me! Don't delay it too much further!"

Jun Zhan Tian had spoken those words anxiously, quickly, and clearly. And, the men and women of the Dugu Family were stunned by listening to them. Jun Zhan Tian's words had seemed

unpleasant, but it had some essence to it. They had only been concerned about Dugu Xiao Yi till now. So, they had forgotten about Jun Mo Xie and Guan Qing Han's relationship.

And, this was a very important factor. After all, Dugu Xiao Yi had committed the sin herself. But, the Young Master Jun and Guan Qing Han were the victims.

The Dugu Family wouldn't be able to stay away from this matter if it came to light. After all, this matter had been caused by Dugu Xiao Yi. So, all levels of society would attack them. After all, it was a matter that involved one's sister-in-law. In fact, even the people who knew that this wasn't Dugu Xiao Yi's fault in its entirety wouldn't mention this part in a decent light of affairs.

Not many people had the guts to provoke two powerful military families if they stood together. However, the Jun Family could tell everyone that Dugu Xiao Yi had caused this matter if they were put under the scanner. Therefore, people would come to learn that a Young Lady had done the un-mendable deed with a Young Master even though they weren't married. And, this would become a huge joke... and, a huge scandal!

Moreover, Dugu Xiao Yi had mixed-in the aphrodisiac, and that had given rise to this situation in the first place.

Only extremely wily hoodlums or escorts adopted such methods...

Old Lady Dugu called-out in anger as she thought of this, "Why did a body guard of our family have such an aphrodisiac with him? They are loyal men, and they were selected from the best before they were sent to the Southern Heaven City. Moreover, they were supposed to guard our family's women. So, why did they have the aphrodisiac? What were they thinking?"

Dugu Zong Heng and Dugu Wu Di shuddered coldly as they listened to this. Their expressions became very solemn and unsightly. Dugu Wu Di's eagle-like vision went over the seven

concubines one at a time. His gaze was cold and dense... like a knife.

"Ahem ahem... the aphrodisiac which that girl used was male-specific... ahem ahem... she then emptied the whole packet... I've heard that the said-guard's health was somewhat defective... ahem ahem... not very good..." Jun Zhan Tian felt somewhat awkward, and had no choice but to give that explanation. A very bloody event might've occurred if he hadn't given that explanation...

"So, that's what it is..." That giant bear-like man's eyes became soft again.

The women also became relieved. Each had been very nervous. And, that was visible since their foreheads were full of sweat at this time. None of them could ever look up again if they were to get stained with such a bad reputation. In fact, even mere suspicion would feel very shameful for them...

This matter hadn't raised great waves yet. But, Jun Zhan Tian's words had created an extremely frightening picture.

Old Lady Dugu and Dugu Zong Heng hunched down when they heard Jun Zhan Tian's three conditions. Old Man Dugu started to grieve over the matter at first. Then, he became filled with violent rage. So, he grabbed Dugu Wu Di, and started to beat him up again, "Damn you! You lowlife bastard! You pulled one over this Old Man, and got me into a debt of millions! But, your daughter is even better. She has created such a huge scene! I... I... I will kill you! I will kill you, you bastard!"

"Stop!" Jun Zhan Tian shouted loudly, "You bastard needn't put on a performance in front of me again! You've already spoken to your heart's content. Now, what will you do about this matter? I am already preparing countermeasures regarding this event. Wu Yi had kept a tight lid over this matter at the Southern Heaven City. But, I reckon that every family has already received the news. In fact, I'm certain that even His Majesty has heard about it! I'm

also in a terrible shape at this time! But, you father-and-son are still wrangling about it! Don't you know that time is worth gold right now? Do you think that this is the time to create this drama?!"

"We might as well postpone this matter about marriage. But, the matter at hand... we have never worked together before, but we have to make an exception for this case. And, we need to work together for now... Your Jun Family's reputation mustn't fall, and our Xiao Yi's much-praised virtue mustn't be tarnished!" Old Lady Dugu promptly made the final decision.

"Her virtue...? It is worth a fart now!" Dugu Zong Heng's chest heaved in anger, "She acted herself, and administered that drug to a man! How can we still speak of her virtue...?"

He then raised his carrot-thick finger at Dugu Wu Di and his daughter-in-law, and started to admonish them again, "You... you... you... you raised your daughter like this! You taught her all this! She has disgraced our family now! A young girl from a big family has caused such a big scandal! You've made this Old Man very mad!"

Dugu Wu Di and his wife lowered their heads, and listened to the curses. However, everyone was thinking the same thing in their hearts... [Wasn't it you who'd pamper her? You would get furious if we ever spoke to her in a loud voice. Therefore, she got used to living without any sense of responsibility. And, this happened because she wasn't disciplined. You bear ninety-percent of the blame in reality!]

However, they could only think along these lines. Who would dare to speak this out aloud? Wouldn't that be asking for death?

"We must be prepared in that case! It is important to know that the Imperial Censors can cause a person's death by their verdict in a matter like this one! Moreover, any attempts to give an explanation would be useless! So, we must have a proper

understanding. We must act, and resolve this matter as soon as possible. Otherwise, inconceivably horrible things will await us in the future!"

Old Man Jun had sounded very serious when he had spoken this. However, he was actually very relieved inside. [I've finally tricked this annoying family to join our side. That wasn't easy. But, victory is within reach since they are on our side! We will be the most powerful force in this world if our two military families joining hands. How would the rotten scholars dare to mess with us if we stand together?]

"You Old Jun Dog... You're right about this! We must first work together to get over this difficulty! As for the matter regarding marriage... we must consider it properly...And, slowly... very slowly!"

Old Lady Dugu was speaking this when she suddenly changed her mind halfway. She then said, "Consider it slowly...? No. That won't do! This marriage's matter must be settled as soon as possible as well! In fact, you should be worried if you aren't already... What if that little girl became... pregnant due to this? What would we do if that happens?"

"That's not possible, right? There isn't any chance of that, right?" Dugu Zong Heng and Dugu Wu Di looked at each other in dismay as they scratched their heads. Dugu Wu Di even opened his huge mouth and spoke-up, "Think over it properly, Mother! It won't happen in one attempt! Wouldn't this Old Man Jun be dancing if his boy was that potent? Moreover, Xiao Yi is still very young. And, sixteen years of age is too early!"

"You two are pig-heads!" Old Lady Dugu looked at them with resentment and cursed, "Do you believe that a boy and girl will stay idle throughout the journey once they've got a taste for it? And, they'll only be here after two months of... that shameful deed happening on the journey! We need to be careful... I'll see what you two bastards have to say if that happens..."

"Moreover, we also have to look at the other aspect about the Jun Family. That Jun Mo Xie's reputation was in tatters for a few years. But, haven't we heard he is changing things of late? Then, they're also graced by that outsider who is a world-conquering expert... So, this match may not sound that big of a disgrace to Xiao Yi's name..." Old Lady Dugu's face was very anxious as she finished speaking.

The eyes of the several ladies suddenly showed a trace of embarrassment as they heard this. And, their complexion turned deathly pale. This assumption was rather possible if one thought about it.

"Damn!" the Dugu father-and-son exclaimed in unison at first. And, they were left dumbfounded thereafter.

Jun Zhan Tian's eyes assumed a happier expression as he continued to hear what they had to say. He snorted... [It seems that things aren't turning out that bad after all...]

Chapter 413: Xiao Han's Madness

There was an inconspicuous little town some distance from the Southern Heaven City. It was called Ivory Town. The town had only a few hundred households in it. However, there was a lot of hustle-and-bustle in the teahouse outside the town. This was because a group of white-clothed people were sitting in a circle, and were looking southwards from time to time.

They were many in number. And, all of them were wearing snow-white clothes; without exception. They were bustling-about a little, but their faces were ice-cold. In fact, their ice-cold faces and snow-white clothes were enough to freeze the people around them.

Even the Teahouse's servers didn't dare approach them after they greeted them the first time. They had understood that this group shouldn't disturb them. Moreover, even the air they exhaled seemed to be very cold. So, no one wanted to provoke them.

These men were the Spirit Xuan experts from the Silver Blizzard City — The Seven Swords and the Six Elders. The Sky Xuan Xiao Han and Mu Xue Tong were also there. Han Yan Meng and Xiao Feng Wu were present as well. It could be said that these people from the Silver Blizzard City were extremely gloomy from the backdrop of their journey from the Southern Heaven City. The Jun Family's Jun Wu Yi was supposed to have died. In fact, he shouldn't have had any chance of survival. But, his situation had unexpectedly taken a turn for the worst in their perspective. He had returned safe and sound. Moreover, his situation had improved considerably. In fact, the Silver Blizzard City couldn't dare to regard him lightly anymore.

Their main aim had been to deal with the Solitary Falcon. However, they hadn't gotten any chance to do it over the course of their stay there. And then, that heaven-shaking powerful and mysterious black-clothed person had also appeared. His strength

was such that even the Seven Swords and Six Elders felt terrified of him. They had feared this Mysterious Man would try to look for them for the troubles they had caused the Jun Family. So, they didn't even wait for the matter to finish, and had set out from the Southern Heaven City. They were preparing to pass through Tian Xiang on their return-journey to the Silver City.

They had already sent a report of everything that had happened in the Southern Heaven City to the Silver City via an eagle. The upper echelons of the Silver Blizzard City had sniffed a lot of danger upon hearing that extraordinary news. One could only imagine the mysterious black-clothed man's strength when he had managed to kill someone like Li Jue Tian with such ease.

The Xiao Family's Great Elder Xiao Xing Yun and the Lord of the Silver Blizzard City had given the command... all men who had gone to the Southern heaven City were to withdraw without any delay. The other forces of the city were also to return. Their strength would be consolidated, and preparations for any eventualities would be made.

The severity of that command was even greater than that time when the Silver Blizzard City had faced the Dongfang Family. The former had been at a disadvantage. However, the Silver Blizzard City had been confident that they could reverse the situation. So much so that they hadn't even dispatch their high-level troops. None of them had given any importance to the Dongfang Assassins even though they had wreaked havoc across the world...

However, this situation was completely different. The strength of that Mysterious Man was too high for the Dongfang Family to even compare... especially since he wasn't confronting the whole world at once. Therefore, the other cities, families, and powerful entities would merely watch from safety in case he decided to deal with the Silver Blizzard City. In fact, it was next-to-concluded that no one would come to the aid of the Silver Blizzard City in such an event.

Therefore, this order had been extremely urgent. And, one could

see it from the Silver Blizzard City's shock, nervousness, and even panic.

Xiao Han had nearly lost his mind over the course of this journey. His eyes had become red. His spirit had also gone insane. Moreover, the number of innocent people who had died at his hands over the course of this journey numbered no less than ten. In fact, it seemed that they wouldn't be able to reach the Silver City before the time he would go completely insane if things continued like that.

[Such an insignificant man has robbed my fiancée! I have been superior to this insignificant creature all these past years! He may be heroic. His character may be lofty and unyielding. But, I still possess strength which far surpasses his! Even my backing is more than eight-to-ten times stronger than his! I can even insult him as I like. I can play around with him, and I can even wreak havoc over him!]

[I Xiao Han am at Sky Xuan expert! And, what are you, Jun Wu Yi?]

Xiao Han had been taking pleasure in the mistreatments he had dealt to Jun Wu Yi for all those years. [You want to rob my wife? I will ruin your family! I'll destroy your descendants, and I'll make you the shame of this mortal world! But, I won't let you die even then. I will insult you bit-by-bit till you die!]

However, the man he could've insulted as he wished... the man he could play-around-with in his deformity... had suddenly turned into someone whom he couldn't even dare to provoke.

[Everything has changed because of that Mysterious Man! That Mysterious Man has changed everything!]

It was a drastic change. It was almost as if he was a creature that was high up in the heavens and was looking down on all creation. However, he had suddenly fallen from the sky, and had crossed the eighteen levels of hell to end up in its lowest dungeon. And, such a

change was something which a petty person like Xiao Han couldn't endure.

Moreover, he had the thirteen elders with him. All of them were at Spirit Xuan. They were peak experts. Their comprehensive strength was enough to trample the entire continent. But, even such an unreasonably strong force was suddenly cowering in front of the might of that mysterious person. In fact, they weren't even thinking of taking the initiative, and didn't even dare to stand out.

And, Xiao Han had gone crazy as a result. Perhaps it could be said that he had no other thoughts except for the ones that were crumbling his mind down to insanity.

The Leader of the contingent from the Silver Blizzard City — Xiao Bu Yu — was helpless at Xiao Han's descent into insanity. He had to postpone the journey further at the lack of any better option. This matter had stirred up a lot of trouble for the Second Xiao Elder. In fact, he had lost his honor. He hadn't been so disgraced even when he had to face the might of the Old Lady of the Dongfang Family.

Moreover, he knew what Xiao Han was thinking about... what he hoped for. However, he couldn't dare to act on his grandson's desires. He felt somewhat guilty for Xiao Han. However, Xiao Bu Yu would become very ashamed if his grandson were to become a living mad-man.

Therefore, he put a stop to their travels so that they could rest.

"What is Jun Wu Yi? He is a trash who takes help from others and their talents. How can he ever compare and compete with me? I am nobler than he is! I'm more outstanding than he is! I ought to be trampling over him my entire life! Also, I ought to be ruining him, and playing-around with him all I wish! He'll be an insignificant cripple forever!" Xiao Han continued to chatter and shout those words as he went mad.

Nobody responded to him. That was because everyone knew that

he was fundamentally speaking nonsense. [Who is Jun Wu Yi? He is the great Blood General! He rules freely over the battleground, and has never been defeated! The man has already achieved so much at such a young age. No one knows how brilliant he would've become if it weren't for the unreasonable intervention of the Xiao Family's elders. However, he didn't give up growing even after ten years of being a cripple. Jun Wu Yi is at the Sky Xuan's middle rank now. What kind of unwavering determination does he have? What kind of willpower does he possess?]

[But, what are you, Xiao Han?! You were offered the best services and training at the Xiao Family. You had the best training environment and innumerable rare medicines! But, you're still at the first level of the Sky Xuan realm. And yet, you think about questioning someone else's worth?]

"I've decided... Jun Wu Yi and I will have a decisive battle! To... decide who gets the bride!" Xiao Han didn't seem to have realized the senselessness of his words. Moreover, his eyes became red, and his body shuddered as he looked directly at Xiao Bu Yu. These words seemed to have come from the bottom of his heart. His coarse and gloomy voice resembled a smashed gong.

Perhaps this was something only Xiao Han could've come up with.

"It doesn't matter if I live or die! I must go and fight with him! I can't live in the same world as Jun Wu Yi!" Xiao Han forefinger trembled as he pointed with it. His hair was disheveled, his complexion was pale, and his eyes were full of madness. "I will go alone if you don't agree! I will die here if I don't go! I've decided that I won't return to the Silver City like this! I'm too ashamed to return like this!"

Xiao Han looked extremely sad and regretful at that moment. Han Yan Meng didn't harbor a good impression of him. However, even she felt pity for the man.

The man had been robbed of his fiancée. Even if his fiancée didn't feel a thing for him! It would've been one matter if they had voluntarily renounced their engagement. However, someone stealing his cherished fiancée was another matter altogether.

Xiao Bu Yu looked-on profoundly. Then, he looked at the other elders. And, all of them nodded slowly.

Xiao Han's decision was difficult to walk away from.

All of them were part of society. And, all of them had the blood of men flowing within them. How could they not understand? They couldn't dare to destroy the Jun Family. But, Xiao Han was still a victim in their eyes. So, his desire to fight the man who had stolen his spouse was quite understandable.

"He robbed my wife!" these words were always a taboo around Xiao Han. No one in the Silver City dared to mention these words around him... including the Xiao Family's elders. However, Xiao Han had spoken these words himself at this time. So, it was clear what situation he was in! Xiao Han would probably suffer from extreme grief, and would lose his mind forever if his request wasn't fulfilled...

Therefore, these men from the Silver Blizzard City had decided to wait at that place for the arrival of Jun Wu Yi's army. They would challenge him once he had arrived. And, they knew that the proud Jun Wu Yi would never refuse such a challenge even if he had some disadvantage...

Xiao Han would put an end to his disgrace, and insult his opponent to give full vent to his feelings. However, everything would be fine as long as he didn't take Jun Wu Yi's life.

Their speed was quite fast. So, the men from the Silver City had arrived much earlier. And, they had been waiting for four days since Jun Wu Yi's army hadn't arrived yet.

However, it was their misfortune that their wait wouldn't only

see the arrival of Jun Wu Yi and his army. There were others as well who were travelling on this road!

The sun set as another day passed.

Everyone from the Silver City prepared to eat dinner. They had already converted that teahouse into a restaurant. The Elders of the Silver City looked like cold and bad people. But, they were extremely wealthy, and paid the patron of the teahouse very handsomely. In fact, the money was equivalent to the amount the said patron would take home after a full year's harvest. Therefore, the man wasn't disgusted. In fact, he was thankful to the God of Wealth. He also ensured that no one would disturb the men from the Silver City. He was very happy, and had grown very fond of them.

Then, they suddenly heard a great clatter of hooves arise. It wasn't too fast, nor was it too slow. It was coming from the direction of the Southern Heaven City.

It was two women!

Chapter 414: Peerless Magnificence!

Everyone from the Silver Blizzard City glanced around. And, they were stunned by what they saw. Especially Xiao Feng Wu... his eyes sparkled with an exceptional fire. The six elders and the Seven Swords were much older than him, but even they couldn't help having such an amazed look on their faces. Even the somewhat crazed Xiao Han's expression had suddenly become a little mild.

The two horses galloping forth were being ridden by a white-clothed and a green-clothed girl respectively. The green-clothed girl's appearance was difficult to discern. They could see that the girl's posture was graceful. But, her face was dark. So, it was difficult to make it out. But, it seemed pretty nonetheless. Her eyes were mischievous like the lakes in autumn. Her general appearance made her seem more like a little girl. She was full of inquisitiveness, and was covered with innocence. She seemed pure, and extremely adorable.

Her face was difficult to judge. However, everyone had already overlooked that aspect.

Then, they looked behind her, and saw that white-clothed girl. And, the men genuinely forgot their manners and surroundings in that moment.

The clothes covering her body were as white as snow. Her hair was as black as a rain-cloud. The young woman's facial features were normal. But, anyone who'd look at her face would discover that any man facing her magnificent beauty wouldn't have the courage to look at her. They thought that she was very pure. Even the most beautiful of women would feel inferior when facing that white-clothed young woman.

She resembled a shining moon in the night sky. Her cold radiance shone over the world. However, no one could reach her. She was too high to reach. And yet, she was graceful as she floated above

the mortal world like a fairy from the ninth heaven.

Her figure was delicate like a beautiful flower. They found her very beautiful. In fact, she looked so beautiful that they couldn't even fathom how someone could look so beautiful. It could be said that even the most beautiful rhetoric that could be used to describe a woman would sound pale if it were used to describe this peerless beauty...

It seemed as if no words could describe the beauty of that woman!

Only the heavens could describe something so beautiful; the creatures of this mortal world would fall short of this task.

Her appearance was devilishly magnificent. Would it be enough to say that her beauty could bring-about the downfall of an empire? Would it be enough to regard her beauty as devastating? Cities, countries, or even the entire continent... would readily turn over for this woman's beauty. And, everyone thought of this same idea when they laid eyes on her.

Her body seemed to be enveloped in a mysterious cotton-like mist. In fact, it seemed like the vapor that originates from a tobacco pipe. This seemed to be making her appearance blurry, but somewhat clear at the same time. In fact, she was like a rising moon... incomparably clear, yet equally unclear at the same time. Everyone had the same thought when they laid eyes on her... [Damn! Such a beautiful woman actually lives in this land!]

The unique, divine, and peerlessly magnificent beauty had seemingly stopped the setting sun in its tracks the moment she had appeared on the road. In fact, it seemed that the rarity of this white-clothed woman's beauty had compelled the sun to cease its downward motion so that it could allow this woman to shine under a million rays of its light.

However, the splendid sunlight lost its splendor the moment she dismounted. Instead, the very ground beneath her feet started to

radiate with an immortal-like aura.

However, no one from the Silver Blizzard City had realized at that a strange light had flashed in the eyes of the green and the white-clothed women. Moreover, this strange light had vanished very quickly.

"Elder Sister, this hurried-journey has made me very tired. We might as well stop here and have tea before we continue-on with our journey. How does that idea sound?" the green-clad girl's voice was like a songbird — sharp and sweet.

"You're right, younger sister. There's no need for haste. We can rest here for some time before we proceed further on our journey. They're behind us in any case..." the white-clothed woman smiled after she had said that. However, the people from the Silver City thought that flowers were blooming before them. No. It didn't seem like this flower was in full-bloom at this time. However, that smile could still bring-about the downfall of an Empire...

"But... there are so many people here. I don't know if the patron can provide two more seats? Moreover, could this country-side tea shop be any good...?" The white-clothed woman frowned with some anxiety.

"The two ladies... I ask the girls to please sit here... this youngster ahem, ahem... I can stand for some time... that's not a problem! Here... please have some snow-tea. The quality is great. It might not be worthy of the two young ladies. But, I ask you to accept it since this place is very remote..."

Xiao Feng Wu looked at the white-clothed girl. His eyes were already brimming with infatuation. His face was fervent as he hastily stood up. He then eagerly offered her the Silver Blizzard City's special "snow-tea". After that, he politely brushed his seat with his sleeve. He had even forgotten the somewhat irascible Han Yan Meng's presence as he said, "Your legs must be tired after such a long journey, right? Come and sit. We'll stand. You must rest

your legs."

Han Yan Meng pouted the moment these words escape Xiao Feng Wu's mouth. In fact, her facial expressions were illustrating her displeasure very clearly. [What did this guy say? The Silver City's snow-tea is the best in the world. But, this isn't good-enough for these women...? Then, I don't know which tea is! Plus, this guy's attitude is utterly disgraceful. He doesn't seem to carry himself as a man from the Silver City's younger generation. He genuinely isn't living up to his status...]

[In fact, Xiao Feng Wu should call me 'aunt' if we observe the strict hierarchy. But, the Elders said that I'm too young for that. And, that has made my generational status drop. Shouldn't I call my elder sister, 'aunt' by this logic? What logic is this?!]

Han Yan Meng had later realized that the drop of her generational standing hadn't been an accident. In fact, she had found that some people had done it on purpose.

[This was done in order to get me married. There's no doubt that I'm very young since the others of my generation are thirty to forty years elder to me. However, there are many men of my age in the generation that comes under mine. But, they're obviously separated by generational hierarchy. And, human relations are irreversible. Moreover, the Silver City's Xiao Family won't wish to get related by marriage to an outsider. So, this strict fall of my generational status has happened in order to avoid any unnecessary trouble...]

[And, Xiao Feng Wu's presence has only highlighted this issue since the two families had unanimously decided to appoint him as my husband. He's my age for sure, but he's not mature enough yet. Moreover, they must be afraid that I could repeat my elder sister's case. But, this Xiao Feng Wu will become my husband if everything goes smoothly...]

[This is such a silly thing. In fact, it's akin to purposeful self-

delusion. But, no man in the Silver City will speak against it. This is because there would be a huge power struggle inside the Silver Blizzard City if anyone from outside becomes my husband. That may not be a problem today. However, my children will have to face the brunt of it...]

Han Yan Meng didn't have a good impression of her betrothed to be honest. But, she didn't have a bad one either. In fact, she was confused about it. But, she noticed that Xiao Feng Wu was being particularly attentive towards an attractive girl he had barely met. She found it laughable, but she also felt somewhat uneasy. Then, he unexpectedly offered his seat to her. And, this was very contrary to how polite he usually was. This made the little girl look fearful since she felt that she may have to give-up her seat for those women as well...

[None of the Xiao Elders have said anything in this matter!]

[This is the reality of these men!]

How could this unexpected event not leave the little girl to feel extremely wronged? She tilted her head downwards, and pretended that she hadn't heard anything. [It's your choice if you wish to be lowly and violate norms. But, you're pulling me down with you? Who do you think you are? Who are you?!]

"Little Sister, please vacate your seat..." Xiao Feng Wu glanced at Han Yan Meng. Then, he looked at the white-clothed woman with a fearful look in his eyes. It seemed that he was worried that she would get angry. Therefore, he had shouted-out his request.

"How can you talk like that to the Little Princess, Feng Wu?!" Mu Xue Tong glared since he couldn't stand this any longer. His voice was also full of anger.

However, many of the Silver City's elders found his rebuke misplaced. One look at Xiao Feng Wu made it obvious that the first-grandson of the Xiao Family had fallen in love with the white-clothed woman at first sight.

Han Yan Meng was very unhappy about this matter. She had always been the most-favored and adored young woman. She had always been doted on by her elders. However, not one of those men had opened their mouths in her support at this juncture. She wrinkled her nose and stamped her feet. Then, she stood up angrily and said, "Xiao Feng Wu! You've turned out to be a great man indeed! I've finally come to know you today!" Then, she ran to Mu Xue Tong's side in anger. She leaned against him in grievance, and couldn't help her tears from falling down.

"Please sit, young ladies... hehe... rest peacefully... you've been neglected. Please... let me serve you your tea," It seemed that Xiao Feng Wu hadn't even noticed Han Yan Meng. He quickly moved his limbs and dusted the seat that had been vacated by Han Yan Meng as well. The young man's face was full of eagerness.

"Ah, that's so nice! Thank you, Young Master!" A thin and imperceptible trace of contempt flashed in the green-clothed girl's eyes. Then, the two women walked over in an elegant manner. Their perfume assailed everyone's nostrils as the two women walked past them. And, the men were left with a very satisfactory sensation as a result.

The white-clothed woman didn't say a word from the beginning. Nor did she show any peculiar expression...

"You're welcome... you're welcome... May this Xiao Feng Wu dare to ask the young ladies' proper names?" Xiao Feng Wu cupped his hands. His face showed how honored he felt. In fact, it seemed like his spirit had already left his body.

The girl-in-green quickly shifted her gaze and replied, "My elder sister's name is Mei... my name is also Mei..."

"Mei? Your family name is Mei...? Hehe... it's like the beautifully blossoming plum after a cold winter! It's so noble, lofty, and aloof," Xiao Feng Wu's face was full of admiration. But, he continued to stammer for a long time... without coming to a stop. It seemed as if

he didn't even know what to say.

"Mei?" The Silver City's Seven Swords and Six Elders trembled. That name wasn't anything on its own. But, these people were returning from the Southern Heaven City. So, they couldn't help but recall the unreasonable strength of Venerable Mei — the Lord of Tian Fa. In fact, they still had some lingering fear when it came to the name "Mei."

"May I ask where the Young Lady's homeland is? This Old Man has walked everywhere under the sky, but I've never come across such a rare and talented beauty such as yourself. Perhaps the Young Miss is an old friend I don't know about he he..." Xiao Bu Yu smoothed his beard, and chuckled as his eyes flashed.

"We're sisters of a business house from Tian Xiang." The white clothed girl was still silent. She looked at that high-quality tea from Silver City. But, she didn't move even a bit. So, it was the green-clothed girl who had replied this time as well.

"Two single women travelling on the road alone... you must be very brave and talented." Xiao Bu Yu became increasingly suspicious as he continued to look at them. Those two didn't seem to have any Xuan efficacy to them. However, he was only a step behind the strength of the Great Masters. So, he was a top-class expert in his own merit. And, he could sense that his heart was feeling constricted for no apparent reason.

[What kind of strength would these two possess if they can conceal their cultivation from me ...? Is it possible that...?]

Chapter 415: My Toilet is known as the Silver Blizzard City!

"We're alone on this road... and, we have guards... ha ha ha... But, they don't appear in front of others... ah..." these words had apparently been spoken by the green-clothed young girl in a 'slip-of-tongue' moment. She then quickly covered her mouth. Her eyes had turned round, and she turned away in panic. She then gave a hollow laugh. She genuinely seemed to be panicking in this moment.

Xiao Bu Yu thought to himself, [It seems that I was overthinking things. The situation has been very turbulent of late. So, we've started to panic at the first sign of a shadow. In fact, we treat every tree like an enemy soldier. These two girls don't have any signs of Xuan Qi fluctuations on their bodies. However, its very likely that they aren't big experts. In fact, everything should be fine as long as they haven't been travelling from the Southern Heaven City.]

He had been terrified until a moment ago. In fact, he had believed that things could turn out very badly if the white-clothed girl even had any far-off relations to Venerable Mei.

However, it certainly didn't seem to be the case anymore. Moreover, it was a good thing since that wasn't the case. [That girl has caught Feng Wu's eye. And, could any girl in this world resist the lure of the Silver Blizzard City? It's very common for real men to have three or four wives and concubines. In fact, it wouldn't be a big deal if Feng Wu took many wives... as long as the Little Princess is his first-wife...]

Xiao Bu Yu gave Xiao Han a meaningful look. Xiao Han still looked as crazy as before. His spirit had been subdued. And, he genuinely wanted to fight a decisive battle with Jun Wu Yi. But, his tiredness from the journey of the past few days hadn't subsided yet.

[Let Xiao Han feign madness and play the fool! That should yield a good result in this situation. Moreover, I can save this situation in case... After all, Xiao Feng Wu is also my blood. He's my great-grandson! This girl looks very talented, and she very beautiful as well. So, it's okay if this girl's family isn't that influential. In fact, it's fine even if they are no match for ours.]

His judgment had been very accurate. That white-clothed girl and Venerable Mei weren't related. This was absolutely true. But, what he hadn't thought of was...

"You look like you've taken a fancy for the white-clothed girl, Feng Wu!" Xiao Han had taken the hint. So, he raised his head and tilted it as he looked at his nephew. In fact, he deliberately made himself look like an insane person.

"Ah... I..." Xiao Feng Wu was left helpless. He stole a stealthy glance from the corner of his eyes, and shot a quick look at the white-clothed woman before he began to stammer, "Uncle... Uncle..."

"I'm only asking you whether it's true or not? Do you think that this girl is beautiful? Do you want to take her home as your wife?" Xiao Han looked drunk as he slammed his hands on the table. Then, he opened his eyes wide. His indication was evident. [Your uncle will play the bad guy for your sake if you've taken a fancy to her.]

The green-clothed girl rolled her eyes. [You wish to take my elder sister as your wife? You must something very highly of yourself!]

"Yes... but..." Xiao Feng Wu had always been bossy. But, he became embarrassed when he heard of that matter. In fact, his cheek had become flaccid.

"It's ok! Your uncle will do it for you!" Xiao Han turned to look at the white-clothed woman. Then, looked her up-and-down and said, "May I dare to ask the young lady if she has ever heard of the Silver Blizzard City?"

One must make the heavens mad before the heavens would exterminate them. But, what if the person is already mad?

It's fine if the heavens make one commit a sin. However, one mustn't commit a sin on their own initiative.

Mu Xue Tong kept his eyes on the white-clothed woman as Xiao Han took-on his insane form and spoke those words. The lady's beauty had been embedded in his heart. And, everyone loves beauty. So, Mu Xue Tong felt a somewhat protective feeling towards her. Therefore, he didn't wish for such a beautiful woman to be defiled by that Xiao uncle-nephew duo.

[However, I can't act for that young lady's benefit by drawing weapons without explanation. Anyone can see that it's that Xiao Bu Yu who is controlling everything from behind. So, what would I be able to achieve if I were to do something at this time?]

However, Mu Xue Tong had also noticed something unexpected. It was strange that he couldn't see her appearance very clearly at such a close distance despite his cultivation level. But, that woman had a very real feeling to her. She wasn't hiding her appearance either. Nor was she wearing a veil or something. Moreover, she seemed as fearless as an Emperor in front of his people. However, no one could make out her appearance properly.

[What's going on here? What does this feeling signify?]

And, what puzzled Mu Xue Tong the most was the fact that any woman would be distressed or embarrassed once she would hear what Xiao Han and Xiao Feng Wu were speaking about... More so because their words were directed at that white-clothed woman herself! However, the said-woman's expression hadn't changed from the very beginning. She had managed to remain coldly indifferent, and very calm. In fact, it had seemed as if she hadn't even heard them. The young lady then held her tea cup, and took a sip from it. In fact, it seemed as if she only had eyes for the tea in her cup.

Even a shabby teacup looked like a Golden Imperial Gauntlet when held in her hands.

She hadn't seemed to have heard what Xiao Han had asked her. In fact, she didn't even blink. The words "Silver Blizzard City" could make people tremble with fear, but they had seemed to be nothing in her eyes. In fact, they seemingly they had no meaning whatsoever...

"Silver Blizzard City...? Where is that?" The green-clad girl gave a lovable smile. Then, she adorably tilted her head in careful consideration. After that, she assumed a very sad, apologetic, and sincerely embarrassed expression as she apologized, "I'm very sorry. I've never heard of this place. Moreover, I've never heard that it's famous or anything..."

Xiao Han staggered. He had thought that the two women would look-up in extreme reverence and admiration when he would say the words 'Silver Blizzard City'. In fact, he had further planned to present the proposal in his arrogance. He believed that no one would ever be able to reject a proposal from the Silver Blizzard City...

However, his fantasy and imagination were entirely different from reality. The opposite party hadn't even heard of the Silver Blizzard City's name. It had seemed that Xiao Han and Xiao Feng Wu had already prepared their bodies to take an aggressive and momentous stance. However, the uncle-nephew duo looked like punched-out cotton-bags instead. It seemed as if their deformed cotton-bodies couldn't exert themselves physically anymore. It seemed as if their wrists had been twisted...

They didn't know who these men were. Moreover, they had never heard of their ancestry. In fact, they even had a sincere and apologetic expression of their faces. And, Xiao Han had obviously been rendered in a very silly position as a result. However, in case Xiao Han had realized who these two women he was forcibly trying to acquire as his daughter-in-law were... It could be reckoned that

he would've died from a scare even before Jun Wu Yi's arrival...

"The Silver Blizzard City is our home! Ha ha ha... the two ladies might not know about it because they aren't Xuan experts themselves. So, you may not have met many of us. Therefore, you don't know much about the world of Xuan experts," Xiao Feng Wu quickly pitched-in with a laugh. But, his tone of voice was still reeking of arrogance, "It would be very rare to find an expert on the continent who hasn't heard the name of the Silver Blizzard City! The Silver Blizzard City is at the top of this Xuan Xuan Continent!"

"It's so fierce!" the green-clad young lady exclaimed as her delicate hand covered her mouth in shock. "Silver Blizzard... is it covered in snow? Doesn't the sun melt it away?"

"The Silver Blizzard City... is only the name of the place... it's not built with ice and snow in reality..." Xiao Feng Wu looked dumfounded at first. He then gave the explanation in a stumped manner.

"But, how come we've never heard of such a famous place?" The green-clad girl looked at him in a skeptical manner before she realized something, "Oh, that's right! I recall the Silver Blizzard City now..."

The uncle-nephew duo finally drew a breath. [So, you finally remember! It was bound to happen! The name of our Silver Blizzard City would obviously be known to people who don't even have Xuan Qi!]

The then saw the green-clothed girl turn to the white-clothed young lady and say, "...Sister, don't you remember the time we were celebrating the New Years in winter outside the slums? Hadn't the snow piled-up at that time...? I remember that you had built a wall, a rampart, and a castle out of it? And, didn't you give it a name as well? In fact, you had called it the Blizzardy Silver City, right? It was winter outside... But, didn't it look like a place

where one could relieve themselves in a moment of rush...?"

The white-clothed girl gave a weak smile, and nodded slowly. This had been the only reaction she had given until now!

The green-clad girl suddenly got up and jumped. Her tone sounded arrogant as she addressed Xiao Han and Xiao Feng Wu, "Humph! I think that place is still our countryside's toilet! My sister had given it the same name as that of your city! So, how is it worth such arrogance? Huh?! You wear such good dresses... do you people have a lot of money? So, why do you people live in a toilet if you have so much money? Maybe it's because you've got the money, but haven't spent it yet! There's a term for that too... what is it called? Oh, right! Isn't it called 'Parvenu Riche'?"

The corner of Xiao Han's mouth twitched. He looked angry.

Xiao Feng Wu was stunned on the other hand. The Young Master of the Xiao Family couldn't think of a way to react to this situation. In fact, he couldn't help but wonder if such a great coincidence genuinely existed in that world...

"You're spouting nonsense, you plebian girl!" Xiao Han shouted in anger and stood up. He showed the true extent of a Sky Xuan expert's imposing mannerism as he went mad. Xiao Han's mind had been losing its sensibility throughout the entire journey. And, these words had managed to add more fuel to the fire. [Would he genuinely attack these two feeble-looking women? He has already killed eighty-ninety people on this journey so far. So, is he going to add another two names to that list?]

"Uncle... calm down Uncle... you must calm down. This could be a coincidence! These two girls are daughters of a rich household who don't know about our Silver Blizzard City. That's all!" Xiao Feng Wu anxiously tried to calm his uncle down. His forehead was covered with sweat.

He had been smitten by that white-clothed girl's charm to the point of madness. The young man even believed that he would feel

‘on top of the world’ if she even spoke a word to him. Consequently, Xiao Feng Wu had lost his sense of judgment a long time ago.

"Get out of the way! You evil creature! Can't you see that these two have been trifling with us?!" Xiao Han threw his nephew aside in anger.

"What did you say? Do you have the guts to say that to me again?" an extremely ice-cold and awe-inspiring voice echoed. It was devoid of any shred of humanity. It was like the cold wind that had blown straight from hell. In fact, it even left the strongest man of the Silver City's contingent to tremble.

The eyes of that adorable and charming green-clad girl were no longer cheerful. Instead, they were reeking with killing intention at this time. Those mischievous eyes had suddenly turned into bottomless pits. Xiao Feng Wu had only glanced at them, but he felt like he had fallen into a bottomless whirlpool.

Xiao Bu Yu was extremely terrified by this.

[It's at the level of Great Masters! It's a Great Master's aura!]

That kind of aura had left Xiao Bu Yu incapable of using his own powerful aura. [Who is this green-clothed girl?!]

It didn't matter who that green-clad girl was... The matter had already gone to the dumps!

The atmosphere was on the verge of a full-blown conflict. Xiao Han's words, "plebian girl," had seemingly stirred-up a huge amount of trouble.

Moreover, it was the kind of trouble which he was incapable of coping with. He was incapable to resolving it, and he was incapable of facing it...

Coincidentally, a loud thunder-like rumbling sound arose from the distance at that moment. Flags and banners fluttered in the wind as dust rose into the sky. Jun Wu Yi's army had finally

arrived!

Chapter 416: Is There Still Room for More Bad Luck in this Situation?

"Wait, please! This is a misunderstanding!" Xiao Bu Yu moved quickly and faced the green-clothed girl. His expression changed from that of carelessness to one of grave seriousness. He also looked bewildered, "Please calm your anger, Young Miss. This is just a misunderstanding. Please allow this rotten old man to give you an explanation."

"Misunderstanding...? This joke isn't funny! We would've been captured by you if we were ordinary sisters from a wealthy household. You would've flagrantly insulted and devastated us if we hadn't been killed by that idiot's hand first! Do the so-called 'men' of the Silver Blizzard City behave like this? Explain this to me! And, would you even give an explanation to someone if it weren't for us two sisters? Do you have an explanation for this?!" The green-clothed girl gave a frosty look to Xiao Bu Yu. And, she didn't hold-back her killing intention as she did this. Instead, it continued to rise.

One couldn't compare Xiao Bu Yu to Xiao Han. The girl's killing intention continued to rise, but it wasn't as if he couldn't resist it. However, the pressure was too great. So, it was overwhelming him to some extent.

However, this was an example of 'the ignorant are fearless'. Xiao Han had been horrified when he had felt the terrifyingly imposing aura of the green-clothed girl. But, his confidence had risen-up once Xiao Bu Yu had stood-up in his support. In fact, he still hadn't realized the danger that lay before him. He believed that anyone would be helpless before him as long as he had Xiao Bu Yu's support.

However, Xiao Bu Yu had gotten covered in sweat as he did his best to resist that overwhelming killing intention. He felt that he

was being watched by a highly venomous snake. Moreover, he felt that he couldn't compare to this serpent in any regard... whether it was in terms of speed, strength or agility...

Xiao Bu Yu's entire body felt cold at this moment. It was as if a cold wind had stabbed him at the back of the head.

And, that was because he had finally thought who this green-clothed girl could be.

In fact, his derivation didn't feel much like a guess. So, he started to act like he was near one of the strongest existences in the world.

"Please calm down, respected miss. Feng Wu and Han are young. They don't understand things well. They had spoken without thinking. But, they didn't have any bad intentions. I must beseech you to not take offence! I apologize on their behalf!" Xiao Bu Yu wanted to slap-himself-crazy as he said those words. Moreover, his intestines had started to turn green with regret...

[I'm a dotard! This familiar imposing aura, that familiar clothing, and that venomous glare... Only her face is different! Doesn't this mean that she's the Snake King of the Tian Fa Forest?]

[However, the opposite party is unwilling to reveal their true identities, and they are traveling in secrecy. So, speaking to them about it at this time will have very bad consequences. In fact, that would be akin to committing a huge mistake...]

[Then, there's this white-clothed girl... she's the Snake King's elder sister... and, her name is Mei...]

[Good God!]

[Kill me now!]

[I planned to make the Snake King's elder sister my Feng Wu's wife... or maybe even an insignificant concubine! It's like my brain had a cramp! I feel like my brain is filled with water! Even genuine idiots won't do something so idiotic!]

[Wouldn't it be a huge joke if this goes out?]

[She is surely the Snake King's elder sister. That's obvious from the respect she's receiving from the Snake King. I'm sure she's a bit weaker than Venerable Mei. But, I can't understand how much weaker... But, I'm sure that she's not too weak. Xuan Beasts give hierarchical status according to strength. They consider you as 'nothing' if you don't have strength. Moreover... her family name is Mei...? Can she be Venerable Mei's younger sister?]

It wasn't surprising that he was thinking along these lines. After all, Venerable Mei was a man in the eyes of the world. In fact, he was supposed to be an extremely old man. However, this white-clothed woman was extremely beautiful, and possessed peerless style. Moreover, she had a very youthful appearance.

Xiao Bu Yu was in no mood to even spare half-a-glance at Jun Wu Yi's arriving army. He hadn't even heard their movements since he had turned deaf to everything else. The man was in a shock at this moment... [My God! What a huge mistake did I make? I allowed my grandson to take liberties with Venerable Mei's little sister! And, he even called the Snake King a 'plebian girl'!]

Xiao Bu Yu was on the verge of a collapse. [I'm a fu*king old fool! I'm having a spell of bad luck. But, did it have to be so bad? Why did I let Xiao Han act so freely like an idiot? What's the difference between him doing this, and courting death?]

Xiao Bu Yu couldn't help but give a stern look to Xiao Han as he thought of this. [Damn it! Would we have stopped here if you hadn't gone crazy? And, how could we have run into these two celestial beings if we hadn't stopped here? And, how could you have tried to take liberties... or even abused them by calling the Snake King a 'plebian girl' if we hadn't run into them in the first place? And, how could you have made her angry if this hadn't happened?!]

[We've already established that our Xiao Family has the

unquenchable hatred of that extremely powerful Mysterious Master. And, we have added these Beast Kings to the roster now. Venerable Mei needn't even act themselves... those Xuan Beasts of Tian Fa could make the Silver Blizzard City the next Xue Hun Manor. They could destroy us!]

[You... you are a messenger of death! You've stirred trouble with such a terrifying woman! We had set-up here so that we could wait for Jun Wu Yi. But, you had to go and stir such huge trouble! And, we have now provoked the Beast Kings of Tian Fa because of you!]

"Silver Blizzard City...! You think you're too strong...! You dared to take liberties with my elder sister, and then you cursed me... humph! You have some guts! But, you're only worthy of being called 'youngsters of a renowned house'!"

The Snake King's eyes were full of cold lightning as they swept over the seventeen men. She then spoke-up in a cold tone, "This thing isn't over yet. I will look for the Silver Blizzard City. And, I will talk to that Han Feng Xue! Is this how he educates his people?"

Snake King's voice was becoming increasingly muffled in the back-drop of the hoof-beats of the arriving army. So, only Xiao Bu Yu had heard her. However, the other men of the Silver Blizzard City didn't know how big of a trouble they had provoked in this instance...

However, they had seen that Xiao Bu Yu was talking very softly. Moreover, he was even talking about compensating and explaining matters to them. Therefore, those men had determined that these two women weren't normal, and couldn't be trifled with.

However, Xiao Feng Wu's eyes were shining even more brightly now. He thought, [Wouldn't my prestige in Silver Blizzard City's shoot up exponentially if this white-clothed woman hails from a powerful hidden family?]

[There might be a big change in my marriage plans if these

women belong to some powerful and secretive family. But, that'll be worth. I wouldn't even mind renouncing my marriage to the little Han Princess. In fact, I would also be fine living with my wife's family. This beautiful woman's company is much better than that of that unruly little girl!]

It had to be said that men's thoughts have no limits. Xiao Feng Wu was still thinking about those things even at this moment. In fact, he was still embracing his wishful thinking and grand dreams of living with that girl's family. This had to be admired... a lot!

Xiao Han's cultivation was at the initial stage of Sky Xuan. But, his cultivation was mostly the result of help from his elders since they had opened his meridians. And, he had also been taking a lot of medication. However, very little of it was his own accomplishment through bitter hardships. He was a true Sky Xuan expert, but he couldn't be compared with someone who had accumulated Xuan Qi on their own and had made their breakthroughs with hard work.

Even Mu Xue Tong could notice that something was wrong. But, Xiao Han had only been thinking about the strong support of his indestructible grandfather Xiao Bu Yu.

Therefore, Xiao Han's sight had never been attracted to the green-clothed girl. Nor did he know what kind of trouble he had provoked. Instead, the man was only staring at the dust that was rising from the south. And, his eyes were clearly showing his crazy desire to fight.

[You've finally arrived, Jun Wu Yi! I've been waiting for you for a while! This is when you die!]

Only Xiao Bu Yu had understood this situation. And, he was struck dumb like a rock. And yet, he couldn't shout to draw attention since there was still some room for mitigation in this situation as the matter stood. However, there wouldn't be any other choice apart from a great fight if he spoke-out the identity of

the opposite party.

[Fight? Can we fight them? Our side is extremely strong. We can look down on the world with arrogance... but, our own people can't hold against this opponent who is at least as strong as the Cold Blooded Master Lei Wu Bei. And then, there's that mysterious Mei girl with the Snake King...]

[It's not like we are no match for the opponent if I think about it... But, would we dare to face them? Let's say that we can match them. But, we will still lose in every situation. That's because we will only invite the wrath of Tian Fa Forest if we beat these two girls! And, the Silver City's strength won't be enough in front of their might!]

The Silver Blizzard City stood at the top of the world. But, only three other parties were as fierce as the Tian Fa Forest!

Xiao Bu Yu was a peak expert of the Silver Blizzard City. He was also an Elder of the Xiao Family. And, he was one of the strongest experts in existence. However, he was frightened and at a loss.

"Are these people worth dirtying your hands over? We will go and teach that Han Feng Xue a lesson for these crime," The white-clothed woman hadn't spoken till now. However, she had finally said a few words. But, these few words had left Xiao Bu Yu and the others to pick their ears...

"Uh... this little sister will obey what elder sister has said," The Snake King nodded respectfully. Then, she looked at Xiao Bu Yu and asked in a mighty manner, "Why are you here?"

"Hehe... I won't conceal anything from... you. Our Xiao Family and the Jun Family have a few grudges. My grandson had taken a vow with the desire to challenge Jun Wu Yi to single battle as a man!" Xiao Bu Yu was going to say, "Won't conceal anything from the Snake King." However, he then realized that he wouldn't wish to reveal their identities. So, he quickly corrected himself.

He saw the far away army getting increasingly closer as he surmised everything vaguely. So, his complexion became serious, and his voice became gloomy.

Could he still allow Xiao Han to challenge Jun Wu Yi under these circumstances?

The words spoken by that white-clad young woman had provided a temporary solution to this situation. But, the problem hadn't finished from the long term perspective. In fact, the words, "we'll go and teach that Han Feng Xue a lesson for these crimes," signified that his Silver Blizzard City had incited a powerful and unequal hatred.

This was like someone had shattered their heels with a powerful fart from their own buttocks. Or... someone had broken their own teeth by spewing out water from their mouth. Getting oneself into such a bad situation was nothing short of the world's top anecdote!

He felt like turning his back and flying to the Silver Blizzard City so that he could convene an emergency meeting. [The Snake King is an unrivalled celestial being. And, that Mei girl's tone is even more terrifying.]

[We've been very unlucky!]

[Since when did we have to show such humility? But, the circumstances are strongly against us. I believe that even Han Feng Xue wouldn't have been able to prevail if he were here. So, what can I do?]

Chapter 417: Jun Mo Xie's "Misery"!

However, his underlings didn't know that. They didn't know the true identity of those two women. So, they didn't understand how weak they were. Thus, they believed that they couldn't be defeated since they could rely on their leader. So, it was rather difficult to accept... that this matter would greatly affect their future authority. But, there wasn't anything they could do about it. However, they at least knew that there would be blood if they were to rashly provoke the other party at this moment.

"That's okay. But, the hatred between us is near-irreconcilable! However, we should leave that matter for later. Let's look at this hustle-and-bustle for now. I would like to see this decisive battle with Jun Wu Yi as well. Can the elite of the Silver Blizzard City prevail over the Blood General? I hope I'm not disappointed in this instance," the white-clothed girl didn't even raise her eyes. It was like she was talking to thin air.

The Snake King got up in an imposing manner, and went besides the calmly seated white-clothed girl. She then resumed the appearance of a pretty girl from a humble family. In fact, she would've looked enchanting if it weren't for her dark and unsightly face.

Xiao Bu Yu didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

[These two women wish to watch that from the sides...]

[But, my heart might fail if these two watch from the sides...]

It was a good thing that Xiao Han didn't know the identity of those two women. Otherwise, he wouldn't have been able to showcase his true strength properly.

Ignorance knows no fear. And, this can be the root of happiness at times.

The Xiao Family's Second Elder Xiao Bu Yu had thought about

this, and had obviously understood the meaning of that sentence.

...

The Young Master Jun's mood had been bad of late; quite bad in fact...

He was getting closer to the Tian Xiang City with every step his horse took forward. This obviously meant that he was getting closer to a huge public backlash. Jun Mo Xie had already prepared for that. So, even the worst-case scenario would mean nothing to him. But, it still somewhat contributed to making his mood bad.

The Young Master Jun was very anxious. He was anxious that he would lose control over his temper, and go on a killing spree as a result. In fact, Jun Mo Xie had to restrain his flood of killing intention every time he'd even think about those hateful 'gossip mongers' and 'honorable individuals'. But, Jun Mo Xie still knew that mentally preparing himself for this situation may not guard him from acting-out in an unexpected manner when he'd face their combined backlash.

And, then there was Guan Qing Han...

The Young Master Jun's thoughts had been piercing him. In fact, they had been pierced him like he were a sheet of paper. [I've been holding back both of my lives. I haven't given-in to my bodily temptations ever since I've come to this Xuan Xuan Continent. However, I've still been bullied by people for it. I've been called a myriad of names such as debauchee, skirt-chasers etc... However, the two of us have already formed a genuine relationship. So, these scruples shouldn't exist anymore, right?]

[Besides, I'm willing to take responsibility for everything in this matter. So, shouldn't we at least be comfortable around each other?] Therefore, he had intended to go a second round. And, he had allowed his lust to rein free. And, his lust had started to rage like a fiery tide within him. But, Guan Qing Han remained like a cold ice-berg... no matter how raging an inferno he had within

him. In fact, she was aloof and unfeeling towards it...

In fact, he couldn't even land a single opportunity. And, this was like throwing dry-wood at the fires of his passion. This would do nothing to help subside it.

The Young Master Jun had ignored what Guan Qing Han had been thinking this entire time. She would seem unmoved by him. However, he had already made a mark on her emotions. Jun Mo Xie made her heart thump, and she had affections for him. In fact, Guan Qing Han had formed a favorable impression of Jun Mo Xie a long time ago. Moreover, her status had also changed by now since Jun Wu Yi had taken her in as his adopted-daughter over the course of this journey. So, everyone in the camp knew about it. And, a fact was a fact even if no one else knew about it.

It could even be said that Jun Wu Yi had approved of that matter between the two of them.

However, this didn't mean that Jun Mo Xie and Guan Qing Han could recklessly satiate their desires before they had been married off. The thing that had happened that night was a mistake. And, she had been left with no choice but to make that mistake. However, she would surely become a laughing stock if she and Jun Mo Xie had such intimate relations while the latter was in his senses.

[After all, people of our society are far from the acceptance of something so bold. And, this is especially true for such a sensitive time.] Therefore, Guan Qing Han's attitude towards Jun Mo Xie's advances were... shy, embarrassment, apprehension... Thus, Jun Mo Xie was never able to cover the distance even once...

Therefore, Young Lady Guan had become an even colder beauty than before. She was truly a magnificent and cold beauty now.

So, how could someone with Jun Mo Xie's intelligence not understand these matters? Well... he was like a virg*n man who had recently opened the gates of passion. Moreover, he was face-

to-face with an extremely beautiful woman. And, this beautiful woman was his woman! But, she wouldn't even permit him to touch her. So, he was living in total abstinence.

[I will have to endure this since this is the case.] However, that unbelievably enticing Dugu Xiao Yi was also present in the scene. And, she was ready to exploit any-and-all means at given anytime. She was always ready to entice him so that she could get what she wanted... Thus, things were getting more and more...

Therefore, the Young Master Jun had been miserable... very, very miserable.

One could imagine that a healthy and robust young man's blood could flow 'downwards' ten times a day. This would mean that his daggers would be drawn as many times. In fact, he would be on the verge of supporting the world with only one column...

The Young Master Jun's veins would start to pop on his forehead whenever this time would come. He would cry out and start to pant soon after. Then, he would rush out from his tent and look for a cold water-puddle to plunge into...

He had been at a complete loss these days. In fact, no regular man would've been able to endure this...

Fortunately, it was early winter time. So, he had put on a few layers of clothes. But, an indistinct bulge could still be seen from time-to-time. One could assume that the Young Master Jun would have had to walk like a soldier with an 'assault rifle' in case this was summer-time.

How could he be in a good mood under such circumstances?

It had become worse over the past three days since his three uncles had taken a different direction from a fork on the road, and had returned to the Dongfang Family. Jun Mo Xie's desires had become more unrestrained since then.

The reason for the three Dongfang Brothers' departure was quite

simple. Only one offspring of their sister's remained. So, they had to save it. They had to return home to give a report to their Old Lady since such an embarrassing event had occurred. And, they also had to make preparations in case the attacks of ridicule didn't come to a stop against the Jun Family. In that case, they would prefer to break the pact and dispatch strong troops. Things could still get out of hand. However, they could always bring the Young Master Jun and the Young Lady Guan Qing Han to the Dongfang Family.

Therefore, the three left without rest when they reached the diversion point.

Jun Mo Xie was riding a horse at the moment. And, he was following the carriage which carried Guan Qing Han and Dugu Xiao Yi. They were inside the same carriage which he had extorted for himself. However, he couldn't even sit in it now. This strict order had come directly from Jun Wu Yi. In fact, Jun Wu Yi had banned his nephew's presence inside that carriage. And, the Young Master Jun had no intentions of violating it either.

However, he again whiffed a smell of that faint and beautiful fragrance coming from ahead. And, the Young Master Jun couldn't prevent his blood vessels from opening up. This gave 'rise' to a reaction he wanted to avoid...

The horse he was riding was calm and settled at first. But, it suddenly neighed and turned its head to shoot a puzzled glance towards Jun Mo Xie. The horse's eyes were filled with doubts and grievance; [Master, I feel wronged since you're riding me. So, I request that you please stop poking me with that short stick. It may sound strange because beggars can't be choosers. I'm a horse. So, shouldn't you give my feelings some thought even if you're feeling 'hungry'? There's a possibility that you may not be minding this since you're in a favorable position... But, that area is also odd... after all, it's my backbone...]

Jun Mo Xie returned the horse's glance with an innocent

expression. [I'm know what you're thinking, brother horse. But, that toy of mine isn't listening to my orders of late. You're such a lively and spirited horse... You must've had the same problems, right?]

[Please understand...]

So, the horse understood it, and turned its head forward. He then continued to move forward while bearing his troubles in silence.

Jun Mo Xie had rested for several days after he had forged the 'Blood of Yellow Flame'. However, he had then discovered this new misery of his'. So, he had decided that he was better-off being a thief. After all, his attention and energy would remain diverted as long as he had something else on his mind.

Jun Mo Xie tried to find an alternate solution to his 'problem' as well. However, he failed again and again. Consequently, the 'thief' ran rampant in the barracks again. How could he be blamed for it under these circumstances?

The Young Master Jun was extremely frustrated, and had nowhere to vent. So, he stole everything... whether civilian or military. However, he had already informed Jun Wu Yi about this matter. He had told his uncle that he needn't panic. He had also mentioned that they weapons are of use to him.

Therefore, Jun Wu Yi had been prepared for it. And, he didn't lose his cool in front of the crisis. He trusted his in his nephew. So, the Supreme Commander Jun didn't differentiate between right and wrong, and opted to go with what he believed was true and just. Thus, he decided to shield the thief with care. The Quartermaster came to Jun Wu Yi one day, and he nervously reported the current status of the armory. The shivering-man had been expecting a harsh punishment... or even execution. However, Jun Wu Yi downplayed the situation, and said while waving his hand, "Is this a big deal? It's just a few blades, isn't it? You're here to trouble me for such trivial things?! Get out!"

The Quartermaster had already taken a decisive decision to report the matter, and had confessed his failure in the face of it. His head had been filled with sweat. His face was full of misgivings when he had come-in. However, his body had relaxed by the time he had stepped out. In fact, he thought that he was dreaming. After all, it wasn't as if he had lost 3 or 5 weapons. He had lost nearly half of the armory. This was a huge sin for the Quartermaster on the watch!

[How did that happen?]

[Since when did the Supreme Commander become so good to talk to? He's being so amiable...] He felt overwhelmingly warm inside.

Therefore, the Young Master Jun started to forge weapons every evening. However, he didn't exert the same effort he had in the previous instance. He only used a hundred swords or so to forge one weapons this time. He forged around nine of those weapons before he lost interest.

[I'm not a fu*king blacksmith! I'm only forging these weapons to kill time. It's not important to do this over and over again. There isn't any meaning to this. This is very boring...]

[Ah, these swords are enough anyway! One for Third Uncle, one for Grandfather, one for Hai Chen Feng, One for Baili Luo Yun... and then, one for Old Pang. There is no one else who has enough strength to use one of these weapons. So, there's no point in giving one to them.]

[Therefore, nine swords are enough.]

There was one transformation in Jun Mo Xie that had become very obvious. His murderous aura had become colder ever since he had developed a better understanding and sense of familiarity with the "Blood of Yellow Flame."

Chapter 418: A Suspicion of Ten Years

His glare had become increasingly cold. The incorporeal murderous spirit was continuously being recycled throughout his body. It would reverse inwards, and then it would come out in a volatile manner. However, it would go back inside after some time.

It was like the rising sea when it was volatile. In fact, it was like a rising sea of converging swords, and could seemingly destroy the clear blue skies above. But, it was quiet when it went back in. And, it would seem that it was a calm ripple which wouldn't rise-up in a thousand years...

Whether it was volatile or receding... the current Jun Mo Xie and the one he would to be in the Tian Xiang City were completely different personalities. In fact, they couldn't be mentioned in the same breath.

The Young Master Jun was extremely fidgety and dizzy at this time. He also felt that his posterior and inner thighs were getting scratched. However, his pike still stood tall and unafraid. It didn't seem willing to surrender in any way.

And, no amount of effort could help in bringing it down...

That was because Dugu Xiao Yi was riding at his side. That girl wasn't sitting inside the carriage. She had demanded for a pony to ride on. She had then decided to ride smugly at the Young Master's side. And, she had been chattering and giggling the entire journey. In fact, she would often jump onto the back of Jun Mo Xie's horse with a 'whooshing' sound, and would then sit behind him. She would then grasp his waist with a content expression. And, she would pay no attention to the onlookers' gaze while doing so.

Therefore, the officers and men had also gotten used to it as time had passed.

After all, that pretty little girl made many of the younger troops

happy by being a visual treat. And, her long-lasting fragrance was also enjoyed by everyone.

For example... Dugu Xiao Yi was speaking with Jun Mo Xie in high-spirits at this time. She then started to choke with panic in the face of the northern wind. After that, she suddenly jumped over to him with a very loud "Pop! Pop!" sound.

However, she hadn't jumped on the horse's back this time. Rather, she had jumped into the Young Master Jun's arms. It would be correct to say that she had landed on the horse's neck. Then, she lowered her posterior, and extended her arms to embrace Jun Mo Xie's neck.

This entire thing happened very suddenly. So, Jun Mo Xie wasn't left with many options. He extended his arms and embraced Dugu Xiao Yi with vigor so that she didn't fall down. This was because some things could be reacted to with instinct rather than being conveyed in words.

What happened next... wasn't unexpected. Jun Mo Xie gave a repressed groan. His face changed color as he bared his teeth. He was going through pain, and a bit of enjoyment at this moment.

Dugu Xiao Yi cried out "Ah!" as her arms circled around Jun Mo Xie's neck. Her posterior had barely touched down when she turned pale. Then, it immediately shot up again. She couldn't help reach out to feel that protrusion next to her buttocks. She then rebuked, "What is this hard thing?! It's pressing me so painfully. I will die of pain! Brother Mo Xie, you've got to pull your weapon away..."

"Puff..."

"Puff..."

The surrounding soldiers whimpered and laughed as they heard this. They obviously knew what was "pressing painfully" against Dugu Xiao Yi. [That's a good and incisive weapon!] Each one of

them was swaying from side to side.

"What is this?! Withdraw it quickly!" Dugu Xiao Yi tried to act quickly, and exerted herself as she pulled on it.

"Ssss..." Jun Mo Xie hissed with pain and pleasure. Then, he hurriedly removed her hand from the 'weapon' she had grabbed, "Stop messing with it! How can you mess with it...?!"

"Why? Never mind. I'll just sit like this!" Dugu Xiao Yi's eyes had turned into big circles as she tried to get up. She then hovered her body a bit above Jun Mo Xie's since she wanted to avoid that thing. However, that didn't help her case since that thing was unwaveringly strong and upright. In fact, she couldn't avoid it no matter how hard she tried. Dugu Xiao Yi didn't like this feeling. So, she turned her buttocks around, "What is that thing? It's so warm as well!"

"Hey..." The accumulated lust inside Jun Mo Xie was ready to burst out. In fact, it could ignite and burn the very heavens! He nearly pressed hard upon the naïve little girl, and committed the deed then and there. But, he eventually controlled himself, and picked the little girl's delicate body and placed her behind him.

The soldiers besides them winked at each other in joy.

Dugu Xiao Yi held Jun Mo Xie's waist from behind. She buried her small face even deeper into his back, and sighed with satisfaction. She then sniffed with her small nose and said, "You have a very good smell. It smells like Little White..." but, these words reminded her of her grievance, and she started to weep, "I don't know where Little White is...! I don't know...boo hoo..."

A dark line appeared on Jun Mo Xie's face. [Little White? Would he have advanced like that if I hadn't helped him? You should've said that he smells like me! Wait... this is wrong, crap! I'm a big man. How can I be compared to such a little beast?]

He felt a divine feeling as he enjoyed the sensation of her fragrant

and soft body sticking to his back. She would stick her red lips to his ears as she'd speak. And, he could clearly hear the words from those sweet lips. Even her soft hair would sometimes touch the sides of his face and mouth in a teasing manner. His nostrils wouldn't be able to help but take-in a whiff of their fragrant smell. Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but feel some waves rippling in his heart.

It was no doubt that his luck with women was wondrous. However, it also entailed misery and suffering. Jun Mo Xie had opened the gates that had led him to the world of passion very recently. Therefore, something like this would only simulate his blood vessels into opening wider. And, this meant that it would become hard for him to control himself. Therefore, he could only help himself by wearing additional layers of clothing to the front of his body.

He couldn't endure anymore at this time. However, they suddenly heard a loud voice from the front, "Jun Wu Yi! Come out if you're a man, and fight me to the death!"

That voice moved like the thunder in the sky. It was a mix of craziness and extreme hatred. Everyone in the twenty-thousand-strong army could hear it.

It was Silver Blizzard City's Xiao Han's voice!

This change had been very sudden...

The troops who carried the banners at the front came to a stop. The thousands of troops and horses didn't utter a sound. They repressed their emotions and remained quiet. They would've toppled any mountains, and crossed any seas if they were given the order. Anyone who'd speak rudely would've been turned into minced meat... even if he was a Sky Xuan expert. There was an ocean of soldiers in this army. So, one would replace the other until they had trampled upon the enemy.

Jun Mo Xie's expression changed, and his glare became cold. He kicked his horse. It took a step forward and suddenly picked speed.

Dugu Xiao Yi screamed in fear behind him. She then looked up as she tightly held onto Jun Mo Xie's clothes.

The men from the Silver Blizzard City had sensed the imposing aura of that green-clothed girl. It was unlike any regular person, and exceeded everyone else. But then, she had retracted her claws once the white-clothed girl had intervened and resolved the conflict. Therefore, everyone was at ease at this time. Moreover, Jun Wu Yi had been their intended target in any case. So, they would be wronged if they carelessly started to fight with some other great expert instead.

It wouldn't have mattered whether they would've won or lost. It would've been unnecessary to pick that fight. Everyone had relaxed. However, they had begun to curse Xiao Han and his nephew; [You Damned lecherous idiots! You should know who you can provoke! Are you capable enough of provoking these two women? These two guys are very reckless!]

[The idiocy of these two dim-wits needs to be dealt with later on. They've potentially implicated everyone with this one stupid act of theirs.]

[Today's happening are very worrying...]

However, the problem had been averted for the time being. So, everyone's minds turned to the upcoming challenge that Xiao Han would deliver to Jun Wu Yi. It was strange to say this... but, all of them had previously been hoping to witness Xiao Han teach Jun Wu Yi a good lesson. However, everyone had suddenly changed their minds. And, all of them wanted Xiao Han to be beaten by Jun Wu Yi now.

[Eh. I hope he gets a proper beating. It's fine as long as he doesn't die.]

[The green-clothed girl may not seek out our people to cause more trouble if Xiao Han gets beaten into a miserable condition after having provoked her, right?]

Xiao Han stood holding his weapon. His clothes were like snow, and his sword was like silver. He seemed to have some traces of elegance to him. But, his twisted expression had destroyed that image.

The army halted in a proper order.

After that, a slow reply came, "Xiao Han?"

Jun Wu Yi was the one who had spoken back.

The vanguard of the army parted as Jun Mo Xie slowly pushed his uncle's wheelchair to the front. The eyes of on Jun Wu Yi's tranquil face were filled with hot fire.

[Xiao Han, it's good that you are here to look for me since I was looking for you as well. So, let's settle our debts since you've come knocking at my door.]

[You're looking for me because of your hatred for me for taking away your wife. But, I've also been looking for you to settle old debts. Ours' is an enmity that can't be reconciled.]

[For my eldest and second brothers... For my two nephews, and... for Yao!]

Jun Mo Xie was also going berserk with anger. In fact, he was very sullen and fierce. [Fu*k! You Silver Blizzard City people had to show-up at such an important juncture?! That's good! This Young Master will loosen your muscles and bones! Our situation is destined to have only one end. So, I will help you attain death if you wish for it. In fact, I believe that using my Flame of Primal Chaos would be a complete waste on you guys!]

The anger of this uncle-nephew duo soared. Their accumulated anger was making them feel like going berserk. They wanted to wreak havoc through the heavens. There was a mountainous pressure around them.

"Jun Wu Yi! Do you dare to fight me like a man today?!" Xiao Han's expression was twisted, "Don't hide behind your thousands

of soldiers and refuse me! What's the use of hiding behind other experts? Fight me for Yao!"

"For Yao..." Jun Wu Yi repeated that word in a low voice. Then, he raised his head in a flash of understanding, and a sharp light flashed across his eyes, "Xiao Han! What 'hiding behind thousands of soldiers'? What 'hiding behind other experts'? You used to be bold in those days, right? You used to move freely within the thousands of soldiers, right? Are you scared to attack my army today? What happened to your courage? What happened to your strength? Have you grown inferior in these ten years?"

Jun Wu Yi's words had seemed sinister and taunting in nature. But, these words went far-back and deep to a huge issue that had been plaguing Jun Wu Yi's mind. [How did that tragedy occur with my elder brothers and nephews all those years ago?]

This matter had been bothering Jun Wu Yi for ten years! It had also left him to suspect everyone for ten years!

Chapter 419: It's a Good Sword! It's a Cheap-o!

It was important to know that the tents of an army of hundreds of thousands of soldiers would spread out over a distance of over five kilometers if they were to pitch camp. And, the Supreme Commander's tent would be in the middle.

It wouldn't be easy to even infiltrate into a five-kilometer-long army camp. One could only imagine how difficult it would be to achieve this feat if they had to fight the camp's soldiers en route. It's true that one could only have to infiltrate the camp half-way to reach the Supreme Commander's tent. However, what kind of strength would be needed to achieve such a feat?

Even a strong senior expert couldn't fly along a five-kilometer-long camp without pausing for breath. And, they would be hemmed-in by the soldiers if they paused for breath. So, they wouldn't be able to get out of that encirclement for a while. Thus, they would be left panting by the time they'd reach the Supreme Commander's tent. This infiltrator would've wasted a lot of energy in this process as well...

However, the Supreme Commander's tent could be promptly shifted if the opposite party created a disturbance.

Perhaps the Solitary Falcon could attempt to assassinate Jun Wu Yi amongst his twenty-thousand soldiers. However, he too would surely find it a difficult task to accomplish.

Only the Young Master Jun could bring-back the severed head of the Supreme Commander from within his thousands of soldiers. And, this was because he could rely upon the amazing Yin-Yang Escape technique.

However, Jun Wu Yi clearly knew that the individual who stood opposing was only a Sky Xuan expert. Moreover, this individual

hadn't appeared out of the blue like an assassin. Therefore, he didn't need to fear an attack he wouldn't be able to prepare for...

Moreover, there was a very strict guard around the Supreme Commander. It could be reckoned that even a mosquito wouldn't be able to fly-in on their watch.

So, how could someone succeed in storming-in?

In fact, it would be impossible to kill Jun Wu Yi unless there was a traitor in his army's ranks.

[However, who could've this traitor been...? That is... if one existed in the first place. And, where are these traitors now?] Jun Wu Yi had always had these suspicions. In fact, he had been suspicious about someone particular. But, the target of his suspicion was someone important. In fact, that person's influence could create huge problems if Jun Wu Yi acted recklessly. So, Jun Wu Yi needed to confirm those suspicions first. Thus, he needed concrete proof for it!

This was the major difference between Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi. Jun Wu Yi was a genuine talent of the Jun Family's later generation. In fact, he and Jun Zhan Tian were very similar in this regard. They could even give up their hatred for the country, the people, and the family. They could at least delay their revenge if needed...

However, Jun Mo Xie would move into action then-and-there if the same thing had happened with him. He would've investigated anyone he was suspicious about. In fact, he would even torture and threaten them, [I will argue with my fists no matter how big and strong your backing is. And, I will destroy your whole family if you even hurt a single finger of mine! I won't bother if many innocents die because of the storm this matter creates. I will only blame the person who caused this trouble. How can the victim's family blame me for it?]

"Ha ha! Are you confused Jun Wu Yi? Is scratching your head

over this matter making you depressed?!" Xiao Han had a maddened grin on his face, "Let me tell you that I know the inside story. But, I won't tell you! I will never do it! You can go to hell with this question of yours! Ha ha ha..."

"So, my guess was right! There existed another inside story to this matter! I will fight out since you've challenged me! First you, and then your Silver Blizzard City! Not for anything else... but, for my two elder brothers..." Jun Wu Yi's eyes were full of murderous intention. A light of anguish flashed deep inside his eyes.

His heart was hurting at this time. [Eldest Brother... Second Brother...]

[Forgive me for taking so long to erase the disgrace of your death!]

Jun Wu Yi's glare became sharp. He reached out with his hand, and said, "Give me my sword!"

Jun Mo Xie was already prepared for this. He twisted his wrist, and a sword appeared in his hand with a green light. Then, he handed it to his uncle.

Jun Wu Yi reached out and took it. However, the sword's weight was unexpectedly higher than he had imagined. Even someone at the Sky Xuan middle rank wouldn't have been able to catch it if they were careless. His wrists got bent, and the sword started to sink downwards. However, he moved his Xuan power, and stopped the sword's fall. That sword was average in terms of its looks, but its weight was a over three times that of a normal sword.

Moreover, this sword wasn't even the second-best sword that Jun Mo Xie had forged. In fact, Jun Mo Xie had forged this sword only moments ago in an urgent manner. And, he had only used fifteen swords to forge this one. Jun Wu Yi's could've been able to handle a sword that had been forged using hundreds of swords. However, the weight of the sword would've been ten times heavier than a normal one. So, he wouldn't have been able to use it to fight

freely. Thus, the Third Master would've needed some practice-time with that weapon if he wished to use it in an effective fight against the enemy. It would've been counterproductive to give him such a sword.

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had quickly forged this sword while they were walking to the front. It was only thrice the normal weight of a sword. But, a man of Jun Wu Yi's strength could become efficient at using it very quickly.

This hastily-forged sword's quality couldn't be compare to the one Jun Mo Xie had forged earlier. But, it was still a 'divine weapon ranked' sword when compared to regular swords.

Jun Wu Yi looked at his nephew in astonishment. His nephew returned his glance with a faint smile, but didn't say a word.

The Supreme Commander waved his sword. The sword started to move downwards in a gloomy manner. But, a strange blue light was emitted from the sword as it moved. This light was very similar to the color of lightening. And, it painted a slash in the air as it moved downwards!

"It's a good sword! It's a very good sword!" Jun Wu Yi blurted out loudly.

Xiao Bu Yu's expression had also become heavy on the opposite side. [This sword is clearly a divine weapon!]

"Elder Sister, I think that this sword is a little strange. Moreover, this sword's light and texture aren't very different from the one that Lei Wu Bei had used."

The Snake King had arrived besides the white-clothed girl's ear when she had spoken that in a soft tone. But, the latter didn't even react to what was spoken. The Snake King couldn't help but find it strange. At first, she thought that the white-clad girl was also attracted to that sword. But then, she raised her head and saw that her sister was staring unblinking at another direction.

Green Hunter followed that gaze, and saw a smart young man. He was standing tall and straight. He looked handsome, and his eyes were flickering. He stood amongst an army of thousands, but he still appeared solitary. It seemed as if he was the only one in the entire world!

This one glance at him was enough to give rise to a bitter and lonely feeling in Green Hunter's heart. In fact, this feeling had arisen from the very depths of her heart. She felt that this youngster had always felt loneliness... boundless loneliness. And, she couldn't help but be hurt at perceiving this feeling...

Jun Mo Xie!

Snake King still remembered this youngster.

However, she couldn't understand why her sister was staring at that youngster without blinking... [That youngster is indeed quite talented for a human. He possesses such a great cultivation at such a young age! But, he still isn't in the league of our Tian Fa's Beast Kings.] So, Green Hunter retracted her gaze in bafflement. And, she saw that her sister's hand was still clasping the teacup as if nothing had happened. However, her knuckles had turned white. Her expression had also changed, and it looked like she was about to burst forth.

[Why?]

She could see that the teacup in her sister's hand still looked intact. In fact, it still seemed to be full of tea. But, the Snake King's discerning eyes could tell that the teacup had already changed into dust. It was only being kept in-shape by her sister's supreme Xuan efficacy. And, its true form would be revealed if her Xuan efficacy were removed. Then, it would turn into flying dust.

[Elder sister has never been so angry... She wouldn't have behaved so strangely even if she saw a most-hated enemy of hers. So, why now...?]

It was a pity that there wasn't enough time for Green Hunter to ponder more over this matter. And, that was because the two individuals had started to mobilize their strengths in the field.

Jun Wu Yi had exclaimed, "It's a good sword! It's a very good sword!" However, Xiao Han's face had turned red when he had heard this. That's because he had somehow managed to mishear those words as, "It's a cheap-o! It's a cheap-o!"

Xiao Han appeared to be seething in anger.

The people of the Silver Blizzard City had often passed this comment behind his back. They had often considered him to be a 'cheap' person. Even the Elders of his own family had often felt that he had failed to meet their expectation. In fact, they had often looked at him and wondered, [How can you be so cheap?]

[That woman doesn't love you. She never harbored a good impression of you. She loved someone else. And, you tried to kill that man? What're you doing? Those two were happy with each other. And, this woman is the daughter of the Lord of the City. Do you genuinely believe that a betrothal of children is binding upon them when they mature? However, you still took revenge against his family, and didn't let up in the matter... Are you genuinely that reluctant to lose the title of the Lord's Son-in-law? Then, you think that they are 'cheap' people. Who can be called 'cheap' if not you?!]

[How can you be so cheap, Xiao Han? Why are you so cheap?!]

[I'm cheap? I'm fu*king cheap?!] Xiao Han's eyes became red. A bright snow-white sword-light flashed. However, Jun Wu Yi had barely gotten out of his wheelchair by this time. In fact, he was still getting into a fighting position. He had stood up. But, he hadn't readied himself for the fight. However, Xiao Han had still moved into action. Wasn't such behavior and character 'cheap'? In fact, any man would find it very hard to find a better adjective.

Jun Wu Yi understood his opponent's character very well. So, he

was already prepared for something like this. Therefore, he quickly lifted his sword, and the two swords clashed with a "clang!" The wheelchair flew back like an arrow under the pressure of the two swords' violent clash. Jun Wu Yi's body had also been swept away. His black clothes fluttered as he was sent flying fifteen meters. Then, he jabbed his sword in the ground, and leveraged it to support his body as he turned around.

Jun Wu Yi dropped down, and sat on the ground. He looked at Xiao Han and said, "You came here to fight. So, you mustn't worry about injuries!"

Xiao Han felt a burst of regret. His wrists hurt from the impact of their swords' collision. Moreover, his sword had also been nicked badly.

It was important to know that Xiao Han had carried that sword for over twenty years. It had been made using Xuan jade. It had been carried by several generations of the Xiao Family's members. And, it was inherited by each member from his elders when they came of age...

His sword complimented the Silver City's Xuan techniques. And, this combination formed a cold and sharp Qi. Moreover, this sword was very sharp, and differently textured. In fact, these qualities made it a world-class weapon. Xiao Han's sword had made the ones used by his opponents feel cheap in past encounters. In fact, there had been times when opponents with a slightly stronger Xuan strength had fallen into a huge disadvantage due to the power of his sword. But, Xiao Han had unexpectedly suffered this reversal of fate in this instance. And, his sword had also been damaged in that clash.

However, Jun Wu Yi's long sword still looked fine. It hadn't incurred the slightest of damage!

[Don't tell me the sword in his hand is one of the rare treasures of the world?]

Then, he was suddenly struck by a realization. [That sword is one aspect. But, I can feel that Jun Wu Yi's Xuan efficacy is very profound. In fact, it's even better than my own! How is this possible? In fact, it would be hard to get the upper hand if I use my Sky Xuan strength and my divine weapon!]

However, Xiao Han's confidence soared once again when he saw Jun Wu Yi sitting on the ground. He then thought; [So what if your Xuan Qi is stronger? You're still a cripple! Can't I even beat a cripple?!]

The corners of Xiao Han's mouth twisted and formed a cruel curve. He shouted in an elated manner. Then, he turned into a bright light along with his sword. After that, he dashed forward to pierce Jun Wu Yi.

Chapter 420: It's Not True!

The sword burst into a bright light of a silvery shower as it reached midway. It then transformed into a bright arc and exploded with a "Bang," It resembled fireworks as it did so. Then, the brightly glittering sword started to revolve around Jun Wu Yi's body.

This trick of Xiao Han's could be called a flashy trick. It would harass the enemy and dazzle them. Then, it would attack the enemy in a manner which couldn't be defended against.

This was a circling attack if things were to be explained in a simpler manner. So, each strike would fall from behind at Jun Wu Yi's body.

Bluntly put, this attack could easily bully a crippled man!

His actions were utterly shameless. In fact, they were cheap beyond any known equal. Xiao Han's trick play had clearly proved his character's make.

Xiao Han's attack was surely very shameless in its make. However, Jun Wu Yi's situation had become dire because of Xiao Han. In fact, he was in grave danger.

No one could bear to watch as Xiao Han used that trick. And, the Seven Swords of the Silver Blizzard City were also included in the list of these people...

"What's going on? His legs aren't working. Isn't it obvious that he can't move about? Is this how you save your honor? Is this how the Silver City works?" the one who spoke-up was the Third Sword of the Seven Swords. He was frowning, and his expression was one of disgust.

"Jun Wu Yi's legs are crippled. He is crippled, but he's not useless. He spent ten years focusing on his Xuan Qi. So, it isn't very surprising that he's at the middle rank of the Sky Xuan level. And,

that is already superior to that of Xiao Han's. Moreover, his sword is far better than Xiao Han's Xuan Jade Sword. Xiao Han's way of dealing with matters isn't that great. However, it still gets him the greatest advantage if you compare the two sides. You think that he should stop doing what benefits him the most? Isn't that courting death?"

The Sixth Elder said coldly, "One is allowed to commit any sort of crimes while fighting to the death against a mortal enemy. Where does the question of honor arise in it?"

Xiao Han's methods were lowly and cheap. But, the two men were fighting to the death at the end of the day. Moreover, the fight was full of splendor and brilliance. So, it didn't matter whether it was the people from the Silver Blizzard City... or the men from Tian Xiang's army — all of them were paying full attention to the fight. In fact, there were barely any exceptions.

There were only a very few exceptions. However, that didn't mean that there were no exceptions at all. For example...

One such exception was the Silver City's Han Yan Meng. She was pouting as she leaned against Mu Xue Tong. Her expression was one of grievance, and she lacked the interest to even cast a single glance at the ongoing fight.

Mu Xue Tong was stone faced on the other hand. He was worried about Jun Wu Yi. He looked towards his side at Han Yang Meng, and whispered in her ear, "Why do you feel wronged, little girl? Isn't this a great opportunity if you're against this marriage? Foolish little girl..."

Han Yan Meng's delicate body trembled. Her eyes and her small face shone as she exclaimed, "Wow ha-ha!" she suddenly laughed and jumped onto Mu Xue Tong's arms. Then, she started to sway with unspeakable excitement.

Jun Wu Yi had been facing inconvenience due to his body's disability. And, Xiao Han wasn't the kind of man who would spare

him after getting the advantage. Therefore, he had set-up an overwhelming superiority for himself by now. In fact, the Third Master Jun would've died a long time ago if it weren't for his superior Xuan efficacy and his fearsome divine weapon. However, only the final conclusion determines whether an advantage is turned into a victory or not...

The men of the Silver City looked-on as the arrogant Xiao Han continued to dominate the battle. However, their expressions seemed very complex. In fact, one couldn't even tell whether they were excited, or disappointed... or happy or sad.

...

The white-clothed girl finally moved her eyes from Jun Mo Xie, and looked at the fight.

She glanced once.

She only shot a single glance!

Then, she sighed, "That Silver Blizzard City's Xiao Han is done for."

The Snake King frowned and said, "I also think that this fight is somewhat strange. But, I can't put my finger on what's making it seem that way. I believe that Jun Wu Yi is stronger than Xiao Han. But, his legs..."

The white-clad girl stated in a low voice, "Jun Wu Yi's legs are fine. He's pretending to be a cripple! He has deliberately created the disadvantages that we see before us.

"Jun Wu Yi surely wins when it comes to Xuan Cultivation and strength of weapon. But, he has been a cripple for many years. Therefore, he's still quite unfamiliar and unpracticed with his martial skill. And, that Silver City's man's martial skill is quite good. So, it outpaces Jun Wu Yi's by far. This is one area where Jun Wu Yi has a disadvantage against Xiao Han. However, it's not difficult for him to win. He only needs to shoot down the enemy's

sword with his powerful skill. That can be enough to determine the difference between victory and defeat.

"But, Jun Wu Yi's seems more interested in killing his opponent. The difference in strength isn't much between the two. And, Jun Wu Yi can't strike and kill Xiao Han while the others from the Silver City watch since they are bound to stop that from happening. Therefore, he has arranged this situation. He's making his opponent exhaust his Xuan Qi as much as possible. Moreover, he's also creating a chance to kill him with one strike. And, Xiao Han won't be able to survive if Jun Wu Yi gets that chance. Moreover, no one will be able to stop him either."

"I see!" The Snake King finally caught on.

An air-rendering sound echoed as a sword screeched through the air. Xiao Han's hair fluttered in the wind in a crazed manner. His expression was that of cruel pleasure. His skills and strength had reached their peak after this warm-up. His entire life's skill was in that sword-strike along with everything else. This was his killer move!

The Merciless Blizzard Sword!

The temperature of that area suddenly decreased. It felt as if a cold wind from mid-winter had started to screech-about.

"You're toast, Jun Wu Yi! How does it matter that your Xuan Qi is greater than mine? You're still a cripple! A cripple! And, you will die a cripple now! Ha ha ha..." Xiao Han seemed like a manic as he laughed.

Flowery and hexagonal snow-flakes suddenly appeared in the sky along with Xiao Han's laughter. And, they shone brightly as they floated down in a dreamy manner. Then, they got filled with crazy sword-light in a split second. This attack seemed full of murderous intention as it frantically moved towards the spot where Jun Wu Yi was sitting on the ground.

Jun Wu Yi was on the ground. So, he couldn't evade even if he wanted to...

Xiao Bu Yu sighed. His heart hesitated. [Should I go forth and stop this? Or should I let things continue?]

However, the Solitary Falcon and Jun Mo Xie suddenly smiled in a strange manner as they watched this happen from afar. This was a kind of a 'sneering' smile... and, one of elation! But, everyone else was focusing on the fight between those two men. Therefore, they hadn't noticed this.

Xiao Han's mind was brimming with murderous hatred and joy at that moment. [I have finally achieved my dream of many years! I have finally washed away my disgrace with his blood! You were always unwavering, right... Yao? Well, your lover has died by my sword today!]

[If I can't have you — then, no one else can either!]

Xiao Han's face seemed twisted as he moved his sword crazily and sent it flying like an arrow at Jun Wu Yi with the entirety of his strength.

It seemed that Jun Wu Yi couldn't do anything anymore. His sword circled above his head, but was sent flying by the impact with a screeching sound. However, Xiao Han didn't relax despite this positive development. Instead, he continued to laugh as he shot his sword forward.

Suddenly, a smile appeared on Jun Wu Yi's calm and collected face. His smile was one of contentment and pride. In fact, he even winked at Xiao Han. Everyone else was left to wonder why the Blood General would make such a gesture.

And then, almost everyone suddenly cried out in shock!

It wasn't because of the Blood General's expression. Instead, it was because the scene that had unfolded in front of them was too strange and unbelievable!

Because, at that moment...

Jun Wu Yi had suddenly jumped and stood up. He even seemed to have walked with vitality. After that, Jun Wu Yi made a single and simple move as Xiao Han's powerful sword came overhead — he ferociously kicked Xiao Han's abdomen!

Xiao Han had made his move in the anticipation of the effects of the poison. In fact, he had focused his entire energy on Jun Wu Yi's upper body. In fact, he hadn't even thought about his opponent's lower body. How could a man whose legs had been crippled ever use them to attack back? Only a fool would think about that...

Xiao Han had become even more relieved once Jun Wu Yi had lost his sword. Therefore, he was prepared for his opponent's upper body to be cut under the influence of his final attack. In fact, he had assumed the attitude of someone who was about to win, and his mind was full of thoughts about the ways he would torture his opponent. [You have always been under my foot, Jun Wu Yi! Just like before! It doesn't matter what method I use... it's all my skill! I can insult you wantonly as long as I win. I can trifle with you to my heart's content! I can wreak havoc upon you!]

However, Xiao Han could've never imagined that his crippled opponent could kick him! And, so hard at that!

[How did Jun Wu Yi kick me? Isn't he a cripple? How can a man who's his legs have been crippled kick? How did he kick me?]

That kick was powerful... very powerful! Xiao Han's body flew with that kick. In fact, he had gone flying out like a kite with its string cut. His sword-light didn't do any better than he did. And, it was sent flying in disarray as well. Moreover, Xiao Han's mouth and nose had also started to stream with blood.

However, his eyes were still full of disbelief. Even his mouth was opened wide, and hadn't closed. [How is this possible? Wasn't he crippled for the last ten years? So, how can he kick me?]

[How...?]

Never had such a conflicting feeling of anger and amazement come out so freely from Xiao Han's psyche as they had in this moment while he was falling...

Jun Wu Yi didn't let up. His body shot like an arrow to keep up with Xiao Han even though he had been kicked to fly backwards. He kicked his enemy firmly on his chest again. Xiao Han screamed in pain as a result. His eyes reflected the chaos and confusion of his mind confusion as a rib cracked. Meanwhile, that rare sword from the Silver City had flown out, and no one knew where it had disappeared to.

However, Jun Wu Yi didn't give him enough time to think about it. The Third Master Jun's fists were clenched as they resolutely smashed against Xiao Han's temples. Jun Wu Yi's eyes became red as his fists came into contact with Xiao Han's face and felt his facial temperature...

[Is this the elated feeling one gets from squishing their enemy's flesh when they take their revenge?]

[Ten years of animosity! Ten years of hatred! Ten years of separation! Ten years of sullen grief! Ten years of regret! Ten years of deformity!]

"Aaaargh!!!" Jun Wu Yi screamed madly as he faced upwards. He punched like a madman as his mighty face got covered with guilt-ridden tears.

[Eldest brother! Sister-in-law! I will take revenge for you!]

[Second brother! You little brother hasn't forgotten you!]

[Can you see this, little nephews? Can you see this?]

[Yao! My Yao!]

The lowly man who had been the reason for all those crimes was before him. Jun Wu Yi was screaming noiselessly. Tears continued

to gush out as he resolutely continued to strike Xiao Han's abdomen. He could only hear the "Crack!" and "Bang!" of his hits, and the sound of escaping air as Xiao Han's dantian broke with an explosion.

Xiao Han's body flew out with a "whoosh." However, he was unable to feel any pain at this moment. His eyes were full of fear and disbelief as he opened them wide in shock. He continued to call out, "Impossible! Absolutely impossible! How can this be possible? It's not true! It's not true..."

However, Jun Wu Yi still didn't let him breath, and got close to him in an instant...

There was a "Bang!" and a "Slam!" as he fiercely hit his enemy's flesh to swirls.

Chapter 421: Jun Mo Xie Fights Xiao Bu Yu

Jun Wu Yi was giving full vent to the ten years of accumulated grief and resentment at this moment! He attacked with punches after punches. And, the cruel sound of his opponent's body being hit seemed like the most beautiful music to Jun Wu Yi's ears.

Xiao Han didn't wish to 'insta-kill' Jun Wu Yi with his sword. He wanted to torture the Supreme Commander in a slow and dragged-out manner. Similarly, Jun Wu Yi didn't wish to leave Xiao Han alone either. Moreover, he didn't even desire to crush the man's skull with his fists very quickly. And, that's because that would be too easy a death for him.

[Ten years of hatred! Eldest Brother and Second Brother had died because of him. The two younger nephews are also dead! Elder Sister-in-law lies far away in a coma. The old man has seen so many of his progeny die before his eyes. He's so old, and yet he's striving to keep the Jun Family from the verge of a collapse. The once flourishing Jun Family was on the decline. It's like a mountain of hatred... a sea of hatred! And, this man is the root cause of that hatred! How can Xiao Han's death offset so much hatred? Wouldn't it be too easy a way-out for him?!]

Jun Wu Yi had never felt hate like he did against Xiao Han. Even if he met his personal enemy, or a crazy child-trafficker... or an Evil Lord who didn't shirk from any crime... the Third Master Jun would think that giving them a quick death with his sword would be enough. But, he didn't believe that it would be enough for Xiao Han! Not even nearly enough...

Jun Wu Yi wouldn't even wish to kill him if it were possible. He would've wanted to leave his enemy to be tortured slowly for a lifetime. The Third Master Jun wanted to expose Xiao Han to the pain from the very-eighteenth level of hell every day. And, he believed that even that would be too less for Xiao Han...

A long sword fell from a high altitude in the sky. It carried a cold and dazzling light with it. The sword seemingly cut the very sky as it shot down. It then struck into a large rock on the roadside with a loud screech, and embedded itself into it. Only the sword hilt and the handle remained outside the rock...

It was Jun Wu Yi's sword!

It was an extremely sharp and divine weapon.

It was so sharp and powerful that it had pierced a solid rock up-till its hilt like it was tofu. [What kind of a divine weapon is this?!] Almost every warrior who looked at that sword had sparks blazing in his eyes. In fact, even the Solitary Falcon was no exception to this even though he had never used a sword!

It had to be said that the fact that Jun Wu Yi's legs had been healed had shocked everyone from the Silver City. And, they still hadn't recovered from it even when Xiao Han had got caught in that storm-like barrage of attacks.

"How did you dare?!" However, everyone finally recovered from their reverie owing to this new and astonishing sight. Xiao Bu Yu shouted angrily and moved out. And, his hand moved like a sky-rendering hatchet which would behead Jun Wu Yi.

Xiao Bu Yu would've been pained and enraged if Jun Wu Yi's sword had killed Xiao Han. But, it would've been difficult for Xiao Bu Yu to break his position. After all, these two men were in the middle of a duel to the death. However, Jun Wu Yi had gained an absolute advantage, but he wasn't killing Xiao Han. Instead, he was meticulously beating and torturing his enemy. And, this amounted to the fall of the Silver Blizzard City's honor... And, the Xiao Family's honor! How could Xiao Bu Yu sit and watch this happen?

"Old Man! You're very shameless!" an exceptionally lofty figure appeared as the angry shout resounded. He somehow appeared right in front of Xiao Bu Yu, and a glittering sword flashed towards his throat without any warning.

The sword hadn't touched his throat yet. However, Xiao Bu Yu had already started to feel terrible goose bumps on his throat because of the sword's Qi. A sharp and heaven-piercing aura enveloped him. [Divine weapon! It's a divine weapon!]

Xiao Bu Yu was shocked by this. [How can the Jun Family have so many divine weapons?] A Spirit Xuan's body was stronger than steel. So, they needn't fear attacks from normal weapons. But, this heaven-conquering divine sword left Xiao Bu Yu to feel that his life was as fragile as tofu. In fact, such a feeling could be compared to the instinctual premonition of death.

Xiao Bu Yu didn't slip up at this critical juncture. His body moved quickly, and he changed direction at a lightning-fast speed. A long string of after-images snaked his trail as he soared into the air. Then, he stayed there since he was aware that he was out of the attacker's range now. Moreover, the Xiao Elder could finally look at his assailant from this position now...

However, Xiao Bu Yu nearly fell from the sky when he finally saw the attacker. So, he rubbed his eyes hard and looked again. However, the Xiao Elder couldn't help but resemble the predicament of his grandson's astonishment. His mouth opened wide; and didn't shut back either...

[How is this possible?]

It was a young and aloof figure. He held a coldly gleaming sword, and his face had a sneering expression as he floated in front.

Jun Mo Xie!

The sword in his hand...

[A Divine weapon!]

The Blood of Yellow Flame!

Young Master Jun seemed quite pleased with himself. The first life his Blood of Fellow Flame would take was going to be a Spirit Xuan expert! This was indeed worthy of his sword's name and

fame!

"Do you have any honor, old man? This is a fight between two men. And, you're still getting involved? What kind of a Spirit Xuan expert are you?" Jun Mo Xie gave a sneering smile, "Your grandson was the one who made that challenge. May I ask the Second Xiao Elder what the people from the Silver Blizzard City think about the prospect of taking a man's name for a fight to the death? Are you still going to enter the fight? Will your entire group fight against one man now?"

Xiao Bu Yu's white beard fluttered in the wind as he snorted coldly and spoke-up, "This brat talks too much!" A severely cold wind arose from his hands as he rushed towards Jun Mo Xie.

Xiao Bu Yu's state of mind had become calm after the initial shock. [Jun Mo Xie must be a heaven-conquering talent, but he's still seventeen or eighteen years old at the most. So, how can he be difficult to deal with? So what if he has a divine weapon? I will beat this arrogant brat down. Then, I will take that divine weapon for myself!]

That divine weapon had suddenly taken priority over Xiao Han's life.

Jun Mo Xie sneered as his body flitted. He pointed his sword one way, and attack in the other. His sword emitted a showery light as he confronted the Silver City's level-four Spirit Xuan Xiao Bu Yu with an unexpected attack! And, the entire sky got filled with a brilliant rain of light as a result.

Xiao Bu Yu was already at level-four of the Spirit Xuan realm. So, he was almost at the level of a Great Master. But, he was still nothing in the Young Master Jun's eyes. Jun Mo Xie had the Blood of Yellow Flame in his hand. And, that had made his strength explode to two-or-three levels higher. Moreover, the Young Master Jun's strength couldn't be compared to the regular Sky Xuan experts. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie's overall strength was in no way

less than Xiao Bu Yu's.

In fact, he could even take the lead!

The curtain of night had finally descended to rule the land by now...

There was fighting all around. In fact, it was a situation of open conflict.

The Solitary Falcon had soared like an eagle at lightning-fast speed, and had arrived to stop the Seven Swords. The Seven Swords hadn't dared to break formation in front of the might of the Great Master. All of them were at the Sky Xuan peak level. So, they couldn't compare to the Solitary Falcon. They could barely deal with him if they were to fight together. However, they wouldn't have the skill to deal with the Solitary Falcon in case even one of them slipped-up. And, all of them would die as a result of that slip...

The fighting had come to a stalemate for the time-being.

The other five Elders had wanted to help. But, they had suddenly felt suffocated for some reason. And, they were left with a desire to lock themselves in as a result. They had been enshrouded in a biting cold killing intention. Moreover, this killing intention was so grandiose that it seemed as if the entire sky had been filled with an extremely powerful murderous aura.

However, it was strange that they couldn't tell where that murderous aura was coming from. So, how could they lock themselves in? The green-clothed girl was passively watching from the side besides them. So, it obviously wasn't her. And, the white-clothed girl had her back towards the five Elders. Plus, she was calmly drinking her tea like before. So, it couldn't have been her either...

[Who is this? Who can have such a terrifying strength?!]

However, it was evident that this person's strength had already

exceeded that of a Great Master's. In fact, it had even reached the highest of levels. Each of the five Elders was at the Spirit Xuan realm. But, all of them stood dumbstruck in the face of such a monstrous aura. So, each one of them transported and scattered their strength throughout their bodies, and did their best to withstand the onslaught of that murderous aura. Therefore, they couldn't help Xiao Han or the Seven Swords at this moment. In fact, they couldn't even move their fingers...

They simply couldn't dare to move an inch!

And, this was because they felt that they shouldn't do a thing. They believed that all of them would get killed if anyone of them moved.

[We can't rush-in at this time! Only one person will die at this time if things come to the worst. And, that will be Xiao Han... But, all of us will be wiped out if we try to help.]

This wasn't a threat. It was a fact instead. And, that extremely powerful aura had verified the authenticity of this fact to them.

The green-clad girl opened her eyes wide in surprise. She was the only one who knew where that murderous aura was coming from. There were countless capable experts in that world. But, the Snake King had met only one individual who could exert such an aura and control it so freely.

And, that individual was her elder sister!

[What's going on? Elder Sister obviously hates Jun Mo Xie. So, why is she helping him?]

This was truly difficult to understand. And, it seemed that the highly-intelligent Snake King would also break her skull before she'd come to understand why this was happening.

Jun Mo Xie was fighting Xiao Bu Yu.

The Young Master Jun's moves were marvelous. He was flying in the sky at a very quick speed. He would go to the front, to the back,

the left, and the right. However, Xiao Bu Yu stood gloomily and calmly. His breathing was steady, and his expression was hostile. This had gone far beyond the expectations of everyone present. The rumored greatest debauchee of Tian Xiang wasn't just taking-on the maybe-sixty-years-or-older and well-renowned Spirit Xuan Xiao Bu Yu... he was also proving to be a match for him! Moreover, the youngster was also taking the initiative for over seventy-percent of the offensives.

Xiao Bu Yu's face was calm and collected. However, he was shocked on the inside.

He had never been in such a fight in his entire life! In fact, the Old Man hadn't even felt like this when he used to spar with the Old Lord of the Silver City. He felt like his limbs had been tied. Moreover, it seemed that danger lurked everywhere.

[Why does it feel that I have no control over life or death?]

[How can this young brat make me feel such a strong sense of danger?!]

[This brat's moves are extremely weird. I can't even predict his next move. And, he's not giving me any good opportunity to attack either. He keeps appearing at different places for a very short time. And, his unpredictable moves are cornering me into a difficult position. Moreover, his intermittent sword moves are very hard to counter-attack against.]

That youngster's sword moves were extremely amazing. In fact, they had far-exceeded the range of Xiao Bu Yu's imagination. Every slash was unrivalled in fierceness, and every move was full of murderous aura. However, none of the moves could be tracked. They were like an antelope's horns... untraceable! Moreover, every attack was directed at his opponent's weak spots!

[There is an amazing repository inside the Silver Blizzard City. And, every move that the members ever knew about have been written down there. They even have the corresponding methods of

countering those moves. But, this brat is continuously changing his styles. In fact, his swordplay has changed more than a dozen times. However, I can't even recognize these styles. So, it's useless to even mention the prospect of countering them!]

[This is simply unimaginable!]

Chapter 422: Exactly What Was Desired From The Game!

The degree of sharpness of the sword in that youngster's hand had left everyone to gasp in amazement. Xiao Bu Yu had never seen such a divine weapon in his life. [It can split anyone open by barely rubbing against them. It doesn't matter if it is rock, steel, or even Xuan power.]

In fact, this sword could even cut through the Xuan Qi defense of a level-four Spirit Xuan~

Therefore, Xiao Bu Yu had no choice but to take a firm defensive stance. He was only focused on defending at this time. However, Xiao Bu Yu had still started to feel ineffably powerless. [None of the things which have happened today are any less than unimaginable or fantastical!]

[I would've found it very amusing and satisfying if I had seen these things happening to someone else. In fact, I would be having an excited guffaw, and my face would've been filled with waves of excitement!]

[But, it's a complete and thorough tragedy that... something like this is happening to me!]

It could be said that Xiao Bu Yu couldn't even cry when he wanted to.

This fight felt like the one between a man and a ghost. The man may have had such an overwhelming strength that it could've shaken mountains and destroyed cliffs... but, the opponent didn't have a physical presence. Therefore, strength wouldn't work against them. In fact, it would be of no use. Moreover, it would only be a big waste of effort on the man's part.

[I know that a ghost is only a ghost, and has no strength. But, that ghost still has the ability to kill me!] Xiao Bu Yu was genuinely

sad. In fact, he was very regretful. [It would've been so great if we had returned when the order from the Silver City had arrived! How could we have landed ourselves in such big trouble then?]

[It's a pity! Such a pity! But, it's too late for this old man to repent now!]

Xiao Bu Yu insisted on persevering against changing tactics with the same technique. And, he was waiting for the time when Jun Mo Xie would exhaust his power. After all, it was an obvious fact that he wouldn't be able to attack Xiao Bu Yu once he had exhausted his strength even if he was a heaven-conquering talent and with an extremely clever set of skills.

After all, Jun Mo Xie was still young at the end of the day. So, how profound could his strength be?

Xiao Bu Yu had concluded that Jun Mo Xie had already reached the first levels of Sky Xuan realm after the last face-off. And, such cultivation at that young-an-age was shocking. [This level of Xuan strength is comparatively higher than ordinary. However, my level-four Spirit Xuan strength is only a single step behind that of a Great Master. And, I may have to suffer a higher degree of mental exhaustion while continuously defending against these attacks, but my physical exhaustion is still far lesser than it would've been if I were attacking! This blizzard of maddened attacks from the Young Master Jun must be exhausting his Xuan strength very fast!]

[I have to drag this fight on for a long time. So, I can't waste any energy. And, I'm sure that I will get the final opportunity to win if I keep steady, and strike hard without slipping a once. I will tire him to his death as long as I can delay!]

Xiao Bu Yu's plan seemed foolproof in the prevailing scenario. In fact, it was brilliant. After all, such tactics were applicable anywhere. And, one could say that no one else in the world could go beyond that.

It's true that it wasn't generally possible to beat such a tactic.

However, this didn't mean that it was absolutely impossible either.

For example... using these delaying tactics against Jun Mo Xie was a huge and special mistake.

And, that was because the Young Master Jun was a monster with as many heads as a hydra. Moreover, he didn't care about wasting energy...

However, the Young Master Jun's heart also had some misgivings even if he had an all-round advantage at that moment. After all, Xiao Bu Yu was a level-four Spirit Xuan expert. He was surely a step behind the Solitary Falcon in strength, but the difference in their Xuan cultivation wasn't that enormous. In fact, the difference in the strengths of these two opponents was so huge that the Young Master Jun believed that his superior skill-set could only bring this fight to a lose-lose situation in case he tried to use his entire strength in an all-out attack. The Young Master Jun would suffer heavy losses if he tried that. And, he would be able to inflict similar injuries to the other side as well. However, the injuries still wouldn't prove fatal...

But, how could the Young Master Jun be willing to take such a desperate decision against this Old Fox? Jun Mo Xie was as young as the rising sun, and he hadn't lived enough of his extravagant life yet. So, wouldn't dying with this nearly hundred-year-old man be too much?

It was a pity that Xiao Bu Yu cherished his life similarly. In fact, he cherished it far more than what Jun Mo Xie could've imagined he would. Moreover, he still wanted to preserve his honor as a Spirit Xuan expert. He was still putting-on-airs while dealing with a powerful enemy like Jun Mo Xie. In fact, he had even fallen into a disadvantageous position by taking the back-foot, but he still hadn't used his sword until now.

After all, it would be completely unjustifiable if a renowned top-tier fighter and level-four Spirit Xuan expert was to use his sword

against a sixteen-seventeen-year-old boy...

However, Xiao Bu Yu couldn't have imagined that his fail-safe plan of 'making the enemy exhaust their energy' was working the other-way-round since he was only exhausting his own self by doing that!

Jun Mo Xie's attacks and tactics became increasingly magnificent as the fight progressed. But, he also felt admiration in his heart. [My attacks are vigorous and sharp. Moreover, none of these moves have ever been seen in this world before. In fact, I'm sure that each move of mine can cause a huge shock to anyone who witnesses it!]

[But, this Second Elder of the Xiao Family is genuinely worthy of his fame. He is worthy of being labeled as someone who is only one step behind a Great Master! My attacks are frantic, and they are very difficult to deal with. I've even managed to confuse him at times. But, he has still managed to use his profound Xuan skills and deep battle-experience to hold out for so long...]

[Xiao Bu Yu's Xuan strength can't be compared to that of that wretched Baili Xiong Feng. In fact, they aren't even on the same page! Both of them might be called Spirit Xuan experts. But, Baili Xiong Feng was merely a regular Spirit Xuan expert, while Xiao Bu Yu is at level-four of the Spirit Xuan realm!]

[That is a huge difference!]

[Moreover, I've had countless opportunities to stab Xiao Bu Yu with my sword. But, I would've had to face Xiao Bu Yu's crazy counter-attack if I had attempted that. And, his counter-attack would've been fatal!]

[I could deal a fatal blow to any normal person if I were to use my Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune. Moreover, there would be no risk to my life in such a case. But, I can't bring this old guy down with my strength. In fact, the gains wouldn't be worth the losses if I were to calculate it properly.]

Therefore, the Young Master Jun merely continued to move-about...

He had the Sky Xuan cultivation to protect his body, and the Hong Jun Pagoda to support his energy. Jun Mo Xie's spiritual energy was like an endless stream. And, it could be said that he could use it endlessly since it would never run out. Therefore, Xiao Bu Yu was getting increasingly defensive as they fight dragged-on. And, he was invariably forced into taking stricter defensive actions. However, the Young Master Jun was slowly getting more room to do what he wanted. So, his moves were also becoming bolder and more violent. His sword moved like fireworks in the night's sky. It appeared as if his sword was like the moon that was providing the heaven's illumination to a temple on a cold night...

Xiao Bu Yu was getting increasingly cautious for the fear of exposing any weakness.

And, Jun Mo Xie had become livelier as a result. He had started to move more freely. In fact, he even managed to pull-off some good poses and stances. Therefore, the Young Master Jun obviously looked very valiant and heroic!

Jun Wu Yi had already finished his fight on the other side. Then, he had recovered his sword, and had held it up in his hands. Meanwhile, Xiao Han was lying curled on the ground like a ball of mud. It was hard to tell whether he was alive or dead. And, the Solitary Falcon had beaten the Seven Swords in an even more brilliant fashion.

However, the Snake King and the white-clothed girl had been focusing on the fight between Jun Mo Xie and Xiao Bu Yu from the very beginning. They hadn't done so because of the ferocity of the fight. Instead, it was because of Jun Mo Xie's swordplay. It was genuinely amazing.... Every move, and every pattern had left the two women dazzled. Some of those moves may have seemed average and simple. However, a careful study would leave anyone to realize that they were very profound in reality. Each strike could

be used to attack or defend if needed. Moreover, the swordplay and footwork matched perfectly, and had left them to gasp in amazement.

They wouldn't have believed that such wonderful moves genuinely existed in the world if they hadn't seen it for themselves.

The two of them could see the real strength of Jun Mo Xie's swordplay due to their exceedingly outstanding strength. Jun Mo Xie was merely a base-level Sky Xuan, but he had still used those moves and had fought a level-four Spirit Xuan expert to a standstill. In fact, he had dominated the offensive for the most parts of the fight. There were other factors at play as well, but this was still the fact that had dictated the fight for the most part. How strong would the Snake King or the white-clothed girl become if someone of their strength were use those moves?

"Ha ha!" the Snake King laughed and stood up. She reacted in this manner because Jun Mo Xie had made an unusual move after his last swordplay. He had cocked his legs, and he had made a strange gesture of salute towards Xiao Bu Yu with his buttocks. And, this action had seemed very offensive to say the least. In fact, it was wrong on many levels. Therefore, the Snake King couldn't help but laugh as she spoke, "It's one thing to fight the fight. But, it's entirely another thing to make that sort of a gesture. He's a mere base-rank Sky Xuan contending against a level-four Spirit Xuan. Is he trying to court his death?"

"You're mistaken!" The white-clad girl looked dully at the fighting men, and slowly continued, "Xiao Bu Yu is a proper level-four Spirit Xuan expert. He has accumulated a life time of profound Xuan Qi. That Jun brat has a wonderful method that quickly replenishes his Xuan Qi. But, he's merely at the Sky Xuan realm at the end of the day. Thus, his combat output and power is somewhat limited. So, it would be hard to determine the victor of this battle even if this fight drags-on for another night and day since he's finding it hard to force Xiao Bu Yu into wasting his

energy.

"So, Jun Mo Xie can only be successful if he manages to provoke and anger Xiao Bu Yu first. Then, he can take advantage of the situation with his crazy attacks. Jun Mo Xie is in a dominant position if you analyze the current situation. But, the diversity of his dense and ferocious attacks will eventually be exhausted at some point. Xiao Bu Yu may perhaps suffer one or two hits if he shows a weakness, but he will be able to withstand them. However, Xiao Bu Yu can deal an extremely fatal blow using his level-four Spirit Xuan strength if he is able to grasp a proper opportunity."

"But, Jun Mo Xie's crazy antics won't be able to make Xiao Bu Yu angry, right? After all, Xiao Bu Yu is a member of the society at large. He has amassed decade's worth of cultivation, and has experience of many years. So, he won't get mad so easily, right?" The Snake King was somewhat unconvinced.

"Xiao Bu Yu is obviously an experienced man, and won't fall for such tricks by the enemy. But, you haven't noticed that Xiao Bu Yu is thrown into confusion every time Jun Mo Xie makes an exquisite move. And, he has now made a very insulting pose as well. And, Xiao Bu Yu would be thrown into confusion for a moment this time as well. You could say that this action of Jun Mo Xie's was very effective from a certain angle. In fact, the Xiao Elder's confused state of mind would make it very difficult for him to seize the opportunity to attack even if Jun Mo Xie had exposed some weakness by chance.

"Moreover, Xiao Bu Yu is very unlikely to catch onto this trick-play. Therefore, Xiao Bu Yu will only be left to regard this as a new tactic of Jun Mo Xie's. Hence, Xiao Bu Yu wouldn't be able to launch a counter-attack when Jun Mo Xie does something like this again. And, this will only create more opportunities for Jun Mo Xie since Xiao Bu Yu will continue to remain in a confused state of mind. So, you could say that this is Jun Mo Xie's trick to maintain

this current state of affairs! I have to admit that this idea is indeed very innovative in its own merit!"

Chapter 423: To Threaten the East, and Strike the West Instead

The white-clothed girl smiled faintly and said, "So, I can conclude that Jun Mo Xie hinted at Xiao Bu Yu that, 'I can tussle with you for a long time.' And, he's doing this more often now. But, Xiao Bu Yu is old and experienced. He wishes to go steady and strike hard when the time is right. So, he wouldn't make a risky counter-attack. And, Xiao Bu Yu will continue with his strategy of making Jun Mo Xie die of exhaustion. However, it doesn't seem like Jun Mo Xie will get exhausted any time soon. But, Xiao Bu Yu will continue to hope for it to happen. Therefore, he will neither attack nor retreat. Thus, I think this fight will go on for a long time."

"But, Elder Sister... didn't you say that Jun Mo Xie is trying to make Xiao Bu Yu angry?" The Snake King became even more puzzled, "Isn't what you said contradictory to that? He gave that sort of a hint to Xiao Bu Yu even though the old man is very cautious. So, how will this make Xiao Bu Yu angry? And, how will he expose any weaknesses if his mind is stable?"

"Xiao Bu Yu is extremely even tempered. Moreover, he has ample time on his side. However, Jun Mo Xie has still made these actions at this time. He should've waited for a better opportunity if he genuinely wanted to incite Xiao Bu Yu's rage..."

"The white-clad girl chuckled and said, "Don't you think you've missed something? Hasn't Jun Mo Xie secretly glanced at the fight between the Solitary Falcon and the Seven Swords at least three times by now?"

"Are you saying that he wants to sneak up on the Seven Swords? Does he plan to enrage Xiao Bu Yu by doing that?" the Snake King's eyes shone as she continued, "That's a brilliant plan if that's the case! Xiao Bu Yu would surely lose his cool if Jun Mo Xie gets rid of even one of the Seven Swords!"

"However, even I don't understand one thing. Jun Mo Xie's movements are secretive, but Xiao Bu Yu is also a renowned expert of his generation. In fact, he's a level-four Spirit Xuan expert. So, he would surely be extremely observant while fighting. How could Jun Mo Xie have concealed his movements from Xiao Bu Yu despite all efforts? And, how would Xiao Bu Yu allow Jun Mo Xie to prevail if he had already noticed it? The Seven Swords will collapse if everything goes smoothly since the Solitary Falcon would slaughter them very quickly. And, the Silver City would be utterly defeated thereafter. So, Xiao Bu Yu must be on guard. Therefore, it seems that Jun Mo Xie's calculations may have gone wrong..." The white-clothed girl seemed to have understood everything clearly at first. However, she had started to harbor doubts as time passed.

Those words even filled the Snake King's heart with doubts.

However, the situation suddenly changed again at this moment.

Jun Mo Xie re-used a move that he had already used twice before. That move was still superb. Moreover, the Young Master Jun had suddenly sped up this time. Around ten savage after images of Jun Mo Xie circled around the Xiao Elder. And, it seemed that ten Young Master Juns had drawn their swords and attacked. However, the biting-cold sword-lights seemingly condensed into one ray of light.

Xiao Bu Yu sneered at this. [Amateur! Have you finally exhausted all the tricks in your bag? This is the third time you've used that same trick! Ha ha... You used the same trick three times against a level-four Spirit Xuan! Your attack was certainly faster and better this time. But, that doesn't change the fact that you're using it a third time now!]

[Your time of judgment has finally arrived! Now this old man will teach you a lesson for overestimating your capabilities and challenging me!]

Xiao Bu Yu laughed and slanted his palms to attack. His palms transformed into mountains in an instant. He then shifted his palms towards his left to face the powerful sword-attack from one of Jun Mo Xie's after-images. This was the point where Jun Mo Xie had made a mistake!

There was no mistaking now.

Xiao Bu Yu's judgment indeed wasn't wrong. Jun Mo Xie would inevitably have a problem if he had used-up the entire range of his moves. Therefore, the re-usage of that sword-attack would result in a tragedy for him at this time.

However, it was a pity that Jun Mo Xie hadn't re-used those moves in reality...

One must never consider anything to be a constant when making calculations!

Jun Mo Xie's sword had already completed half of its movement when Xiao Bu Yu decided to take advantage of this situation. After all, there was a basic principle in martial arts, 'One can't decide whether he genuinely wishes to cross a river when he's in midstream'!

As it turns out, no one could've changed their attack-style in the middle of it. Even a Spirit Xuan expert... or maybe even a Great Master wouldn't have been able to accomplish such a feat. However, Jun Mo Xie used the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune, and the impossible turned into possible!

A drastic change occurred when Jun Mo Xie's sword was halfway and Xiao Bu Yu's attack was about to connect with it! The Young Master Jun stopped moving in that direction, and changed direction. Then, it attempted a move that was ambitious enough to alarm the Heavens.

A single burst of silvery-bright explosion burst out from the sword as it roared when it was merely a hair's breadth from Xiao

Bu Yu. Then, it passed by his side, continued its flight, and transformed into a long silver line. The sword light appeared like a long tube as it flashed horizontally across that nearly fifty meters of space, and rushed straight towards the Seven Swords.

The body and the sword had become one!

Jun Mo Xie had used his biggest and most-formidable move at the most unlikely of moments.

This sword-attack was indeed beyond everyone's expectations.

Moreover, the Seven Swords were also in a very tense situation at this moment. Those seven individuals were in imminent danger, and were holding back against the Great Master Solitary Falcon with great difficulty. So, this move by Jun Mo Xie had only made it worse since they had an enemy to the front and one to the back now. The situation was already bad before. And, it couldn't get any worse now.

There is a camel whose backbone can be broken by putting a single straw on it. But, someone suddenly puts a hundred kilos on it. Wouldn't it get shattered to pieces?

Xiao Bu Yu gave out a cold scream when he realized that he had been duped. He didn't even consider how the Jun Family's little fox had managed to change direction in the middle of an attack even though this strange incident had gone against the very principle of martial theory. After all, his present top-priority was to do his best to save the Seven Swords. He angrily soared like a rocket with full speed. Moreover, he urgently raised his Xuan Qi and transferred the Xuan efficacy from the rest of his body to his palms, and shot them like angry rockets. Then, that attack rushed forward almost two-to-three times his own speed!

Xiao Bu Yu was extremely angry at that moment. That brat had played a big one with that move. Therefore, Xiao Bu Yu had done his best with this move. He had used his full strength in that attack. The efficacy of his entire body was in that strike!

The Seven Swords would suffer some damage if Jun Mo Xie's strike was successful. But then, Jun Mo Xie would die soon after. Xiao Bu Yu was assured of this point. Therefore, he was angry, but not very worried.

And, that was because the Seven Swords belonged to the family of the Silver City's Lord. They were a part of the Silver Blizzard City, but they didn't hail from the Xiao Family!

Therefore, Xiao Bu Yu wouldn't feel too sad even if Jun Mo Xie's attack was successful and he managed to kill one or two of them as a result. In fact, Xiao Bu Yu would be fine as long he would be able to kill that brat.

Therefore, Xiao Bu Yu wasn't extremely enraged even though he was a bit angry...

The sword-light didn't seem like it would stop. In fact, it had already arrived behind the Seven Swords like lightning. And, Xiao Bu Yu hurried to catch up. In fact, he was less than twenty meters behind Jun Mo Xie at this time. And, this distance wasn't a big one for a Spirit Xuan expert...

Xiao Bu Yu's sleeves were whipping violently in the wind, and were issuing a sharp whistle. The old man had turned into a blurry image. And, it was evident that his speed had increased very significantly.

The Young Master Jun had orchestrated a grand plan in his mind. But, it didn't seem like he had any major advantage left at this time.

The Solitary Falcon frowned. In fact, he felt resentful when he saw Jun Mo Xie arrive with his sword. [I've established a proper dominance here, and yet you're meddling! You may think that you've come to help me, but you're causing a nuisance in reality!]

[I would have won very easily as long as you would've continued to fight Xiao Bu Yu. But, you simply had to butt-in. In fact, you

could get caught up and die because of this even if I speed up my victory! Did this seem like a good plan to you?]

However, the cultivation of the Seven Swords was much lower. So, they were already feeling immense pressure while fighting the Solitary Falcon. And now, they had to contend with the violent and crazed attacks from Jun Mo Xie as well. They had enemies to the front and to the back now. In fact, these people felt like there was a thorn on their backside which had started to pierce their skin...

Xiao Bu Yu had a nasty grin on his face. The Xuan-power stored in his long-await palm-attack struck with a loud "Bang!"

Yet, everyone cried out in surprise.

It was because Jun Mo Xie's silhouette had suddenly disappeared...

In fact, he had disappeared very abruptly!

The boy had disappeared like a flying angel!

It seemed as if he had never existed. That tube-like sword-light had also disappeared without a trace. It had vanished silently, and there was no sign of it. In fact, it seemed like that strong sword-light from before had been an illusion or something...

However, Xiao Bu Yu had already reached the peak of his speed. And, he couldn't change his moves at will like Jun Mo Xie had. Moreover, the target of those two mountain-toppling powerful shots had disappeared. So, he quickly raised his attack, and changed its angle downwards. Consequently, it whooshed over the Seven Swords, and resolutely hit the Solitary Falcon instead.

The pressure behind the Silver City's Seven Swords suddenly disappeared. And, they instead saw Xiao Bu Yu arrive to help them. This made them extremely joyous. So, they attacked the Solitary Falcon with their entire strength.

However, everything had suddenly changed for the Solitary

Falcon since he was fighting a powerful group of enemies now. The pressure from the opposite side had increased suddenly, and had reached three-or-four times of its previous level. He couldn't help but snort at this change of events...

[It seems like that brat hadn't come here to help me. He has instead become the source of my calamity! Did he look at me and think that my fight with these seven has been easy?] However, even a man as strong as the Solitary Falcon couldn't help but feel desperate in the face of the all-out attacks of these eight men!

Everyone heard him shout, "Ghostly Falcon!" before he sallied forth to attack with all his strength. Then, the sky got covered with the image of a terrifying claw. In fact, it seemed like countless images of ghostly claws had rushed to counter-attack the eight people of the Silver City from the malicious gates of hell itself.

The sword Qi of the Seven Swords screeched in mid-air. Xiao Bu Yu's palm attacks made a rumbling noise. And, Solitary Falcon's ghostly falcon claw could rip apart the night sky with its intensely powerful Qi. The nine individuals charged into a clash which hurt all of them as they rammed.

However, a loud and arrogant laughter echoed when the nine men rammed together. That laughing voice had belonged to the Young Master Jun Mo Xie! The young man had suddenly reappeared in front of Xiao Han!

Such an astonishing speed was divine in its make, and couldn't be measured. Perhaps it should be said that two different Jun Mo Xies had appeared at two very different places at the same time. In fact, this seemed like the only possible explanation since no one would've been able to wrap their heads around the fact that both these Jun Mo Xies was the same person. In fact, they wouldn't have been able to figure it out even if they were to break their skulls while attempting to comprehend this fact.

Xiao Bu Yu was shocked the moment he heard the Young Master

Jun's clear and arrogant laugh. He turned around to look... only to see that Jun Mo Xie had a cruel sneer across his face. His cold sword-light was quickly rushing towards the immobile Xiao Han!

Chapter 424: Cruel!

"This despicable brat actually dares to do this?!" Xiao Bu Yu roared with a desire to crack him open.

After all, that man was his grandson...

He could feel his courage failing since things were out of his control now. In fact, he felt as if his heart was being twisted. The old man was so mad that he started to burn with a maddening rage. Xiao Bu Yu's hair had stood up... it seemed as if he had been struck by lightning...

Yet, he could only get enraged and show it. But, he couldn't do anything else. In fact, he didn't even dare to do anything else. And, that was because the Solitary Falcon's tyrannical attack had collided with the Xiao Elder's palms like a storm a moment ago.

A Great Master had struck back with all his strength. How could it be an ordinary attack? Xiao Bu Yu's strength was only a step away from that of a Great Master's. And, he even had seven skilled people at his side. However, the situation on the battlefield still didn't seem optimistic.

It appeared as if an atomic bomb had exploded from the center of their battle!

The eight people were thrown backwards into eight different directions because of the explosion!

The Solitary Falcon stood heroically at the center. He was motionless, and his hair was fluttering in the wild wind. In fact, they seemed to resemble the seaweed that whip-about in the seabed water currents during a storm.

One of the greatest Xuan experts of his generation hadn't retracted a single step in the face of powerful attacks from his eight opponents.

The corners of Xiao Bu Yu's mouth streamed with blood as he

flew backwards. But, he didn't have time to check his own injuries... or even put a check on his momentum as he flew backwards. Instead, he gave a long and miserable scream as he pounced towards Xiao Han's direction.

His face was twisted, aggrieved, and had a brutal expression on it...

Jun Wu Yi had gained an overwhelming advantage over Xiao Han in their fight, and had given his opponent a thorough beating thereafter. He had broken Xiao Han's arms and legs, and had also struck his nether regions. Xiao Han's meridians had also been shattered into many pieces. Therefore, he had become an out-and-out cripple!

However, Jun Wu Yi hadn't killed his enemy; he had only crippled him. Killing Xiao Han wouldn't be bad enough as a punishment. So, Third Master Jun wanted his enemy to suffer his pain before he killed the man. He wanted to vent out his anger in this manner... even if it was dragged out.

The degree of Xiao Han's deformity was greater than what Jun Wu Yi had suffered earlier.

And, Xiao Bu Yu had understood Jun Wu Yi's intentions very clearly. Therefore, he wasn't being irascible. Xiao Han wouldn't be able to do Xuan training after this. But, Xiao Bu Yu knew that his grandson had the aid of the Xiao Family's Replenishing Jade. Therefore, he was convinced that there was hope for the injured Xiao Han's recovery.

However, Jun Wu Yi didn't know this fact!

Xiao Bu Yu had also planned to resolve the conflict between the Jun and the Xiao Family by using this matter as a pretext. After all, Xiao Han had been the root of everything that had happened. It wasn't that Xiao Bu Yu wanted to take it lying down... or intended to renounce Xiao Han... Rather, it was because of that awfully tyrannical and unrivalled mysterious person who was backing the

Jun Family!

[Things will become easier between the two families if this matter is resolved.]

In fact, Xiao Bu Yu was very relieved. Xiao Han had surely been crippled. Moreover, he had also been insulted by Jun Wu Yi very badly. However, he didn't feel the need to worry about his grandson's life. And, this was because Xiao Bu Yu clearly understood the Third Master Jun's personality.

Jun Wu Yi and Xiao Han had deep hatred towards each other. But, Jun Wu Yi had always been someone with a noble character. And, no one could deny that fact. [A man of noble character may wish to torture an enemy a little. He may even decide to kill his enemy, but such a person would never go the extreme lengths of torture...]

Therefore, Xiao Bu Yu had felt increasingly relieved after he had seen Jun Wu Yi inflicting only pain to Xiao Han. After all, Jun Wu Yi didn't intend to kill him. Xiao Han wouldn't be permanently crippled either. In other words, Xiao Han would suffer serious injuries, but he wouldn't die at the end of the day...

However, Xiao Han had fallen into Jun Mo Xie's hand now. So, things had changed!

In fact, they had changed very drastically!

Who was Jun Mo Xie? He was the most cruel and unscrupulous man ever born. The manner in which he dealt with people was very different from that of Jun Wu Yi's style. In fact, they couldn't be compared since the younger Jun was too spiteful and cruel...

In fact, his methods could send shivers down anyone's spines!

Jun Mo Xie had tossed everything in this move. He had tricked Xiao Bu Yu, and had turned towards Xiao Han. In fact, he had intended to use this method to enrage Xiao Bu Yu this entire time. And, he would later use this instance to kill him once the

opportunity would arise.

The Blood of Yellow Flame was the best sword in the entire world. And, Jun Mo Xie wanted a Spirit Xuan expert to be its first tribute in terms of blood!

However, Jun Mo Xie's mindset went through a turbulent change the moment he arrived in front of Xiao Han. And, his heart was swept over with sorrow and grief...

His thoughts were suddenly run-over with a thirst to commit cruelty. In fact, this desire had even overshadowed his very soul!

The image of a lofty and formidable white-clothed middle-aged man appeared in front of him. His gaze was mild, yet sharp. He stood tall and proud like a mountain. The man waved his hand, and a huge army of bloodied men attacked triumphantly in the battle. Nothing could defeat his army's attack. And, the men deferentially addressed the white-clothed man as the White-Commander!

However, the cruel-hearted Xiao Han had gotten such an open-hearted man... a man who was like the patron saint of Tian Xiang... killed!

Jun Mo Xie's eyes became red.

His mind suddenly found itself filled with resentment, violent rage, and an endless desire to kill!

In fact, that anger and hate filled his very heart and guts.

Then, another mighty and bright figure appeared in front of his eyes. It was his second uncle — Jun Wu Meng!

The scene in his mind changed again, and a gentle and virtuous woman appeared. She was giving him an exceptionally loving look. Her gaze was extremely doting, loving, and affectionate. In fact, this love was as vast as the oceans. After all, it was the love of a mother... [Mother...?]

Then, two handsome youngsters showed up. They looked almost the same as him. And, they were looking at him with hope and expectation...

[Take revenge! Take revenge!]

These cries suddenly filled Jun Mo Xie's mind like a tsunami. And, those words started to echo inside his head.

Only those two words...

Nothing, but those two words!

Jun Mo Xie didn't know how those images... those scenes... and, those voices had appeared to him so suddenly.

However, these exceptionally abrupt and mysterious recollections had sourced from his own memory. After all, his memory had been fused with those of this body's previous owner. Therefore, he had retained these beautiful images as well. But, these recollections had given rise to bitter hatred in the backdrop of the events of the past!

[That unrivalled hero and that peerless beauty were wronged and killed because of the conspiracies of this lowly and despicable Xiao Han!]

Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt that his veins would explode. He felt indescribable grief and indignation. That feeling then bubbled forth towards his heart. Then, it proceeded towards his mind, and he broke away from his original intention when that happened...

[Take revenge!]

[How can those heroes die in vain? How could those heroes be wronged?]

Jun Mo Xie roared, and his eyes reddened as he raised his sword.

Xiao Bu Yu turned to look, and saw Jun Mo Xie pierce Xiao Han's eyes. And then, he heard the chillingly fierce words, "Xiao Bu Yu! I wish for your grandson to never see again! This sword of mine

shall take revenge for the thousands of soldiers who were killed by you!"

The unconscious Xiao Han was met with a painful awakening when his eyes were taken away. And, he gave a bitter, desperate, and blood-curdling screech. Then, there was a loud explosion as he gnashed his teeth into pieces. His blood-covered face looked extremely miserable as he screamed with incomparable hatred, "I will take revenge for this hatred, Jun Wu Yi! I will make slaves out of all men and women of the Jun Family! Aaargh...!"

Murderous intentions flourished in Jun Mo Xie's eyes, and the murderous aura inside his body became even more concentrated.

Xiao Bu Yu roared, and flew forth with increased urgency.

[My grandson!]

"Jun Mo Xie, stop! Or... I will cut your body into a million pieces!"

But, Jun Mo Xie was already next to Xiao Han. So, it was too easy for him. He slashed his sword on each of Xiao Han's arms. And, these slashes were answered by a scream of pain, and the splutter of blood. Xiao Bu Yu's body trembled violently, and he vomited blood as he helplessly looked-on.

"Xiao Han! I have taken-away your arms now! Xiao Han! You want to take revenge? I will chase you to the ends of this world! I will wipe out my family's disgrace with this sword!"

Jun Mo Xie gnashed his teeth, and gave a sinister and fierce laugh before he said, "Xiao Bu Yu! Aren't you a Spirit Xuan expert? Aren't you the greatest of the senior generation? Come quickly and save your grandson! Come on! Can't you dare to?!"

"I will even take away your legs! This strike is for my uncle! This is for the ten years of confined suffering that he had to go through!" The sword flashed twice, and tendons of Xiao Han's legs were cut off. Jun Mo Xie's eyes were abnormally clear as the

corners of his mouth curled into a ferocious smile. His narrowed eyes then quickly turned to the anxiously speeding Xiao Bu Yu as he sneered and roared, "And, this strike is for my father! You won't be able to hear from now on, Xiao Han!"

"Don't!" everyone from the Silver City cried out in unison.

However, Jun Mo Xie's sword flashed again, and Xiao Han's ears flew away from his head. Then, the sword flashed again, and Xiao Han's nose also flew out. Then, his teeth came flying out of his mouth... And, they were followed by his tongue a moment later...

"You can't speak now!" This was for the debt to my Second Uncle!" Jun Mo Xie proclaimed with somewhat a savage delight, and laughed wildly.

Xiao Bu Yu's blood boiled. The injuries he had suffered from his collusion with the Solitary Falcon weren't serious. But, they were still internal injuries at the end of the day. He was a Spirit Xuan expert, but even he couldn't help his blood steam at the sight of his grandson's misery. Therefore, he couldn't prevent his Xuan Qi from acting up and scattering inside his meridians.

He was still some distance from Jun Mo Xie when he staggered and fell over. Then, Xiao Bu Yu stood up with difficulty, and raised his head before spraying a mouthful of blood. He could only see a golden light of confusion flashing in front of his eyes. The old man helplessly looked at Jun Mo Xie. He then gnashed his teeth in hatred before he spoke-up in a low voice, "Why are you so cruel, Jun Mo Xie? Don't you fear karma? Don't you fear retribution?"

Jun Mo Xie gave him a cruel look and laughed, "You are mentioning karma and retribution, Xiao Bu Yu? Did your Xiao Family not think of this day when you were plotting against our Jun Family? Didn't you think it was cruel when hundreds of thousands of soldiers died for the selfishness of this one man? ... When countless men were torn apart from their families... when families were ruined and their men died! Weren't you happy then?"

Weren't you happy?"

"What right do you have to call me cruel? There are hundreds of thousands of orphans and widows in this world because of your wicked selfishness. Many men were humiliated to death! And, many of those brave soldiers were made martyrs!"

"Many heroes of this world were wronged because of you! Everything happened because you were stronger! You were stronger, right? Fu*k you! You're nothing more than trash! A mix of refuse! A bunch of green-haired cuc*olds!"

"Do you like it when you watch your grandson under my feet... neither alive nor dead? Huh?! Do you like it or not? You old bastard! You think your grandson will be enough?! He isn't! Just wait! This will happen to all of your progeny! And trust me... you will start enjoying this once you have seen it often-enough!"

Jun Mo Xie gave a loud, shrill, and mournful laugh. An ominous light flickered in Xiao Bu Yu's eyes. He had already decided to take a decisive action. He had decided to take a decisive action against Jun Mo Xie!

"You're not far from here, Second Elder! I have made arrangements to ensure that this man can neither see nor hear. He can't even use any of his limbs! But, I will make him even more of a cripple! I will ensure that he can't even have children! I will make him into an object of ridicule! I will make completely useless!"

Jun Mo Xie looked up and gave a fierce roar. Blood dripped from his sword as he pointed it to the sky! Then, there was flash. And, it was followed by a splutter of blood. Xiao Han's crotch spurted blood with that flashing sword. A lump of flesh flew and fell at Jun Mo Xie's foot. He kicked it straight into the air. This action of his' covered the sky with blood and dust.

Xiao Han had no strength to do anything. However, he hadn't died yet. In fact, it would've been much better for him if he had died a painful death than to be alive in the condition that he was

presently in...

The moonlight shone over the land. Everyone had gone silent with fear... their bodies were trembling, while their faces had gone pale!

Chapter 425: I'm Not Even Close to Being the Demon That You Are!

The Snake King was known as the King of Poisons. And, she was unusually fierce by nature. In fact, the Xuan Beast King was sure that her viciousness wasn't inferior to anyone's. But, even she had been left to tremble in this moment. In fact, her eyes had clearly belied the fear of her heart. [Such a cruel punishment can exist in this world! This man is so cold-blooded and cruel!]

[Jun Mo Xie's heart is this cold...? Is it made of iron or something? It's so cold and indifferent! He's so cold and unfeeling! He's so ruthless! However, it's true that such a punishment was deserved!]

The eyes of the white-clothed girl wouldn't have changed even if there had been a landslide in front of her. However, they had changed and become immeasurably deep at the sight of this.

[This one is very fierce. I've heard of the 'administering death by a thousand cuts'. And then, there's the case when five horses tear and dismember the culprit into a thousand pieces. I'm sure that most people know of such fierce methods. In fact, many must've even dreamt of it since everyone has some object of abject hatred that they would like to do all that to. But, there would be a very few people who could carry out what's happening at this moment...]

[A man is always a man. So, he would still have a limit to how much he can hate, and how much mental pressure his soul can bear with regard to such hatred.]

[It could even be said that there wouldn't be anyone in a group of ten-thousand people who would've had thought of doing something similar to this.]

[Moreover, talking or thinking of doing something like this is one

thing. But, doing it for real is another thing in its entirety. A person who can do these things... and keep a straight face afterwards... is very rare! And, that's because this entails something that is far beyond the capacity of a normal person's endurance.]

[Who couldn't have talked about doing such ruthless things? In fact, many men may have spoken of these to their heart's delight. However, the number of people who would genuinely go ahead and do these things is very low. But, those who speak of such cruel and cold-blooded acts might possibly commit them in reality if the hatred accumulates to a profound level and breaks forth in a particular moment.]

[But, Jun Mo Xie is following through this torture in a very methodical manner. And, he's not even affected by it. In fact, he seems unaffected and uninterested. This is very rare. Just imagine... a normal person would frown at the thought of killing someone under ordinary circumstances. Their brows might even jump at it. But, this is a real person... a real and living person whose individual parts are being cut away one by one. Forget about speaking about something like this... even imagining about it is unbearable for most people!]

The limits of Xiao Bu Yu's tolerance had been crossed even though he was a level-four Spirit Xuan expert. His eyes had become lifeless as he looked at that lightly breathing lump of flesh on the ground. It seemed like he had been struck by lightning. He was thoroughly dumbfounded and stunned.

How could he have known that Jun Mo Xie would be so bold and ruthless...? How could he have imagined that this youngster would leave no room for mercy?

And, Xiao Bu Yu wasn't the only one...

There were many other Xuan experts who were standing in the field. Many veterans who had grown accustomed to many-a-bloody

scene were also present. All of them had held their breaths at the sight of this scene. So, there was pin-drop silence in the field at this time.

Then, there was the Silver City's Princess — Han Yang Meng. She wasn't very strong on a psychological level. So, she had only been able to cry an "oh!" before her eyes had rolled back. And, she had then fainted in Mu Xue tong's arms. However, there was another person who would've been overjoyed at the prospect of fainting.

And, this individual was that lump of flesh that still hadn't stopped wriggling on the ground. The nearly-dead Xiao Han desperately wanted to faint. In fact, he wanted to die! After all, that would put an end to the pain. The pain was very excruciating. But, death was a great luxury for Xiao Han. In fact, he couldn't even dream of passing into a coma.

The faces of the other five Elders had turned red. But, they hadn't moved an inch ever since they had been enveloped by that vigorous murderous aura. Instead, they had vainly gnashed their teeth, and had opened their eyes wide enough to crack their sockets.

They had presumed that such a strong aura could only have come from some mysterious and uniquely skilled person. In fact, they had believed that it had been unleashed by that Mysterious Master who was backing the Jun Family. So, they knew that they couldn't act or interfere at this point. After all, they believed they would enrage that Mysterious Master if they acted. And, he would kill all of them in a strong retaliation if that happened. In fact, they felt that it would be as easy as waving one's hands for someone as strong as that Mysterious Man...

It was what one called 'not too close and not too far'. That powerful retaliation would come for them if they acted out. But, it wouldn't be from the Mysterious Master who was backing the Jun Family. Instead, it would come from the white clothed girl...

"He he he he..."

Suddenly, a mild yet lofty chuckle echoed in that deathly silence. Everyone followed the sound of the laughter to its source. The source's expression was quite indifferent and tranquil. In fact, he had an affable smile on his face. His body stood straight in a heroic manner — it was Jun Mo Xie!

The one who was laughing... was unexpectedly Jun Mo Xie!

He was laughing even at this moment! He had just orchestrated that exceptionally brutal atrocity. However, he was still laughing like nothing had happened.

"This is very good!" Jun Mo Xie looked at Xiao Bu Yu in an amused manner, "Do you it Xiao Bu Yu? ...that feeling one gets by slowly cutting the body of a man he hates the most... it's extremely wonderful. In fact, the term 'wonderful' isn't enough to describe that happiness... particularly when the man's name is Xiao Han, and my family is called the Jun Family."

Xiao Bu Yu had stood motionless like a rock until this time. However, he had started to sway now. He gave an unwavering look to Jun Mo Xie. A strange sound came out of his chocked throat, "oh... oh... oh..." But, he was unable to speak anything in the end.

"You needn't speak! I understand how you feel. I can even show you my understanding and express my sympathy... my heartfelt sympathy!"

Jun Mo Xie gave a long sigh and said, "After all, he's your flesh and blood. He's your kin... seeing your kin die in front of yourself must be a huge tragedy. I'm sorry. No, that doesn't sound correct, does it? I'm very sorry. I had spoken it wrongly the first time. But, I will surely pay attention next time..."

Jun Mo Xie then tried to change the topic, "Ahem, no... I find that I've truly spoken wrong. You see, I was very happy and excited a moment ago. So, I had spoken incorrectly without paying

attention. You shouldn't take offense, haha! Ahem... In fact, you should be thankful to me. Xiao Han is surely crippled, but I've still allowed him to live. So, it means that this isn't like watching your kin die. You tell me... Aren't I right about that?"

The Young Master Jun rubbed his hands, and continued in a slightly embarrassed tone, "Moreover, he still can't be called a complete cripple. After all, I still haven't crushed his spine yet. My heart has a soft spot for this man. My compassion for him didn't stop for a moment. And, that's why I could do my job properly. I hope you don't dislike that. Also, I can fix my mistake and cripple him completely if you want that to happen. I promise that I will not leave you dissatisfied. Again, I would like to apologize to you again!"

"You... you... you're a demon!" Xiao Bu Yu's lips trembled with indescribable grief, "A demon..."

"I'm not very fond of those words. You really flatter me if I were to be honest. But, I genuinely don't deserve those words," Jun Mo Xie shook his head in disagreement. "You should consider changing them a bit. Because, I am no demon when compared to the Xiao Family..."

He raised his sword as he spoke. Then, he pointed it downwards. Xiao Han's blood dripped off at a fast speed as a result. And, the sword got restored to its original state in the blink of an eye.

"I have finally understood what a true divine weapon is! To kill millions... yet not be stained! I had always thought that these were empty words. Hehe... I've finally found that such a weapon genuinely exists. This is a good sword! It is a very good sword!" Jun Mo Xie sighed while speaking. His words made everyone tremble.

[Killing millions yet not getting stained...]

"Second Xiao Elder, I know that you're only pretending to be on the verge of a collapse. You're storing up energy in reality. I know that you eventually wish to make a move to kill me. After all, you

have already decided to kill me today. You are even willing to ignore the consequences. Isn't that right?"

Jun Mo Xie smiled wholeheartedly, "That's kind of obvious, isn't it? But, you have been injured, and your spirit has suffered as well. So, do you want some more time to prepare? Let me ask you this while you do... Do you know about the [Huang Hua Hall](#), Second Xiao Elder...? That Hall of Hell...?"

"Huang Hua Hall! The Hall of Hell...!" Jun Wu Yi's eyes opened wide, and started to sparkle brightly.

He would never forget that night when he had burst into that hall with Jun Mo Xie, and had witnessed that extremely miserable human atrocity. In fact, he would tremble with wrath every time he would come to think of it.

Xiao Bu Yu looked at Jun Mo Xie with extreme hatred. He made a supreme effort to summon his power, but failed at it.

"I'm the man who's responsible for the destruction of the Hall of Hell! Isn't that quite unexpected?"

The bright light which had belied Jun Mo Xie's previously merry state had been wiped clean by now. In fact, it had been replaced by a cold ruthlessness. The murderous aura in his voice increased as he spoke, "Everything seems to be an accident. My plan was very simple when I had acted against the Hall of Hell. I only thought that it was a brutal money-making organization at first. But then, I became aware of the training that was given to prostitutes inside Tian Xiang. And, I realized that I was wrong. In fact, I was completely mistaken. ...That's because those low-lives who force women into prostitution and traffic children aren't half as inhumane as the people behind the Hall of Hell! In fact, they are incapable of doing the tasks that were required of them at the Hall of Hell. After all, they usually sell of the girls and boys who don't look attractive. Perhaps they start training them to do odd jobs or become flesh-traders themselves...

"In any case, even child-traffickers have enough conscience to not break children's limbs and spines, and then put them in jars... to raise deformities. Such a thing could only be done by those conscienceless savages of the Hall of Hell. No one else had ever been able to do something like this before them...

"So, I was left baffled. And, I started to wonder about those things.

"I wondered what kind of deep hatred must the owner of this establishment have for those children to have come up with a scheme to poison their lives so badly...? Those children obviously couldn't have provoked the owner of the establishment. So, there was only one other angle left. What kind of hatred would the owner of the Hall have towards those children's parents to deal such a heavy hand to the young ones?

"My grandfather and Third Uncle were talking about the past one night. They mentioned about the troops who had served under them in the past. But, not a shadow of some of these troops had been seen for a long time. They may have been disheartened because of the past. But, shouldn't they have come to their Old Lord's house once in a while? Shouldn't they have let their Old Lord know that they're still alive and happy...?"

Jun Wu Yi started to tremble when Jun Mo Xie reached this point in his speech. Jun Wu Yi could clearly remember that day when he was talking with his father. He could remember that feeling of disappointment, a strange sense of great loss, and nostalgia... However, he had vaguely guessed something from the tone of Jun Mo Xie's voice. And, his eyes had become red as a result of this comprehension...

Huang Hua Hall = Hall of Hell.

Chapter 426: The Spirit Xuan Expert Falls Apart!

"There is an old saying about what to say — The speaker has no particular intention of speaking something, but the listener reads their own meaning into it. So, I started my own investigation. And, I started to look into the troops that had served under my father during that time. What were they doing right? Where did they live now? Half a month of investigation was conducted. And, I was informed that those men had disappeared mysteriously along with their wives and children at one point of time.

"So, I continued with my investigation. And, I checked every case that had gone without leads at that time. And, I found that there had been countless murders where the evidence of the homicide had been erased. These murderers had left no clues behind. So, the authorities couldn't make a proper case out of them. Moreover, those corpses had also been in the same condition. A person couldn't even identify them properly. The only thing that was similar was that those corpses weren't of aged people... Moreover, there were no children amongst the list of the deceased..."

Jun Mo Xie's voice was filled with grief and savagery at the same time, "Therefore, I became suspicious after a time... Who was behind this Hall that had been ill-treating those children so badly? It was possible that those kids were the orphans of those soldiers. But, this meant that it was possible that those children had suffered so much because their parents had been involved with the Jun Family... And, this also meant that the person behind the Hall of Hell must've harbored deep hatred towards my Jun Family. But then, who could this hidden enemy be? Who could it be?!"

Jun Mo Xie's eyes met Xiao Bu Yu's aggrieved gaze. And, the Young Master Jun's eyes also started to become fiercer. He took a step forward as he glared at Xiao Bu Yu and asked in a serious

manner, "Second Xiao Elder, I've heard that you're the one with the most wisdom inside the Xiao Family. So, can you tell me who the person behind the Hall of Hell is? Who is it?!"

"Who can be so devoid of humanity?"

"Who can have such hatred for our Jun Family... that they are willing to take out their hatred on innocent lives in such a maddened way?"

"Second Xiao Elder, tell me... who is it?"

Jun Mo Xie took another step forward as he spoke. His cold and murderous aura became stronger with each step he took. And, his glare slowly became razer-sharp as he looked at Xiao Bu Yu.

Xiao Bu Yu finally looked away since the Young Master Jun had continued to glare at him. Unexpectedly, the old man couldn't meet his gaze anymore. In fact, Xiao Bu Yu was unconsciously taking a step back with every step that the Young Master Jun was taking forward. Moreover, his mannerism had seemingly become anxious and perplexed. The Spirit Xuan expert was feeling ashamed and perplexed by Jun Mo Xie's questioning!

Each step of Jun Mo Xie's resembled heavenly thunderstorms to Xiao Bu Yu's ears. In fact, his heart had also started to beat at the rhythm of Jun Mo Xie's feet.

"How would this old man know? What ridiculous mystery do you speak of?" Xiao Bu Yu asked angrily. But, his voice was trembling. Any man with a little knowledge would find it odd if the voice of a Spirit Xuan expert were to tremble like this.

"I had only suspected it before. But then, Xiao Han came to the Tian Xiang City sometime after I had dealt with the Hall of Hell. Moreover, he had seemingly taken the initiative to look for my Third Uncle in order to give him trouble. Why did he arrive so quickly at such a 'fortuitous' time? Can you answer this question for me, Second Xiao Elder?"

"Are you suspecting me? How could this old man have done such a thing? What evidence do you have?" Xiao Bu Yu's voice trembled as he shouted loudly.

"I do suspect you to some extent. But, you are a person of great fame in the Silver City. So, you won't be able to pull-off such a thing. However, there were so many murders, and so many cases without evidence. It would've been fine if there had been a couple of cases where no evidence had been left behind. But, so many of such clueless cases was worth a closer scrutiny. And, what kind of a power would have the capability to push down so many cases? And evidence? You're asking me for evidence? You want proof? How would a man who is determined in his heart leave any proof behind?"

Jun Mo Xie smiled in a strange manner, "However, I have another thing now. You see, there's a new suspicion in my heart now. Why did you ask if I was suspecting you instead of asking me if I suspected the Xiao Family? Or maybe... you should've asked me if I suspected Xiao Han... Hmm...? The wise and far sighted Xiao Bu Yu must clearly remember that I had specifically indicated towards Xiao Han. So, why did you pull it to yourself? This is such a lucky stroke! You're confessing without even being pressed!"

Xiao Bu Yu stumbled and staggered back again. His brows were dripping with sweat, "Utter nonsense! You have no evidence! Those empty words from your teeth are aimed to entrap an innocent man... to entrap the Xiao Family! What evil schemes are you harboring?"

"You're mistaken again, Second Xiao Elder. I had clearly mentioned Xiao Han alone. When did I ever entrap the Xiao Family? What logic is this? Does Xiao Han represent the entire Xiao Family?" Jun Mo Xie pressed hard with each step as he pursued his retreating enemy. His eyes also flashed with an increasingly bright and divine light.

And, Jun Mo Xie's methods had been producing results till that

moment.

Xiao Bu Yu's mind was in confusion.

He no longer had the determined mindset of killing his enemy.

First, Xiao Bu Yu had been involved in that annoying fight. Then, he had to face the Solitary Falcon's attack, and had sustained an injury in the process. Then, Xiao Han was brutalized in front of him. And then, the inhumane Hall of Hell was mentioned to him once a nick in his mental defense was exposed. Consequently, the Xiao Elder's mental defenses had been smashed in their entirety!

"Jun Mo Xie, you're a slanderous liar! Are you saying that you have evidence against my Xiao Family? Your tongue is a like a knife! You've put these criminal accusations against the Silver Blizzard City's Xiao Family!" Xiao Bu Yu's face was flooded with sweat. His facial muscles had started to twitch and twist like crazy.

"Evidence...? I've already told you many times that I don't have any. I only have suspicions. And, my suspicions are enough in this case."

Jun Mo Xie's eyes were like a cold knife, "Xiao Bu Yu, do you still think I will need some bullshit evidence at this stage? Who in this world has the power to keep such a matter under wraps? Who has the power to push down such cases? And, who has such deep hatred towards my Jun Family?"

The Young Master Jun had spoken the last words in a low voice so that only the very few near him could hear it. Consequently, Jun Wu Yi's face twisted into an extremely fierce and terrifying expression.

These pointers were merely speculative in nature. And, Jun Mo Xie had admitted to that as well. But, these speculations were very reasonable. And, each of these speculations had only pointed to one direction!

Jun Wu Yi's tiger-like eyes overflowed with tears. He desperately

wanted to fly back to the Tian Xiang City so that he could lovingly find a place for those children to settle down...

"Do you know? I had received a small payment by a little girl some time ago. And, I had pledged to destroy the Hall of Hell in return?" The image of that helpless little girl sprang up in Jun Mo Xie's eyes. He could see her younger brother's little dead body... And, the way she was trying to reach out for him... And, that broken copper coin...!

"So, it's obvious that I will do the job since I had received the payment!"

Jun Mo Xie then continued in a ruthless manner, "Be at ease, Xiao Bu Yu. I won't kill anyone from the Xiao Family. I will merely cripple them one by one. I will cut off their tongues, noses, and ears. I will break their teeth. I will destroy their man-hoods, and break their spines. Then, I will stuff them in jars till they grow old and die. I will let the world witness what kind of lowly people they are. I will let the world know where the road of savagery leads to. Do you like my plan?"

"You... you dare!" Xiao Bu Yu looked confused as he stepped back. Then, he gave a severe roar, "You dare!" But, his voice couldn't help but feel weak when he saw that everyone was looking down on him with disdain. His roar no longer had the deterring effect it used to in the past...

The mind of the level-four Spirit Xuan expert had been defeated by Jun Mo Xie even though he was nearly as strong as a Great Masters! The old man hadn't been associated with the Hall of Hell very directly. But, that didn't mean that he was absolved of all guilt. It was because Xiao Han... his grandson had been involved...

Moreover, none of those atrocities would've ever taken place if Xiao Bu Yu hadn't supported his grandson's cold-blooded reprisals at that time...

Everyone has a dark side to them. One can try hard to hide it.

And, one can attempt to seem falsely perfect by pushing this dark side deep down. However, this darkness would eventually be opened to the world once the lid that covers it is lifted. A man can be extremely contemptible. And, a man may be well-accomplished... or even phoney... However, no one can face and bear the truth of their dark side!

Xiao Bu Yu fell apart!

His spirit and body didn't have any strength to retaliate!

The third, the seventh, and the ninth Elder had different expressions on their faces. One looked ashamed, one looked-on with hatred, and one looked resentful. The eyes of the Seven Swords were full of disgust. They had never dreamed that the Xiao Family could ever be involved in such frenzied savagery!

Han Yan Meng had also woken up by now. She couldn't help but tremble when she heard what had transpired. Even she looked at the Xiao Family with disgust and loathing now.

Any person with any sense of conscience wouldn't be able to stay indifferent if they had heard about such brutal events...

Anyone who couldn't see the clues after Jun Mo Xie's repeated questioning and Xiao Bu Yu's subsequent reaction... could die and go to hell...

"Xiao Bu Yu, how did the Xiao Family's members infiltrate into that army of millions? Tell me, I'm sure you know!" these words came out of Jun Mo Xie's mouth at a time when everyone was thinking over this topic, and Xiao Bu Yu's mind was in a troubled state...

"Who is that hidden traitor?!"

This shout was even louder. It was the result of the accumulated energy from the entirety of Jun Mo Xie's body. This loud shout was purely comprised of spirit energy. In fact, it had sounded like the roar of the legendary lion. Even the burning torches had been left

to flicker because of it. Everyone had felt a loud explosion in their minds, while their hearts had been startled. Their cultivations had started to seem meager, and their minds had become fuzzy. The events of the past had started coming back to them...

Xiao Bu Yu trembled as he bore the brunt of that. His eyes were brimming with a sense of loss at this moment. And, he suddenly felt that he was standing in front of a dominating and extremely awe-inspiring Supreme God. This God had asked him that thunderous question, and had imposed a sense of pure dominance over him while doing so. And, this had incited an involuntary reaction in the depths of his heart! He felt that he couldn't defy those orders...

Chapter 427: The Great Spirit Deterrence Method!

There was silence all around. Jun Mo Xie's shout had sounded like a loud gong from the heavens. And, it was like a thunderous explosion for Xiao Bu Yu's ears since his heart was already unstable at this moment.

Jun Mo Xie had asked Xiao Bu Yu about the Hall of Hell in a very sharp manner. But, the Xiao Elder would subconsciously do everything to resist even though he had suffered a violent attack. And, he wouldn't be swayed very easily. After all, Xiao Bu Yu was a level-four Spirit Xuan expert. So, his reply would be extremely quick even if his mind had fallen apart. Therefore, it would be very hard to bring him to such a state of mind...

However, Jun Mo Xie had exploited that matter thoroughly, and had breached the abyss of Xiao Bu Yu's spirit. He had then taken another shot to attack his opponent's innermost core, and had caught him off-guard once again.

Xiao Bu Yu's mind was in complete chaos. And, he unintentionally muttered, "The hidden traitor?"

However, Jun Mo Xie's voice suddenly changed at this moment. And, it became gentle and kind. In fact, the voice was full of magnetism... like a mother who was doting on her infant. It was piercing, and full of vigor. The Young Master Jun's expression was grand, and seemed to be issuing a fantastic and bright light. He looked Xiao Bu Yu in the eyes, and slowly asked, "Who are the people you had used to infiltrate the Jun Family's camp? Who are the ones who had assisted you in assassinating Jun Wu Hui and Jun Wu Meng? Who are they? Tell me who those people are?"

Xiao Bu Yu's weak gaze met with Jun Mo Xie's glare. Then, they began to struggle in a violent manner. But, it seemed that the light from their eyes had gotten connected, and wouldn't disconnect

again...

The Xiao Elder's eyelids started to droop, and remained as such for a long time... Then, they suddenly opened up again. However, they seemed somewhat vacant now...

"Those men...? I had heard that there were several red-clothed masked men." Xiao Bu Yu's expression had become very relaxed. In fact, it seemed as if he was talking in his sleep, "I later learned that they were from the Blood Sword Hall. They assisted our Xiao Family by going in first. They even made the arrangements on their own. Both sides had the same aim. So, we hit it off from the very beginning."

"The men from the Blood Sword Hall... hehe... them... But, why did they help you? Your aims were the same? They were also against Jun Wu Yi...? Or the entire Jun Family...? Or, was there another person who was inciting them from behind?"

[Blood Sword Hall!] A sharp light flashed in Jun Mo Xie's eyes. But, his voice was still as gentle as a warm breeze that blows across treetops. In fact, anyone who heard him talk felt extremely comfortable and warm inside. The voice of this man could make a person feel so safe and comfortable that they would wish to go off to sleep...

And, the one who had to bear the brunt of it was... Xiao Bu Yu. His heart faltered even further. And, his expression became that of heartfelt ease. He had seemingly forgotten the grief and indignation... And, the shame and the dishonor he had suffered a moment ago.

It was the Great Spirit Deterrence technique. And, it had been blended with hypnosis!

This was the extreme combination of modern hypnosis techniques and the great ancient Spirit Deterrence method. And, Jun Mo Xie was successfully employing this combination in this instance.

Jun Mo Xie had taken advantage of Xiao Bu Yu's nervous breakdown, and had opened the innermost doors of his heart wide. Then, he had entered as swiftly as lightning.

A base-rank Sky Xuan expert had managed to hypnotize a level-four Spirit Xuan expert! This was a miraculous technique, and this world had never seen something like this. He had attained wonderful achievements that had never been seen in his generation... And, that too in one fell swoop!

Everyone had an expression of amazement on their faces.

A light of astonishment flashed in the eyes of the white-clothed girl. She looked at Jun Mo Xie in a way that made it seem as if she had started to harbor a strong desire to understand that miraculous youngster in a comprehensive manner. This unheard and un-witnessed miraculous technique had even left someone with her accomplishments to feel battered and shocked...

"I don't know why they did it. Our Xiao Family had already made proper preparations for a force to attack at that time. We hadn't even expected them to reach out on their own. But, we came to an instantaneous agreement since our goals were the same. And, everything went without a hitch after that..."

Xiao Bu Yu's face reveled in a childish pride. However, his eyes were still empty, "We couldn't find a single trace of theirs after that. The people who would go into the camp to provide support were different every time. They were easy to identify at first. But, we would never see them again once their job was done. The Blood Sword Hall had presumably arranged for that to happen..."

"Ah, the Blood Sword Hall doesn't leave any proof behind when they handles things. He he... So, you don't know who they were..." Jun Mo Xie nodded in an understanding manner as he spoke-up in a mild and encouraging tone.

"Yes..." Xiao Bu Yu's face had an expression of shame on it. And, he hung his head like a child who had committed an offence. "I

hadn't participated in those operations. It was Xiao Han and his brothers. I had only heard about it later."

Then, his face showed pride as he spoke with hubris, "What had to be done was done. Strength is the best argument. Besides, those 'ants' were nobodies. They weren't worth my personal interventions!"

"Ah! You're right! Good. Very good! Strength is the best argument," The blue veins throbbed on Jun Mo Xie's forehead. However, he controlled himself as he spoke, "And, the same people dealt with Jun Mo You and Jun Wu Yi later on?"

"Yes... that was also them... the men from the Blood Sword Hall..." Xiao Bu Yu didn't hesitate one bit.

"Tell me... who were the specific people who had participated in those operations? Xiao Han and his brothers...? There must've been a lot of people, right?" Jun Mo Xie smiled. His expression was gentle.

"Yes, how could a few people have pulled this off so quickly? We were dealing with an army, and the crisis was also big... ah... I remember... it was Xiao Han, Xiao Liang Xiao Zhen, Xiao Cheng, Xiao Guang..." Xiao Bu Yu rolled out the names of fourteen to fifteen people in one breath. He then continued, "We eventually made the despicable Jun Family pay a heavy price. You must pay the price if you provoke the Xiao Family!"

"The price that was paid... wasn't too small. However, Jun Wu Yi had merely taken Xiao Han's fiancée. But, you still took such a huge action. What was the need to make such a huge deal out of it?" Jun Mo Xie's firmly committed those few names to his memory. Then, he went back to ask another question, "Just look at the troops who have come here from the Silver City. What is Xiao Han's status? Why does he have such a big influence?"

"Why wouldn't we be overcautious? There's a great connection between all this. After all, the current Lord of the Silver City

doesn't have a son. He only has two daughters. The betrothal of the elder daughter and Xiao Han had been agreed to a long time ago. We hope that the younger daughter will also be married into the Xiao Family. We have worked very hard for this. Our Xiao Family will be able to rule the Silver City and the world at-large in about a decade if both his daughters are married into our family!

"Our Xiao Family's ancestor died for the Silver City. And, it wasn't merely the case of a life being lost. He had the strongest Xuan cultivation. He was also the Lord of the Silver City at that time. Moreover, he was the First amongst those sworn brothers. So, it can be said that the Silver Blizzard City is based on my Xiao Family's work. But, the Han Family became the Lords of the Silver City after our ancestor died. Why? Our Xiao Family has been pushed down for several hundred years. We are nominally considered as 'younger brothers'. But, we should be equal to them, or maybe even higher... That one baseless oath wasn't even worth a dog's fart! But, it has deprived our Xiao Family of everything that we have desired! Why?!"

Xiao Bu Yu had a sinister expression on his face at this time, "That repulsive Jun Wu Yi arrived exactly when our plan was going to be successful. And, everything that our Xiao Family had been preparing for a long time had to be stopped midway as a result. Our Xiao Family had been waiting for such an opportunity for hundreds of years! But, this damned Jun Wu Yi had ruined that... that damned Jun Wu Yi... that damned Jun Family... damn them! They will pay the price! Whoever dares to ruin the Xiao Family's plans must be destroyed!"

Xiao Bu Yu cursed in hatred.

This was astonishing information! In fact, it was earth-shattering!

The men from the Silver City suddenly found themselves struck by an emotional upheaval. The remaining Elders — the Third, Fifth, Sixth, Eighth, and Ninth Elders — got divided into two

groups in the blink of an eye. They were still shrouded by that dark and secretive imposing aura. So, they hadn't dared to make a move even if they had wanted to. But, their behavior and expressions were clearly showing this divide.

The Sixth, Ninth, and Eighth Elders were revealing anxiousness in their eyes. And, they had expressions of terror on their faces. It was obvious that these three Elders were members of the Xiao Family. But, the Third and Fifth Elders had a look of resentment across their faces. In fact, they had nearly started cursing.

These two men were evidently from the Han Family's side.

However, Han Yan Meng was struck the hardest by this revelation. Her pretty eyes had opened so wide that they had almost reached her ears. She could've never imagined that those affable grandfathers and uncles from the Xiao Family had been scheming against her Han Family this entire time.

Jun Mo Xie glanced around in a secretive manner. Then, he probed further, "The Xiao Family has genuinely planned far ahead. The arrangements have been quite exquisite as well. But, does the Han Family have no male progeny to speak of? The Lord of the Family doesn't have any son. But, he must have brothers... Are you saying that even his brothers don't have any sons? So, why would they pass everything to the Xiao Family? This is just your wishful thinking..."

"Hehe, we've obviously made these calculations since we wish to take control of things," Xiao Bu Yu laughed with self pride and continued, "We started to plan for these things after the birth of the Lord's second daughter. The Lord's brothers didn't exactly become crippled by accidents, you know! And, that's far from the core of the truth. Moreover, there are many other elders and younger brothers... But, we obviously know how to handle them as well..."

"You must know about Xiao Han's Hall of Hell, right? Your entire

Xiao Family decided to start that venture, right?" Jun Mo Xie changed the topic, and asked in a harmonious tone. His forehead was already dripping with bean-like sweat beads.

He had been expending a lot of spiritual energy to maintain that high-level hypnosis over Xiao Bu Yu. Jun Mo Xie's spiritual energy and cultivation was very profound. But, it had slowly started to feel incompetent in the face of this task. Therefore, he had turned back to the Jun Family's matter again. Moreover, Xiao Bu Yu's voice had become stable over the course of this dialogue. In fact, there were no signs of wariness from his subconscious at this point...

"No. Xiao Han and his brothers had initiated this matter on their own. In fact, it was too late by the time we got to know about it. So, we had no option but to follow them. A very few people in the Xiao Family know about this matter. After all, this thing is too disgraceful... it hurts the very heavens! Anyway, those people were lowly 'nobodys'. Moreover, the profits from that venture were rather great!" Xiao Bu Yu's expression was quite contradictory... there were traces of remorse as well as avarice in it.

No one had expected that this white-haired and ruddy-complexioned old man of such martial status and fame would be capable of thinking in such a narrow and filthy manner. Who would've believed this if he hadn't spoken it himself? Who would've dared to believe it?!

[Extremely shameless!]

"Well... you did well. I've decided to reward you. And, it will be a huge reward!" Jun Mo Xie's eyes blazed with a riotous flame as he spoke-up in an easy tone.

"A big reward?! What reward is it?!" Xiao Bu Yu's expression became extremely excited. It appeared like a child was looking at delicious and alluring candy. He desired it with urgency.

"Ah, you must do something before I reward you. You must jump

and strip your clothes away. You will get the rewards after you finish the act. And, you will be very satisfied with the rewards you get," A malicious light flashed in Jun Mo Xie's eyes.

Jun Mo Xie would only need to twist his wrist to kill Xiao Bu Yu under these circumstances. But, the Young Master Jun felt that he would be condemned in history if he allowed this beast to get away with a clean and easy death!

Chapter 428: Extreme Humiliation!

Jun Mo Xie would only need to twist his wrist to kill Xiao Bu Yu under these circumstances. But, the Young Master Jun felt that he would be condemned in history if he allowed this beast to get away with a clean and easy death!

Therefore, it was important that Xiao Bu Yu's death be remembered in the name of infamy. It was important that he left behind eternal ridicule to his name. In fact, it was necessary that this infamy wouldn't even allow his spirit to rest in peace after he had died and became a ghost... even the sight of his ghost should bring laughter to the heart of people!

It would be fine if others didn't get to see this. However, Jun Mo Xie would still feel that he had done his best.

After all, an evil man must die an evil death.

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie persevered even though he felt tired.

"A great reward...? I'll have to strip...? But, I'm not going to jump..." Xiao Bu Yu seemed bashful. This appearance was poles apart from the one of a world-renowned individual.

"About the striptease... twist your ass, and then take off a piece of clothing. After that, you twist it again, and take off another piece. Keep doing this until you're bare naked! Everyone will praise you for it! You'll get a huge reward at the end of it. You won't be disappointed. Go on... be obedient..." Jun Mo Xie spoke in a patient manner. His voice was extremely affable. However, his eyes had a touch of extreme malice to it.

"Ah! I want my reward! I will jump..." Xiao Bu Yu promised obediently as he stood expressionlessly in front of Jun Mo Xie. Then, the old man swayed his hips and twisted his posterior. After that, he jumped and started his striptease... under the gaze of thousands of eyes.

This early sixties level-four Spirit Xuan expert was a renowned individual. However, he was jumping and doing a striptease in a public place at this time. Jun Mo Xie genuinely believed that... [This method should be enough to leave this profoundly respected elder so ashamed that he wouldn't be able to show his face.]

This insane form of humiliation for such a famous Spirit Xuan expert was a bit excessive even though he had killed someone's father, and attempted to steal someone's wife.

However, Jun Mo Xie's conscience wasn't the least bit troubled while subjecting Xiao Bu Yu to such humiliation.

[His punishment fits his crimes!]

The clothes on Xiao Bu Yu's body gradually lessened as the flabbergasted crows looked-on.

His robe flew away from his body...

His inner clothes flew out...

His under-armor flew out...

His trousers flew out...

"Yes, yes... Move more flirtatiously... more tenderly... a bit more gently... a little more audacious... you need to be more aesthetic... concentrate on this! Be a little gentler! Turn your ass that way a little again! Everyone will be happier if you do that again! Dance to my beat, 'Tap, tap! Tap, tap!' Concentrate on this beat. This is better! You feel very rhythmic now!" Jun Mo Xie's face was covered with malice as he gently and delicately guided with the instructions.

This white-bearded old man looked like an immortal figurine now. He had an enchanting smile on his face. His hand had gestured high in a pose, and he started behaving flirtatiously. Moreover, he was doing all of this in front of everyone! The old man then twisted his posterior in an eccentric manner. In fact, it seemed like he had a motor there...

Only a tiny piece of underpants remained on Xiao Bu Yu's body at this time. His upper half had become bare-naked a lone while ago. However, he didn't seem to sense that mournful cold wind. Moreover, his facial expression was that of merriment! In fact, he was somewhat bashful, and somewhat covered in honor. It seemed as if he believed that erotically dancing and shedding clothes in front of the public was an extremely reputable and glorious thing to do for a man in his position.

It had to be said that Xiao Bu Yu's body was extremely sturdy despite his age. He was covered in taut muscles, and there wasn't an inch of loose flesh on his body. His skin was like that of a middle-aged man. In fact, he could even give a youthful teenager a run for their money!

"He's taken very good care of it..." the Solitary Falcon swallowed in envy.

Xiao Bu Yu twisted his buttocks again, and removed that last piece of cloth from his body. His proud and unyielding rifle was standing unabashed in front of the world at this time. His manhood gathered a world-full of vigor in a moment, and shook its head in that dense underbrush. In fact, it seemed as if it was ready to run-amok the country-side!

"Sss~" the soldiers exclaimed in admiration as they looked-on. They seemed to enjoying themselves, "It's so grand and imposing. This is so admirable. Its unyielding even in the presence of so many people! He's a true Spirit Xuan! Hail the Spirit Xuan!"

Suddenly, there was loud a cry of fear...

It had sourced from Han Yan Meng. She had covered her face and eyes. The little girl had never seen such a thing before. She hated Xiao Bu Yu, but she still couldn't help but... make such an overwhelming observation at this moment...

This shout had a very bad impact!

Jun Mo Xie felt a strange unrest in his spiritual power. Then, he suddenly felt very dizzy and exhausted. In fact, he felt like his mind was being attacked. And, his Spirit Deterrence technique got disconnected with Xiao Bu Yu as a result.

Xiao Bu Yu's hand came to a stop as he was moving it to throw away that old underwear. Then, his eyes underwent a transformation, and resumed cognizance.

That Spirit Xuan expert suddenly became aware of his compromising situation as the cold wind blew over. And, he stood dumbstruck for a moment. There were many people in the vicinity. Moreover, they had lit-up torches since it was late. And, the light from those torches were reflecting on his body. In fact, even inch of his body was clearly visible to everyone!

Even the Seven Swords were glaring at him in hatred and indifference at this time. In fact, they had no shred of sympathy for him. The other elders were looking at his ashamed and pitiable face with anger. Only the people from his Xiao Family were an exception to this. In fact, the Third and the Fifth Elders were glaring at him in a manner that made it seem as if they would move forward and slap him to death.

[Why has everyone betrayed me?] Xiao Bu Yu was internally shaken at this moment. His mind raced, and he recalled what had happened. Then, every single dialogue that had taken place between him and Jun Mo Xie came to his mind...

"Ah...!" he bitterly cried out in fear. Xiao Bu Yu suddenly crouched on the ground, and did his best to use his hands to cover himself. But, his hands were too small. So, he managed to cover the front, but he wasn't able to cover the back. The old man couldn't use his underwear either since he had torn it during the show. Moreover, everyone had already seen everything. So, there was no point in burying his head in the sand...

His actions may have lightening fast. But, how much could he

have covered...?

"Clap! Clap!" Jun Mo Xie clapped his hands in a very cold manner. He gave Xiao Bu Yu a cynical look of unspeakable hatred. Then, the Young Master Jun laughed out loud and said, "Good, good! It was indeed a treat for everyone. They are very fortunate to have gotten a chance to appreciate such a peerless expert. The Silver City's Xiao Bu Yu holds the great position of the Second Elder. But, he jumped and did an erotic dance while shedding his clothes for these people! Isn't this a matter of privilege and pride? I'm sure that even a man who has lived up to ten lives wouldn't have been fortunate enough to witness something this!

"Elder Xiao Bu Yu is the only person since time-immemorial who has gathered the courage to do a bare-naked dance in front of thousands of troops. This Young Master genuinely admires such a level of art, commitment, and courage!"

The troops of the army had already heard about the wickedness of the Silver City's Xiao Family. Therefore, they had begun to detest the Xiao Family to their very bone. In fact, they abhorred the Xiao Family. Therefore, the troops cried themselves hoarse, and cheered loudly when they heard Jun Mo Xie's words.

"I never thought that the ass of someone so old could be so fresh! Tch..." one person exclaimed.

"Is it fresher than yours?" someone else asked.

"But, I'm nothing like this old man! He's an Elder of the Silver City! He's also a Spirit Xuan expert! So, how is his ass so pure? It seems that he rubs it very frequently. Would it be that nice if he didn't rub it repeatedly? Rubbing one's skin again and again can even turn black skin to a whiter shade..."

"Why would a man feel it with his hand so often? Isn't that a place one doesn't touch very often?" An increasing number of people had started to join-in.

"Ahem... ahem! How would I know this? Maybe the Second Elder was under pressure from living a hard life... So, it's possible that may have had no choice but to sell his ass for money!"

"That makes sense! But, what time does the Second Xiao Elder open for business...? I would like to become his customer!"

"Bah! That old man is a level-four Spirit Xuan expert! His fee won't be low! You think he'll do it free?! Ask yourself... can you afford him?"

"The status of a Spirit Xuan is astonishing, ah! I can't afford him. But, I think that the Xiao Family would have loads of extra resources. So, they wouldn't have asked the Xiao Elder do this thing for money, right? So, maybe he does it because he enjoys it!"

"That sounds reasonable too! That must be it. How else could his ass be so good? You have good knowledge and understanding, my brother! That outstanding ass as genuinely tempted me after he twisted it and danced it out in such a saucy way..."

"You flatter me. But, I think that someone like the Second Xiao Elder would require us brothers at the same time. How could you meet his expectations on your own? The Elder's Xuan cultivation is excellent. I hear that he's the strongest man if you exclude the Great Masters from the list! He's excellent in that regard. A regular person can't meet his expectations! No man can! It's no small thing. So, you and I should go together. One should go from the top, and other should go from the bottom at the same time. We must go for a pincer attack. And, I'm sure that we will eventually satisfy this Elder!"

"Good, good! We might as well cut off some bamboos before we meet him. After all, there's a chance that we may have to surrender and lay down arms midway. So, we must prepare a stick in advance. He's strongest man if you exclude the Great Masters! Who could else could tolerate that if he can't..."

"Ah! That's a good advice! It's a good way of going about things!

You're worthy of being the leader of the Third Battalion! Your weapon never strikes with uncertainty! We can surely serve this Xiao Elder properly if we follow this approach!"

"Ah, it's nothing... You're flattering me! My method isn't that great. And, won't this Elder look to create trouble for my family if I'm not able to service and satisfy him properly? Don't ever doubt that. He's very familiar with that road. In fact, that would be a walk in the park for him... hahaha!"

"Hahahaha... and thus, great minds think alike!"

These were the uncouth fellows of the army. They would often harm others. So, how could they not harm their opponent? And, those lacking in morality wouldn't refrain from fighting a battle of words... or making lewd comments about others. However, these words from those men made Xiao Bu Yu very mad. In fact, they left him in so much pain that he didn't wish to live anymore.

"Aaaargh..." Xiao Bu Yu looked upwards, and let out a very loud roar. His expression was one of extreme grief as he suddenly stood up straight. His skin turned red, and the color continued to deepen with every passing moment. The Elder's outer surface had started to blow up like an air-balloon. And, it was still expanding at a quick pace...

"Xiao Bu Yu moved unhindered throughout the world. But, my fall has unexpectedly arrived! However, it has come in a shameless way by dancing naked in front of these small-fries! I've suffered so much ridicule and hatred today. I won't forget this hatred... even if I am reincarnated!" Xiao Bu Yu faced upwards and roared. He had a look of anger, and a desire to tear everything apart. Thin wisps of red had started to flow from the corners of his mouth and eyes.

"Jun Mo Xie! Wait for me! I will turn into an evil spirit and look for you to avenge this disgrace!" Xiao Bu Yu shouted in a miserable and sharp tone. Then, there was a loud explosion as his body burst. His blood filled the sky, and disappeared with the cold wind.

That terrible humiliation had made Xiao Bu Yu lose any love for life. Therefore, this powerful expert had committed suicide in an extremely terrifying way!

He could've gone over to the enemy, and could've taken some of them with him in that explosion. But, he didn't do that. And, that was because Xiao Bu Yu wanted to turn into nothingness as soon as possible! He wanted to end this humiliation so desperately that he couldn't even wait for one additional moment. So, he committed suicide the moment he was ready to explode...

Chapter 429: Keeping a Promise!

"It's very weak! The tolerance is very weak!" Jun Mo Xie had stood fairly close to Xiao Bu Yu when he had performed that passionate striptease a little while ago. However, Xiao Bu Yu had suddenly detonated his own body in suicide. Young Master Jun had been calm and collected in that moment, but he still hadn't been able to react in time. He had understood that Xiao Bu Yu had done this to free himself, and had no intention of killing anyone else. After all, the explosion hadn't contained any lethal force. But, Young Master Jun was still taken by surprise by that spray of blood, and it had ended up covering his whole face.

Young Master Jun wiped his face and shook his head in a somewhat dissatisfied manner at first. He then said, "He was an expert who was only second to a Great Master. How was he not able to endure that much... and killed himself instead...? He was wasted all my plans now. It's a pity that we won't get to see those amazing buttocks again. Wouldn't we have wanted to see more of them? Damn it! I had planned that I would cut the skin of his great-grandson, and pour mercury inside his body while he was watching. Or maybe, I would've cracked his skull and boiled his brain. This excellent spectacle had barely started... And, we hadn't even reached the best parts yet. But, it's already over now... It happened so quickly. I wish he would've had more tolerance and strength to him... It's such a disappointment when you hear a lot about someone but they don't match up to their fame..."

Everyone who had heard Jun Mo Xie's words had the exact same expression on their faces — they all looked straight at him in rapt attention.

Jun Mo Xie's remark had obviously implicated someone else who was present on the scene. Consequently, Xiao Feng Wu's legs had been left to shake like the strings on an instrument. And, his small face had turned deathly white. In fact, it was almost as if his face

had been boiled in lime soda...

The powerful and mysterious aura that had been covering the five elders disappeared at this time. In fact, this happened very suddenly and silently, and left no trace of its existence behind.

The five of them obviously started to move-about as a result. However, the five men separated into two clearly distinct groups the moment they were able to move. The three men from the Xiao Family were left to face the two from the Han Family. Moreover, the men of both groups were looking at each other with extreme hatred.

The three elders from the Xiao Family had some shame in their eyes... but not too much.

The condition of the five men was quite similar. They were sweating profusely since they had been subjected to the enormous pressure from that mysterious aura. The sweat had soaked their clothes, and their faces also belied their exhaustion. It was evident that they had exhausted their energy while enduring that formidable pressure from before. And, each of them felt weak at this time. But, the five of them were still glaring at the other side. In fact, it was obvious that they were itching to take down those who had been allies and brothers a few minutes ago.

"The Xiao Family is great! They make great schemes! They make great plans! They are great!" The Third Elder was panting with anger. His eyes were also burning with anger. "The Lords of the Silver City have treated the Xiao Family's members with utmost courtesy and respect. But, they were nurturing tigers who would harm them in the future! Bah! It's useless to say that they were nurturing 'tigers'! Tigers are meant to rule over the other beasts. We've basically been raising a pack of conniving wolves! How can people like you live in this world?"

The Eighth Elder tilted his head and snorted coldly. He then said, "What would you do, Han Fei Yun?"

The Third Elder trembled in rage. He replied in a very blunt manner, "Your Xiao Family started this. Yet, you ask me what I will do? I would've already found it impossible to live if I were you. In fact, I would've found the nearest tree, and would've hung myself from it! You are so devoid of shame... that you have bitten the hand that feeds you!"

"You want us die? Han Fei Yun, you have no qualifications to wish for that! Humph! In fact, your Han Family may not be able to win in the contest between our two families once we return to the Silver City!" the Eighth Elder glared coldly and sneered as he spoke.

"I don't have the qualifications? Let's test it out and see!" the Third Elder's face twitched in a violent manner as he raised his palm and shouted, "Seven Swords! Move into formation! Uphold the Family's law! Take these Xiao Family's rebels into custody!" The Seven Swords moved in unison to deal with the three Xiao elders. The Xiao Elders looked strong in their rebellion, but it was obvious that they wouldn't be able to last long.

The complexion of the Eighth Elder and his companions changed very drastically in this moment. The contrast in their strength was obvious at once glance. These five elders had been forced to endure that insurmountable pressure a short while ago. Consequently, their Spirit Xuan energy was at 10-20% of its normal capacity. So, it could be said that they were at their weakest at this time.

There was a clear divide between these five at this time. However, those three could still match their two opponents, and could even take the advantage. The Seven Swords were quite powerful together. In fact, an ordinary Spirit Xuan couldn't match them in normal times. However, their bodies had suffered injuries while fighting the Great Master Solitary Falcon. Therefore, the Seven Swords weren't guaranteed to arrest the three Xiao Elders even if they united against them...

However, the Han Family had another ace up their sleeves — Mu

Xue Tong! This Sky Xuan middle-rank expert's strength hadn't suffered any damage until now!

Mu Xue Tong was merely a Sky Xuan expert on a normal day. So, he wasn't much in the eyes of these Spirit Xuan experts. But, the circumstances had changed very drastically at this time. Consequently, this seemingly insignificant persona could easily turn out to be a trump card, and could play a critical role at the end of the day.

Could it be that Mu Xue Tong would make the decisive blow in the Silver Blizzard City's civil war?

Suddenly, an unusually mild voice echoed, "It is hard to say whether they have enough qualifications or not... I have to say that the Xiao Family's life isn't their own anymore. However, it doesn't belong to the Han Family either..."

No one except for Young Master Jun could've spoken in such a leisurely tone under such circumstances.

Jun Mo Xie floated as lightly as his words did, and he suddenly disappeared in thin air. He then suddenly appeared in front of Xiao Feng Wu in one quick move. Jun Mo Xie reached out, and grabbed his neck. And then, Young Master Jun returned to the spot where he had started from with a fluid and rapid move. He only left behind an after-image of his hand grabbing Xiao Feng Wu's neck. In fact, the only that had changed was the fact that he had raised Xiao Feng Wu by his neck by now...

The muscles of Xiao Feng Wu's throat had become limp and pained out of fear. Jun Mo Xie had appeared in front of him like a ghost. In fact, the Xiao boy hadn't even been able to think of putting up a resistance!

The Sixth, Eight, and Ninth Elder suddenly became very anxious when they saw Jun Mo Xie grab Xiao Feng Wu's neck like a butcher holds up a chicken's before the slaughter. They frantically took a step forward, "Jun Mo Xie! Every crime has a criminal to its cause! But,

Feng Wu has committed no crime against you! Don't tyrannize the innocent!"

It was only natural that the three elders seemed anxious. The male line of the Xiao Family was thinning. There were surely many youngsters in the Xiao Family in Xiao Feng Wu's generation, but there weren't many who were worthy. Moreover, Xiao Feng Wu was the most talented youngster in his generation...

"I'm tyrannizing the innocent? This Young Master isn't even seventeen years old, but your grandson is fast-approaching twenty, right? So, how could I be the bully? Every crime has a criminal to its cause? These words came out from the mouths of you Xiao Family people? Don't you always take out your rage on innocents? Don't you always do whatever you feel like? Don't tell me what Xiao Bu Yu had told us about was orchestrated by him alone?! Didn't you guys know anything about it? Damn you arrogant old men!"

Jun Mo Xie used his free hand to prick at his ear as he argued in a baffled tone. Jeering sounds from the crowd had been echoing along with his voice this entire time. Even the Seven Swords were amongst those who were sneering...

"How many millions have suffered injustice because of your Xiao Family's personal grudges? How many hundreds of thousands have died a violent death? And, that's not even the end of it! You've even harmed innumerable innocent children! And now, every crime suddenly has a particular culprit to cause when you've faced a problem?"

Any man could speak those words for clemency. However, the men of the Xiao Family couldn't!

Jun Mo Xie gave them a cold and sharp look. He seemed calm, but he still emanated an icy murderous aura as he slowly spoke, "I swore to Xiao Bu Yu that I won't let off a single man of the Xiao Family! Those who can't be truthful shouldn't stand tall. And, a

Young Master from a good family mustn't break his promises. It's necessary for a Young Master to keep his promise! In fact, he can't renounce his promise even if he dies fulfilling it!"

The Sixth Elder trembled in rage at Young Master Jun's mockery. He found it difficult to control his anger. In fact, he was about to roar and pounce forward when... Jun Mo Xie smirked and there was a sound of something breaking. It was then that Xiao Feng Wu screamed like a dying pig. Young Master Jun crushed his shoulder!

"No! Don't kill me! Don't cut my skull and pour mercury in it! I beg you... I beg you... Elder Brother Jun! My Great Older Brother Jun..." Xiao Feng Wu started to beg for mercy under the influence of the pain. The more he spoke... the more pain he found himself in. And, this automatically made him more afraid in return. He suddenly shouted and started to weep. His eyes and nose were left streaming. It seemed as if he was willing to say anything out of fear at this time...

The Sixth Elder paused for a second. Then, he roared in rage and fear, "Jun Mo Xie, how can you be so despicable?"

Jun Mo Xie laughed loudly, "Despicable? You have the nerve to a call me 'despicable'? You didn't think it was despicable when you slaughtered tens of thousands of men? You didn't think of the heaven's judgment when you crippled the children of the men who were loyal to us? So, how is it despicable when it's your turn to suffer? Could I do anything today that could be worse than what the Xiao Family did?"

Xiao Feng Wu's blood-curdling pitiful screams accompanied Jun Mo Xie's laughter. The sound of breaking of bones also ringed in the air as each one of the Xiao youngster's limbs were crushed one after the other. In fact, his voice was brought close to a groan by the time each one of those limbs had softly hung down to his side after being broken. The Sixth Elder roared frantically and dashed forward. Jun Mo Xie saw the Elder burst into motion. So, he grabbed Xiao Feng Wu's neck by the nape, and threw him forward.

A crisp and sharp sound was heard as this happened. It was obvious that Xiao Feng Wu's spine had been broken in that snap...

Then, Jun Mo Xie followed Xiao Feng Wu's flying body at an extremely quick pace. In fact, it seemed as if he was moving at a lightning-fast speed.

The Sixth Elder was shocked by this, and he dashed straight towards Xiao Feng Wu's falling body. He was about to reach out and catch him when he heard the blowing wind. And, he quickly realized that Jun Mo Xie was rushing over from behind.

The Sixth Elder had seen Jun Mo Xie's fight with Xiao Bu Yu. So, how could he not know the problems that Jun Mo Xie's amazing, demon-like, and magical moves could cause? Moreover, the Elder's strength wasn't at its usual peak. So, he knew that there would be no way out for him. Thus, he made a prompt decision, and decided against catching Xiao Feng Wu's body. Instead, he dodged left, and drew his sword. A hurricane of snowflakes filled the sky the moment he drew his sword!

The old man had just drawn his sword and displayed the Silver Blizzard City's swordplay when he heard a loud "Bang!" and "Bang". It was obviously the sound of breaking of bones. Then, he saw that Xiao Feng Wu's body had been sent flying at him once again. It turned out that Jun Mo Xie had moved into action, and had kicked Xiao Feng Wu again. However, these kicks had changed the direction of Xiao Feng Wu's body, and had redirected it back towards the dodging Sixth Elder.

This kick had changed the direction of flight with perfection. Moreover, it had also broken Xiao Feng Wu's lower back. Consequently, Xiao Feng Wu's condition was only a step behind that of Xiao Han. In fact, it was only his face that remained to be dismembered...

Xiao Feng Wu had been completely destroyed...

The Sixth Elder knew that he couldn't avoid the incoming body

this time. Moreover, he had realized that Xiao Feng Wu would be the first one to suffer the disaster in case he persisted with his sword attack. So, he had no choice but to restrain his attack in haste. He then grabbed Xiao Feng Wu's body. However, he quickly realized the true misery of the youngster's body the moment he embraced him. Consequently, the old man couldn't help but shout in anger and fear, "How can you use such malicious methods, Jun Mo Xie!"

However, he was left stupefied after speaking this... And, this was a result of what he saw!

Chapter 430: The Stunning Sword Attack!

The Sixth Elder was as a Spirit Xuan expert. He was fully aware of the soon-to-come attack from Jun Mo Xie. So, he had made full-proof preparations to face it.

In fact, he wasn't the only one. Everyone else was prepared too.

Jun Mo Xie's best option was to attack the Sixth Elder with his best strike at this time. However, he would have to retreat if it wasn't good enough. The Eight and Ninth Elders stood at a distance on the side. Their hands were on their swords' hilts, and they were prepared to provide support to their comrade if needed.

Everyone had become wary after they had witnessed Jun Mo Xie's supernatural and unreadable footwork. Even the Spirit Xuan experts weren't an exception. In fact, even someone like the Solitary Falcon believed that he wasn't guaranteed to win against Jun Mo Xie's fast swordplay even though he-himself was world-renowned for his speed and agility!

A mere base-rank Sky Xuan should've been a small-fry in the eyes of the Spirit Xuan experts. However, he had become far more important to them. In fact, he had been promoted to an expert-on-par with themselves.

They had no choice but to be on the defensive!

Not only were they very cautious, but they had also taken very careful defensive measures.

Everyone could clearly see that Jun Mo Xie had stuck close behind Xiao Feng Wu's falling body. In fact, they could even see his sword flickering with a cold light.

However, Jun Mo Xie suddenly disappeared the next moment. He then re-appeared behind the Eighth and the Ninth Elders.

The corners of his mouth curved in a cruel smile as a cold light flashed.

The divine weapon!

Blood of Yellow Flame!

The silent and brilliantly shining sword suddenly swung at the Eighth and Ninth Elders' legs! And, it seemed as if a flash of lightening had shaken the world for a brief moment!

In fact, that sword shone so brilliantly that no one who witnessed it being swung could resist its glare. And, everyone was involuntarily forced to shut their eyes as a result.

However, it had left behind a glittery radiance across the realms of world. The lightning had disappeared long ago. But, it still remained in the minds of everyone even though they had closed their eyes. In fact, it had left the most unique and exceptional impact on their hearts!

Then, the Young Master Jun's body rose in the air like a soaring dragon, and disappeared in a flash. No one knew where he had gone off to again...

The Eighth and the Ninth Elders felt cold inside. They could feel that something was wrong...

Even the white-clothed girl raised her head in confusion and pondered. That was because she couldn't sense where Jun Mo Xie had gone off to despite with her cultivation level. It was like he had suddenly disappeared from the world itself...

[There's no trace of him! Even spirit sense can't see him!]

[How is he doing this? He used that mysterious move again! But, I still can't glean anything from it!]

[This can't be the skill-set of a regular expert of this world. This is some immortal and divine move!]

The Sixth Elder was still holding Xiao Feng Wu with one arm in a dumbfounded manner. He stood trembling for a good while before he called out, "Eighth, Ninth... are you alright?" He had clearly

seen Jun Mo Xie's sword-light pass through the lower halves of both those men. But, why hadn't either of them reacted to it?

[What's happening?]

The Sixth Elder didn't believe for a second that Jun Mo Xie had done that for show's sake alone. [He must've had some purpose behind it! But, why do the Eighth and Ninth seem completely unaffected...?]

The Eighth and Ninth Elders looked at each other in a confused manner. These two had reached the Spirit Xuan realm, but they were weaker than the Sixth Elder. Consequently, the Sixth Elder had recovered enough to push himself into action. However, these two were still feeling some weakness.

Each of them inspected the other, and confirmed that there was nothing wrong. Then, they laughed out, and spoke-up, "We're fine! That little bastard Jun Mo Xie is a mere Sky Xuan brat. He only played a trick and made a bluff. How could he do something to us...?"

However, they hadn't even finished speaking when their expressions suddenly underwent a drastic and tragic change...

A piece of white cloth gently fell off from each of their thighs, and exposed their legs to the wind. Consequently, they felt a slight chill since their bare and loftily legs stood facing the cold winds.

[The upper and the lower half of our robes were obviously made from one piece of cloth. So, why did the lower half fall down?]

[Is it possible that... he cut them off?]

They had barely begun to think of this possibility when they suddenly felt an acute pain in their legs. The two of them looked at each other in extreme horror. They then tried to move their bodies, but weren't able to take a single step...

Their bodies made one move forward, but the top halves of their bodies fell down like a toppling tower. The blood spurted out from

their bodies like a fountain. In fact, it appeared as if four columns of blood had violently splashed out in all directions.

The two men gave out a sky-rendering howl of pain. In fact, their screams were probably heard for many hundreds of kilometers at a distance.

Two pairs of slippery and bare legs remained where the two men had stood a moment ago. They stood straight from the soles and up to the thighs like majestic stone pillars in lakes. They were stationary, but the apex of their thighs were violently foaming with blood.

Jun Mo Xie had used his sword-light to cut the four legs at an inexplicable speed. And, his Blood of Yellow Flame was so sharp that the two men hadn't even realized that their legs had been cut off for a long time.

Perhaps they had become aware of it a bit earlier. However, neither of the two men had believed it to be a fact!

The entire vicinity slipped into deathly silence again!

No one could've imagined this...

[Someone possesses such a speed!]

[And, someone holds such a sharp sword!]

The white-clothed girl sighed softly on the side. Her voice was so soft that no one could hear it. She was the only one who had seen Jun Mo Xie's swordplay in clear and proper manner. There had been nothing clever about it... nor had it been very ingenious...

There had only been one unusual aspect about it — it was extremely fast!

His speed had continued to increase until it had reached the pinnacle. Then, he had coupled the speed of his swordplay with the speed of his light footwork. And, this had increased the speed of his attack even further. And, it was then that he had slashed his

sword!

There's nothing that cannot be achieved. There's no speed that can't be beaten. And, there's no speed that can't be attained. Everything can be achieved, and everything can be destroyed!

Jun Mo Xie was a youngster who hadn't been a base-level Sky Xuan expert for even two days yet. However, he had already crippled two Spirit Xuan experts in front of so many people. The two Spirit Xuan experts had surely exhausted a major portion of their strength. This held true for their mental strength and Xuan cultivation alike. In fact, anyone who had been subjected to such high pressure would surely have their strength reduced very significantly....

However... they were still Spirit Xuan experts at the end of the day!

And, Jun Mo Xie had managed to inflict serious injuries to them... without them even realizing it.

Their legs had obviously been cut off from their bodies. But, they had still remained attached to the bodies for some time. In fact, even a single splash of blood hadn't splattered out...

Whether it was the speed of the moves, the speed of the sword, or its sharpness... every aspect had reached a frightening level!

"Eighth! Ninth!" the Sixth Elder roared with anger and despair. His eyes had become bloodshot. Xiao Feng Wu's body fell from his hands as he roared. However, the Sixth Elder's trembling figure stood there dumbfounded.

The Silver City had sent out a group of unprecedented strength for this event. Xiao Bu Yu had personally taken the lead of the group. He was a level-four Spirit Xuan expert, and he was also the strongest expert who wasn't considered a Great Master. The Head of the Xiao Family had sent four of its elders. And, two more from the Han Family had accompanied them. Thus, a total of six Spirit

Xuan experts had moved out in one team. Then, there were the Seven Swords. And, these seven experts could prove a match to almost anyone when they fought together! And, the two Sky Xuan experts... Xiao Han and Mu Xue Tong had also accompanied them...

Such strength would surely create a sensation no matter where it went. Would there be any force they couldn't dare to face head-on?

However, such a formidable power had suffered repeated losses for some mysterious reason. In fact, they had suffered a ruinous blow even before they could retreat. Moreover, the Xiao Family's forces had been thoroughly defeated by now...

And, the reason behind this had been a very trivial one to its merit — Xiao Han had wanted to challenge Jun Wu Yi for a fight! They had known that the Jun Family had the Solitary Falcon's strength to support them. Therefore, they hadn't dared to underestimate the Jun Family. However, they knew that they could beat the Great Master with their combined strength of six Spirit Xuan experts and the Seven Swords...

Jun Wu Yi could've employed a sea of tactics, and could've put the numerical advantage of his troops to play in order to get away. However, how could a large force of ordinary men have dealt with the speed of Spirit Xuan experts?

However, they could've never anticipated that Xiao Han would've become thoroughly crippled in the first fight. Then, Xiao Bu Yu had blown himself up in shame after Jun Mo Xie had exposed that despicable and shameless act of the Xiao Family...

They had lost every ounce of their reputation!

Only the Sixth Elder remained at this time. And, it could be said that he was besieged from all sides.

The Jun Family obviously wanted to sort him out. Moreover, even his own companions wanted to deal with him!

He had truly come to regret it...

[Why did that mysterious person appear and confine the five of us? Would the Jun Family have had enough strength to face the five of us Spirit Xuan experts along with Xiao Bu Yu if that hadn't happened?!]

The Sixth Elder looked around in dismay. However, he only saw that the eyes in the vicinity were looking at him like he was some prey. The old man sighed upon this realization. Then, he pierced Xiao Feng Wu's throat with his sword!

[It's better to be dead than to live a life of such extreme humiliation!]

[There's no hope today. And, barely holding on will be a greater tragedy! I don't have any chance of an escape. My two brothers' legs are also cut. So, they can't carry on like this either...]

[The only thing that I can do is relieve their misery... and kill myself afterwards. Then, we will all go together on the road ahead...]

"Ancestor... your children are incompetent..." the Sixth Elder looked up to the sky, and cried out bitterly as tears flowed from his eyes. The concentrated sword-light split into two, and flew towards the Eighth and the Ninth Elders.

However, he had become absentminded. In fact, he hadn't even realized that Jun Mo Xie had appeared behind him.

"Puff!" A bright and shiny blade appeared from the inside of the Sixth Elder's chest. And, it disappeared before the fountain of blood sprayed out.

That sword attack had destroyed the Sixth Elder's bodily functions. The Elder's eyes bulged as his body stood there. The split sword-light he had sent went awry about half-way as his sword fell to the ground with a "Thud!" Then, his body started to sway. The spirit of his life became chaotic in his eyes as he swayed

and fell to the ground. The man twitched a couple of times before he became permanently still...

"Clinch!" the divine weapon returned to its scabbard, and made a satisfied consonant. It seemed that it had eaten its fill, and was quite satisfied with its first battle's result.

It had consumed the blood of four Spirit Xuan experts, and one Sky Xuan expert.

The blood of these five lowly and despicable people had come as the first offering to the Blood of Yellow Flame after its forging.

Such an achievement was difficult... even impossible to believe. In fact, anyone who had witnessed it with their own eyes would've found it difficult to be convinced in their hearts.

Jun Mo Xie still stood calmly at this moment. He then turned his expressionless face towards the Silver City's remaining elders and the Seven Swords. Then, he slowly spoke-up, "The grudges between the Xiao and the Jun Family have been settled on this day. Do you have anything to say for it?"

Chapter 431: I'm a Kindhearted Person in Reality

Jun Mo Xie still stood calmly at this moment. He then turned his expressionless face towards the Silver City's remaining elders and the Seven Swords. Then, he slowly spoke-up, "The grudges between the Xiao and the Jun Family have been settled on this day. Do you have anything to say for it?"

[What can we say? You've killed and crippled every one of them. You've finished the job, and you haven't left any room for negotiation! And now, you're asking us what we have to say?]

[You're so fierce and vicious! And, you also have that mysterious powerful person at your back. What can we say?]

[Moreover, we genuinely don't have anything to say about it. So, it seems that the grudges between the Xiao and the Jun Family have been dealt with. Anyhow, the Xiao Family is the common enemy of the Silver City and the Jun Family at this time.]

[How can we say this... this matter is freakishly outlandish!]

The ten people looked at each, but none of them opened their mouths.

"Ah, I have dealt with personal grudges now. But, I know that the Silver City has lost some reputation because of this matter. And, I apologize for that," Jun Mo Xie expression was serious as he sighed and spoke.

[You know that the Silver City has lost reputation...? How did you figure that out so early!? You made our elder do a striptease! You didn't realize that it would have some negative influence on the Silver City's reputation when you asked him to do that...?]

[Xiao Bu Yu surely spoke of rebellion before he died... But, doesn't everyone know that the Xiao Family is also a part of the Silver Blizzard City?]

Then, they heard Jun Mo Xie change the subject, "However, let me clarify one thing. I'm only apologizing because of my aunt... not because of the Silver City itself! This has to be explained properly because we have discovered Xiao Family's plot against the Silver City. However, this Young Master feels that this is a good thing for the Silver City... or at least for your Han Family!"

[A good thing is a good thing. But, it seems like our magnificent Silver City's influence is falling short in front of our Lord's eldest daughter! Oh forget about it... We still have some influence at least...]

"As the matter stands... I'm not showing off my achievements here... hehe... Everyone has seen today's matters. So, everyone knows that you couldn't have discovered Xiao Family's plot if I hadn't used that amazing technique. Hehe... it would've become quite a worrisome future for the Silver City if I hadn't done that..."

"However, I'm good a person at heart. I would've never allowed things to go to such extremes," Jun Mo Xie's voice had changed as he sighed and continued, "As the saying goes, 'which man floating in the rivers of society hasn't been stabbed?' Everyone has always acknowledged that sacrificing and saving people is the most meritorious thing in the world. In fact, one instantly achieves nirvana if they do such a deed. They are instantly absolved of all crimes, and achieve a higher and divine status! Nirvana ah... I'm too good to be true. I did a great service to humanity. I handled things very timely. This is very good. This is excellent!"

These words left the eyebrows of the men from the Silver Blizzard City twitching and taut. Even the Solitary Falcon had been struck dumb along with the soldiers in the army. They could've never imagined that this world could've ever given refuge to such a thick-skinned person...

[He dares to go as far as saying that he's 'kindhearted'? Isn't he taking things to the extremes now? How could your tongue even endure speaking such things in such a haughty manner?]

[Your face didn't even become red when you spoke these words... Your heart didn't even race at the thought of it! This means that you have reached a new level of shamelessness! In fact, this level of shamelessness would leave anyone to gasp in amazement! How can you call what you did a "service"?]

"The hatred between the Jun and the Xiao Family knows no bounds! But, I'm a kindhearted person. So, I still won't spill any unnecessary blood even though we harbor such immense hatred for the Xiao Family. I mean what I say! Why else would I spare the life of a man as evil as Xiao Han? Everyone who has witnessed my mercy knows that my words aren't empty..."

[They obviously aren't empty! But, what you did wasn't that good a deed. In fact, it would've been better to kill him with your sword! You would've shown him great mercy if you had killed him instead of brutalize him in such a violent manner! You would've been considered a pure being in that case!] The Silver City's Seven Swords felt their stomachs convulsing. In fact, they felt as if their teeth had started to melt in their bile.

Jun Mo Xie bemoaned the state of mankind as he continued, "The life which God gives us is virtuous. You see... I wouldn't even have killed the Sixth Elder if there had been another way of saving the life of the Eighth and Ninth elders. Furthermore, when it comes to Xiao Bu Yu's death — I had only made him jump and strip for entertainment. Everyone who saw it felt happy and entertained. In fact, he even got to exercise his aged body! It was a win-win! He was such an old man! He had seen so many things in this world! However, he had no tolerance... And, Xiao Feng Yu was also killed by the Sixth Elder. I had only handed his body over to the Elder so that he could hold it. After all, they were related by blood. How could I have known that the Sixth Elder would kill his own great-grandson because he didn't please his eyes anymore? And, he did it so quickly... So, I didn't even get the time to save the boy. I'm really ashamed.

"Everyone knows that I'm a very good man with an extremely soft heart. I deal with every problem with my own hand... In fact, I even sweep the floor very careful because I fear hurting a small insect. I even cover my lanterns with cloth because I care for moths. I know that life is important. And, that fact is naturally unchanging..."

"Bluergh..." the Solitary Falcon turned around and vomited.

The soldiers imitated him, and started to vomit as well. [He's too shameless! He's too disgusting! This is outrageous!]

[Such shameless people are very rare in this world!]

"I only request that you people take those three back to the Silver City. It shouldn't be a problem, right? You're anyway going in that direction... Moreover, you can also investigate further into their plans..." Jun Mo Xie ignored the fact that everyone was vomiting, and continued with a big smile in a good-natured tone, "This is... the fate of man."

The Seven Swords and the two Elders walked towards Xiao Han and the other two crippled men after Jun Mo Xie spoke this part. [It will be great if we can leave this little devil's side as soon as possible. He's too disgusting...]

Mu Xue Tong faced Jun Wu Yi, and cupped his hands before he left. He wanted to say something, but didn't in the end.

It had to be mentioned that the Little Princess Han Yan Meng had been impatient to leave. She had looked at Jun Mo Xie earlier, and he looked like a demon to her eyes. The little girl had feared that this demon would've consumed her to her very bones, and wouldn't even have left a drop of blood behind...

"Mo Xie!" Jun Wu Yi's eyes were red. He seemed emotionally moved as he grabbed his nephew's arm and asked, "Was that the truth?"

"Was 'what' the truth?" Jun Mo Xie asked somewhat puzzled.

"The children at the Hall of Hell... are they their children? Are they the children of my brothers?" Jun Wu Yi's eyes were glistening with tears, and his voice was hoarse.

The Blood General could only think of one thing at this time — whether those children were the offspring of his fellow brothers. And, he dearly hoped that Jun Mo Xie would answer his question with a 'No'.

That's because Jun Wu Yi didn't know how his heart would confront such hatred if it were true...

"I won't lie about this. It's true for an overwhelming majority of them," Jun Mo Xie understood the matter, and continued seriously, "Don't worry, Third Uncle. I already re-investigated them. Their situation is much better than before. Moreover, I've already assigned people to treat them for a quick recovery. Some of them have already recovered to some extent. And, I've also requested my master if he could refine some divine medicines which could help them recover faster..."

Jun Mo Xie was forced to say this to make Jun Wu Yi feel better...

Jun Wu Yi had always been a man with strong emotions. Therefore, this matter needed to be handled properly. Else, the Third Master Jun would feel sad whenever he would think of those orphans... even if he was reunited with Han Yan Yao. In fact, this matter could even create a rift between Jun Wu Yi and Han Yan Yao. The two people's feelings for each other were as deep as the ocean, but they would still hold regrets throughout their lives.

Such a thing wasn't impossible given Jun Wu Yi's nature. In fact, there was every possibility of this becoming a reality...

The situation was starting to become better now. So, it would be a huge pity if this matter led to another tragedy. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie grinded his teeth, and made an illusionary promise.

He had pushed everything onto his imaginary "master". And, that

would at least give Jun Wu Yi hope... even if it couldn't be accomplished. It was something similar to the recovery of his legs. After all, that had also seemed like an illusionary hope at some point in time...

Moreover, this thing wasn't necessarily impossible given Jun Mo Xie's advancement with the Hong Jun Pagoda.

"This is good! This is very good! I'm sure that everything will be fine if the senior is working on it!" Jun Wu Yi was emotionally moved, and couldn't contain himself. His sword-like eyebrows shot up as he continued in a heavy tone, "I won't be able to face 'my brothers of old' if I don't take good care of those children."

Jun Mo Xie's heart sank again.

Jun Wu Yi's state of mind had gone into turmoil ever since he had heard about what had happened to those children because of the hatred between the Jun and the Xiao Family.

[This isn't a good sign.]

"Those little ones and I still look up to you, Third Uncle," Jun Mo Xie reminded him.

Jun Wu Yi became teary-eyed, and his expression became complicated as he looked at his nephew. Then, he laughed loudly, and patted Jun Mo Xie's shoulder. However, he didn't say a word and walked away with his own thoughts.

Jun Wu Yi cut as a very lonely figure from behind as he walked away. In fact, he looked very desolate. One could tell that this matter would gnaw at his mind forever. Jun Mo Xie could only sigh...

The officers and soldiers turned back and returned as the bugles started to echo. They had done so without a single word from Jun Wu Yi's mouth.

Solitary Falcon looked at Jun Mo Xie, and approached him slowly, "Jun Mo Xie, this method of yours is shocking and

impetuous! Your strength is good, but you've revealed it somewhat early," The Solitary Falcon had already become accustomed to thinking things over from the Jun Family's point of view.

"Is it too early?" Jun Mo Xie looked at him in an amused manner.

"The matter between you and Guan Qing Han will create a huge disturbance once it comes out. But, you've come out with such a world-shaking revelation at this time. How won't it create any controversy? You're technically at Sky Xuan level, but your fighting-strength has already reached that of a Spirit Xuan expert! But, you haven't even reached the pinnacle of the realm yet. So, this isn't enough to inspire awe in everyone," the Solitary Falcon frowned as he returned his look.

"And you care about it?" Jun Mo Xie tilted his head, and the corners of his mouth curled into his customary evil sneer. "I've done this to make those rotten old bastards ponder over it properly. Humph..."

"I want them to consider this carefully — which of their families can survive my wrath if the Silver City's Xiao Family can't!" Jun Mo Xie's eyes shone with a baleful look as he continued seriously, "I've done this once. So, I can do it fifteen times more! The power of the Imperial Families... their ethics and morality... it has never been worth anything in my eyes!"

"They can go and take a hike!" Jun Mo Xie roared in a lowered voice.

Chapter 432: My Name is Mei Xue Yan

The Third Master Jun had been relieved of his deep hatred since their animosity with the Silver City had been sorted out. However, he had then heard about that inconceivable secret. And, his lively, vigorous, and bright appearance had again dimmed as a result. In fact, it was like a thick layer of impossible-to-rid-of dark mist had started to haunt his aura.

But, the Third Master Jun was still the Supreme Commander of the army. So, he adjusted his emotions before he returned to the army. This battle had left the army disorganized. Therefore, he would need to reorganize the army as soon as possible if they wanted to get on with their journey in a timely manner.

The Solitary Falcon and Young Master Jun didn't return to the army right away. The Solitary Falcon had made great use of the opportunity of getting to fight with the Seven Swords. They surely joined hands against him. However, they had only helped him in practicing and perfecting his skills. They weren't genuinely a match for this battle-craving maniac. However, this fight had yielded great benefits to him in any case...

The Solitary Falcon had been forced to face the combined strength of the Seven Swords and Xiao Bu Yu in the end. And, that had surely left him in a desperate situation where he had suffered some minor losses. However, the overall benefits of this battle had far exceeded the losses. Therefore, the Solitary Falcon went his usual way once everything had finished. And, he decided that he might as well meditate on the spot to recuperate. Moreover, it was also help him imbibe the insights he had gained from the battle.

The Young Master had done the same. It had been around half-a-year since he had come to this world. He had fought many times in the past as well. But, none of those fights could be considered a proper battle. However, this fight with Xiao Bu Yu could genuinely be considered as a battle of life and death. The fight may have

looked simple from the outset... but it had held an entirely different meaning for Jun Mo Xie in reality. After all, he had fused most of the techniques from his previous life with the ones he had learnt in this life!

The Solitary Falcon had started to meditate and imbibe his gains. The army also required some time to reorganize. Thus, the Young Master also sat down for a moment.

Some time had passed when an order was issued from behind. The camp had been set up since it was already late in the evening. The meditations of the Young Master and Solitary Falcon had also come to an end by now.

"Please wait. What would we do if you also leave?" Jun Mo Xie and Solitary Falcon had gotten up to return when they heard a delicate and shy voice address them.

The two men were stunned as they turned around. They seemed to recall that there were two other women in the tea house where the people from the Silver Blizzard City were resting. Moreover, these two women had been in the middle of some dispute with the Xiao Family when the army had arrived.

The Young Master and Solitary Falcon looked up when they heard this voice. And, they couldn't help but stare blankly at what they saw.

A green-clad girl stood not too far from the two men. She seemed a bit nervous. Her small hands were strenuously twisting and twinning at the hem of her robe. Her dark-skinned face didn't stand out much. Only her eyes shone brightly like a full moon. In fact, they were rather pleasant to look at. However, there was nothing special about her apart from her eyes. In fact, she'd even seem somewhat ugly to some eyes...

Jun Mo Xie was aware that he had never seen that woman before. But, he couldn't tell why she still felt somewhat familiar to him.

He had the mind of a top-notch hit-man. In fact, he was the King of killers of his generations. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie would never overlook a matter even if he had the slightest of misgivings in his heart. He pondered carefully for a moment. And, a silhouette flitted across his mind with a flash of divine light; it was the Snake King's figure! However, he couldn't tell why the silhouette of the Snake King faintly resembled that of the girl who stood in front of him. In fact, this was extremely outlandish...

The Solitary Falcon was also going through the same thing, and he was also thinking of the Snake King. The two men couldn't help but look at each other. And, they saw the same incredulous expression in each other's eyes.

They had seen the Snake King in the battlefield outside the Southern Heaven City. She had worn a green dress, and had flaunted a seductive figure. But, her face had appeared beautiful and charming. Moreover, her movements had been invulnerable and strong. Even her expression had reflected arrogance and dominance. The Snake King's demeanor was that of someone as strong as a Great Master in the human parlance. So, how could this insignificant country-side maiden compare to her?

"Who are you? Why are you here?" Jun Mo Xie looked at her rather suspiciously. The Young Master Jun had already overruled the idea that this girl could be the Snake King. But, those two women were alone in this area. And, this point was enough to keep him on guard.

"My elder sister and I are from Tian Xiang. We had come out with our guards to get some medicinal ingredients. But, we hadn't expected that we would encounter so many beasts like we did a few days ago. Then, we were unexpectedly separated from our guards..." The green-clad girl continued with a pitiful manner, "My elder sister and I managed to escape with our lives after suffering untold hardships. But, we ran into those repulsive men when we came here. They wanted to snatch us away to be wives in their

family. They had even said that they would force us if we don't come on our own accord. They were very frightening..."

The green-clad girl still sounded as mournful as before. But, Jun Mo Xie detected something strange in her tone. [Doesn't it feel like she finds it funny... or disdainful?]

"You arrived at the most critical time. Those evil people were fended-off... thanks to your arrival. You're a savior for us sisters!" the green-clothed girl continued in a melodious voice, "You're the young hero who saves a lone young lady from the ruffians. A story about such circumstances is extremely moving..."

"Er... So, you're saying that the Xiao youngster wanted to kidnap you and make you his wife?" Jun Mo Xie was stunned as he looked at the dark-skinned girl's face. He then coughed a bit and said, "This Xiao Family's way of doing things is exceptionally different. It's very uncommon."

"Not me! My elder sister! Her..." the green-clad girl replied in a shy manner. However, she had nearly let out her Xuan strength, and exposed her identity... [I will kill this repulsive snob in one move! I will teach him a lesson even if I don't kill him in the end!]

"Ah, no wonder... Hehe... I only meant to say that this Xiao Family's brat has met beautiful women. Beggars can be choosers... ah... what I mean is... I'm not saying that you're ugly..." Jun Mo Xie smiled.

The Snake King was graced with a delicate and beautiful body. However, she was extremely enraged at Young Master Jun's words. In fact, she was left to tremble in rage. [This explanation is more annoying than no explanation at all. It's not a lie that this brat is the number-one debauchee in Tian Xiang. I finally get why Elder Sister doesn't like him...]

She had previously considered him to be a caring and righteous man. In fact, she had believed him to be a man of importance! Therefore, she had harbored a decent opinion of him in her mind.

But, that 'good impression' was swept away from her mind when she saw him judge her appearance in that manner. In fact, she almost broke her silver fangs in anger. One of the Beast Kings from the Tian Fa Forest had been brought to the verge of tears due to excessive rage...

Jun Mo Xie secretly observed her reaction. He figured that the Snake King would've either become mad... or wouldn't have cared about his lowly words. However, she would've never become teary-eyed like this girl. This was the behavior of a normal girl...

The Snake King was one of the senior most Beast Kings of Tian Fa. However, she had still taken the appearance of a twenty-year-old girl. Therefore, everything of hers would become like that of a human after she had changed her appearance. Jun Mo Xie obviously wasn't aware of this fact. Moreover, her intelligence was normally far superior to that of a regular person. But, the Green Hunter's present temperament was that of an eighteen or nineteen year old girl. Therefore, the degree to which she could endure wouldn't necessarily be much greater than a girl of the said-age unless she were to use her true powers...

This was one of the main differences between the Level Nine peak Xuan Beast and the true Xuan Beast Kings. This was one of the reasons why some Level Nine peak Xuan Beasts were only Xuan Beasts and some Level Nine peak Xuan Beasts had become Xuan Beast Kings...

However, which woman doesn't cherish her appearance? The Snake King certainly knew that she had only disguised her appearance at that moment. But, her heart was still aggrieved by his words...

All men believe that they can entice a princess's love if they get rich. All women are also the same. They hope that a man would discover their inner beauty, and not just remain attracted to them because of their outer beauty.

Rich men always want women to come for them, but not for their money. And, beautiful women always want men to approach them, but not for their outer beauty.

And, everyone would always believe that to be true love...

But, this topic is digression...

The beautiful white-clothed girl had been sitting at a distance. However, she suddenly got up and walked over slowly while everyone was talking. Even a man of the Solitary Falcon's determined power was also dazzled when he looked at the magnificence of the white-clad girl.

In fact, it seemed like the bright moon had descended onto the mortal realm...

Solitary Falcon stared dumbstruck for a while. He then looked at Jun Mo Xie. [Could this youngster with such less experience in love have ever seen a woman as beautiful as her? He might commit a huge social blunder... or stare dumbstruck at the very least... In fact, it won't be abnormal even if he were to start drooling over her! That chap from the younger generation of the Silver City wanted to make a move to marry this girl. But, it's not every surprising given her beauty...]

Guan Qing Han was an exquisite beauty, but this woman magnificence was unmatched. Dugu Xiao Yi was fresh, pure, and adorable... but, this girl was at the peak of the human world.

Her beauty was second to none.

That white-clothed girl had risen above the rest of the world in that regard...

However, things turned out very differently from how the Solitary Falcon had expected. Jun Mo Xie appeared tranquil at this moment. It was like he hadn't even looked at this beauty who could bring the downfall of humanity. In fact, she seemed like any ordinary person in his eyes.

He was totally indifferent...

Moreover, this wasn't an artificial reaction either. After all, deliberate actions would've never resulted in such natural expressions...

"This brat is abnormal! I see him looking at such a beautiful woman... and he doesn't even blink! Is it because the battle was too strenuous on him...? Is he on the verge of dying?!" the Solitary Falcon started to mutter mindlessly.

However, Jun Mo Xie wasn't completely indifferent towards her. That girl had come over to thank him. But, the Young Master hadn't sensed a single ounce of gratefulness in her attitude. Instead, he felt a bone chilling coldness...

The beauty of that white-clothed girl was admittedly peerless. But, he couldn't tell why she seemingly emanated such an indescribable hostility. She had tried her best to hide it. But, Jun Mo Xie had lived in a state of 'ambush from all sides' in both his lives. So, how could he be caught unaware?

[This kind of feeling, ah... It feels like I've committed some grave offense against her. Don't tell me that the hatred of some family from my previous life has also passed through to here? It's impossible, isn't it? Moreover, no one should know that I am Jun Xie even if some hatred has passed over from my previous world...]

The Young Master Jun was genuinely puzzled.

"The Young Lady's beauty is heavenly, ah! But, what is this sweet lady called? And, why has she come here?" Jun Mo Xie searched all over, but he didn't find a trace of Xuan strength in either of the two women. Therefore, he skillfully asked this question.

The green-clad girl had already answered that question a moment ago. However, Jun Mo Xie had repeated the question in order to see if either of those women would make any small mistakes...

"This young woman's name is Mei — Mei Xue Yan. And, my younger sister's name is Mei Qian Qian. We thank the Young Master Jun for the assistance he has provided to us," the white-clothed woman's face reddened as she answered in a soft voice.

"It was a coincidence. I had some scores to settle with the Xiao Family. So, you could say that I didn't help you on purpose. Therefore, the Young Lady needn't be so polite. Your name is Mei Xue Yan. That's great! A flower blossoming in the snow... Such a beautiful name can only befit a girl of such beauty! Ah, your younger sister's name is also quite good... Mei Qian Qian. Ah, not bad... not bad..." Jun Mo Xie's eyes widened as he spoke those words.

[Did he misspell my name to 'Qian Qian' as in 'No Money'?] A black line spread across the Snake King's face. It seemed that she wanted to bite his face off to let him know which person he had dared to make fun of...

"It doesn't matter whether the Young Master Jun intended to help us or not... the fact remains that he has rescued us," the white-clothed girl spoke-up in a harmonious manner. However, she didn't respond to Jun Mo Xie's jab with regard to her sister's name.

"The Young Lady is very polite. Ah, how does the Young Lady know my family name?" the Young Master Jun asked in reply.

"Those hoodlums had taken the Young Master's name during the fight. Also, we sisters obviously know the names of Tian Xiang City's famous Young Masters," the white-clad girl replied in a nonchalant manner.

"You're also from Tian Xiang... Ah... we're fellow townsmen in that case. That's great! It seems that we have truly met the Mei Young Ladies by the hand of fate," The Young Master looked distracted. [This tone is beginning to sound more familiar.]

The white-clothed girl flashed a secretive smile. [Met by fate?

You and I have indeed met due to fate. And, I will make you regret this fateful meeting for the remaining of your life!]

The white-clothed girl, Mei Xue Yan proposed a request as the conversation continued... they wanted to accompany the army back to the Tian Xiang City.

Jun Mo Xie's eyes turned as he agreed to their request. However, his heart didn't have any feelings of lust. [A beautiful woman is a beautiful woman. However, she will lose her beauty in some years. In fact, would anyone get to see a beautiful face once the night-lamp has been extinguished...?]

[However, this peerless beauty in white could help me get to Guan Qing Han...]

[It's possible that Guan Qing Han may open-up to me again if this beautiful girl makes her nervous. Wouldn't that be great? Moreover, it doesn't matter if these two girls have any other secret motives behind travelling with us. After all, they don't have the slightest trace of Xuan strengths around them. So, what troubles could these two women cause?]

He gave a quick look to Solitary Falcon. The Great Master thought for a moment, and eventually replied with a confident nod. Jun Mo Xie then became determined. [It's still understandable if I don't recognize a great power in this world. But, won't it be weird if the Great Master Solitary Falcon isn't able to do it either...?]

[One has to be as strong as the top-four Great Masters if they wish to hide their strength from Solitary Falcon. Perhaps they'd have to go even further and possess the terrifying strength of Venerable Mei instead!]

[Besides, these two young women don't even look twenty years old. But, if they truly have the strength to be at par with the Great Masters... then I will take this old Falcon home... and I will eat him alive!]

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie invited the two sisters — Mei Xue Yan and Mei Qian Qian — inside the carriage.

However, something strange happened in the middle of the night on the very same day...

Chapter 433: Guan Qing Han's Suspicion

The silence of the night was suddenly broken when Dugu Xiao Yi shouted loudly. It even made the not-too-far-away Jun Mo Xie tremble. So, he draped his robe over his shoulder, and scuttled to examine the cause. And, he found out that Dugu Xiao Yi's missing pet had unexpectedly and unfathomably returned in the middle of the night.

It was important to know that they had covered a distance of over ten days from the Tian Fa Forest by now.

However, this surprise had driven Dugu Xiao Yi mad with happiness.

The two women got plenty of time to examine Jun Mo Xie's appearance after they answered his questions. It must be mentioned that the Young Master had only put-on his robe. So, some parts of his body weren't properly covered. In fact, his thigh and legs were nicely looming free of any clothing. And, the two women were left to scream at the sight of them. Their scream had mostly been derived from the surprise of this situation. However, it also contained some elements of envy. Moreover, there was another strange element... which was rather hard to assess...

The time the Young Master had spent in the Hong Jun Pagoda had yielded amazing results when it came to the aspect of his physical transformation. His physical form had become tough. In fact, even a pageant model couldn't have reached this level. It could be said that he wouldn't even have needed to show his handsome face to attract the women on-present-day earth... that physique of his' would've been enough to drive the women crazy...

However, the degree of his body's transformation had gone a bit overboard. Perhaps it should be said that his extremely fair skin color was a bit dissatisfying. It must be mentioned that it wasn't deathly white. In fact, it was a very healthy shade of white. But, it

was still somewhat translucent... like snow.

And, this point had left the two beautiful women to feel jealous of him. In fact, the comparatively crazier Dugu Xiao Yi had been repeatedly asking Jun Mo Xie about what he had done to make his skin so smooth and glossy. And, this had obviously made the Young Master very gloomy. [A beautiful woman is exclaiming over the skin of a man... Should I should feel happy or sad...?]

The Young Master had arrived here in haste after he had heard Dugu Xiao Yi's scream. So, he had only been able to cover himself with his robe. His upper body was better off. However, the area below the knees was left open to prying eyes. Still, how could the two women not cry out after they had answered his impatient questions?

However, that room had a total of four women inside it. So, why had there only been two screams? That was because only Guan Qing Han and the little girl had screamed... Mei Xue Yan and Mei Qian Qian had unexpectedly fainted, and hadn't regained consciousness since.

However, Little White had become much better behaved since he had returned. There was a time when he would straight away pounce at Young Master Jun the moment he'd see him. However, he didn't recklessly rush forward anymore. Instead, he would diligently practice his cultivation. He would often hold a knife in his claws when he'd practice in front of the four women. It was like he was putting on a show, and didn't bother with who was watching him.

Dugu Xiao Yi's little imp seemed to be calling out its grievances. It seemed that he had finally become sensible, and had matured and grown up. He ought to look for a wife soon.

The little girl stopped teasing her Xuan Beast. She merely sighed faintly. It was obvious that she had understood these hints. Guan Qing Han also sighed after her. It was unclear whether this was a

chain reaction... but, even Mei Qian Qian sighed after them. The white-clothed girl was the only one who didn't sigh. However, she did cough softly.

They continued with their journey the next day. In fact, they even picked-up pace.

Jun Mo Xie had become suspicious when Little White had returned. But then, he thought about the prospect of a Xuan Beast King travelling all the way to return the little beast... and this notion obviously seemed ridiculous to him. So, he dismissed it with a laugh. [Maybe there's some kind of telepathy between Xiao Yi and this little thing. Moreover, this beast's tracking capabilities are good-enough to scare anyone. So, this matter isn't very surprising...]

Jun Mo Xie had tried to engage Mei Xue Yan in conversations along the journey. He only wanted to use this as a pretext to get some reaction from Guan Qing Han. [He he... You will ignore me? Look how I am still doing fine without you... Or, you could hurry up and join me. I'm waiting for you between the bedsheets. We'll make love again. We'll keep intertwining like the wind and rain. And, that blissful spring will come back again... hurry up and come to me!]

However, Mei Xue Yan's reaction towards Jun Mo Xie was what people call, "Someone greater than the previous foe." Young Lady Guan was cold. However, there was now an iceberg atop an iceberg. Young Lady Mei always stayed aloof. She didn't speak much, and always frowned. She would get impatient very quickly, and would show him the door at once. In fact, her attitude would even make Guan Qing Han freeze. Guan Qing Han was a cold person at the most. She would only ignore him when the worse would come to worst. But, the beautiful Mei Xue Yan was the complete opposite. Her word was like the law, and she commanded strict obedience. She could've easily been an empress among empresses!

The Young Master figured that his plan had been laid to waste by Young Lady Mei, but he felt that there was still some room for hope.

Then, Guan Qing Han finally relented one day. She secretly told Jun Mo Xie to wait in his tent late at night. She had also mentioned that she had something to say.

Jun Mo Xie's nether regions started to flare-up the moment he heard this. [The labor of a relentless man pays off. It seems that this girl is still conscious of the situation, and wants to consolidate her position with me...]

Young Master Jun spent the afternoon looking for a place to wash himself. After that, he wore a silky-soft white robe. He even embodied the demeanor of an elegant and graceful youngster. To put it simply... he wanted to appear as tempting as possible...

He heard a sharp and cold cough outside his tent as the curtains of night descended...

[The iceberg has arrived!] Jun Mo Xie felt very proud of himself. He even laughed inside. Then, his voice became aloof as he spoke-up in a manly, graceful, and exceptionally steady tone, "Please come in."

The entrance flap opened, and Jun Mo Xie's bright and smiling face turned sour.

Guan Qing Han had admittedly come over to see him. However, the problem was the person who was behind her... it was Dugu Xiao Yi! And, she was also carrying Little White in her arms.

Jun Mo Xie suddenly lost his breath like a deflating balloon.

Even a man who had been thinking with his toes instead of the brain would know that Guan Qing Han hadn't come over with the desire he had been hoping for her to have. Jun Mo Xie had been burning with a fiery passion ever since this meet had been set. However, that fervent flame of desire was met with

disappointment in the end. In fact, he felt as if someone had poured ice cold water into his leather clothing on a snowy day. His entire body felt cold...

"We've come to you with a serious matter. Xiao Yi and I were discussing that the two women you are taking back with us have made things complicated. They aren't as simple and ordinary as you had said they were. They don't even talk much. So, why do they wish to join us? This leaves me to believe that they have an ulterior motive. Why did you have to be so careless?" Guan Qing Han gave him a cold look. "You decided to give shelter to two unknown women. Don't you know that these are times of trouble?"

"How can you be sure?" Jun Mo Xie inwardly rolled his eyes. [I obviously know that these women are unknown to us. You don't have to be that serious about it, do you?]

[You two had fallen for me because of my charms. But, you started to refuse my advanced later on. So, I figured that I could use Mei Xue Yan to pull you closer to me. I felt that you won't be able to refuse me if you sensed some competition. It was merely a trick to attract your attention!]

"Mo Xie, I know that everything has been going smoothly over the past few days. You had gotten rid of numerous powerful experts from the Xiao Family the other day. So, you should be please with yourself. It's okay to have pride. But, you mustn't be overly prideful. Whatever those women have said doesn't make any sense. Haven't you noticed it?" Guan Qing Han scowled as she continued.

"It doesn't make any sense? I know that their story isn't entirely true. But, I haven't discovered a concrete problem with their story yet. But, I'd invite you to enlighten me on this!" The Young Master looked calm as he went to them.

"Those two say that they are from Tian Xiang City. They said that they are the daughters of a chemist. Moreover, they knew who you

were when they requested us to journey together. This doesn't make any sense!" Guan Qing Han snorted.

"Huh? How does it not make sense? They are from Tian Xiang City... So, it's good that they are travelling with us. And, there's nothing strange about the fact that they know me. After all, those people from the Xiao Family had called out my name many times over. So, it would've been very strange if they didn't know me even after my name had been spoken so many times. Moreover, they had run into trouble with the Xiao Family, and I had acted justly by helping them out of their predicament. That's very chivalrous, right?" the Young Master asked in a puzzled manner.

Guan Qing Han was rendered speechless for a time before she finally spoke-up, "Don't you know what your reputation is, Third Young Master? Do you have any idea how bad a condition your reputation is in? These two women would've escaped far away the moment they had heard the name Jun Mo Xie if they had genuinely hailed from Tian Xiang City! Why would they rush into our camp instead? Why would they request to become your travel companions? Isn't that like taking a lamb to the tiger's den?"

"Well, that's also a sensible argument. I didn't think of it that way... Wait... what?!" Jun Mo Xie had come to himself, and had begun to ponder over it... when suddenly, "What does that mean? Is my image so unbearably bad in Tian Xiang City?"

However, these words made the two women giggle.

"Brother Mo Xie's image is very good. But, it seems that I'm the only one in Tian Xiang City who knows of it. Otherwise, Brother Mo Xie would've left the others to boil with jealousy!" Dugu Xiao Yi came over, and annoyingly clung onto his arms in a complacent manner.

"You know your image well enough. And, you still want me to explain everything carefully? Wait. Let me think about it... since when did your reputation start to improve?"

Guan Qing Han gave him a plain look before she continued, "Firstly, they lied. And secondly... they were facing trouble from the Silver City's people when we had arrived. This is the point that I'm worried about more since both sides were standing in confrontation! Focus on the 'confrontation' part! It means that the two women had enough strength to face off against the Silver Blizzard City! And, what's more unusual is that those two women have nothing unusual about them..."

"So, what you mean is that... they have some powerful expert protecting them from the dark?" Jun Mo Xie frowned.

"Yes. But, neither you nor Solitary Falcon has discovered them. And, this is extremely strange." Guan Qing Han was a woman. And, a woman is a woman. She had obviously thought everything over in detail, "It would've been acceptable if you hadn't been able to discover this hidden expert. But, the Solitary Falcon is one of the Great Masters. So, it could be something big if he hasn't been able to figure these people out either! How powerful would that expert be if they are able to hide in such a way?"

Jun Mo Xie put his hands behind his back, and strolled twice round the tent's interior.

"So, the expert protecting these two women must be stronger than the Solitary Falcon. That's why they were able to confront the Silver Blizzard City's people. And, that's why Solitary Falcon couldn't discover this person. This is the only plausible explanation!" Guan Qing Han directly came to her conclusion.

Chapter 434: Bone-Tempering Pill!

"Right! Anything else?" Jun Mo Xie nodded.

"But, the establishment of this conclusion leads to another question. Why did they have to come and seek protection in an army camp if they had someone of that strength to guard them? The expert who is guarding them may be very strong. However, we can't forget that this is an army camp. So, their guardian will have to remain hidden even when they enter the camp. This means that their guardian might not have enough time to save them if anyone has any bad intentions," Guan Qing Han exhaled a long breath.

"So, I'm guessing that they might have some other means to defend themselves," Guan Qing Han knit her delicate brows. "And, neither you nor Solitary Falcon has discovered what that ability is... And, that is extremely strange!"

Jun Mo Xie continued to nod.

"I'm even guessing that this mysterious self-defense ability comes from the two women themselves?" Guan Qing Han finally relayed the thoughts that had been concealed in the depths of her mind.

"This is the only way these puzzling dots can be connected and explained," Guan Qing Han became increasingly shocked as she continued to speak, "It could be concluded that these two women are even stronger than the peerless Great Master Solitary Falcon...?"

"This analysis seems reasonable, but it's very unlikely to happen," Jun Mo Xie nodded heavily. "Those two women haven't shown any malice towards us. They've only requested us to take them to Tian Xiang City; that's all. And, I'm sure that these doubts will be clarified once we get to the city. So, we only need to make some preparations in secret for the time being..."

"I only have these things to speak of. And, you're good at making

the preparations. So, it's best that I stay with them and keep an eye on them. After all, it's impossible for them to always be flawless with their words and deeds," Guan Qing Han gave a long sigh and stoop up leisurely.

Jun Mo Xie rolled his eyes. The beautiful Guan Qing Han had clearly indicated she was returning to her tent since the conversation had ended... [This means that I'm going to be left disappointed... Damn! I shouldn't have bathed!] Jun Mo Xie thought gloomily.

Jun Mo Xie became even more dispirited since Guan Qing Han's head didn't even turn as she walked away. He was about to enter the Hong Jun Pagoda to train when he raised his head and discovered that Dugu Xiao Yi was still there. Moreover, she was looking at him with wide and round eyes...

"You haven't left? Is everything okay?" Jun Mo Xie asked with no sense of imperceptivity.

"Brother Mo Xie..." Dugu Xiao Yi pouted as she exploited the opportunity to come closer. "I want to discuss something with you. Is it alright?"

Jun Mo Xie's spirit quivered. His body was also left to tremble. Dugu Xiao Yi's coy voice had made every last hair on his body to stand. "Don't... ma'am... I'll do whatever you say. I won't have any objections... I promise!"

"It's nothing big... I only wanted... to know when you will give me a chance to "cook rice" again?" Dugu Xiao Yi's pretty face had turned red. She was extremely shy, but she had still firmly held on... no matter how this matter appeared.

"Huh? Cook again? Cook what?" Jun Mo Xie stared wide-eyed. He was certainly thirsting to "cook rice" at this time. But, how could he cook? His thirst for it didn't mean that he was in no position to make choices. And, it most certainly didn't mean that he was prepared be enslaved by that aphrodisiac's effect... and ravage her

to ruins afterwards...

"Good lady... please forgive me... have pity on my 'small weapon.' It won't rise again even if it's tossed from side to side."

"No! There will be no discussion about it!" Dugu Xiao Yi raised her neck, "What will happen if you two return and secretly go over the rituals...? You will become husband and wife after that! Do you want this young girl to be your concubine? I will force myself upon you if you don't agree!"

[Being my concubine...? Force yourself upon me...? This girl is bold, but she's way ahead of her time...]

Jun Mo Xie had been beaten by her.

"Uh... you're still small. You won't be able to deal with that. So, how about we talk this over first?" Jun Mo Xie hadn't merely spoken these words to escape from this situation. Instead, they were hard truths. He was only seventeen years old in this life. But, he still had the thoughts of an older man from his previous life. Therefore, doing it with a sixteen year old girl was still a crime for him.

[She's still a kid!]

"Did you say I'm small? How much older are you? You're only one-and-a-half years older than me! So, how are you too old, huh? I'm not that small!" Dugu Xiao Yi's perky bosom burst forth like raging waves. This nearly gave Jun Mo Xie a nose-bleed...

[Ah mother! Is this my fate?!]

"And, don't worry about what will happen once we return home. Elder Sister Mei Qian Qian gave me an idea about that," Dugu Xiao Yi's face blushed as she bit her lips, "There will be no problems... if we do this."

"Huh?" Jun Mo Xie scratched his head in confusion.

"She told me that there won't be any problem as long as I go back

with a big belly. It might be a bit strenuous, but we can persevere through the issue in that case," Dugu Xiao Yi's face became a deeper shade of red as she twirled her finger, and spoke in a lowered voice.

[What? Going back with a big belly?] That matter regarding strenuous or not... reminded Jun Mo Xie of what had happened earlier. And, he was left covered in sweat as a result. [That tremendous scandal involving Guan Qing Han hasn't even been pacified yet. And, this is likely to create another terrifying storm. And, if I make your belly big...]

Jun Mo Xie suddenly and quietly disappeared from the tent with a "whooshing" sound.

[You won't go... But I can, right? You think I can't hide?] Young Master Jun immediately thought of moving into action. And, he entered the Hong Jun Pagoda.

Dugu Xiao Yi bashfully waited for a reply. In fact, flowers had started to blossom in front of her eyes by now. However, her Brother Mo Xie had already vanished...

This made that Young Lady unbearably angry.

"Jun Mo Xie! Humph! I'm considered one of the two most beautiful flowers of Tian Xiang City! But, you're still not ready? Do you know how many guys wish to pluck me? You think you're the only guy around?" It was hard to tell where she had learnt this wisecrack from. However, her words were clearly not conforming to her actions.

She looked around twice. Then, she walked over to Jun Mo Xie's bed, and sat down. She then felt the bed with her hand, and groaned in a loving manner. Then, something flashed in her mind. She quickly grabbed the quilt, and dug into it.

"Thud! Thud!" Two small boots flew out from the bedding.

[You can run! I'll wait for you here! I'll see where you go! I'll

surely force myself on you when you come back. I'll give my all for you!]

Dugu Xiao Yi snorted and groaned a bit. She still felt a little embarrassed. But, she let it pass no matter what. Dugu Xiao Yi was wrapped in the bedding, and she was also surrounded by a man's smell. She couldn't help but feel her heart beat loudly... [This smell... isn't bad...]

No one else was present there. But, she still felt a bit guilty. Dugu Xiao Yi then stealthily looked around to see that no one else was there. And, she slipped further inside the bedding once she was certain that no one was watching. She wriggled as she shrugged off her gown. She then lay on her back, and rested her head on the pillow as she thought... [How do I forcing myself on him?]

However, Jun Mo Xie didn't return for a while. She waited for a while longer. But, Jun Mo Xie still didn't come back. Dugu Xiao Yi started to feel sleepy. She tried to fight to keep her eyelids open. However, she yawned twice... and, eventually...

Fell asleep...

A first-class sleep is the best way to rest. And, this sleep of this little girl could actually be called 'savory'.

Meanwhile, Jun Mo Xie had stepped into the Hong Jun Pagoda. He had carefully inspected each of the nine swords he had forged earlier. And, he had put them back after he had pondered over them a bit. After that, he had picked-up some fragrant herbs, and had started to refine the divine pills. He had received a message from fatty a few days ago. And, this message had stated that their supply of the two divine pills had hit rock-bottom. These were the main source of their wealth. So, the supply mustn't be stopped. In fact, it was even necessary for him to prepare a reserve-stock if possible...

Therefore, the Young Master started to increase his store's capacity. Moreover, he had also concocted divine pills which could increase Xuan strength to a greater extent. However, he could only

refine this pill to support the Ten Years' Dan.

The third level of the Hong Jun Pagoda had given him the access to refine another kind of pill. This pill could act as a 'Bone-Tempering' pill. The advantage of such pills was that they could transform a man's bones to become more compact and coordinated. But, it didn't provide any other advantage...

However, this bone transforming pill could be combined with the cleansing pills. And, that would yield instantaneous results. In fact, it could take a mediocre fighter, and could transform him into a martial genius! It didn't matter whether it was his physical strength, his meridians, or his dantian... everything would be transformed!

The said-individual would be given a new life!

However, it was a pity that the 'cleansing' pills could only be refined at the fourth level of the Hong Jun Pagoda. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie could only look up and sigh since he didn't have a better option. And so, he continued to refine the Missing Yin Pill and the Mysterious Yang Pill. Even that bone tempering pill... [Those clumsy ox-like idiots will be better off if their bones are better coordinated, right?]

However, Jun Mo Xie hadn't realized that these bone-tempering pills would have more importance in the Xuan Xuan Continent than he had anticipated. In fact, they would be worth much more than the ten years strength-enhancing pills.

The strength enhancing pills could increase one's cultivation by ten years. However, those pills would ignore the natural hierarchy in doing so. In other words, they would work against the will of the heavens. It was truly awesome when one comes to think of it! However, this would be a 'one-off thing' even if it managed to increase the cultivation. This meant that it would have no effect after one use alone. But, the bone-tempering pills could transform one's basic attributes. They could destroy the bones' original form,

and could reassemble them from a scratch...

This was something which one couldn't even dare to imagine.

Such an enhancement in someone's basic constitution couldn't happen by following a procedural training. However, there were some things which could increase someone's basic constitution in this manner. The Tian Fa Forest's sacred fruit was one of those things...

However, a pill that could improve someone from the inside was very rare to come by. That was because no legendary potion had ever been able to achieve such a thing...

Jun Mo Xie tossed the tiny jade bottle after he had successfully finished the refining. He then laughed out in a complacent manner.

Young Master Jun felt the aura from the Hong Jun Pagoda filling his body and replenishing the vigor he had earlier lost. And, he smiled in a satisfied manner. The speed of this process had become very astonishing by now. He had continuously been improving his skills for the last few days. He had also been using his 'turning iron into gold' skill very frequently of late. But, his ability to replenish his lost energy had also improved a lot. And, he had also been rising through the Sky Xuan realm as a result...

In fact, his strength had already stabilized past the Sky Xuan middle rank!

One could even say that reaching close to the breakthrough to Spirit Xuan wasn't impossible if this speed of improvement continued...

Chapter 435: There's No Way to Survive This Day...

However, Jun Mo Xie discovered a little problem — The Hong Jun Pagoda's aura was getting thinner! It was important to know that the Hong Jun Pagoda had abundant aura inside it. However, Jun Mo Xie had been absorbing it non-stop because of his training.

The aura had currently returned to the same level when he was in Tian Xiang City. But, Jun Mo Xie clearly remembered that the aura was much denser when he was in the Tian Fa Forest. In fact, the aura wasn't only more profound there... it was much more profound.

The Young Master's strength used to be very shallow some time ago. So, he couldn't distinguish the difference between the qualities of the aura. But, his strength had become more profound now. The Hong Jun Pagoda surely had abundant supplements of aura. In fact, it was unlikely to run out of it. But, it was getting thinner...

People tend to become frightened if they don't know much about the on-going matter.

It seemed that the change in environment had some effect on the Hong Jun Pagoda.

Jun Mo Xie would absorb a huge amount of aura every time he'd train. And, only a small amount of that aura was absorbed by his body. The majority of it would re-enter the Hong Jun pagoda. This aura would be absorbed into his body when needed at a later stage.

However, Jun Mo Xie had also understood one point — the Hong Jun Pagoda also needed to replenish its aura!

It seemed that he would need to think of a solution to this problem. After all, Jun Mo Xie was dissatisfied with the speed of his aura's replenishing ever since he had experienced its potential

in Tian Fa.

This change in Jun Mo Xie's attitude was a very normal aspect of human nature. It was similar to the case of a man who had been with a normal-looking partner. However, this man then got a chance to be with a very beautiful girl instead. This continues for six months. Then, the man wants to get married. However, he ends up with a normal-looking partner again. This situation was something similar...

This is how men think. And, the Young Master was also a man. So, he was no exception to it either...

Jun Mo Xie gave a satisfied sigh as he stepped out. This had already been a very long night. He had first had those long conversations. Then, he had concocted several pills. And, he had practiced his Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune after that...

Therefore, it could be said that Young Master Jun was very tired. Moreover, he had been very excited some time ago. But, his hopes had washed out, and nothing had materialized out of it. And, this had left Jun Mo Xie in an unpleasant mood. [Will I have to end up forcing myself?]

Jun Mo Xie quickly shed his clothes... except for those covering his nether region. He then walked barefoot towards his bed, and slammed into it.

But, how could the Young Master have dared to go to "sleep" after landing into the "trap" that had been set there for him...

Jun Mo Xie jumped out naked from the bed.

"Damn! What is this?!" Jun Mo Xie had lost his sleepiness. His eyes opened wide as he looked at his bed. His forehead had a dark line. [Have I slipped into the wrong bed?]

He had felt a soft and fragrant body the moment he had gotten into his bed. And, this had left him to believe that he was dreaming...

[This dream is very beautiful! I hope I don't wake up very early from this dream!]

Young Master Jun slipped away and moved to the entrance. He then looked around in a secretive manner. [Yes, this is my tent. So, why is Xiao Yi in my bed? Moreover, she's...]

Jun Mo Xie approached his bed once again as these thoughts crossed his mind. He then extended his hand and gave a light push, "Hey... hey wake up. Don't sleep here."

Dugu Xiao Yi turned over while holding the quilt to her body, and muttered in a haze, "Stop being noisy... Let me sleep..."

Jun Mo Xie felt his head ache.

Both his upper and lower heads were becoming bigger...

A single man and a single woman were alone in the same tent in a dark and quiet camp. Faint wisps of delicate fragrance were floating in the air. These were obviously provoking wild and fanciful thoughts. Moreover, this extremely beautiful woman had exposed herself like this under these circumstances. And, she was sleeping in his bed as well.

Jun Mo Xie wouldn't have been a man if he hadn't had some reaction to that...

[Do I do it? Or... do I not do it?] Jun Mo Xie pondered on that bewildering question with some nervousness in heart.

Dugu Xiao Yi turned over on the bed. The meager quilt on her graceful legs half fell down the bed with a soft clinking sound. And, an extremely beautiful figure was exposed to Jun Mo Xie's eyes as a result...

Delicate arms, perky chest, slender waist, and slender legs... Jun Mo Xie's eyes sparkled at the sight of it. And, he made a gulping sound as he swallowed some saliva.

[Fu*k! Forget about one sheep... this is like two sheep!]

Lust prevailed over logic, and his inner wolf appeared!

Something moved inside Jun Mo Xie's heart. He took two steps forward, and moved towards the bed. There was a malicious green light in his eyes. He looked similar to a hungry wolf on a cold winter night.

"Huh? You've finally returned?" Dugu Xiao Yi suddenly woke up. She then looked at Jun Mo Xie in an excited manner, "I've been waiting for you the entire night. Where did you go off to?"

"I..." Jun Mo Xie's arms were open. He was about to jump and throw himself on her. However, he had stopped in-between this movement. So, his posture was rather strange at this time...

"Well, it's good that you've returned..." Dugu Xiao Yi held her quilt and tilted her head as she looked at Jun Mo Xie. Her eyes were brimming with curiosity, "Your look confused. Are you ready or not?"

"Huh? Am I ready...?" Jun Mo Xie straightened his back. His small head had been standing tall a while ago. However, it had withered by now.

"Ah, are you ready to cook rice or not? I'm telling you... I'm ready to force myself upon you today! So, be a good boy!" Dugu Xiao Yi opened her mouth and spoke in a tyrannical manner. She then lowered her head. Her small head had reddened with a blush. She couldn't help but fiddle with her braid...

"What? What're you going to do?"

"You wait! I'll go and get the medicine," The girl excitedly jumped out of the bed, and put on her clothes in a flustered manner. Then, she fled the tent like a wisp of smoke, and proceeded to get the "medicine."

Jun Mo Xie hit his head against the bed, and bounced due to the cushioned collision. He then used the entirety of his strength to hit the bed with his hand with a "Slam!" sound. "Good God! I've

committed the greatest sin of my life! Please let me die! This is a dream. But, aren't nightmares a kind of dream too? Please let me die..."

Then, there was a "Bang!", and the three Dugu brothers rushed in aggressively. They then started to shout at the naked Jun Mo Xie, "Jun Mo Xie! What did you do to our little sister? You little lecher!"

Young Master Jun silently turned his head to look at them. The Young Master so depressed that he wasn't even embarrassed anymore... In fact, he was already on the verge of a collapse. The Young Master suddenly got up, and got into the bedding. Then, he shouted from inside it, "Get lost! Or... I'll put a baby in your sister!"

Dugu Xiao Yi quickly went and procured her "medicines". She was panting madly and violently by the time she entered head-first through the tent's flap...

"I've got the 'medicine' Brother Mo Xie! So, we'll 'cook rice', right...?" Dugu Xiao Yi was in high spirits. She hadn't even finished speaking when she raised her head and realized that her elder brothers were present. She couldn't prevent herself from feeling flustered. So, she stared wide-eyed, "Huh...? What are you guys doing here?"

Jun Mo Xie dragged Guan Qing Han early the next day. He ignored her opposition, and started to bow and beg her. Guan Qing Han thought that his wolf-like nature had flared up again. However, she wanted to discuss the matter of the Mei Sisters instead. So, she couldn't help but frown at him in a resentful manner. [We're at such a critical point. Yet, you only care for your personal needs! There will be a big problem if this senseless man's actions go public! And, everyone will rebuke this Young Master if that happens...]

However, the Young Master continued to beg and whine, "I beg you, I beg you sister... I beg you... please educate that Dugu Xiao Yi. I can't take it anymore... I can't take it anymore... Please..."

Guan Qing Han was stunned by this...

[A blooming flower in each hand...]

The Young Master was surely suffering ruin at this time. However, the Tian Xiang City was in complete disorder as well. Jun Mo Xie hadn't even returned to the Tian Xiang City. But, the new of his affair had already caused a cacophony over there.

Even the Emperor seemed overwrought these days!

Jun Mo Xie's incestuous affair had been suppressed under a huge amount of pressure to prevent it from exploding out in the open. After all, Young Master Jun's affair could cause a huge scandal in this extremely conservative and feudal society!

The Jun Family was obviously trying to push this matter down. Even the Dugu Family and the Emperor were putting pressure on it. After all, this matter could give rise to a very perilous situation if it were exposed...

His Majesty didn't want this scandal to become public because the Jun Family had displayed its strength at Tian Fa Forest. The Emperor was clear about one thing — the consequences of the Jun Family being brought down because of this matter would be catastrophic. The Government officials mustn't be allowed to use it to attack them either. After all, the Jun family would retaliate if that were to happen. He was certainly the nation's ruler. However, he wouldn't be able to contain the situation if that were to happen. So, one could only imagine the intensity of the issue...

The Emperor had attempted to cage every information regarding the matter between Jun Mo Xie and Guan Qing Han. And, he had hoped that the big scholars would understand the situation as well. In fact, the Emperor was one step away from jumping to the sky and yelling out, "Open your eyes you dogs! See what's happening! Can you even afford to provoke the Jun Family? Even I'm afraid of the consequences!"

However, things had turned out very contrary to the desired result...

His Majesty's good intentions piled many inches thick in memorials. However, they had come to naught.

He postponed the court meeting for ten days because of this matter. The Emperor believed that the courtiers would consider the matter carefully. And, he felt that they wouldn't create any trouble since they'd realize the severity of the situation. However, His Majesty was left baffled in the Imperial Court the day it convened again.

Nine Imperial Censors, Mei Gao Jie and Kong Ling Yang, and fifty-to-sixty other Government officials teamed up. They comprised for more than half of his imperial officials. However, they had decided to accuse the Jun Family of misconduct. They accused Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi. Moreover, they put special emphasis on Jun Mo Xie's scandal involving his elder sister-in-law!

The Emperor felt a stab of pain in his head when this happened.

"Your Majesty, I open my heart and accuse the Empire's Great Supreme Commander Jun Zhan Tian! Jun Zhan Tian hasn't educated his grandson properly. And thus, the boy has committed such a scandalous act while travelling back with the Blood General! The ruler of each and every nation is condemning this act! This relays the shame my Tian Xiang has to suffer for this crime!" Kong Ling Yang's face was solemn. His beard had fluttered as he had stood up.

"Jun Zhan Tian is domineering and arrogant. He relies on his power like a spoilt child. And, he does whatever he pleases! He disregards the Imperial Law. And, he even threatens to kill the Imperial Ministers! This is a huge crime!"

Chapter 436: Which Side Do You Take?

A long-unending speech followed. Wherein, the scholar listed no less than fifteen crimes that had been committed by the Old Man Jun. It would go against the natural order of things if Jun Zhan Tian wasn't punished for them. In fact, it would be a grave misfortune for the common people!

There was one particularly interesting part in the accusations. The specific content was as follows — The soldiers and guards around the Capital City's ministers are being threatened by the Jun Family. And, this has forced the guards to relocate out of fear. It seems that Jun Zhan Tian is on the verge of causing an uprising...

A total of fifteen crimes were listed. And, one of them was said to have been committed by the Old Man Jun's grandson — Jun Mo Xie. "That young and shameless brat has defiled his elder sister-in-law. He has committed an immoral act. Guan Qing Han is the Eldest Daughter-in-law of the Jun Family. However, she has seduced the Young Master with little shame. She has ruined the family values, and has lowered their morals very considerably!" This charge had seven accusations in itself.

His Majesty frowned as he looked at the old scholar in a very impatient manner.

However, Kong Ling Yang seemed very more emotional as he continued in a loud voice, "This official believes that Jun Zhan Tian is a traitorous scoundrel who is guilty of these crimes. And, he should be punished with execution without further delay. Jun Wu Yi has been shamelessly ignoring rules of the military. He should be sacked. And, an inquiry should be initiated against him. This man should be sent to prison, and he should be given a very strict punishment. Jun Mo Xie's crimes against his elder sister-in-law are filthy to the extreme. He should be given death by a thousand cuts. It shall serve as an example for future offenders. Guan Qing Han isn't a woman who defends her honor. She is

extremely shameless. She is a widowed woman. However, she still shared the beddings with another man. Her crimes must be declared publicly. That shall uphold Tian Xiang's moral integrity to the world at large!"

These words were very poisonous in nature. In fact, they could taint and ruin the Jun Family.

The Dugu Family's head grinned. He hadn't heard a single word about the extermination of the entire family. But, this punishment was still as cruel. After all, all three members of the Jun Family had been nominated to the scaffold...

Jun Zhan Tian was sitting with a lowered head. However, he didn't seem to be paying attention to anything. In fact, it appeared as if he was sleeping.

"This official seconds this motion!"

"This official also supports this motion!"

....

Everyone in the hall kneeled in front of the Emperor, and requested him to punish the Jun Family.

Many people who hailed from the various powerful families hesitated to speak out. So, they merely watched as everything proceeded. However, the Emperor's brows continued to knit tighter and tighter together...

"Your Majesty, I believe that Jun Zhan Tian has lost his status of the past. He doesn't hold the same status and authority in the army anymore. It will be good for Tian Xiang if we root out the Jun Family by using this opportunity. And, it will be good from a morality standpoint as well," Even Jun Zhan Tian raised his eyebrows when he heard the voice of this man.

[I knew that someone would try to get me when I'm down. But, I had never thought that he would be the first person to do so.]

It was the Song Family's Head. He was also a General in the army. His name was Song De Hai.

"The Song Family's head has spoken correctly. This official seconds this motion!" The Meng Family's head — Meng You Wei — stood up as well. His face brimmed with grief and indignation, "Jun Zhan Tian is like a malignant disease for the Empire. It will be difficult to keep the rest of the continent calm if we don't remove him. It would be very difficult to maintain the court's discipline if we don't remove him. And, it'll be difficult to prevent the common people from speaking about it for ages. So, I sincerely look to His Majesty to resolve this as quickly as possible!"

"We sincerely look to His Majesty to resolve this as quickly as possible!" everyone called out together as they firmly prostrated themselves.

The Seven Great Families of the Capital were present in attendance. The Murong Family had remained neutral as usual. The Tang and the Jun Family were still as thick as thieves. So, the Tang Family hadn't spoken a word. However, many others stood in opposition to the Jun Family. But, one family had acted beyond everyone's anticipation... The Li Family hadn't participated in this onslaught even though they were the Jun Family's greatest rivals!

"This matter is of utmost importance! We shall discuss this further tomorrow!" His Majesty announced in a low voice, "The officials may rise!"

The Emperor was about to flee from the court. However, this is when he heard the old scholar Kong speak-up again...

"Your Majesty mustn't leave! Your Majesty mustn't leave! You need to sort this matter out quickly! We can't delay! Anyone who hesitates can't resolve this chaos. Your Majesty is divinely wise, and he knows the military law!" Kong Ling Yang wasn't prepared to leave. So, he took the lead and started to shout these slogans. His meaning was very clear. [We won't give up unless you deal

with the Jun Family today.]

The Emperor frowned in a serious manner as he got up. However, it seemed as if these words had escaped from deep within him, "I'm feeling unwell. So, I'll leave." Then, he waved his sleeves and disappeared like a wisp of smoke. [You love to kneel, don't you? I can't believe you've put me in this position. I'm going to lose my mind!]

Even the Emperor wanted to use this opportunity to deal with the Jun Family. And, anyone who'd peak into his heart would know of it. But, he couldn't dare to. He was the ruler of an Empire. So, he had obviously thought far ahead than most people would. Perhaps, those rotten scholars hadn't considered this point. Perhaps they thought that the consequences of dealing with the Jun Family wouldn't be that bad...

However, the Emperor knew that the Jun Family had a comprehensive command and influence over the military. Therefore, he was certain that there would be new of a mutiny in the morning if he were to make a move against the Jun Family. In fact, even speaking up against Jun Zhan Tian would result in the same! And then, more of such news would pour-in from at least five or six places within three days...

What would the nation of Tian Xiang do then?

[Is it that easy to deal with the Jun Family at this time? What a big joke! Would I have waited for you to submit your petition if I could've dealt with them...?]

The officials also left after the Emperor departed in violent anger. Jun Zhan Tian had seemed to be sleepy inside the hall. But, he was as lively as a dragon when he walked out. He hadn't taken the accusations of those rotten scholars seriously.

It would've been a serious matter if the Murong and the Li family had launched an attacked as well. But, those small fries weren't enough to entice the Old Man Jun's fighting spirit.

"Jun Zhan Tian! You haven't educated your youngsters, and now your grandson has act in an evil way. Yet, you dare to show your face in society! Retribution awaits you!" Kong Ling Yang trembled as he called out. An overwhelming majority of the officials were waiting at the door along with him and Mei Gao Jie. The public opinion was also in their favor. So, they were quite confident.

This information was right on the bull's eyes. Therefore, the old scholar Kong was quite certain that he could bring down the Jun Family in one swoop!

Jun Zhan Tian stopped in his tracks, and turned to look at him. Then, he snorted and said, "Hey bookworm, can't you shut your beak? This old man is very annoyed. I don't have time to deal with you. We will discuss this matter tomorrow."

Kong Ling Yang became furious when he heard this. Even his whiskers started to tremble, "You... you... you..." However, Jun Zhan Tian merely rolled his eyes, turned, and walked away.

One of the officials went closer to Kong Ling Yang's ear and said, "Master, this Old Man Jun is one of the greatest experts of the city. Moreover, he has reached the Sky Xuan peak. So, he's almost as good as the strongest expert in the city. Therefore, I beseech the Master to be cautious."

"Sky Xuan peak? The strongest expert...? What's that again?" Kong Ling Yang raised his eyes and gave a resolute look to his disciple. He then said with disdain, "He merely has martial prowess! What do you have to fear about?! There's an ancient saying — words are the law of the land. Strength can only choose sides. Haven't you heard that? The ones with talent decide the fates of empires! Do you understand? How can a mere warrior ascend to the top of an imperial court? It will be extremely hard for him to find excuses... or apologize in this situation! He can't justify anything. This matter has already been determined! How can an ordinary man like him be anything in my eyes?"

That old scholar's philosophy was as follows... [So what if you're a Sky Xuan peak, Jun Zhan Tian? You would still be a mere warrior even if you were a Spirit Xuan! And, you don't have brains since you're a warrior. So, you're useless!]

It had to be mentioned that this old man had been studying in somewhat of an ivory tower his entire life. Consequently, he had no idea how frightening a Sky Xuan or Spirit Xuan could be...

"Tomorrow! Everyone hadn't come to participate today. But, we will deal the fatal blow to the Jun Family tomorrow!" Kong Ling Yang snorted coldly and continued, "I would like to urge all officials within the borders of this nation to get involved. We must form popular public opinion inside the city. I won't allow this filthy moral debauchery to exist! Does this shameless family have the qualifications to stand above the Imperial Court?"

"Today's momentum wasn't bad... But, it still wasn't enough when it comes to the Jun Family. The Meng and the Li Family's Heads need to support this," Kong Ling Yang turned his head.

"Be at ease, Master. The Meng Family won't shirk from its duty," Meng You Wei thumped his chest in guarantee. "And, the Jun Family isn't very pleasing to the Li Family's eyes either. So, everything should go smoothly."

"Ha ha..." everyone laughed as they looked at each other.

In a distant place.

"What do you think of this?" the Head of Murong Family — Murong Feng Yun asked Dugu Zong Heng. Dugu Wu Di stood behind the two in silence. However, his rough beard was twitching again and again.

"What? Didn't you see that Jun bastard was just sitting there? He didn't even give a damn! Those annoying scholars only eat till they're about to burst. They have nothing else to do! They're foolish idiots!" Dugu Zong Heng raised his head with disdain. "Jun

Zhan Tian can pinch their balls with his fingers! They won't have anything to cover their asses with if he comes for them by tomorrow!"

Murong Feng Yun frowned in indignation and said, "How can you speak like that? You're a Head of a Family! Can't you be more refined?"

"Refined? Refined, my fart! Your elegant words aren't as good as the hair in crotch!" Dugu Zong Heng rubbished and spat saliva, "I'm a military general! Have you ever seen generals fighting with elegance? It's like a hairball to me!"

"It's my fault... that I asked you to be refined... I was gravely mistaken..." Murong Feng Yun felt endless remorse. "But can I ask if you're sure about this onslaught? Jun Zhan Tian looked calm and collected, but that Kong Ling Yang seems to have a big and sharp momentum. Can that Old Man Jun stand firm in the face of it?"

"How will he not? I've already said that those rotten scholars won't be able to do it!" Dugu Zong Heng snorted as he looked disdainfully at the group of officials who had gathered at the side, "It would be a huge joke if these scholars could bring down that rascal Jun! In fact, I'll castrate myself with a sword if they succeed by using here accusations. Hell, I'll even wear a skirt, and marry a man!"

"Damn!" Murong Feng Yun burst out cursing, "I won't marry a man!"

"Fuck you, old man! Listen Old Murong, I'm asking you whether you will take a side? Or, will you sit on the fence again?" Dugu Zong Heng's wide eyes resembled those of an ox.

"Sitting safely on the fence is always a good idea! But, you're asking me... What do you plan to do?" Murong Feng Yun's narrowed eyes resembled those of an old fox.

"Can I ever lack taste and stand in the middle like you do? I'm obviously holding fast with Jun Zhan Tian. Which idiot would help those foolish and glutinous pieces of dog-shits?" Dugu Zong Heng drew back his huge mouth, "Besides... he and I are related by marriage now."

"Huh? Relatives by marriage...?" Murong Feng Yun was shocked, "When did this happen?"

"Fu*k it! Don't mention the damned thing! My family is very unfortunate!" Dugu Zong Heng got mad at the mention of that topic. He couldn't beat-up Murong Feng Yun. So, he turned around to look for his son. But, Dugu Zong Heng had been very loud a moment ago. Therefore, the 'very obedient' Dugu Wu Di had turned tail and fled the moment he had heard the mention of that topic. Thus, there was nobody there when the old man turned back. He couldn't help but rain a mountain of curses in anger, "Bastard! You wait for me, you little cuckold! You didn't let me vent my anger?! I'll beat you up twice as bad once I return!"

Murong Feng Yun's white eyebrows sank as he frowned. It seemed that he had fallen into deep thought. [So, the Jun Family and the Dugu Family have become relatives by marriage because of this matter... this isn't right... In fact, this is big news! It seems that my Murong Family will have to reconsider. After all, it's always a good idea to choose a safer side in advance...]

Chapter 437: Jun Mo Xie's Weakness

Li Family.

The doddering Grand Preceptor Li Shang was seated on his official armchair. His face was covered in thick wrinkles. The old man's health had been becoming worse with each passing day.

"You Ran, do you believe that it's time for our family to make our move?" Li Shang looked at his grandson.

Li You Ran was wearing a white gown. His hair was jet-black, and his face looked very handsome. In fact, he had somehow removed the scars that had previously riddled his face. The Young Master Li smiled faintly, "You're kidding me, Grandfather. This isn't an opportune moment for us to make a move against the Jun Family. It'd be best for us to stay out of it."

"Oh? Do you have misgivings when it comes to fighting Jun Zhan Tian?" Li Shang's eyes had a complicated light in them.

"No! I have no misgivings when it comes to fighting with Jun Zhan Tian... not even the Blood General. Instead, I have misgivings regarding the Third Young Master — Jun Mo Xie," Li You Ran sighed and continued, "Jun Zhan Tian is a fiery character. So, he's obviously difficult to deal with. But, he's a person of noble character. Jun Wu Yi is a military strategist. He wins every battle. But, he is an emotional person. Such people may have divine power, and they may possess unequalled Xuan strength. But, we know their weaknesses. So, we can entrap them while staying hidden. After all, wisdom will always win in the contest of power and wisdom!

"However, that Jun Mo Xie has left me thoroughly puzzled." Li You Ran lowered his head, and flashed a tranquil smile. However, his gaze became incisive as he hesitantly spoke-up, "I haven't been able to see what kind of a person that Jun Mo Xie is. I can't sense his weakness either..."

"And, this is undoubtedly frightening. I've always been able to see that Jun Mo Xie's character was riddled weaknesses. And, this has been the same since childhood. Each of his weakness was fatal, and would've been the end of the Jun Family. But, I've come to realize that those weaknesses had merely been a ruse now that I wish to deal with him. It seems like I've overreached myself, and gotten duped as a result."

"Your analysis is very good. You must've observed that Jun Mo Xie carefully," Li Shang coughed twice. He had been listening to Li You Ran's words very calmly. Then, he spoke, "But, you must understand one thing. It's true that Jun Mo Xie hasn't exposed a weakness. But, he's still a young man!"

"A young man...? What do you mean, Grandfather?" Li You Ran was somewhat puzzled.

"A young man may be powerful, and he may be very talented. However, a young man is still full of youth and vigor. So, he's bound to be impulsive!" Li Shang chuckled. "Jun Zhan Tian was able to outdo someone as far-sighted and wise as yourself. That matter hasn't been forgotten until now! And, don't even try to deny this in front of me! And, this is your weakness!"

"Yes!" Li You Ran bowed as he listened to his instructions.

"Second; a young man may be intelligent and calm. But, he's still a mountain of passion. And, that is always a strong weapon against any youngster," Li Shang narrowed his eyes. "Jun Mo Xie has never shown it, but it can be concluded that his biggest weakness is women! He cares for women! Take Guan Qing Han for example... or maybe Dugu Xiao Yi!"

"You're right, Grandfather!" Li You Ran bowed and agreed cheerfully. [Experience does count for a lot!]

"Obviously! You regard your heart as 'unfeeling and cold'. But, you also felt dejected when you were planning to deal with Princess Ling Meng, right?" Li Shang's gaze was sharply piercing

through his narrowed eyes. "Don't even try to tell me that you didn't!"

"Yes... I was... at that time... I was very irascible..." Li You Ran calmly admitted.

"And, the third place where we can attack a young man — is his close relatives! Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi are his close relatives. His father and elder brothers had died long ago. But, he was too young at that time. So, he might not have felt the pain of losing loved ones. But, he's an adult now. So, he can understand everything. Therefore, he will treasure them twice as much. However, it'll be an incalculable blow to Jun Mo Xie if his remaining relatives were to die at this time!

"I believe that these are the three ways to deal with that unbeatable Jun Mo Xie of yours." Li Shang warned in an earnest tone, "There are no enemies who can't be deal with. And, there's no man without a weakness. You must remember this important point well."

"This You Ran will remember the Grandfather's advice forever," Li You Ran stood straight. It was evident that he was in awe of the advice he had received.

It couldn't be denied that experience does matter. Grand Preceptor Li wasn't a great scholar. He didn't command great military prowess. He didn't even possess unrivalled Xuan strength. However, he had always held a spot that could compete with Jun Zhan Tian and Dugu Zong Heng for the top-three. Jun Mo Xie and Li You Ran were gifted individuals. And, they had mastered their respective innate talents as well. However, they were still captured by this dismal side of the human nature. And, this made them slightly inferior to these older men.

"You Ran, these are the three weaknesses of Jun Mo Xie's. However, there is another aspect about Jun Mo Xie that you must take note of," Li Shang spoke very slowly.

"Is there another weak point?" Li You Ran was obviously quite interested.

"It may or may not be. But, you must keep it in mind regardless. It will prevent you from making mistakes in the future since this aspect regards to Jun Mo Xie's nature."

The Grand Preceptor Li softly flipped over the thick files of data that were present on the table in front. No less than three of them were piled up! They were named, "Jun Mo Xie one, Jun Mo Xie two, and Jun Mo Xie three." So, it was evident that these were about Jun Mo Xie.

Every move of Jun Mo Xie's was recorded inside them... everything from the time he ate food... to the time he used the toilet. Moreover, many comments analyzing the reported facts were also mentioned therein. These factors had obviously added to the size of the document...

"Jun Mo Xie's conduct?" Li You Ran raised his brows, and spoke in a pensive manner, "We didn't notice anything strange about Jun Mo Xie's conduct at first. We had started recording his information three months ago. In fact, around thirty of us had discussed the information and recorded it. But, I haven't found any weakness of his nature within these detailed reports and analysis. He he... this Li You Ran admires the Grandfather, and prostrates myself. After all, I had no clue about the weaknesses Grandfather pointed out..."

Li You Ran's smile was undoubtedly one of envy. However, that envious smile also contained a sincere trace of admiration.

"I've listed those points as Jun Mo Xie's weaknesses. However, they aren't specific to Jun Mo Xie. Instead, they are the common weaknesses of all youngsters. Therefore, you must first see if they even apply to him. Also, you must consider the manner in which we should exploit them. And, you will need to be very careful about it. Else, we will end up warning the enemy. And, we may not get a second chance given Jun Mo Xie's intelligence." Li Shang

coughed.

"Grandfather mentioned that there was some aspect about Jun Mo Xie's conduct. But, you didn't explain in detail. Your grandson thirsts for your teachings," Li You Ran nodded slightly. His gaze was profound.

"How do I say this? I've been thinking over Jun Mo Xie's conduct for a while. In fact, it might not necessarily be his weaknesses either. After all, we may consider it to be his weakness. However, his weakness could also turn to his advantage."

The wrinkles on Li Shang's face got deeper, "This is very difficult to understand. Even I can't understand it at this time. Therefore, I ask you to look into this seriously, You Ran. Take some time, and think about it. You're clearly impressed by Jun Mo Xie. However, you stand against him. Do you understand his character properly?"

"Jun Mo Xie... is certainly wild, and proud. He is arrogant, bombastic, and seems to require everyone's attention. But, he does succeed in drawing people's attention very quickly. However, he makes everyone hate him. In fact, he often becomes unbearable. But, a persistent person would eventually realize that his actions had gained him many advantages."

Li You Ran then pondered, and continued, "But, this man has become extremely unbearable in the past few years. It would be an incredible feat if he had done this on purpose. Moreover, it seems that the change in this man's situation has only started to reflect in the past half-a-year. This is what I don't understand... How can he change so much in such a short a time? This is incredible and unbelievable!"

"Is it genuinely incomprehensible? Nothing would be difficult to understand if you think of it in simplistic terms. Let's assume that Jun Mo Xie was a very talented youngster. Yet, he seemed like an unambitious man. In fact, he didn't even seem to wish for anything in the past; he only wanted to live a merry life. Do things

make sense if you follow this notion?" Li Shang's voice was dull, but his words contained a profound meaning.

Li You Ran's eyes sparkled, and he became calm again. He didn't say a word, but he had understood his grandfather's words.

"It seems that many things will become easier to understand if we establish this point of view. Let's assume that we hadn't decided to deal with the Jun Family. It could be said that the Jun Family's military strength would've gradually thinned out after the Old Jun had died. That's because Jun Mo Xie wouldn't have taken-over the family's responsibilities. After all, it didn't seem like his plan at first."

"Unfortunately, everything has changed for that man. And, he has transformed himself very drastically over the past half-a-year. Other people may not know about this, but I see that very clearly."

Li Shang snorted lightly, "Jun Zhan Tian had strenuously attempted to secure the Jun Family's future about six months ago. Therefore, it could be assumed that the Jun Family had reached a tipping point. Thus, Jun Mo Xie had no choice but to change.

"In fact, that Old Man Jun had proposed Jun Mo Xie's marriage to Princess Ling Meng. This was tantamount to telling to Jun Mo Xie that, 'I can't support you anymore. I can only hope to arrange a secure passage for you post my death. After all, I will pass away in time. And, you won't last a day once I'm gone'. However, the Emperor had declined this idea even though he empathized with them."

Li Shang heaved a soft sigh, "And, Jun Mo Xie underwent a thorough transformation after this event. The Emperor's attitude towards his grandfather's helplessness must've induced a change in him. Why would he decline Old Man Jun's request? It showed that the Emperor doesn't want the Jun Family to exist in his empire. This must've forced Jun Mo Xie to expose his frightening hidden talents. In fact, I feel that His Majesty would die of annoyance if he

were to realize this!"

Chapter 438: The Thunderous News from the Southern Heaven!

Li Shang's voice was dignified, "Do you understand, You Ran? The pressure which induced this change in Jun Mo Xie was so great that he had no choice but to change himself. High pressure can sometimes force a change in a person. In fact, even the biggest cowards around can sometimes turn into heroes under pressure. You may've never experienced such pressure. But, this change in Jun Mo Xie is unexpectedly very reasonable..."

Li You Ran looked pensive as he pondered. Then, he slowly nodded.

The Grand Preceptor Li's speculation was somewhat reasonable. But, he could have never guessed the real reason. In fact, his conjectures would only continue to deviate and distance from the truth as he'd follow his logic. That's because this Jun Mo Xie wasn't the same old Jun Mo Xie. In fact, there was a difference of sky and land between the two. Therefore, the very-base of Li Shang's theories were mistaken...

"Let your grandfather give you another advice regarding Jun Mo Xie — Don't try to pressure him too much if you don't have full confidence in landing the fatal blow." Li Shang's white eyebrows trembled as he smiled and continued, "You and the Li Family only wants more power. But, Jun Mo Xie doesn't desire power. In fact, he ignores power. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie doesn't have a substantive conflict with us. This is why the rivalry between you and Jun Mo Xie is different from the one between Jun Zhan Tian and me."

"He ignores power...? How can you be sure?" Li You Ran's eyebrows shot up. [Who wouldn't want a high post, a generous salary, and authority over the Empire? Who doesn't envy the men who have power over thousands of men? Who isn't fascinated with

waking up to the whole world in your hand, and an intoxicating beauty at your knee? Why does Jun Mo Xie have such an independent and unique character? Why doesn't he want this?]

He didn't believe it.

In fact, he couldn't believe a word of it!

"This is visible from every action and every move of Jun Mo Xie's. He doesn't care about anyone's opinion. Moreover, he's unlikely to care about honor or disgrace... or life or death. Thus, he doesn't care about glory or death. He has the ability to spend millions of taels by raising his hand, and he's also capable of living in unlimited luxury by merely smiling his way to wealth. He looks down on all men in the world in the true sense of it! He goes his own way, and does what he pleases. That youngster moves freely, and bodes no restrictions."

Li Shang sighed, "That's the kind of person he is! His goal is greater than yours. He is better than you. I don't wish to admit this. However, I have no choice but to do it!"

"He's better than me... better than me..." Li You Ran slowly went over those words, and suddenly became bitter. [I've done my best to pursue what I desire... But, is my effort that dismissive in others' eyes?]

This was a mocking irony for someone as proud as Li You Ran.

"Yes, he's better than you. I can see your ambitious... I can see them very clearly," Li Shang's sparse eyebrows budged lightly, "You've sought it your whole life... you want the throne of the world in the palm of your hands. You want to rule over all men... even if it's impossible. This wonderful taste of power is your goal, but it will also be your ruin. In fact, you will sacrifice anything for that wonderful feeling!"

"Yes!" Li You Ran's eyebrows moved softly. His eyes were brimming with a bloody and murderous aura. "Everyone desires

power. And, everyone must strive to improve. Emperors can change with time, and my chance can also come someday. And, I will unmask my potential if that happens. I will rise up to make my Li Family last for a thousand generations. I seek to establish the Li Dynasty the moment I see the chance!"

"However, what Jun Mo Xie pursues is detached from everything else! He wants to stand beyond imperial power... like the Silver Blizzard City, or the Xue Hun Manor... or even something higher! But, I don't know what that is..." Li Shang sighed. "And, His Majesty also sees this very clearly. Therefore, he's more tolerant than before. But, he's also thoroughly repentant," the Imperial Preceptor smiled.

"I can understand His Majesty being repentant when I listen to Grandfather's words. But, how is he much more tolerant than before? Was he that intolerant in the past?" Li You Ran was puzzled. [What's the inside story here?]

The Imperial Preceptor smiled, but didn't answer that. Instead, he merely said, "Who knows the reasons and results? Whatever is between our Li and the Jun Family... is nothing more than a grudge between Jun Zhan Tian and me. There's no cause for conflict otherwise. And, we're getting old..."

"So, what grandfather means is..." Li You Ran was somewhat puzzled. [My grandfather's tone suggests that he wishes for the deep hatred between our families to be let off even though it has been carried on for three generations?]

"You Ran, you must remember this... Dealing with the Jun Family means dealing with someone like Jun Mo Xie! Don't act unless you're sure you'll annihilate him with his entire family... And, make sure that you see Jun Mo Xie's corpse swaying before you with your own eyes..." Li Shang closed his eyes. He continued in a somewhat tired manner, "That's the only case in which you must make a move! But, don't act recklessly if you're not sure of it!"

"Then, that is when we will attack first..." Li You Ran bowed his head. His soft hair draped over his face and covered it. However, his true expression weren't visible to anyone...

Li You Ran was shocked inside. [What Grandfather said right now, and what he had said before, "Don't try to pressure him too much unless you have full confidence in landing the fatal blow..." These words have the same meaning. However, Grandfather emphasized them, and even spoke them twice!]

[What does this mean?] Li You Ran had understood it very clearly.

[This explains grandfather's feelings... He believes that I won't be able to face Jun Mo Xie's counter-attack. Moreover, it'll be the end for our Li Family if he counter-attacks.]

However, Li You Ran couldn't accept this point of view.

"Everything is still your plan. And, you should be better than me... no matter the manner in which you act. So, I can't issue my opinions. This family... relies on you! So, you do anything as long as you deem it fit. And, don't worry about my impressions."

Grand Preceptor Li tiredly closed his eyes, and waved his hand, "You only need to remember two things in the current situation — don't disobey His Majesty, and you must be very careful with Jun Mo Xie. Have full control. Don't provoke these two. And, everything should be alright. Then, your efforts will surely pay off for our Li Family. In fact, they will take us to great heights."

Then, Grand Preceptor Li became silent, and this conversation between the grandfather and grandson came to an end.

It was merely early winters at the moment. But, a brazier was still raised inside Li Shang's room. Li You Ran had always felt warm when the brazier was lifted. However, he felt cold this time... And, it was because of this conversation. In fact, he felt very cold.

This cold feeling left his usually upright figure to curl up shivering. And, he couldn't help but lean close to the brazier.

The complicated expression on his handsome face revealed that he was in deep thought. After all, he couldn't accept that he would... lose. [Could I be so much worse than him? I've been trying so hard, but it still hasn't made much of a difference?! I haven't had the time to think about this aspect much. But, how has Jun Mo Xie already surpassed me by so much?]

[Is he that fierce? Is he so hard to rival?] Li You Ran sighed deeply.

Li Shang closed his eyes, and reclined on his couch. His heart could only sigh as he wondered what his grandson might be thinking. He had obviously understood it clearly. His grandson could depend on him for aid when it came to analyzing the pros and cons. However, Li You Ran could only rely on him when it came down to it...

"I have a report for the Lord Young Master. The Head of the Meng Family — Meng You Wei wishes to meet with the Lord Master," a voice reported from outside.

"Tell him that the Grand Preceptor is unwell, and needs to rest. So, the Grand Preceptor can't meet anyone. The Young Master has gone out, and hasn't returned..." Li You Ran's replied in a weak voice.

Meng You Wei must've arrived to unite with the Li Family so that they could discuss how they should deal with the Jun Family. But, Li You Ran didn't wish to hear the words, "Jun." Therefore, everything must wait until the storm of his heart had come to pass...

He looked at the three files on Jun Mo Xie, and smiled bitterly. Then, he suddenly picked the sheets, and threw them open into the fire of the brazier. The fire roared, and the flames soared inside the room. The temperature inside the room also rose as a result.

However, Li Your Ran's face was increasingly being filled with frustration. The flame illuminated his face in a deep red color. It was a somewhat strange color...

There was a sound of flapping wings in the sky. Then, someone informed, "Young Master, the report on the army returning from Southern Heaven City is here."

Li You Ran tossed the remaining sheets into the brazier. His movements were neither too fast... nor too slow. He then dully replied, "Come in! Read it aloud!"

"Yes!" A big person cautiously entered. He did the usual ritual, and opened the letter he held, "There was an incident on the ninth day of the army's return march. They were hindered by the Silver Blizzard City's Second Elder — Xiao Bu Yu. He had five other Spirit Xuan elders, the Seven Swords, and two Sky Xuan experts along. Furthermore, Xiao Han challenged Jun Wu Yi to a death-match."

Li Shang's eyes suddenly opened wide, and he sat up straight. Li You Ran stopped tossing the papers, and became completely still as well. The big man was shocked by this, and didn't read any further.

"Go on," Li You Ran clenched his teeth.

"Jun Wu Yi defeated Xiao Han, and the latter was crippled in the fight. The Seven Swords fought the Eight Great Master — Solitary Falcon. The Great Master went on to defeat the Seven Swords. And, Xiao Bu Yu fought Jun Mo Xie in this battle..."

"Xiao Bu Yu fought Jun Mo Xie...?" Li You Ran trembled as he raised his head to look up at that man.

"Yes. Xiao Bu Yu fought Jun Mo Xie, but he was no match for Young Master Jun. Then, Jun Mo Xie used some evil scheme, and made Xiao Bu Yu strip in public. This shamed him to an extent that he killed himself. Jun Mo Xie's sword also decapitated Xiao Feng Wu. And, he also cut the legs of the Silver City's Eighth and Ninth

Elders. Moreover, Jun Mo Xie pierced the Sixth Elder's chest. Jun Mo Xie took on four of Silver City's Spirit Xuan experts by the end of it, and he came out on top. Everyone from the Silver Blizzard City..."

Li You Ran didn't hear whatever was informed after this part since his mind had spiraled into a great shocked. His eyes went dark, and only that single piece of information was left to resonate in his mind, "Xiao Bu Yu fought Jun Mo Xie, but he was no match for Young Master Jun. Then, Jun Mo Xie used some evil scheme, and made Xiao Bu Yu strip in public. This shamed him to an extent that he killed himself. Jun Mo Xie's sword also decapitated Xiao Feng Wu. And, he also cut the legs of the Silver City's Eighth and Ninth Elders. Moreover, Jun Mo Xie pierced the Sixth Elder's chest. Jun Mo Xie took on four of Silver City's Spirit Xuan experts by the end of it, and he came out on top."

[Jun Mo Xie took on four of Silver City's Spirit Xuan experts, and came out on top.]

[Jun Mo Xie took on four of Silver City's Spirit Xuan experts, and came out on top.]

It seemed that his ears had been filled with the sound of a thunderclap. It was like his soul had flown out of his body, and had transcended to the clouds. Li You Ran swayed a bit, and his right hand grasped at something in order to steady himself. The thick pile of papers he held dropped from his hand, and landed into the brazier. This stack of paper landed on top of the raging flames inside the brazier. And, this gave rise to a plume of thick black smoke!

Chapter 439: Shocked to the Core!

The dimmed and aged eyes of Li Shang also livened up. Nobody moved for a long time. However, a huge cloud of smoke had gathered inside the room.

The three individuals lifted the curtains after some time, and rushed out of the room. A massive plume of smoke soared into the sky. It was presumed as if something had been set ablaze. Consequently, the sound of alarms rang out in the household. And, the guards started to arrive with buckets of water...

Li You Ran coughed a few times before he returned to normal. However, he continued to watch the rising smoke in silence.

Li Shang took the letter which had been delivered by the eagle. He read it very carefully from the start to finish. And, his complexion became very serious as a result. Grand Preceptor Li lifted his head after a long time, and looked at that dark cloud of black smoke as it hovered above. He let out a very lengthy sigh and muttered, "I tried to overestimate him as much as possible... But, I was underestimating him very greatly this entire time. Oh Heavens... there's bound to be a change..."

Li You Ran's expression also became unsightly as he muttered, "He fought four Spirit Xuan experts... fought four Spirit Xuan experts," This usually calm Young Master You Ran had suddenly lost his mind...

...

Each powerful family also received this news from their own intelligence networks; the Royal Family was no exception either. The wordings of their respective letters were slightly different. However, the information contained was virtually the same...

Consequently, Tian Xiang City witnessed yet another earthquake!

It was earth shattering, world-shaking! In fact, it was something which could turn the world on its head!

Jun Mo Xie has caused an earthquake when that news about his affair with his elder sister-in-law had spread. And, these vibrations hadn't even settled yet. In fact, people with ambitions were still trying to spread the flames in order to increase its effect... Consequently, the response to it was also increasing. And, the voices of insult were getting increasingly loud...

Over half of the people in Tian Xiang were waiting for that shameless hoodlum to return so that they could shame him. In fact, they had planned to curse him to death. Moreover, they were certain that they would drown him in their spit if he didn't die from their cursing...

Jun Mo Xie's present reputation in the city was even worse than the one that had stained his name before he had come to this world. In fact, it had become synonymous with words like dirty, shameless, contemptible, lowly, and despicable. And, the same effect had spread to Guan Qing Han's name due to her relation with him. The talk of this adulterous couple had spread to every corner of the city... whether it was the teahouses... or the taverns. And, they were being cursed everywhere!

It had to be said that the civil officials had been able to make their campaign work in a very effective manner. After all, they knew that the common people didn't know the truth. Thus, they had found it easy to instigate the masses. It went without saying that such a thing wasn't acceptable to anyone in this era. Consequently, those scholars were successful in changing the entire city into an ocean of abuse for Jun Mo Xie.

They were sure that they would overwhelm him in a sea of clamor as long as he entered the Tian Xiang City. The Young Master could turn a deaf ear to this abuse. However, could Guan Qing Han do it as well? Could she endure such an embarrassing situation?

However, they heard the latest astonishing news now. And, it was like a bomb explosion to their ears... or maybe even like the incineration of a nuclear bomb! And so, it caused an even greater ruckus. Anyone who heard this news had the same reaction — they were stupefied and dumbstruck. In fact, it was like they had been struck by lightning... They simply couldn't believe it!

Some groups of scholars and officials weren't ready to believe it. However, there were many who felt like they had picked a boulder, and had dropped it on their own foot...

[Young Master Jun is so fierce? How can he be so fierce?]

[A lone man fought four Spirit Xuan experts... and won an overwhelming victory?! Damn!] Everyone knew what kind of people these Spirit Xuan experts were. So, everyone felt a slight chill in their hearts. [How is one man who is able to fight four Spirit Xuans not be on the same level as the Great Masters? How could he not be unrivalled? Couldn't one say that the Jun Family has become an existence that is on par with the Silver Blizzard City...? Or maybe even higher... like an ultimate existence of some kind...?]

[Would I shame such a terrifying power? Do I not love my life?] Then, someone suddenly stood up and clarified the facts. These were the same people who had spread the rumors yesterday. But, they were the ones who were hurriedly standing up to clarify the facts today.

However, who could control the effect of the rumors once they were out? It was like an old saying, "It's much easier to put a damn on a river than to stop a person's mouth from flowing!" And, it was true! Moreover, this kind of a rumor made for a strong flavor in gossip. And, such things spread as fast as lightning...

Moreover, this wasn't merely a gossip or rumor... It was mostly true!

It could be said that the people who had only imbibed scholarly

text could only know the literary differences between civil and military matters. They could advocate the pros and cons of everything, and talk about things that were better. They could talk about the Spirit Xuan experts when it came to the topic. In fact, they could even talk of higher powers. However, these Xuan experts were nothing more than a knight-errant to the eyes of these scholars...

They believed that even the legendary warriors were subject to the law of the land. After all, there would be utter chaos if there weren't any laws. Therefore, these men didn't believe that there were people who could stand beyond the imperial power, and couldn't be constrained inside this world. Consequently, the notion of someone being above the imperial power after having attained a certain level of strength seemed even more absurd to them...

After all, every piece of land and shore under the heaven belonged to the Emperor!

The news about Jun Mo Xie killing these Spirit Xuan experts reached the ears of Mei Gao Jie. However, the old man merely curled his lips and snorted as he said, "The crimes that he has committed haven't even been judged yet, and his case has also been smeared with murder now. This cruel, heartless, and pigheaded Jun Mo Xie should die to redeem for his sins. This world won't be peaceful until he dies."

Case smeared with murder...? This amazing and world-shaking event was a 'criminal case' in the words of that old man. However, the Tian Xiang City was like a brick of night-soil which was with scuttling maggots under the heavy rainfall... Everything was in utter chaos!

Inside the royal palace...

The Emperor had been bitterly complaining to the Empress and the Princess when he received this letter...

"You had said that this Jun Mo Xie would eventually calm down in time. However, he first made a huge mess in the capital. And then, he patted his buttocks and went off to the Southern Heaven City. And now, he has done such a filthy thing over there. However, this is a good thing. This would've merely been a matter for gossip if it had happened with someone else. But, this has happened to Jun Mo Xie! And, this has created a perfect opportunity to attack him. And, don't forget how Jun Mo Xie had insulted those great scholars some time ago. Moreover, he had done so in front of the Emperor, his relatives, and the court officials! Besides, that Old Man Jun also despises the government officials. Military and bureaucracy have always been at odds with each other. In fact, they probably will remain so forever. So, wouldn't those scholars take this chance to hit the Jun Family when they're down...?" The Emperor's face was riddled with grievances. In fact, it seemed that his resentments had arisen since his expectations hadn't been met.

The Empress's expression was extremely cold as she sat to the side. In fact, it seemed as if she hadn't even heard a single word. There was a chance that she may have heard some of it. However, she didn't have any expression belying it. However, the Princess had a somewhat sad and worried expression on her face. In fact, she was looking anxiously at her father — the Emperor.

These things had been happening every once in a while inside the Palace these days. And, the main reason for this was that the Emperor wanted to use these opportunities as a pretext to try and talk to the Empress. However, the thread of conversation had turned to Jun Mo Xie this time...

However, the outcome was the same as the others... The Empress would sit cold-faced. In fact, she would be as calm and quiet as an ice sculpture. And, the Emperor would eventually finish talking, sigh, and leave...

The Princess could remember her father pining after her mother

like that since ever. In fact, the Princess's heart felt a lot of pity for her father. After all, this had been the case for over ten years now. [How does he get by his day? After all, Father is the ruler of an empire. However, he has been fawning in a low voice over his wife in this manner for ten years! Doesn't this infatuation prove everything?]

[However, my mother hasn't changed... even a bit.]

[Why?]

[Uncle Ye is pitiful, and Father is also very pitiful...] Princess Ling Meng's heart had deep sympathy for both these in-love men. She didn't know what she could do to make it well. Nor could she choose a side...

How long had this been going on for? The Emperor knew that it had been going on for a very long time. In fact, it had been so long that he had forgotten when it had started. But, the Empress still remembered it very clearly.

The Empress had treated her husband with the respect after their marriage ceremony. However, the birth of Princess Ling Meng had left the Emperor besides himself with joy. Consequently, he had drunk himself well, and had said something which he should've never uttered in front of the Empress...

It was about the real reason behind the extermination of Ye Gu Han's Family!

This cold wall between husband and wife had been erected as a result. And, it had continued to stand strong to this date. In fact, it hadn't even thawed ever since. And, perhaps it would never thaw in the future either...

This moment seemed no exception either. So, the Emperor finished talking, and sighed as he looked at his wife's reactionless face. In any case, it would've been strange if she had reacted to his words of complain...

However, his efforts managed to exceed his expectations this time...

And, a strange thing happened!

"You needn't speak of how everyone in the city is gossiping about Jun Mo Xie. That matter is public knowledge! You were the one who sent him to the Southern Heaven City to die. And, you're acting innocent now...? Your Revered Majesty, why do you always use such methods? Can't you change your methods?" the Empress slowly spoke-up.

The Emperor turned around like a whirlwind, "What did you say? Do you know what you're talking about?"

"Of course I know what I'm talking about. What I'm saying is... can you not be so shameless? Don't you think that this will affect your image as the ruler of this nation? A real man acts courageously, and he takes responsibility. Do you think you can be considered a real man now?" the Empress spoke-up in a slow and clear manner.

The Emperor was astonished by this. [She would never say anything when I would talk to her in the past. However, this quiet woman has suddenly started to distort the right and wrong when I brought up Jun Mo Xie. In fact, she is even cursing me so bitterly! This is the first time this has happened in more than ten years! Why?]

[Why?]

She had been feeling guilty all those years, and she had wanted to redeem herself... She would dream of going back to the days of her youth...

The Empress had always acted in a dignified and graceful manner. She had never acted out in inflamed anger. In fact, she had never spoken so sharply even when she had been unhappy. This was the first time since that 'incident of the past' that she had

behaved like this.

Princess Ling Meng's expression became one of fright as she looked at her father. Then, she looked towards her mother. She had long become accustomed to that cold wall between her parents. In fact, she couldn't even imagine witnessing anything beyond that between these two. Therefore, she was at a loss for a moment...

"I'm shameless? Why do you always say that I'm shameless? Why do you call me shameless?" His Majesty spoke-up in violent rage, "I'm the Emperor! I have to look out for the whole society! I have to give thought to everyone who lives in my lands! Where have I gone wrong? I have to look after millions of people! So, I have no luxury for words like, 'a real man'!"

Chapter 440: Jun Family's Influence

"For the country...? For the people in your land...? That's a great argument! How pompous of you! Why don't you say you were thinking of yourself? It's all because of your selfishness! It's because you fear that someone will overthrow you. You're wary and jealous of everyone! You don't trust anyone, and you don't dare to have confidence in anyone! You lift a person high up yourself. And, you knock them down into a bottomless abyss when they reach a high position and amass considerable power. You'll never be lenient with anyone. In fact, you'll use it to declare to your council of officials that there will be clouds if you turn your hand, and there will be rain when you remove it. You'll use that to show that you're omnipotent. Moreover, you will send this message to them with the help of these things —'obey me and you'll flourish. Disobey me and you'll die!' Do you genuinely think of yourself as someone very noble? No! You'll have them obey orders, right? In fact, they won't necessarily flourish if they obey you. But, you'll surely have them killed if they don't!"

The Empress gave him a biting look. Her eyes were as icy as a mountain-lake in winter, "But you can't do anything about it anymore, can you? So, you can only get emotional about it now!"

"This is rubbish! Yours are the eyes of a woman! What would you understand?!" the Emperor roared. He felt that his aloofness and pretense had no effect over his wife. So, the man couldn't control his anger...

"I'm talking rubbish? Am I wrong? You're telling me that I've accused you wrongly?! So, let me ask you this! What was the cause of the Ye Family's extermination?!"

The Empress gave a tragic laugh. Then, she suddenly stood up and spoke, "Who was behind the evils done to Jun Wu Hui? Who was behind Jun Wu Meng's murder? Jun Mo You and Jun Mo Chou were youngsters with unlimited prospects... what caused

their premature deaths? What caused these young ones to be buried with so many troops? What left Jun Wu Yi crippled for ten years? And, why couldn't anyone even find Dugu Xiong's corpse?"

"These things... these things... How much do you know? How many cases are you aware of?!" It seemed like a deeply concealed scar had suddenly been exposed. His Majesty felt enormous pain... like his lungs had been torn apart. Moreover, he had started to panic. In fact, his face had started to convulse.

He had believed that the Empress had finally opened her golden mouth to argue. So, he thought that she'd argue the next day as well. And, these instances would only increase in the future. Therefore, he believed that there was a chance that their relationship of a husband and wife could gradually become normal.

However, he was unable to control his anger now!

The Ye Family, Jun Wu Hui, Jun Wu Meng, Dugu Xiong... these names were like sharp needles pricking at his heart. And, these needles had only left his heart to bleed in time...

In fact, the pain had eventually reached his very bones!

The Emperor would've dismissed anyone with a laugh if they had asked him these questions. Perhaps he would've admitted to the inconsequential things, and would've then covered his actions with weak excuses. But, the one asking these questions was Murong Xiu Xiu...

It was the person he cared for the most... The woman he loved the most!

The woman he had yearned for... even in dreams.

He had been dreaming about her ever since he had been a young man. He had been dreaming and hoping to get that woman even when he had become the Prince. He was ready to incur any costs to obtain her. In fact, he would've stinted to institute the most

disgraceful conspiracy for that woman...

Then, she had eventually become his woman.

He had spared no expense to obtain her. He had climbed to the Emperor's position to obtain her. He had even deposed his previous Empress to obtain her. And, he had endured for ten years to get her back. For her... everything had been for her!

Things went further, and she finally became his Empress and came to his palace. But, his long-longed happiness lasted only for two short years. The people had remained the same, but the conditions had changed. The only thing which had remained was their status as husband and wife. However, they didn't have any personal connection between them.

He had dreamt many dreams late at night. He had always felt extreme hatred in love. However, he had never hated her inconsistent love for him. Nor had he ever hated the fact that he wasn't able to get her heart. Instead, he hated the person who resided in her heart. Things would've been different if it weren't for him. Then, there was an assassination attempt on Princess Ling Meng, and Ye Gu Han had suffered grave injuries. This had only increased the fissure between the two of them. Therefore, he had started to harbor even more hatred...

He had then heard of the deformity that man had been rendered with. His right hand had been chopped off. Even his Xuan strength had been annihilated. So, he would never be able to fight again. In fact, this condition was even worse than that of Jun Wu Yi's...

[Ha ha ha...]

The Emperor had felt a sense of tyrannical elation when he had heard that news.

However, his expression had become somewhat twisted and convulsed at this moment...

"I don't know much. I don't need to know much. But, I know one

thing. And, I already know enough! Isn't it enough?" She looked at him coldly, "You wouldn't have gotten emotional if something bad happened to the Murong Family even though they are the First Family. But, why have you forgotten yourself when there's a sudden rise in the Jun Family's power? Why? Can you give me one reason?"

"Reason...? What reason? What reason would be there? How can a woman make absurd comments about major events that concern the nation? You have your own life... And, you live a good and comfortable one. How many things have you been involved in?" the Emperor grumbled as he impatiently took large strides back and forth.

"Haha... what have I seen? Jun Wu Yi's brothers were killed, and his body was destroyed. The Jun Family continued to decline for ten years, and they had no qualified successors. But, you were very cheerful then, weren't you? After all, you didn't feel threatened anymore; am I right? Your Majesty must've felt amazing when such great men were destroyed along with their might armies! After all, that must've been a handy deal; so, you must've felt great?"

The Empress sneered as saw the Emperor looking irascible in the face of her sarcastic remarks. She even felt a small sense of elation at this sight. In fact, it was the kind of elation one feels after they've given vent to their long-standing hatred. Consequently, her words had started to sound even sharper.

"What can you understand? What do you understand? What can you comprehend?" The Emperor's face went dark, and his voice was astonishingly loud. His Majesty no longer had any misgivings about his daughter who watched from the side as he glared in a malevolent manner, "Do you realize how weak and unstable our position as royalty was at that time? Our position was jeopardized! The Tian Xiang Empire was outwardly strong, but it was weak on the inside! You, you, you... do you know how serious those

conditions were? No! You don't know anything!"

He looked down his body, and waved his hand energetically in resentment. He then thundered, "You don't know! You've never known! You've only known how to criticize to no end... only to complain endlessly! You only have baseless suspicions! You don't know! You don't know anything! Do you know what cost I had to pay so that we could walk this day?"

"I don't know much about these events. But, I know one thing very clearly. The whole thing changed the moment Jun Wu Hui took command and went into battle. The Yu Tang and the Shen Ci Empire still don't dare to invade our boundaries. Isn't that because of the Jun Family's contribution? Will you deny that as well? They were brimming with talented men... they wouldn't lose any battles... they had such divine capabilities! Yet, you had them killed! You used every possible means and methods; you used everything which you shouldn't have used, and employed every method you shouldn't have... to get them killed! But, there's something that I've never understood. That is... how can you have such lack of foresight?!"

Princess Ling Meng was shocked to hear this, and her entire body had been left to tremble. Her small hands had tightly covered her mouth. In fact, she was about let out a cry of alarm at one point, but she had somehow held it back. However, her eyes were filled with terror and despair.

"Father... don't tell me... you..."

"You're right! Jun Wu Hui was indeed a divinely talented general of his generation! He made clever tactics and excellent strategies. And, no man could contend with him! I've always admitted it! I've never denied it!"

Veins had pooped-up on the Emperor's face by now. He had a fanatic and fiery expression, "The other two empires wouldn't dare to violate our borders because of Jun Wu Hui, his brothers, and

Jun Zhan Tian. That's something I already know! Do you understand? I know all of that! I know it full well! I know it much better than you do!" the Emperor's voice was like a low thunder, while his expression was one of hysteria.

"Then, why did you do that if you knew everything?" The Empress stared intently. "Don't tell me that you wish to rule a vanquished nation?!"

"Do you know the inside story? Did you know that only the army in the western part was under the Dugu Family's control? Moreover, that was the weakest one! However, Jun Wu Hui had eight-hundred-thousand men under him. Eight-hundred-thousand! Do you understand what eight-hundred-thousand means? Do you understand? No, you don't!

"Jun Wu Meng had another five-hundred-thousand! And, Jun Wu Yi had two-hundred-and-fifty-thousand! Moreover, Jun Zhan Tian supervised the entire military because he was the Supreme Commander. Do you know what that number entailed? And, do you understand what that meant?

"The four Jun generals had over 1.5 million men under them put together. The entire Empire's strength was at 2.6 million at that time! The Dugu Family had only two-hundred-and-fifty-thousand men, while the Murong Family had two-hundred-thousand. Then, there was the defense army... a motley crew... the forest rangers, and the guards. However, even these factions had people from the Jun Family inside their ranks!

"Do you know what this meant? Do you understand? No, you still don't understand! I will tell you!" His Majesty's eyes were bloodshot. He lowered his head and continued resolutely, "This meant that we would've been helpless if the Jun Family had decided to rebel. And, that would've meant my head! My head..."

The Emperor pointed to his head with his finger and roared, "I've been under a sword since the beginning! And, anyone could've

taken my head with that sword if they wanted to! Do you understand? Could you have allowed such a family to exist if you were me? Disgraceful!"

"But, the Jun Family never had any intention to rebel. I know this, and I'm sure that you know this as well. In fact, you always knew!" The Empress looked at him coldly. In fact, her biting-cold glare had been following him as he was walking about, "Tian Xiang would have been named for the Jun Family if they had ever thought of rising in rebellion. And, it remains the same today. Do you deny this? Can you deny this...? But, they are loyal. So, why don't you let them rest easy? Why do you insist on getting rid of them so quickly?"

"Why do I wish to get rid of them so quickly? You've already spoken the most important reason. And, I've acted for that alone!" The Emperor smiled in a cruel manner, "Do you know what it is that you've said? Tian Xiang would've already been named for the Jun Family if they had wanted to rebel! Is this not a good reason? Isn't it good enough?"

Chapter 441: His Unrivalled Prestige!

"You think that I didn't know how loyal the four Jun generals were? I know it better than anyone else! These kinds of generals are any rulers' dream, but they're also a nightmare. And, I'm no exception either! We had acquired huge advantages when we were fighting the Shen Ci and the Yu Tang empires! We could've stormed their capitals at any time as long as I or Jun Wu Hui wanted it! The war had already reached its final moments! But, I let the dream of a unified land under me go in-exchange of defeat, and paid with thousands of casualties! I gave up the lives of Jun Wu Hui and Jun Wu Meng in those battles to maintain the equilibrium... the equilibrium of the tripartite! Do you think that my heart doesn't feel pain inside?"

"I'm even more confused in that case! Why did you let go of the opportunity of a unified the land? Not only did you let that slip, but you were also content to be defeated?! Did you lose your mind or something?" the Empress was truly puzzled.

"It was my dream to unify the land under my rule! It was my greatest and most-cherished dream besides making you my wife! But, what would've happened after I had unified the entire land? What could I have rewarded the Jun Family with after they had used their power to unify the land? The only reward you can give to someone with such martial service... is to make them King! However, the Jun Family already had a frightening amount of fiefdom. And, they also had considerable military strength on top of that. This was in addition to their insanely powerful influence throughout the Empire... This was equal to creating the most powerful enemy one could have! This was equal to me getting stuck on a road with no exit! And, the Jun Family would've revolted if I wouldn't have rewarded them!"

"You didn't let them win because you couldn't reward them? These are extremely ridiculous arguments!" The Empress was

stunned at first. However, she eventually smiled in mockery.

"Extremely ridiculous, right? Let me tell you that this wasn't ridiculous! There's nothing ridiculous about it! It isn't ridiculous at all! Do you know that generals need official authorization for sending troops? And, the generals have only half of the authorization on their hands! The other half stays with me! And, one can only mobilize troops after the two halves are joined together. But, did you know what happened at that time? The four Jun generals didn't need any authorization to mobilize the troops! They didn't need it to mobilize the troops! The army would plainly follow their orders. Do you know what that meant?"

"I had gone to see off Jun Wu Hui when he had led an army of eight-hundred-thousand men twelve years ago. They were as calm and quiet as evil spirits while I was addressing them at the grounds. But, they started to cheer at his signal after I finished. In fact, they did so in coordinated unison! Do you understand?" The Emperor's face had become twisted, and he looked ashamed.

"I don't understand!" The Empress shook her head.

"Their coordinated cheering was rehearsed in advance! And then, everything became quiet after they had stopped cheering! Eight-hundred-thousand men stood there, and yet there was pin-drop silence! Do you know what this means?!" the Emperor gnashed his teeth as he spoke.

"Doesn't that mean that the discipline of the troops was very strict under Jun Wu Hui? You should be happy! Are you saying that you were mad because hundreds of thousands of troops stayed in strict discipline?" The queen was even more confused.

"Do you still not understand what I mean? Do you know what happened when I gave Jun Wu Hui my half of the authorization?" The muscles on His Majesty's face pulsed. His expression was one of humiliation, "The army suddenly started to cheer for him — flags were waved in the air, and the warhorses neighed! It seemed

that the world would turn on its head, and the mountains would be devoured by tsunamis, and heaven and earth would become pale! And, that continued for a long time! The golden tripod I stood in front of... vibrated and fell because of the vibrations from their cheering!

"I was standing on the podium, and I saw the eyes of those eight-hundred-thousand men as they turned towards Jun Wu Hui with a fanatical zeal. Each one of their cold weapons had been raised to fill the sky! And, Jun Wu Hui only made one action during their spell of enthusiasm.... and the entire army quietened down in an instant. In fact, there was pin-drop silence!

"Then, he took the pendant of authorization and held it above. He then turned to the army, and looked at them. His eyes swept over the troops, and not one soldier moved from their place. Do you know that this wasn't even intentional on their part? Then, he turned around to face me, raised the pendant, drew his sword, and started to take an oath..."

"But, the cheers of those eight-hundred-thousand men were seemingly been cut off by a sword the moment he turned towards them after the oath. In fact, there was complete silence. It was quiet... one could've clearly heard the sound of a water droplet falling to the ground! The dust was still covering the air, yet everything was still on the ground. He didn't need to draw his sword... he didn't need to make a gesture — he had only turned around! One careless look from him, and those eight-hundred-thousand men had become silent at once!"

"The great and awe inspiring Jun Wu Hui! The great awe and inspiring White General!" the hearts of the Empress and Princess Ling Meng shook as they listened to this. They could imagine that spectacular scene. The two could imagine the unrivalled greatness of Jun Wu Hui. And, they couldn't help their spirits from becoming excited and fascinated.

"I knew you'd think like that! You're a pair of idiots!" the

Emperor furiously continued, "I was also there at that scene! Where did that place my position? Where does it place our prestige if the soldiers cheered a hundred times more for Jun Wu Hui than they cheered for me?! I felt that I would see eight-hundred-thousand dead bodies lying in an ordered formation if Jun Wu Hui were to order them to commit suicide! The Imperial Palace would've probably been reduced to rubbles if Jun Wu Hui had given them an order to lay siege to our palace! He needn't even have given the order... a tiny movement, a careless look, and it would have become our reality!"

The Empress drew a long breath. She had finally understood where the Emperor's misgivings were coming from. The extent of Jun Wu Hui's influence was astonishing. His strength was indeed awe-inspiring. However, it was a threat to the Emperor's life. And, things would've remained as such until he had died...

"Do you understand now?" The Emperor smiled bitterly, "The Jun Family had over 1.5 million men under them! And, the Dugu Family's Dugu Wu Di worshipped Jun Wu Hui. In fact, that Dugu would've followed him blindly. So, they would've combined to have around 1.8 million troops once Dugu Wudi's forces were added to the Jun Family's! Moreover, the Jun Family had people in high places within the City's defense... and, in even higher rankings in the guards! In fact, they were around two-hundred-thousand in total. And, the defensive forces also had around thirty-thousand Jun troops in their ranks. However, the remaining of the nation only had a combined strength of six-hundred-thousand! That means that the Jun Family's strength had surpassed two million in total! Moreover, most of them were elite troops who had experienced all kinds of battles. Those who remained behind were inferior! This means that we could only muster six-hundred-thousand amateur troops if we were to dispatch an army. And, that is also an optimistic estimate!

"How do you expect me to be at ease in such a situation? How

could I have been at ease? Would you have been at ease if it were you? How could I not know that the Jun Family is a good and loyal family? How could I not know that they were so loyal that they could never even think about rebelling...? That they would never revolt...? But... I still had to do it... even if I knew that the Jun Family would never rebel! In fact, I had no choice but to do it!"

The Emperor frowned in pain, "Because, I am the Emperor! And, because I can't stand this kind of a threat! No! I don't think that any Emperor can ever stand such a thing!

Would any Emperor have stood and watched such a thing? He had lost the power to mobilize his own troops! However, the four Jun generals didn't need any approvals to mobilize the troops!

This means that there could've been a transition of power at any time... or any place!

"The Jun Family may not have wanted to rebel, and they may not have thought of a transition of power. But, it doesn't mean that others wouldn't have thought like that either! Do you know that my Great Ancestor's family was also thought to be loyal during his rise? They had supported the Tian You Dynasty, and had formed its strongest base. But, it's was too easy for someone to make him rebel! He only needed one mutiny to make the new Emperor! He was pushed on a road from which he couldn't turn back, and became the ruler! I've learnt that from my predecessors. So, do you still think that I'm under naïve delusions? Do you wish for me to sit and wait for death?"

His Majesty's voice was full of grief, "Don't you know about this matter as a Murong Family descendant? Don't you know about Murong Qian Qiu?"

The Tian You Dynasty was the incomparably splendid predecessor of the Tian Xiang Dynasty. The ancestor of the Yang Family had a brilliant military career in those days. In fact, it was similar to the frightening career of Jun Wu Hui's. The Yang

Family's ancestor had been triumphant in every battle. And, he was equally loyal to his King as well. But, Murong Qian Qiu was one of the generals under him. And, the Murong Family's ancestor had persuaded him to commit the unbelievable rebellion. Consequently, they had led the troops in a night attack, and had executed the Tian You Dynasty's King... and the Crown Prince as well!

There was no way to retreat from that unstable massacre. And, the Tian Xiang Empire of present day had gradually emerged from a mountain of corpses and an ocean of blood.

In other words... a big mutiny had led to the rise of the current day Tian Xiang Empire! The assist was provided by the Murong Family of that time. And, this had led to the Murong Family's current position in the latter empire.

"There was only one Murong Qian Qiu in the days of the Great Ancestor. But, can you guess how many Murong Qian Qiu were present under the four Jun generals? Do you know how many men might've tried to facilitate something like that against us? More importantly, do you know how much more fanatical they were? I'll tell you! There were at least twenty of these men who could've made the Jun Family act recklessly! And, the Tian Xiang Empire would've been done for even if one of them would've stood up! Do you understand it now? Your questions were those of naïve clemency!"

The Emperor snarled in a low voice. However, his voice was filled with pain and helplessness.

"Jun Wu Hui was such a talented general! Any ruler would've wanted him to command his troops and fight wars to expand their boundaries! However, I had to exert the entirety of my strength in attempts to get him killed by any means! Do you know how much pain I felt? I am an Emperor! How can I not wish to conquer the lands? I'd be King of all the skies, all the land, and all the shores! One order and the whole world would've shuddered. One word...

and the whole world would've shuddered!"

"But, have you ever thought that such power and influence was given to the Jun Family by your hands alone...?! How could it have reached such a level if you hadn't given them that authority back then?" Muroing Xiu Xiu stopped even though she had only spoken half of it.

Chapter 442: Conscience!

"Not give them authority? Right? Right? The Tian Xiang Empire was under assault from all sides in those days! Jun Zhan Tian had been stabbed and wounded. So, he couldn't take charge of the military matters anymore. Dugu Zong Heng is a brave man, but he wasn't suitable for that situation. The Yu Tang Empire had attacked the east with six-hundred-thousand men. The Shen Ci Empire had attacked with five-hundred-thousand men from the west like lightning. Furthermore, the Ling Xiao Empire had attacked with four-hundred-thousand men from the south-east, and the Grassland King had attacked with four-hundred-thousand cavalymen from the north. Our empire had been besieged from all sides!

"I gave Jun Wu Hui an order to take two-hundred-thousand men. He was supposed to take on Yu Tang's six-hundred-thousand in the east, and the Ling Xiao's four-hundred-thousand in the south-east. It was two-hundred-thousand against a million! Jun Wu Meng and Jun Wu Yi were to face those Grassland Wolves in the north, and Dugu Wu Di and Murong Feng Yun were sent with two-hundred-thousand to face the five-hundred-thousand of the Shen Ci Empire in the west. Such a division of troops had required us to even send most of the soldiers from the defensive formations. And, this had left less us with less ten-thousand men to guard the Capital!

"Everyone had believed that the Tian Xiang Empire was done for. And, I was no exception! There was a wide difference in strength. In fact, it was like a mantis trying to stop chariots that were incoming from all sides. Moreover, the mantis was sitting on its deathbed! But, who would've thought that Jun Wu Hui would have such superhuman military talent...? He took the lead on the field before the enemy could act, and made a move before them. He then burned the Yu Tang's forces in three months in mid-winter!

"Seven-thousand miles of mountainous forests were burned

down. In fact, the biggest tree in those seven-thousand miles of stretch is still no larger than a man's thighs! He then beat Ling Xiao's four-hundred-thousand men in three months as well. He went forward bravely, and took nineteen cities in that campaign! Moreover, he even made use of the prisoners he had captured, and somehow increased his army's size to eight-hundred-thousand! Consequently, he annihilated Ling Xiao's forces, and destroyed their danger in the south. Then, he pounced on the Yu Tang forces at the border. The successive battles were won by systematic attacks. And, the reputation of the 'Great White General' never fell one notch!

"And, Jun Wu Meng and Jun Wu Yi didn't wish to be left behind by their elder brother either. They fought the Wolves of the Grassland in the north. They turned a disadvantageous situation around, and made it an equal one with their systematic strategies. They eventually expelled him, and entered right into the Prairie Grasslands. And, don't forget that Jun Wu Yi was only nineteen at the time. But, his clothes were already covered with many layers of blood. Blood flowed wherever he went, and heads rolled. They started calling him the 'Blood General' due to his achievements. His murderous aura was the densest in the land. Jun Wu Meng was cold-hearted, and maintained strict discipline. He ran a very tightly functioning army. He rarely spoke, and his word was law. He moved swiftly and decisively, and slaughtered each captive in every fight — he didn't leave a single living soul behind. He was called the 'Bloody God of Battle!' The population of the Prairie Grassland was reduced considerably, and it hasn't reinstated till this day! In fact, they don't dare to attack recklessly in the face of my imperial forces anymore!

"The fame of those four Jun generals spread everywhere after that! They had fought on all sides, and still hadn't lost. The Jun Family's fighting prowess became increasingly well-known! The fame of the White General, the Bloody God of Battle, and the Blood General started to resound everywhere! And, I wasn't able to

curtail their military power even after a few years had passed! The entire world knew of the four Jun Family generals, but not many could remember the ruler of the Tian Xiang Empire!

"The Jun Family could raise the entire country... or even areas thousands of miles beyond Tian Xiang! In fact, they could rally the entire world!" His Majesty said this, and let out a long sigh, "'Tough situations bring out the heroes.' These are truly wise words. The families in Tian Xiang were providing long memorial tablets to Jun Wu Hui in just three-and-a-half years! Jun Wu Hui and his brothers became living Gods of War throughout the Xuan Xuan Continent. They were shrouded in eternal glory as they became legends!

"However, legends like these three men are three extremely sharp swords as far as I'm concerned! Moreover, they were swords which were hanging over my head! The entire country celebrated after the crisis ended. But, our treasuries were exhausted, and the economy was growing with difficulty. However, the Imperial Troops were witnessing an unprecedented heyday! The Empire's territory had also expanded to a brilliant degree. We looked boldly at the rest of the world, and no hero could dare to look us in the eye! The oceans became quiet for some time, and the foreign aggressions died down. But... there was a crisis in my ear now. And, it was arriving very quickly! I was sure that the one to sit on the throne during Tian Xiang's peaceful period was either Jun Zhan Tian or Jun Wu Hui — it certainly wasn't me! That's because Tian Xiang wouldn't necessarily be Tian Xiang when that time would arrive!"

Princess Ling Meng was burning with anger as she listened-in from the side. Countless people had mentioned Jun Wu Hui's military successes to her. But, her heart had been stirred upon listening to her high-and-mighty father speaking of the splendid glory of those days...

[He was such a heroic man! Jun Wu Hui!]

[And, Jun Mo Xie is the sole remaining descendant of this glorious and splendid hero!]

"I understand... and even acknowledge your misgivings now. But, your plans went beyond Jun Wu Hui, Jun Wu Meng, and Jun Wu Yi...! Why did they have to include Jun Mo You and Jun Mo Chou?"

The Empress's voice belied some understanding. But, she still wasn't completely clear. So, her voice was still sharp, "They were only children at that time. Moreover, they were the sons of someone who had done excellent service for Tian Xiang! How could your heart and conscience endure that...?!"

"Jun Mo You and Jun Mo Chou were young, but they were already fledgling talented commanders. They had become popular within the ranks in a few battles alone, and their prestige had reached extremely great heights! What would've happened if such talented generals were to find out that I was the one who had planned to get their father and uncles killed? What would they have done to me? I had already turned my back on the Jun Family once... So, why wouldn't I have done it again? I would renounce the entire world if we were in danger! In fact, there's no one that I wouldn't turn on!"

The Emperor flashed a smile of gloom, "Moreover, there were next to no hostilities around at this point of time. The Yu Tang and the Shen Ci empires had been pushed back, and they were suing for peace. So, I was worried that there wouldn't be a fog of war anymore. Therefore, I took advantage of the fact that they still hadn't spread their wings properly. And, I removed them!

"However, there was another reason. I had only given a slight nudge in getting those Jun Family's members killed. But, the ones to kill them were from the Silver Blizzard City! They were the Xiao Family's people... Not me!"

"What an excellent justification! You're truly shameless!" The

Empress sneered, "But, you still didn't let the Jun Family go! You suppressed them further... even after you had done so many things! The only people who remained in a family that could've once shaken the heavens... were an old man, a cripple, and a debauchee! But, you still didn't let them off! Why's that? What great justification do you have for doing such a thing?!"

"Why...? You're asking me why?" The Emperor's eyes had opened big and wide. He looked at her like she was some strange creature, "You're still asking me this question? You still don't know?"

"I really don't know! They were the family of a great general! Moreover, they were a family of heroes who had saved the Tian Xiang Empire, and posed no challenge to you anymore. But, you've suppressed them, and made them suffer for so many years without ever stopping! I don't understand why you've been doing this? Is this the so-called 'Heart of an Emperor'? The man doesn't bear you, but you bear the man?" The Empress's expression had become even colder.

"Because... I'm also a man! Do you understand?" The Emperor snarled in a low voice. "My conscience becomes uneasy every time I face Jun Zhan Tian. Then, I'm filled with guilt! Do you understand guilt...? I feel that I've let him down! I've let the entire Jun Family down! So, I feel pain and guilt every time I face him... But, things would be better if all of them were dead! My guilt will vanish if they'd died! Do you understand this?!"

"I understand everything you've said. But, couldn't I turn against the Jun Family again if I had already done it once before? I was in danger with myself... my own heart! I had to live in this world! And, who could've lived my actions? I killed my own benefactors! I killed the heroes of the Empire! But, I had to find some means to pacify my conscience!"

The Empress remained silent. Then, she started to mutter one thing in a loop, "Conscience... conscience... conscience... conscience explains everything... this is the first time I've heard

this! Even you are a human? Even you have a conscience? This is nice to hear..."

She then chuckled and sneered before she spoke-up, "Then, why don't you continue to oppress the Jun Family now? Why are you defending them this time? Hasn't your conscious been stirring your heart anymore? You've been oppressing them for such a long time. And, you can finally exterminate them by using this depravity of Jun Mo Xie's! Isn't this your cherished dream? So, what has made you change so much?"

"It's because the Jun Family... I don't understand it properly. I can't... I can't dare to rush in. Who is this powerful person that backs the Jun Family?"

The Emperor frowned in a dignified manner. There was an expression of slight confusion on his face, "Will that person interfere if I try to exterminate the Jun Family? The Dongfang Family had once thrown three-hundred heads inside the Imperial Palace to avenge Jun Wu Hui's death. But, they only had a suspicion on me back then. However, I don't even have the Silver City to use as pretense at this time... So, how can I annihilate the Jun Family?"

"So, you're afraid! And, it's not because you care for them!" the Empress sneered, "You had entrapped and slaughtered a loyal general because you were afraid! And, you can't do anything now either. In fact, you can only compromise because you're afraid, right?"

"Compromise...? How is this 'compromise'?!" The Emperor became enraged, "Why are my actions always so unbearable to your eyes? Why can't you stand where I do, and look at things from my point of view? Why can't you act as a ruler and weigh the matters of the world?"

"The gaze of the Emperor of the world... is always shameless," The Empress's face was cold, "I admire your opinion on conscience!

How thick a skin do you need to have to have such big conscience? I'm shocked at your amazing planning. And, I truly admire how shameless your frame of mind is, and how you can keep calm... I particularly worship your Emperor's aura! But, I've seen the congealed ugliness of society now. Anyway, I'm quite tired now. So, can you see yourself out?"

"I've always thought that you knew me well. But, I've always been wrong. In fact, you don't know me at all," the Emperor said sadly, "Hundreds of people will die if the Jun Family is exterminated. But, how many millions will die if it's the Tian Xiang Empire in their place? The rise of a dynasty isn't about the emergence of a great general alone! But, how can the sacrifice and helplessness of an Emperor be measured with common sense?"

"I can tolerate a ruler's ambition and ruthlessness. I can even bear his willingness to use both fair means and fowl. I can also tolerate a ruler if he mercilessly slaughters everyone in the land to unify it under their command. But, I don't care about a ruler who acts in a selfish, shameless, and vulgar manner. I don't care what he achieves. Such a ruler will be nothing more than trash in my eyes. In fact, he wouldn't be any different in my eyes even if he was an Emperor for eternity!"

Chapter 443: Difficulties the Entire Journey

The Empress stared expressionless. Her expression was ice-cold as she spoke downheartedly, "You've already said that I'm the person you love the most. You targeted the Ye Family because of me! So, I was the goal when you talked of this. But, this matter with the Jun Family is because of your dark heart; especially the fact that you didn't let them off afterwards!"

"I'm only a woman, and I can't do a thing. I've asked myself, and I genuinely can't do a thing. And, I know that I won't have a chance to leave the palace since you've said these things to me today. Isn't that right?" The Empress calmly raised her head. And, she was still as calm when she looked at him.

However, the Emperor didn't face her.

"You wouldn't have told me so much today otherwise... And then, I've gone to the Jun household so many times ha ha... It's like you had suspected... it had never stopped. But, let me warn you."

The Empress raised her head, and a sharp light radiated around her eyes. The air also became a little colder as she said, "Ye Gu Han!"

The Emperor's body trembled. He had finally realized why the Empress was responding to him that day... It was because Ye Gu Han was sheltered in the Jun household at this time.

"I hope that you don't harm him! He's crippled. He doesn't have anything. He already had nothing before, but he's only surviving on Xuan strength now," the Empress' tone was hollow as she looked at that gorgeous palace with an empty expression; she seemed lifeless.

"But, he still has you! He has your heart!" the Emperor let out a mind-tearing and lung-splitting roar.

"My heart had died eighteen years ago," the Empress replied

dully, "I don't care if my body dies as well... And, takes your heart too..."

The Emperor stumbled backwards.

A messenger-eunuch reported at this moment, "Your majesty, a message has arrived from the Southern Heaven."

"Come in," The Emperor was quiet for a long time. He had a hand on his forehead, and his face belied his defeat and frustration. It remained as such for a while. Then, he spoke-up like a toddler who was learning to speak, "Send it in."

He extended his hand and un-winded the thread which rolled the paper in place. Then, he slowly opened it and gave it a look. However, his pupils shrunk as he looked at the letter, and his eyes suddenly resembled the sharp ones of a hawk. In fact, it seemed that the opened-letter was like his greatest enemy.

His hands trembled, and the piece of paper floated to the ground.

However, the Emperor's hands were still positioned like they held the letter in place. His eyes had also become somewhat dull and motionless. In fact, it seemed that he had been struck by lightning. He then suddenly felt dizzy, and swayed a bit. In fact, he almost fell down...

Then, he slowly looked down, and picked up the letter. He then gave it another read in a serious manner, and sighed. However, the Emperor still wasn't convinced of a single word he had read on the letter...

He swayed as his face became deathly pale, and the letter again dropped down like a dead leaf in an autumn wind... Only he didn't pick it up this time.

The content on that piece of paper was the same as the letters every other family had received. However, this letter was a lot more detailed.

There were a few lines which had attracted the Emperor's sight

more than the others...

"...Jun Mo Xie fought Xiao Bu Yu alone... Xiao Bu Yu killed himself in shame... Its suspected that Jun Mo Xie's strength has reached the level of a Great Master..."

"...Jun Mo Xie questioned about the matter of the past. And, Xiao Bu Yu mentioned the Blood Sword Hall as a matter of coincidence..."

"...Jun Wu Yi's legs have recovered. He fought Xiao Han and won. And, Jun Mo Xie has completely crippled Xiao Han..."

"...the Eighth Great Master from the grasslands... the Solitary Falcon is currently with the Jun Family..."

"...level of a Great Master... Blood Sword Hall... Solitary Falcon... Jun Mo Xie..." the Emperor muttered these few words in a strange voice.

[The Jun Family... the Jun Family...] The Emperor gave a long sigh. There was a profound expression in his eyes as he closed them, and said tiredly, "I regret it. I shouldn't have shown such clemency at that time... And, now I've to suffer for it!" his voice was hoarse. In fact, it had trembled somewhat.

He hurriedly walked out after that. However, he suddenly tripped at the door. He staggered violently as a result, and fell flat on his face. His guards rushed to help him in that pitiful situation, but he had already stood up before they arrived. He looked deep into the sky. It was then that something flashed in his mind. So, he turned around and focused on Princess Ling Meng's face.

After that, his figure disappeared...

Only mother and daughter remained in the Empress's quarters. And, they were only left to look at each other in dismay. Princess Ling Meng shuddered as she took two steps and picked up the open letter from the ground. However, it seemed as if that piece of paper somehow weighed more than a thousand Kgs for her...

She hated herself in this moment. Why did she have to hear so many secrets? This had been a huge blow to the Princess. In fact, it was something she couldn't bear. She had finally started to see a glimmer of happiness during these past days. However, her father had spoken so many things, and had smashed this state of happiness in its entirety. She suddenly felt empty as a result, and couldn't lighten up anymore. So, she looked at her mother, but was only left to discover that the Empress's expression was the same as her own.

The mother and daughter looked at each other, and became aware of the other's despair.

The two snuggled together, and read the letter. However, the Empress's expression belied her conundrum after they had read it. She didn't know whether she ought to laugh or cry. She then sighed in helplessness, and spoke a sentence with profound sadness and loneliness.

Princess Ling Meng resembled a frightened deer and was left to tremble after she heard what her mother had said. She powerlessly stumbled to the ground, and her eyes were brimming with fear and desperation...

That's because the Empress had said...

"Heavenly sin... it's like... we've sinned... and can't live anymore... We can't survive anymore! This happened too quickly... Its heaven's will... It's retribution... Jun Mo Xie... Jun Wu Yi... Tian Xiang... is finished..."

The Young Master Jun was travelling throughout the journey after being flushed with success as far as the others were concerned. But, he was quite disturbed in reality. It could even be said that he staggered with each stepped. He was constantly shocked, his eyes had thistles and thorns under them, and they were filled with desolation. It seemed as if they had been bruised by the many vicissitudes he had suffered...

Too many strange events had accompanied the Young Master on this journey. In fact, it could even be said that a unique expert had been playing pranks on the Young Master throughout the journey. And, this had left the Young Master to feel extremely vexed. Moreover, he couldn't guard against it... and, he couldn't hide against it. In fact, there wasn't any place to hide...

One excessive example of these inconceivable events was — he was riding with his men one day. However, the sky suddenly filled with a murder of crows. Then, all of them decided to 'relieve themselves' at once. This was already very unreasonable in itself. But, the matter still wasn't finished. And, that's because the men weren't affected by this onslaught. Moreover, the crows had been extremely accurate. So, the only ones to get soaked were Jun Mo Xie and his horse...

No normal person could've ever imagined that a murder of crows would relieve themselves together when they were flying overhead...

The Young Master Jun could also be considered a normal person in this regard. So, he had never imagined that such a thing either... And, was hence at a loss...

The awful stench soared to the skies, and left everyone with a desire to vomit. Wasn't the Young Master a "shit person" now?

And then, he was happily eating rice during meal time. He was surrounded by his soldiers. He had finished most of his bowl when a living cockroach crawled out of it.

These things could somehow be explained-away as coincidences if they had happened once... even if they were extremely strange and uncanny. But, could it still be called a 'coincidence' after it had happened for the second, the third, or even the fourth time...?

However, things still didn't end there. After all, the "shit person" obviously wanted to get clean. So, he went to the river and cleaned himself with great difficulty. But, his clean clothes were gone

when he got ashore. He tried to look for them for a long time; he was obviously naked that entire time... He didn't even notice where that sludge of mud was thrown at him from... He obviously had to go back to the river to clean himself again as a result...

The timing of these strange occurrences was extremely ingenious as well. In fact, they gave the target next-to-no time to react. And, even someone with superhuman reflexes like Jun Mo Xie's could only hide for a bit. But, he was still being fiddled with most of the time...

Jun Mo Xie considered the facts... [The earth stayed still and flat when the entire army marched over it. But, it caved in with me and the horse when I rode over it.] This incident obviously had too big a sign written all over it. [But, what kind of strength and talent could create such a pitfall so quickly...?]

He hadn't even been sleeping in the tent at nights. That's because, he would find brightly-colored snakes within his undergarments when he'd wake-up and put on his clothes in the morning...

It had to be said that the Young Master would've been helpless if it weren't for the protection of the Hong Jun Pagoda and Yin Yang Escape...

However, Jun Mo Xie's countermeasures and reactions made the party arranging these mischief look at him with admiration.

After all, anyone else would've had a nervous breakdown in the face of these events. But, Jun Mo Xie had somehow managed to seem lively. In fact, even his complexion hadn't become downcast. He went to wash himself in the river when he got dirty. However, he didn't try to look for his clothes this time. Instead, he disappeared from there... bare-butt! It was obvious that no one knew where he had disappeared to. So, they merely scratched their heads and stared wide eyed...

He stopped eating the rice during the morning meals. In fact, he

didn't even eat from the big wok. The Young Master roasted the snake meat instead... Moreover, he ate it with relish. Even his personal soldiers ate it till their fill. [It would be such a pity to waste such a fat snake...] And, this left the on-looking Snake King to gnash her teeth with explosive sounds.

The crows also flew over his head again. However, he struck them down when they were still afar. They weren't good as food. But, they were still a hunter's game. And, game is a game! The pitfalls also appeared on the road again. And, the target still went down. But, it was only the horse that went down this time around... not the man who rode it...

It seemed that Jun Mo Xie had continued to suffer losses throughout the journey in this 'one of a kind' battle. But, he still seemed to have a belly-full of appetite for these fights. And thus, the journey progressed in this manner. However, the people causing these mischiefs were left enraged; [how can a lone person be so strong mentally? How are his mental defenses so powerful? Will he endure this to death?]

However, Jun Mo Xie had lived in a very nasty environment in his previous life. He had been through many experiences which had been far more dangerous than these one. Anyway, this was merely mischief; it obviously wasn't a question of life or death. So, this situation was far from the near-death experiences he had been through in the past. In fact, the Young Master felt a long-lost warm, amiable, and happy feeling even after these pranks...

However, this left "Mei Xue Yan" and "Mei Qian Qian" to look at each other helplessly. [Can such a freak exist among the ranks of men?] After all, any other person would've been looking for a tree to hang from in the face of these pranks...

Chapter 444: Returns to Tian Xiang

Jun Mo Xie had resolved most of the matter that surrounded the Xiao Family. Therefore, most of this evil charms had subsided as far as that matter was concerned. However, the aura of his charms had still been growing around his body over the course of this journey. In fact, they had been becoming increasingly dense. But, this increase in his aura was accompanied by a proportionately dulling look in his eyes. This change was surely very contradictory in nature. However, it only added an indescribable evil charm to his personality...

This was the charisma of Jun Mo Xie from his previous life. This was the charisma of someone who'd look askance at the world, and would look down on all creation.

It was the same then.

It was the same now.

Dugu Xiao Yi looked at Jun Mo Xie, and couldn't make it out properly...

Jun Mo Xie had seldom gone to the girls' area after he had beaten the Xiao Family. He had mostly stuck with the men instead. Guan Qing Han could still remain calm, but Dugu Xiao Yi couldn't contain herself. So, she'd regularly run to see Jun Mo Xie. But, her efforts didn't produce any results...

It was because Jun Mo Xie had been truly disappearing during these days. He didn't spend much time outside. Instead, the Young Master spent most of it inside the Hong Jun Pagoda, and would focus of his efforts to promote his cultivation.

[The clenched fist is the greatest argument in this world.]

Jun Mo Xie wanted to replace the sword which Jun Wu Yi had used with one of the nine divine swords he had forged. But, Jun Wu Yi didn't agree to it. He said that the sword he was currently

using was fine, and he was satisfied with it. But, he was mainly attached to that sword because this was the weapon he had used to defeat Xiao Han.

That sword had cleansed the greatest shame of Jun Wu Yi's life. So, he would treasure it even it was merely a scrap of iron. Moreover, hadn't this sword also been forged with Jun Mo Xie's "turning iron into wonderful gold" technique? Its quality may not have been as good as the nine swords Jun Mo Xie had forged later, but it was still an extremely rare and divine weapon in the eyes of the mortal world.

Jun Mo Xie understood this feeling very well. So, he didn't insist further.

Moreover, the quality of the weapon wasn't always the final parameter. After all, it was also important to find the perfect man for the sword. A man and a sword which suit each other well had the potential to take their abilities to great heights.

Jun Wu Yi wasn't the only one who was like that. The Young Master also nourished his divine weapon — the "Blood of Yellow Flame". Men have souls, and swords have spirits. And, things could only work in perfect sync if the two had a deep connection.

Jun Mo Xie wasn't aware of any sword spirits or their legends. But, he also believed that divine weapons which could cleave iron like it was clay must have some spirits within them.

Perhaps it depended on the swordsmen's psychology... For instance... A swordsman mustn't deserve to hold a sword if he didn't feel any connection to it... even if it were made of the best metals!

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie would use that "golden method" to tune his mind's reaction to the sword's movements. He would also try to experience and understand the sword. After all, that sword was the only companion which would never betray him.

People could change, and people could betray. But, the sword would never do it; never!

It could only accompany its master forever... until the sword broke, or the man died!

Jun Mo Xie had even felt his sword tremble once they had reached close to the Tian Xiang City. It was because it had sensed ruthless and bloody events lying ahead. In fact, it seemed as if it thirsted for slaughter.

That kind of faint murderous intention had also triggered Jun Mo Xie's murderous aura. And, his aura had also started to become denser as his sword's intention became stronger. His face had become increasingly still. His expression had become increasingly demonic, while his heart had started to beat more violently.

The men and horses circled a mountain.

Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi gazed at the small mountain in unison.

It was that same mountain by chance...

This was where Jun Mo Xie had slaughtered the Blood Sword Hall to loot the crossbows. But, he now knew that his actions hadn't been unjust. After all, the Blood Sword Hall had been the Jun Family's enemy this entire time.

[Even their deaths can't absolve their crimes!]

The road ahead seemed empty. However, Tian Xang City's walls could be faintly seen in the moonlight if one were to raise their head and look.

Jun Mo Xie's narrowed eyes lit up with sharp flashes of light. It was like a sleeping God of Death had suddenly opened his eyes and his large-malevolent mouth. His murderous aura rose with an explosion, and surged forth in a tyrannical manner.

The God of Death had opened his eyes. The King of Hell looked,

and the King of Evil focused!

[This journey has been long, but I will finally see who has been creating this chaos and gossip in Tian Xiang City!]

Jun Mo Xie's sword half-drew itself out of the scabbard with a loud screech after it sensed his murderous aura. It glistened brightly and clearly in the light; it looked very threatening. It appeared as if those bright clouds that were tinged with sunset had suddenly descending onto the world. Or... as if the ruler of heaven and earth had suddenly opened his cold and murderous eyes!

The ruler looked down on the common people as he overlooked the whole world. It seemed that he would confront the upcoming tides of chaos, and he would show no quarter as he prepared to slaughter in a madden frenzy.

This murderous aura pierced straight into Tian Xiang.

The men around Jun Mo Xie felt the arrival of a terrible, awe-inspiring, and frightening power beside them. It took them a moment to realize what had come to happen. However, they discovered that Jun Mo Xie had already left their side by then. In fact, he had walked thirty meters ahead...

Moreover, these iron-blooded soldiers... these veterans of hundreds of wars were finding it hard to endure Jun Mo Xie's aura at this moment...

Even the profoundly strong Mei Xue Yan opened her eyes flabbergasted. She then looked at that man's sword, and frowned. The others wouldn't have thought much of it. But, she could sense that the sword was every bit as powerful and awe-inspiring as the man who wielded it. [This man and his sword can make for two very formidable opponents. And, the two of them could easily pose a huge threat to me when combined!]

[How can this be? That is only a sword; and nothing more! It may be unique in its quality, and it may be unrivalled in its sharpness.

But, it's still an inanimate object! So, why is it giving me such a strange feeling?! In fact... that sword seems more dangerous than Jun Mo Xie...]

The army set up camp fifteen kilometers away from Tian Xiang City. This was a custom. The army mustn't enter the Imperial City at once after it had returned triumphant. They would receive their orders, and the high-ranking generals would enter the city first. The rest of the army would only be allowed to return to their barracks later.

Jun Mo Xie moved to the front of the army at once.

They heard a loud screech. This strange sound had sourced from the flagpole of the carriage beside them. The flag was hoisted to flutter in the wind as a result. However, there was a whooshing sound after that, and the flagpole suddenly sprouted half as many more. In fact, it seemed as if a sharp sword had pierced the heavens.

This was a very strange thing. So, it was obvious that the men who saw it were left dumbstruck. But, no one dared to ask why when they sensed that restrained but tyrannical aura that was emanating from Jun Mo Xie.

It seemed like Jun Mo Xie was a volcano which had remained dormant for thousands of years. However, this volcano was about to erupt soon...

Suddenly, a loud bugle sounded inside Tian Xiang City. The drawbridge fell down, and a group of riders suddenly rode out with a thunderous sound. Two huge banners were also dropped down from the walls on either side of the gate.

On the left marked — The divine power of the Blood General.

On the right marked — Victorious from the Southern Heaven City.

Then, an ordered troop of men came out following the first group

of riders. This was the official ceremonial honors to receive a triumphant general.

The first group of riders drew closer with a thunderous sound. However, they didn't decrease their speed. In fact, they rode with increasing swiftness. But, Jun Wu Yi couldn't help but smile at the sight of the man in front.

[It has been a long time since we've met, Dugu Wu Di!]

Jun Wu Yi knew that this was a suicide mission when he had gone to war. But, he had returned hale and healthy, and was finally meeting his friend after a long time. So, he smiled and moved forward to meet him. But then, he noticed that something was wrong. He couldn't help but be stunned by this realization, and was forced to rein his horse.

He saw that the Dugu Family's General Dugu Wu Di was riding forth with his two large sons and nephews. In fact, one could see that General Dugu's hedgehog-quills-like beard was quivering like a young dragon's as they got closer. His eyes were opened wide like round bells, and it seemed as if he could shoot fire out of them. It seemed like the horses won't stop until the man had arrived. However, this man suddenly gave a loud roar at this time...

"Dugu Chong, Dugu Shang, Dugu Qian — come the fu*k out you three bastards!" his voice shook everything like thunder, "And, Dugu Xiao Yi... you come out quickly too! Aaaargh! You've angered me as well!"

Listening to this roar was enough to tell that General Dugu was extremely mad. In fact, it was evident that he was unable to restrain his rage!

Dugu Chong, Dugu Shang, Dugu Qian — the three members of the Dugu Family's, "Heroes and Legends Bravely Rushing Forward," felt like their souls had flown away in fear after they listened to Dugu Wu Di's loud roar.

The three brothers had calculated their actions beforehand, and were happy with it. They had thought that they would enter the city, receive their orders, and would then flee to the western front to seek shelter under their fathers and uncles. They obviously knew that they couldn't return home. After all, their skin would be flayed in case they did...

But, they hadn't expected that Dugu Wu Di would come forth to catch them outside. And, that too with such speed...

The three looked at each other in dismay for a moment, and started to tremble when they saw the terror in the others' eyes. So, they dejectedly came out after dilly-dallying for a while. They had obviously realized that hiding wouldn't be good for their cause. However, they resembled defeated troops, and were emanating an aura of defeat on their personas...

"I'll deal with you three wretched disgraces!" Dugu Wu Di's eyes were opened wide as he panted hoarsely and called out. He raised his horsewhip, "I had sent you three to watch over your little sister, your sister, right?! Huh? Are the three of you just good for looking like giant bears on a battle field...? Damn it! Why don't you eat hot shit?! You don't like living? Why don't you go to hell then? My Dugu Family would be well if it rids itself of you good-for-nothing losers!"

There was no nonsense; only a crack of the horsewhip! However, the three burly youngsters stood there motionless. In fact, they even winked and pulled faces at each other. [We foresaw that we would be whipped. So, we wore armor under our clothes. Anyway, everything will be fine as long as he doesn't tell us by looking at our faces... Hehe...]

"Dugu Xiao Yi? Why haven't you come out, you filthy little girl? You can hide for a while, but can you hide forever? Come out quickly, and face me!" Dugu Wu Di cracked his whip twice in front of the crowd. He then threw it aside, and screamed like a black bear.

The ceremonial guards had also arrived by that time. In fact, their front was almost upon Dugu Wu Di.

"Daddy... this daughter has missed you a lot..." Dugu Xiao Yi slowly walked out from the army. In fact, each step she took... was unusually slow.

"You... you..." General Dugu shot one glance at her. Then, everything went dark before his eyes, and he fell to the ground...

Chapter 445: You'll Be A Grandpa...

Dugu Wu Di's eyes opened wide as he became stupefied. He then raised his trembling finger, "You, you, you..." he couldn't even say half-a-word more for a long while. Suddenly, there was the sound of something falling as he tumbled down with a "thump," and lay sprawled on his back. He was in a pitiful position, but he still strained his neck and turned his eyes to look at his daughter. However, he couldn't believe it even after getting an eyeful of her.

Jun Mo Xie was also left shocked at the sight of it. In fact, his eyes had ferociously popped outwards.

[What's this? What's happening here?]

As for Dugu Chong, Dugu Shang and Dugu Qian... the eyes of the three brothers had also nearly popped out of their sockets.

They saw Dugu Xiao Yi holding her belly as she walked in a careful manner. Her body looked very bloated. This was the figure of a pregnant woman who had suffered a lot of hardships, and was nearing her time of labor. In fact, it seemed like she wouldn't even be able to see her toes if she looked down.

[This girl's body was slender until yesterday. In fact, she would've been blown away with a gust of wind. So, how come she has such a big belly now? This is too great a speed. Anyway, her belly wouldn't have become so big even if she had become pregnant in October and was on the eve of childbirth! Not to mention that we didn't even do it. Anyway, her belly wouldn't have become so big this fast even if we had done it, right? This little girl is too bold...]

Jun Mo Xie didn't know whether to laugh or cry for a moment.

[It turns out that this girl has resorted to this final trick now!]

Jun Mo Xie laughed, but he also suddenly felt a bit touched.

This girl's move was undoubtedly willful and troublesome. But, it

also showed that she truly and wholeheartedly loved Jun Mo Xie. In fact, it seemed that her affection had reached a point where the situation didn't matter to her!

[I don't care what the cost is! I love Jun Mo Xie! And, I want to marry Jun Mo Xie!]

Her ways of handling matters was very similar to that of the Young Master's. The Young Master would also do what he wished. He would never care about what the others would think or say. The little girl had also ignored everything else out of her love for him. The two of them weren't mirror images, but they had a lot of similarities...

Therefore, one could imagine what that little girl must've had to bear when she decided to come out like this in front of the huge army at the gates of Tian Xiang City. After all, she was the only girl in the third generation of a family as influential as the Dugu Family! What would happen to her reputation? The little girl wasn't foolish; nor was it that she didn't know the consequences. But, she had still done it without any hesitation.

She was acting willfully, but this also showed her determination to follow the Young Master even though he'd have to face the criticisms of Tian Xiang. This act was ridiculous, but it said to Jun Mo Xie — I will accompany you... no matter how much I have to suffer for it. You won't be alone. You will never be alone!

Because you will always have me!

The corners of Jun Mo Xie's callous mouth suddenly became soft. His heart had been moved by the acts of that silly and naïve Dugu Xiao Yi.

The affections of that little girl were this strong... how else could one regard her?

"Xiao Yi, you, you, you... I, I, I... It's a sin! It's a sin... I will hammer it! Where's the..." Dugu Wu Di hit his head with a "Slam!"

The magnificent general's eyes and nose had started to run. He shouted out, yet no one answered. He shouted again, but it didn't work.

"Daddy... Don't be like this!" Dugu Xiao Yi became anxious, and forgot that she was supposed to be 'pregnant'. She quickly rushed towards her father without thinking. She obviously hadn't had much practice with her props. So, it was quite likely that the stuffing would fall out if she was to try and cover distances at a running speed.

"Stop! You, you... don't move... you foolish girl... you'll cause a disaster..." Dugu Wu Di turned pale with fright, and jumped up. He wasn't even able to grieve properly, and was left to extend his arms to stop her instead. He then spoke nervously, "...don't... don't move... the fetus will be in trouble! Aaaaa...."

Dugu Xiao Yi quickly came to herself, and realized the condition she was supposedly in. She obviously couldn't run or jump in this condition. So, she stopped her dash. And, her hands cautiously reached for her belly in fear that the stuffing had come out. Then, she faced upwards and walked awkwardly like a penguin as she lovingly said, "Don't get angry, Daddy... Your daughter is unworthy... But, I'll be a mamma... And, you'll be a grandpa... you should be happy... not mad..."

"I'm not angry... I'm not angry... I should be happy... I should be happy... ah..." Dugu Wu Di hoarsely gasped for air. However, his beady eyes were blue with anger. And, his heart was hammering in his chest as he resisted bursting with fury. Then, he used his finger to poke at his daughter's belly; some of it was with malice, while some of it was in excitement, "Who?"

General Dugu had fathered many children. So, he had seen women carrying children. Therefore, it was unusual that he was fooled so easily. After all, the little girl had left home only a few months ago. Therefore, his daughter's body shouldn't have gotten so big this early even if she was pregnant. However, the first

impression of his daughter's act was so strong that he simply ignored this elementary fact.

"Hic? What... who?" Dugu Xiao Yi was stunned. Her eyes turned as round as saucers as she asked.

"..." Dugu Wu Di nearly vomited blood. He trembled as he looked at Dugu Xiao Yi. The man nearly sobbed blood and burst his liver as he roared, "I'm asking... whose child is it?!"

"Whose...? Oh... this..." Dugu Xiao Yi bashfully hung her head, and replied in a low voice, "Who else could it be... Brother Mo Xie..."

"Ah... ah... ah..." Dugu Wu Di panted with anger. He had been prepared, but seeing his treasured daughter appear in front of him with that big belly had suddenly made the general lose himself. He clenched his teeth and stamped his feet. He then faced upwards and roared, "Jun-Mo-Xie! I will castrate you..."

Jun Mo Xie stood amidst the troops. However, his soul was left to tremble when he heard this.

[Huh? Castrate me? On what basis...? Your daughter drugged me, and left me to hover between life and death. Yet, you want to castrate me...? Isn't this injustice...?]

"What are you saying, Daddy?" Dugu Xiao Yi stamped her feet, and her face reddened. Her small hands covered her ears as she summoned her courage to open her mouth. She hadn't experienced the intimacy of a relation between a man and woman, but she understood what castration meant. So, she obviously wasn't happy about it.

"Don't stamp your foot... don't stamp your foot..." Dugu Wu Di jumped up with urgency. He madly scratched his head, "A, a, a... My dearest, your body supports two lives... So, it won't be able to handle big movements... Please be careful..."

The ceremonial guards finally rushed up panting at this time.

They turned to Jun Wu Yi and waved a marquee, "Imperial Edict! Jun Wu Yi will receive Imperial Edict!"

"I'll take your grandma's mouth!" Dugu Wu Di stamped his feet. He had a belly full of anger, but nowhere to vent it. And, that's when he heard the court eunuch speak. Dugu Wu Di's anger had covered his ears like heavy clouds shroud a mountain top with mist. So, he wasn't able to hear what the Eunuch had proclaimed. He suddenly erupted like a volcano, kicked out, and cursed, "Curse your family to the eighteenth generation. Screw your grandma's thighs! Can't you see I'm busy? I'll tear your grandma's mouth right up to her ass till she calls me uncle!"

The court eunuch heard these curses as he flipped ten times in the sky like a roasting fish. Then, his body made a squishy sound as he fell to the ground. He gave out a squeak, and became unconscious immediately-after.

The Imperial Edict he had held wasn't very fortunate either, and fell into a puddle with a splash. The water obviously didn't care whether it was an Imperial Edict or not. It drenched it with a murmur, and left the writing on it to become hazy.

Everyone's eyeballs hopped in disorder.

No one had ever seen anyone beat an Imperial Envoy... not since antiquity! Moreover, Dugu Wu Di had cursed so bizarrely and fluently that they turned their heads several times in order to understand the curses he had hurled.

This Imperial Envoy had been very unlucky. After all, the reward being bestowed upon Jun WU Yi wasn't small. So, it could be considered that Jun Wu Yi would've rewarded him as well. In fact, he had been dreaming of getting rich. But, how could he have expected to be kicked on the face out of the blue? Therefore, he was still confused with regard to the turn of events when he lost consciousness. In fact, he didn't even know what offence he had committed...

Jun Wu Yi had looked-on when the Imperial Envoy was coming over. He was dressed in his proper general's attire. After all, it was necessary for him to be prepared to receive this decree in style. However, Jun Wu Yi then saw that the Imperial Envoy was suddenly kicked-away. He had only heard the envoy speak, "Jun Wu Yi will receive an Imperial Edict... ack..." The Third Master Jun stared blankly at Dugu Wu Di for a long while at first. Then, he sighed and spoke-up, "Elder Brother Dugu, you've charged into disaster with this..."

"I charged into disaster? Brother Wu Yi... ah, ah, ah... this, this guy isn't good!" Dugu Wu Di didn't get what Jun Wu Yi had said. So, he glared and shouted, "Your nephew attacked and raped... I can never stand him! Where's that bastard Jun Mo Xie? Come to me! Show yourself and die by my hands!"

There was a clatter of hooves, and Young Master Jun moved out of the crowd atop his horse. His lips were red, his teeth were white, and his facial features looked handsome and elegant. His graceful bearing made him look extremely cultured.

"Jun Mo Xie! You little bastard! Argh, argh..." Dugu Wu Di's eyes reddened as he pounced. But, Jun Mo Xie evaded with a "whooshing" sound, and stood on top of a flagpole twice or thrice his size. Then, he jumped down the flagpole with a brushing sound, and moved to the top of a dozens of feet tall flagpole with another brushing sound. He then spoke, "You... what are you doing? I have nothing to do with this matter! You check again and speak! You're going crazy. But, at least find a proper target to get mad at!"

The flagpole was too high. General Dugu's skillsets were surely good, but he couldn't jump that high. And, the flexible flagpole wouldn't have been able to support his big and burly body if he had jumped on top of it. So, he could only stand under the flagpole and become angry upon hearing Jun Mo Xie's remarks, "What?! You have nothing to do with it? Who else would? Fu*k, I should

understand this matter better? You've ruined my daughter's innocence, and you're not even ready to admit it! And, I should understand better?"

Dugu Wu Di trebled with rage. So, grabbed Jun Mo Xie's flagpole with his hands, and shook it violently. Consequently, Jun Mo Xie was left to whirl around like a trapeze artist atop that pole...

Chapter 446: Trouble Arrives

General Dugu was furious, but he was still somewhat in his sense. Otherwise, breaking the staff with his amazing strength wouldn't have been out of the ordinary...

Dugu Wu Di's words were very fierce. But, even his own heart hadn't reconciled with them for the sake of his daughter's lifetime of happiness...

"Daddy!" Dugu Xiao Yi wiped her tears and jumped, "Why are you making such a scene? Your daughter... I... I'm ashamed to see this... I don't want to live... boo hoo..."

Dugu Wu Di jumped scared, and hastily let go off the flagpole. His face suddenly became sullen and nervous, "Dear... Xiao Yi... Don't fidget... You'll injure my grandchild... you shouldn't get angry you know..."

Dugu Xiao Yi face had reddened since her father was still twisting at the pole, and wasn't ready to let go. She then said angrily, "You still haven't let him down... What will you do if he falls from such height and gets hurt...?"

Dugu Wu Di rolled his eyes. He thought... [This brat is at the first level of the Sky Xuan Realm. And, he's far more powerful in comparison. So, how can he fall and get injured?] However, he could only speak-up in a hateful manner, "Let him drop and break! You come home with me instead!"

However, General Dugu knew the ways of the world. He knew about this Jun bastard's strength as well. So, he was aware that couldn't win against him on his own. In fact, even the entire Dugu Family couldn't win against his lone strength. After all, this youngster had managed to stand his own against a level four Spirit Xuan expert! However, the Jun brat had climbed onto that pole instead of fronting off against him. This obviously meant that he was giving face to General Dugu. However, General Dugu still

couldn't help his anger since the thought of her daughter being pregnant with his child wouldn't leave his mind. So, he decided that it was better to leave this matter until they had returned home...

But, General Dugu suddenly had a severe head-ache when he imagined the dangerous situation he'd have to face once he'd return home.

His mind was sent into a whirl at this thought. He then pointed with his horsewhip and said, "I'm still not happy! Pick up that palanquin and bring it to me! Do it quickly!" This was the sedan chair that Imperial Envoy had arrived riding-on to make the announcement. Dugu Wu Di had obviously decided to commandeer it as if it was his natural right to...

Jun Mo Xie quickly took the opportunity to slip down the flagpole. He then wiped his cold sweat. [The Dugu Family is full of annoying people! All of them are too bold! What can I say which wouldn't leave Dugu Wu Di embarrassed after Dugu Xiao Yi's antics? That Dugu Xiao Yi has stretched the matters to such extremes. So, how can I dilly-dally and show false bravado as a man?]

[I'll have to marry whether I like it or not. That's the way these matters stand right now. Otherwise, the relations between the Jun and the Dugu Family will break forever. And, the Dugu Family would either have to be eliminated entirely... or this animosity would continue throughout the ages...]

It had to be said that the little girl had put-on this show with good intentions in her heart. But, it had still delivered extremely grave results. The two families had been left without a way out. In fact, there was no way to mediate this situation now! It may be found that the pregnancy was fake once she had returned home. However, so many people had seen this act... So, even fake had become the truth by now...

Dugu Xiao Yi had nerves of steel. But, Jun Mo Xie was no lesser in that regard. [Fu*k it! Can't I take more than one wife? Don't I still have that advantage? This little girl is younger than me, but she's still a refreshing beauty. Moreover, she's deeply devoted to me. Didn't she say that she can't lose me?]

[I will make her my mistress!] Jun Mo Xie snorted in a sinister manner. He looked at whatever mysterious object Dugu Xiao Yi had propped her belly with malicious intentions. He then fiercely thought... [I'll make that belly big for real one of these days!]

"Huh? What are you guys doing over there?" Dugu Wu Di turned his head, and discovered that the people who had come carrying the palanquin were dressed up in the clothes of royal servants. He quickly came to himself, and said, "Oh... oh... oh... you've come to issue a decree, right? But, you won't mind if I use this palanquin, would you?"

"..." Everyone looked at each other in dismay. A dark line had formed on their foreheads. [Our leader was struck unconscious by you while he was proclaiming the decree. And, you want his palanquin too now...?]

"Arh!" Dugu Wu Di had finally realized what he had done. So, he rushed to the Imperial Envoy, and crouched over his unconscious body. He couldn't help but frown as he said, "This isn't good... this General had only swept him aside. How could this happen to him...?"

However, everyone still remained silent. [You're the one who caused this. And, you're asking others about this now? You swept him aside...? Who in Tian Xiang can bear being 'swept aside' by you?]

"Well, let it be. It doesn't matter. Third Master Jun, you can ask the Emperor about your reward on your way back anyway. Don't forget to take that reward on your way back home. I reckon that your reward would be quite something... Oh, and remember to call

me out for a drink later. He will drink my family's special golden wine! I think I should go and talk this matter out with my old man. And, you should also explain things to your old man. Then, we'll let those two sort this matter out... Well, that's great. This is how we'll go about it."

Dugu Wu Di spoke this part in a very casual manner, and gently ushered his daughter into the palanquin after. He then waved his whip above his head, and fiercely turned to look at Jun Mo Xie, "I'll look for you to settle our debts, you brat! And, don't forget to send over some wine jars when you get home! Don't you dare go making eyes! Move!" He gave a kick to the sides of his huge horse. It neighed in response, and went away like the wind.

[He's taking himself to be my father-in-law now...?]

Everyone looked at each other in dismay. They knew the trouble they could get into with these people if they didn't act tactfully. So, they were accustomed to keeping a straight face even at such strange events. They smiled and waved their hands, and made their way back to the city with the imperial servants. However, they hadn't even reached the city's gates when they suddenly heard chaotic and ceaseless sounds of cursing from inside. Then, a group of properly dressed-up scholars came rushing out. The face of each one was full of hatred, and their eyes were reeking of disdain. They were being led by a few people; these were the ones whom Jun Mo Xie had previously insulted in public.

Jun Mo Xie's pupils dilated at this sight, and his expression became serious. Then, a monstrous murderous aura rose from his body!

Jun Mo Xie looked around, and noticed that there weren't even a few hundred people beside him. Jun Wu Yi was there; so were the Young Masters of other big families and their guards. Guan Qing Han's carriage was also there; Mei Xue Yan and Mei Qian Qian were in the carriage as well. However, the warriors of the Dugu Family had already entered the city with Dugu Wu Di.

The other Young Masters looked at the Young Master Jun at this point, and started to take joy in his calamity. [You're so awe-inspiring. But, even you may not be able to resist the curses of everyone in the world. We'd like to see how this kills you Jun Mo Xie... he he...]

"Jun Mo Xie, you ill-behaved low life! You've even dared to return to Tian Xiang!" the speaker had a tall stature. He was moving slowly and gently like a scholar. However, his face was full of disdain. It was the same scholar Jun Mo Xie had seen in the festival — Han Zhi Dong.

Jun Mo Xie had disrupted the Scholarly Festival at that time when his antics. Moreover, he had humiliated the head scholars, and numerous other upcoming and talented scholars. Jun Mo Xie had also beaten each one of these scholars. So, none of them had gotten the opportunity to become imperial officials.

This meant that Jun Mo Xie had obstructed their clear path to the top! And, it had seemed that they would never get such a good chance ever again. These talented scholarly disciples had been dreaming of an official's status their entire lives. So, how could they endure the result?

[What came of those ten years of bitter hardships? What came of those extremely exhausting studies over so many years?]

[We studied so much to sit with princes and emperors!]

[But, we haven't been able to accomplish anything because of this rotten Jun Mo Xie!]

[He's guilty of many crimes! He's guilty beyond redemption!]

However, Jun Mo Xie had gotten himself involved in a world-shocking and rare sex*ual scandal. So, how could these scholars not take this chance to hit him when he was down? [Jun Mo Xie has to pay the ultimate price! You may be brazen, Jun Mo Xie. But, that mistress of yours can't have such thick skin! You won't die

from getting cursed?! But, you will surely drown in spit of the common people!]

Therefore, those scholars gave their all to instigate the rumors and facts alike! Everyone had swarmed to the city's gates at this time. [You wish to enter the city? Get lost! You'll have to enter through our spit! We've heard that unchaste sister-in-law of his is also amongst them; humph! She also shouldn't be shy enough to die so soon!]

It could be said that this plan of those scholars was very malicious! There's an old saying, 'The ones who slaughter dogs to uphold the law will never be able to uphold the scholarly wisdom'? However, these scholarly students were too upset. So, they had become even more rogue than hoodlums!

One isn't afraid of playing rogue after they've done it once. And, that's because they aren't afraid of the rogue's culture anymore. That's the truth...

Dugu Wu Di had noticed this parade when he was going in. But, he had decided to let Jun Mo Xie suffer, and wouldn't help out. After all, his "maiden" daughter was 'pregnant'. So, he wouldn't have been able to bear the repercussion if he provoked any more trouble. Also, there were two the old men who were anxiously waiting to hold their great grandchild...

Therefore, General Dugu pretended not to see, and slipped away.

"Do I even have the honor to return? Why should I feel ashamed to return? I obviously have enough honor to return! I've been victorious in battle! I have the greatest honor in the world to return! So, why...? Do you think otherwise?!"

However, Jun Mo Xie remained calm and collected, and prevented Jun Wu Yi from getting involved by speaking up first. After all, those people had dared to gather there. So, that obviously meant that they didn't fear the Blood General. This also indicated that they might have someone powerful behind them. Therefore,

it may not be useful even if Jun Wu Yi got involved. In fact, he might end-up provoking more curses from them. And, it could even have turned into an ocean and drowned everyone...

Only an extreme method would work at this time. Only an extremely bloody method could suppress this. In fact, the resolution method of this matter would have to set such a bloody precedent that people would have to fear even coughing on this matter aloud. This was the only way this matter could be suppressed in a through manner now...

[Rumors? Hupmh!] Jun Mo Xie gave a callous laugh inside. He simply couldn't understand their actions. [Can rumors ever be more terrifying than a blade? So what if the whole world condemns me? Do you think you can kill me with this? I think that dying under the pressure of rumors is the... ways of a coward!]

[You will confront me with these rumors. And, I will kill until no one has the guts to speak-up about this anymore!]

[I'll kill anyone who talks! Anyway, how many people are brave in the face of death?! I'll even slaughter everyone if I need to!]

"You're extremely shameless, Jun Mo Xie! You even dare to talk like this...? You and your dirty sister-in-law... you're a shameless and adulterous couple! Everyone has a right to punish you severely!"

These words were very sharp and cold. Moreover, these unpleasant words could be heard very clearly by Guan Qing Han inside the carriage. She couldn't help but pale even though she had been preparing her heart for this. She couldn't prevent her eyes from being filled with despair and grief after she listened to the clamorous and heaven-shaking accusations from outside.

She had been expecting such a scene. But, Guan Qing Han came to face this in real life now... And, she realized that she... couldn't bear it...

Chapter 447: I'll Give You Two Choices

Mei Xue Yan was sitting beside Guan Qing Han; the corners of her mouth twitched for no reason. She didn't know why, but she felt anger rising within her. The 'young woman' felt a sudden desire to rush out of the carriage and help. In fact, she felt like stamping on those ants until they had been turned into ground meat.

[What is thing? These people would get blown away by a breath. But, they still dare to do this in front of the strongest man of his generation? Has this world become so unrecognizable to me?]

The person who had spoken that last sentence was another scholarly disciple. He had also been there at the Scholar's Festival. His name was Qin Qiu Shi. His face was cold and full of vitality; his whole frame reeked of strength derived from this self-styled moral character.

"Ah, I remember you. You're called Qin Qiu Shi, right? Ah, doesn't your name mean that you diligently seek to be shit...? It's probably a good name. But, it leaves me confused whether you want to be 'shit' or 'serve as an official'. Your name doesn't make its meaning very obvious..."

Jun Mo Xie smiled as he looked at him and spoke this. His eyes were cold as ice, "I only wish to ask you this — you've leveled these allegations against me. But, where have they come from? What's the basis for these?"

"Where have these come from? What's the basis for these? Jun Mo Xie, you still think that it's still not clear at such an important point? The debauchery you and your sister-in-law have committed is a despicable matter; it is devoid of any shame! You two make for an adulterous couple! But, you still think that you can conceal this from the world? What are you playing innocent for? You may be the grandson of this country's great general. You may even be the

heir to a noble family. But, you can't hide your innate shamelessness!" Qin Qiu Shi's face paled with anger as he pointed his finger and rained curses.

"Ah, good... You're filled with righteous indignation! That's very good! Do you have anything else to add?" Jun Mo Xie picked his ears.

"Jun Mo Xie! Are you telling us that Elder Brother's words aren't enough to make you feel ashamed?" Another scholar came forth. He looked at Jun Mo Xie with resentment, "You're an offspring of generals. You will become a Noble later. You live a life of luxury and splendor, and you will receive the vast kindness of the Emperor. It could be said that you're already standing at the peak of Tian Xiang. But, you still did such a deed while not knowing any sense of honor? You've ruined my Tian Xiang's reputation! Do you know that our Tian Xiang has become a laughing stock for the neighboring nations? You would've killed yourself in shame long ago if you had any conscience! But, you've instead appeared at Tian Xiang City's gate in a just and honorable manner! You're acting innocent after all this? You're extremely shameless! Aren't you capable of sensing any shame, Jun Mo Xie?!"

This was another 'talented' scholar named Yan Feng. He was also a known face.

Jun Mo Xie finally came to understand the matter.

[It seems that the 'Wenxing Heavenly Literature Institute' wants to fight me to the death. Let me give you guys another lesson in grief if that's the case!]

These words instigated the huge crowds that stood behind, and they started to chant loudly, "Adulterous couple! Even death can't wipe your crimes! Go to hell!"

"So, I was guilty of such crimes?!" Jun Mo Xie laughed gleefully and asked Yan Feng, "Yan Feng, I 'may' or 'may not' have any sense of shame. But, what does it have to do with you? Why do you stand

forth?"

"Scoundrels and adulterous couples should be punished severely. So, why can't I stand forth? I can't compare with you in terms of power or martial strength. But, our institute stands to embody a righteous environment! Shameless scoundrels like you must be shamed! We must make the world pure and peaceful again!" Yan Feng shouted loudly. His face was full of self-righteousness.

"That's very well said! We may have nothing, but we'll still have a righteous environment! It's important that we keep the world pure and peaceful!" that group of scholars cheered loudly. They were so emotionally stirred that their faces had reddened.

Jun Mo Xie took pity on them as he watched the atmosphere become increasingly ardent. This was because he could feel an extremely tyrannical aura rising within his heart.

"A very righteous environment... ha ha ha..." Jun Mo Xie suddenly started to laugh. "A good environment of righteousness... or what you call 'a good and righteous' is the one where you place your morality at the top and criticize others' ethics, right? So, your so-called 'righteous environment' is supposed to control other people's emotions? Your 'righteous environment' dictates that the only match made by your parents' choice is a proper one? Perhaps it dictates that it's alright to force an innocent woman to death?"

The eyes of Han Zhi Dong, Qin Qiu Shi, Yan Feng, and the others they led flashed with a frenetic guilt when they heard the term "innocent woman". Jun Mo Xie looked into their eyes, and understood that these men knew of Guan Qing Han's innocent. She was only a fish in a pond that had been caught in a storm. But, they still wanted to create trouble for her...

Jun Mo Xie's murderous aura powerfully surged once again!

"I know your real aim! You're here because I ruined your scholarly festival and blocked your road to becoming officials. And, you want to take revenge for it now... hehe... I spoke

correctly, didn't I?" Jun Mo Xie's glare was ice cold.

"So what...? Jun Mo Xie, you've become even guiltier after you've mentioned this matter!" these gifted scholars didn't feel ashamed when these words were said. Instead, the 'righteous' Yan Feng continued angrily, "The movement of your lips have blocked the careers of five-thousand gifted scholars! You... you don't have any conscience! We studied extremely hard from sunrise to sunset... with the only desire of helping the nation's people. However, a man who commits such debauchery destroyed the decades' worth of hard work of five-thousand people! And, there will only be a mediocre and simple life for us from now on! You've buried our future prospects! Are you telling me that you still don't deserve any punishment? Doesn't your conscience make you feel ashamed?"

"And, you've committed more evil now! You and your sister-in-law are an adulterous couple. You two fool around, and are replete with vices! In fact, the very stench of it fills the sky! Someone who commits such sins can't live under this heaven! You will face condemnation from the whole world now! And, you must die before you apologize if you have any sense of shame!"

"A strenuous life of studies... for the good of the people... We could've expected that from you guys? From a group of ill-intentioned bookworms...? Could we have expect all that...? You blindly make reprisals, and involve an innocent and weak woman because of your personal grudges. Then, you quickly seek to hound others to death... Is this the quality of your efforts for the sake of this nation's people?" Jun Mo Xie snorted.

"Let me tell you — get your own conscience straight if you seek to help the nation's people! Your hearts are stained. You people would only make corrupt officials; nothing more! It doesn't matter for how many decades such people undertake strenuous studies... You people are pieces of shit even if you study your entire lives!" Jun Mo Xie spewed burning venom as he spoke.

"And, you needn't worry about that 'mediocre life' you would

have to lead! I can point out another avenue of livelihood for you. In fact, this one will cover you in profit, and make your families extremely wealthy!"

He suddenly smiled and said, "I have a friend. His name is Wu — Wu Shan Yun. But, everyone calls him 'the mountain of s*xual references'. He had once said something about people like you. I never understood what he had said. In fact, I thought that it was only random nonsense... But, his words suddenly make sense of me now. He had said, "People who stick their awls without any good reason will never find peace in hearts or future. And, there will come one day when their buttocks will be pulled-open a hundred-times-over for it!"

Jun Mo Xie burst out in laughter, "Therefore, it can be said that your future road is very wide! You only need to shed your skin of morality, and tuck-in your butt-cheeks. And, you'll then be covered in money... It's not a very big market, but each country's nobility is used to keeping a male-slave! They particularly like people who've achieved something in their lives. So, you seasoned and gifted scholars will be a huge deal in the market..."

"Jun Mo Xie! You're insulting us!" many gifted scholars roared, "Only you can have such a dirty mind to think of such things! To disgrace such a refined culture is to be guilty of terrible crimes! You... you are very vulgar!"

"Vulgar...?! Vulgar your grandma! Do you think you're refined? Your methods are dirty with filthy motivations, and you're still calling me 'vulgar'?" Anger suddenly rose in Jun Mo Xie's heart.

"I'm in no mood to discuss the whole truth of the matter at this time. Anyway, I'm sure that you people already know the gist of it. So, you needn't deny it. Moreover, I have no obligation to give you an explanation even if you don't know. You're a bunch of dog-shit in my eyes! You people are scum from head to toe! Scholars...? You're a fu*king joke! You're a bunch that sells their asses; you people look dirty at first sight!"

Thousands of people made a cacophony when they heard this. They shouted and hurled abuses from everywhere. In fact, the vulgarity of those scholars couldn't even be matched by the marketplace merchants. The outrage that Jun Mo Xie had instigated was like a wave of anger which was hard to control.

Guan Qing Han shivered inside the carriage. Her head was hung low, her face was buried deep in her hands, and her shoulders were trembling.

Jun Mo Xie roared, and suddenly stood up on his horse's back, "You feel righteous even when you're implicating the innocent. So, you shouldn't blame me for being vicious and merciless! Could you even blame me for matching your standards?"

Jun Mo Xie moved his aura through his dantian after he finished speaking. Then, he shouted, "Bring it up!"

Suddenly, there was a wave amongst the crowd, and it divided them into two. A group of burly men walked through the crowd like huge sailboats through the sea. These were members of Jun Mo Xie's Heaven Destroyer Team who he had sent to assist Baili Luo Yun in his assassinations. They had arrived several days ago. They had quietly entered the Tian Xiang City, and were attentively gauging the city's activities on Jun Mo Xie's orders.

They were carrying three women. These women had delicate figures, and their facial features were graceful as well. However, their faces were overrun with fear. Some men were pulling-along big wolf-dogs, while some others were dragging big and white pigs.

The faces of Yan Feng, Qin Qiu Shi, and Han Zhi Dong turned a miserable color as the three of them blurted out, "My dear...!"

It turned out that those three women were their wives.

"I don't want to waste any effort in telling you the truth. You don't have the qualifications for it; nor do you deserve it! And, I won't discuss what a 'righteous environment' is since you don't

think me fit to discuss it. So, I'll only give you two choices."

Jun Mo Xie towered in arrogance. The corners of his mouth were curled in a cruel smile. He resembled an eagle looking down on a nest of white rabbits. His expression and posture belied his rogue and uncontrolled lawlessness. In fact, he was brimming with untamed cruelty.

"The first one..." Jun Mo Xie raised his finger, "Each one of you will kneel down and solemnly apologize to me. And then, I'll give each one of you a banner. You will hold them up as you pave the path for my entry. And, you'll shout this as I make my way — 'The Third Young Master is great! The Third Young Master Jun is noble, and the best! We wholeheartedly welcome Third Young Master Jun to the Tian Xiang City!' You will also add your names to these chants as you yell them out!"

Chapter 448: Cruel Methods

"You are dreaming!" The three scholars snorted. They had obviously anticipated that Jun Mo Xie would put forward some conditions since he had grabbed those women. However, they had never expected such whimsical conditions. How could that be possible?

[They are our wives. But, they still aren't anything more than ornaments of convenience...]

"Don't worry. You have a second option..." Jun Mo Xie raised a second finger, and lowered his voice, "These three women are your wives, and I can't put them to any use at present. But let me assure you one thing — You won't want them once they've spent one day with these pigs and dogs. So, I will then sell them to the cheapest and filthiest brothels in Tian Xiang! After all, you may not wish to use them again for their bad name, but do you think that the others would mind? Do you think you will like that?

"And, please don't doubt that I can do it. After all, I have the means to invite these ladies here. So, it also means that I have enough capability to accomplish everything else that I've stated. And, you needn't be worried about the other matter either. You see... the truth is that this Young Master has a full packet of aphrodisiac in his hands. And, this aphrodisiac works regardless of whether it's a dog or a hog; it can induce full vitality in them!"

"You're evil, Jun Mo Xie! You're doing a very heartless thing! Those three are innocent! The entire world is looking at you! And, you still dare to do this?!" The three scholars had gone deathly pale. In fact, they didn't have any color left to their appearance...

"Why can't I? Why wouldn't I? You're using such despicable means to target an innocent woman. So, why can't this Young Master do the same? Don't I know that they're innocent? Doesn't this remind you of something? After all, they are guilty of being

your wives even if they innocent! And, you're a group of men who know a woman is innocent, but you're still using such shameless strategies against her! The world is looking at me. But, do you think that they aren't looking at you?!"

Jun Mo Xie taunted and sneered, "Do you want to try it?"

Qin Qiu Shi didn't wish to abandon his endeavor half way. But, his prospects would be ruined if the others became weak. Moreover, the Jun Family's men seemed fierce, but they were good natured men. Therefore, he didn't believe that Jun Mo Xie would ruthlessly insult innocent women in public. So, he acted tough, and angrily spoke-up, "Jun Mo Xie, you're a shameless lowlife! You're lowly-enough to use innocent women to coerce us! Your Jun Family's name will eternally live-on in infamy if you charge into using our beloved wives!"

Jun Mo Xie replied with an exceptionally cold and cruel laugh, "Isn't that my usual conduct? Isn't my usual behavior a household story? Didn't you know about it? This Young Master is a tyrannical being who doesn't shirk from any crime. You do know this, right?"

"Oh, and then there's the talk of innocence... you even have the guts to talk to me about innocence? Who's more innocent in reality? You start shouting of innocence when it comes to the things that are related to you. In fact, you start shouting about heaven's will, and humanity! But, your strategies become extremely contemptible when it comes to other innocent women. In fact, you become ruthless, and you commit all manners of crimes! So, what moral standing do you have to speak of innocence? Fu*k you! Let me ask you — has your conscience been eaten away by dogs? You stand at the so-called 'height of morality' so that you can needlessly entrap and insult others?"

Yan Feng and Han Zhi Dong hesitated for a long while at the back. They looked around at the crowd, and believed that they had their support. So, they became courageous and shouted in chorus, "We stand for the tranquility of the world, and the purification of

everything under the heavens. Would you dare to do this?"

Jun Mo Xie's glare became dense, and his voice became extremely cold, "Tranquility of this world? Purification of everything under the heavens...? This Young Master will kill you in broad daylight; how about that? I had previously planned to deal with you after a little while. But, I'll come and help you right now since you're so impatient. Wait; let me look for someone to help you undress your pantaloons. Then, I'll give you some amazing medicines. We'll see how you upright gentlemen's minds don't become a mess after that. We'll leave you a crazed state, but we won't give you a way to solve your problem. However, these hogs and dogs have plenty of elderly female relatives. And, they won't let any harm come to you. Do you think that this Young Master won't dare to do it?"

Young Master Jun jumped off the horse, and walked towards them. He lightly used his horsewhip on Qin Qiu Shi's head. Then, he stroked his pale cheek with his whip and asked in a soft voice, "You're upright and honorable gentlemen who have a habit of insulting and trampling on other people. So, let me insult you today, okay? Also, allow me to give you the wonderful taste of a man that being bullied!"

Qin Qiu Shi subconsciously raised his head with the whip's movement. His expression was one of grief and terror. However, he didn't dare to spit even half-a-word. After all, he knew of the Young Master's behavior and past exploits. So, he knew that this man was fully capable of such acts...

The Jun Family's fate would be meaningless to them if they were to be trifled with in this manner. And, that's because they wouldn't be able to see the Jun Family's fate unfold. After all, even mere humiliation was enough to make them lose their will to live...

These men had previously remained unyielding because of a rotten notion — women were like clothes, and men were like the bodies. It wasn't that they hadn't cared about the humiliations Jun Mo Xie had described he would subject their women to. But, this

threat wasn't enough to make them surrender to his conditions. After all, they could always replace their wives in case they had been tainted...

However, it was their turn now. And, it had left their very souls in a genuinely panicky state...

However, they weren't aware that Jun Mo Xie's mind had become gloomy in the face of this scenario. In fact, he had even scolded himself for this miscalculation. After all, he would've never been able to forgive himself if he had done those things to their wives, and had later come to realize that they genuinely hadn't cared about it. Therefore, he instantly changed targets to those people themselves. And, this change in tactics yielded great results...

"Why aren't you speaking now? Weren't you people devoted to righteousness a moment ago? Look at the people behind you — they don't know the truth. But, you people know it well."

Jun Mo Xie smiled mischievously, "It doesn't matter much though. They will also have to pay back if they act thoughtlessly. So, it doesn't matter whether you understand the truth or not. After all, it's meaningless as far as I'm concerned. That's because the outcome will hurt the ones I care about regardless of your reasons or standpoint! And, it won't matter if they're innocent or not if that happens. After all, you will have offended me. And, you will bear the consequences if you offend me!

"I will never spare anyone who offends me! Especially when it comes to hypocrites like yourself! However, those who stand behind you should be glad. After all, I won't implicate their families! But, if you don't do what I want you to do... he he he..." Jun Mo Xie chuckled in a sinister manner, "I have a bad reputation. But, I'll guarantee that it'll be much better than yours. So, let's try it out if you don't believe me. What was it that you had said — the Young Master wouldn't dare; he wouldn't do it...?"

Strange noises emanated from Qin Qiu Shi's throat. His eyes shone brightly in fear as he staggered back to stand between Yan Feng and Han Zhi Dong. Then, the three men trembled, and started to shudder violently. They couldn't even think at this time — forget about daring to fight. Moreover, that previously 'built-up devotion to righteousness' had already been obliterated from their bodies by now...

Jun Mo Xie's conduct was imposing and sinister at this moment. His mannerism was extremely calm, and his words didn't contain any hint of venom. And, this had left them to feel that this youngster would easily do what he had said he would...

He was like a King who had descended from the heavens, and had then proclaimed the future and fate of his people.

These three wouldn't be able to stay in Tian Xiang if they did what he had told them to. They would become the most despised amongst the lowest rungs of society if they shouted the chants he wanted to hear. Even the scholarly power which they had always attached themselves to wouldn't accept the three men. After all, they had stood out in front of their peers. So, they couldn't turn their backs to get out of this predicament even they had wanted to...

However, the outcome would be even darker if they didn't do it. And, they would be consigned to eternal damnation. That's because this youngster would arrange the greatest of humiliations for them. In fact, this humiliation was something which would never be forgotten throughout the ages. It would be useless even if they died immediately-afterwards. However, they obviously didn't wish to die...

The three men had no choice in what to do for a moment. They were frightened of their opponent, and were at a loss.

However, Jun Mo Xie continued to look at them in a cold manner while he waited for them to choose.

The Young Master wasn't anxious; he wasn't worried either. Moreover, he didn't care what choice those three hypocrites would make.

After all, there wouldn't be a great difference in the outcome...

Those three would be made into examples for others to see in either case...

The hundreds of people who stood at the back had realized that something wrong with the atmosphere. So, their sights focused on the center now. In fact, some people couldn't prevent themselves from becoming curious; [why have these three women come out? And, why are these dogs and hogs present here? What are these for...? Moreover, those three men looked so serious a moment ago. So, why do they suddenly look so deathly pale? Why don't they look like a living person anymore?]

"I can do whatever I wish with you... because I have a lot of power. But, you have nothing except for a quill in your hand. You have no ability to fight back or resist! A clenched fist is the strongest argument in this world. So, I don't even need to counter your tactics despite your so-called 'intelligence'; I only need to force myself through the piles of your rotten flesh! But, you see... I dislike using violent force. And, I merely give people a taste of their own medicine. Basically, I treat a person like they would handle others!"

Jun Mo Xie turned the whip very calmly. He then continued in a soft tone, "I have very limited time. And, my patience... is even more limited. So, I hope you make your choices very quickly. Otherwise, I'll make them for you in case you find it difficult to do it yourself. I'll tell you the truth — I don't care what you choose; I only wish to watch the big drama!"

The three men's complexion turned dead-dark when they heard these words. Qin Qiu Shi couldn't bear it anymore. And, he started to tremble even more violently. In fact, it was like he was about to

throw himself down...

Suddenly, a muffled call came from the crowd, "Jun Mo Xie, you're a filthy lowlife! You dared to hold others' wives as hostages?! You've have fallen extremely low! We won't take to your threats. We would rather have our bodies torn! At least we'll leave this earth pure in that case! The honor of the wives of the three scholars is very important, and can't be tarnished. But, personal integrity can't be abandoned! In fact, that's even more important. So, we must never bow our heads to this evil of the Jun Family. And, we must continue to struggle against this adulterous couple! Moreover, the entire world supports us! Jun Mo Xie is extremely strong, but can he stand against the entire world's sentiment?"

These provocative words came out, and instantly instigated the subdued crowd. In fact, it even brought out the gleam and resolution in the eyes of the three scholars.

Jun Mo Xie sneered and raised his arm. And, a thin yet very long rope suddenly flashed out from it. It then flashed into the crowd with lightning speed like a viper. Then, someone suddenly let out a shrill and mournful scream from the crowd. After all, a huge figure flew into the sky, and fell right in front of them; it was a person with a pockmarked face.

This man had mixed in the crowd, and had taken the opportunity to stir chaos. He had even changed positions after he had spoken those words. So, nobody would've known where the voice had come from. He was certainly very crafty, but how could he ever evade Jun Mo Xie's now-extremely powerful spiritual sense? In fact, he had been locked-on as a target even before he had finished speaking. And, he obviously couldn't hide once he had been targeted. So, he was quickly caught by the Young Master...

This big man snarled after he fell down. Then, his body got covered in a greenish light as he roared and jumped up to his feet. Jun Mo Xie smiled cruelly, "So, it's a Jade Xuan expert! You think

you can face me with that cultivation? You truly fu*king don't know the difference between life and death!"

The rope moved again as that "life and death" phrase sounded, and the big man was resolutely thrown to the ground once again. Then, the rope seemingly dived downwards for a moment. However, it rose to the heavens like a wyvern the next moment. The big man was also taken high up, and it appeared like he was being held there by a hand. In fact, he was left to float in the air like a fluttering flag...

It wasn't long when Jun Mo Xie lengthened a flag pole to go upwards into the sky. And, the man was left to look like a salted-fish as he hung there with the sharp edge of the flagpole pierced through the nape of his neck. In fact, the edge of the flagpole had pierced through to his skull...

The man's body hung straight from the flagpole... by his very skull. But, he hadn't died yet. His face seemed full of despair as he faced the scholars and the masses which had gathered there to cause trouble, while his legs continued to cross and twitch...

Jun Mo Xie flew up as lightly as a feather, and stood up on his horse's back. Then, he waved his whip, and the entire sky echoed with a loud "Snap!" His sharp eyes flashed with a thunderbolt; everyone had felt this change. His eyes then swept over the crowd, and everyone felt as if an oiled steel blade had gone over their faces. The air around their faces had suddenly become extremely cold; they had even started to feel a chilling sensation in their bones. Consequently, everyone had become extremely quiet in a split second!

However, this silence only lasted until Yan Feng exclaimed in surprise, "That man was...?" However, he also knew that this wasn't the right moment. So, he instantly closed his mouth.

Jun Mo Xie sneered as he turned his eyes to look at Yan Feng. It felt like he had seen through to the depths of his heart... and, his

very soul. He then asked in a stern voice, "Who was he?"

Jun Mo Xie's world-defying spiritual pressure was bore down like an explosive tide along with that sound. And, whatever little resistance Yan Feng had gather was left to shatter in its face.

"He's... the Meng Family's man..." Yan Feng lost his head out of fear, and quickly answered the question. However, he started to vomit foam by the time he was done talking, and fell down in a skewed pose. Even Spirit Xuan experts would be cautious against such a high-class spiritual attack. So, how could Yan Feng's weak mental strength deal with it? So, it obviously wasn't very shocking that he had fainted. In fact, it would've been normal if his mental state were to be pushed to the brink of idiocy by this attack...

"Meng Family's man? That insignificant Meng Family's man had the balls to mess with me?! I'll remember this," Jun Mo Xie laughed heartily, "You said that you would rather have your body crushed so that you can leave this world pure. So, I will help you with your wish. I'll crush your body and examine it afterwards. After all, I also wish to see if your purity is still there!"

Chapter 449: Let Me See Your Purity!

Jun Mo Xie had been restraining his tyranny with difficulty. However, there was a suddenly a 'whistling' sound as his body spun and rose high in the sky. Then, a glistened brilliance flashed in the sky.

The Flame of Yellow Blood had been unsheathed!

"Don't... please... spare me..." the big man who hung in midair hadn't even finished speaking when he was cut into two halves. Then, there was a 'squishing' sound as his lower back disconnected with his body, and fell down. This left a gaping hole in his abdominal cavity. And, blood fell down with a huge clamor like a giant sack. His vital organs also dropped downwards along with his intestines. However, the entirety of his organs didn't drop to the ground. After all, his intestines were firmly attached with his body. So, they only hung down from the upper half of his body.

His intestines resembled a thin snake. They even issued some steam as they dropped from high up. However, they suddenly stopped short of the ground. Consequently, they were left to resemble a blood-red ribbon that was hung from a flagpole.

However, that big man still hadn't died at this time. He screamed as his upper-half twitched while remaining hung on the flagpole. Then, he trembled as his eyeballs popped out with a "Puff! Puff!" sound under the effect of the excessive pain. However, they were also left to hang from his face after that...

More blood smeared the ground...

"Splash!"

The spectators' faces were splashed with bits of his blood. But, each one of them remained standing on their spot in a daze, and continued to stare foolishly at this scene. They couldn't dare to make a single move; their eyeballs had also frozen from extreme

fear. Their faces clearly belied their state of extreme horror.

These scholars had only read rigid and inanimate books. Could they have ever seen such a bloody scene? These men had heard nothing of the outside world, and had only been absorbed in books. In fact, they hadn't even killed a chicken in their homes. However, they were witnessing one of the cruelest and bloodiest scenes in the world at the moment. Even fainting at the sight of such an extremely terrible spectacle would've been a luxury for them...

Who would've anticipated this? It had merely seemed as if Jun Mo Xie was having a huge argument with the three scholars. They clearly had a dispute, but no one had thought that it would end in such a fatal conclusion...

There had been no warning when that man had flown into the sky. Then, the back of his head was hung from the flagpole. After that, his lower-half had ceased to exist with a 'slashing' sound. His belly had been left to resemble a bottomless fish tank, and his organs were suspended from it with a 'squishing' sound.

Jun Mo Xie had created such a scene of slaughter in broad daylight and public view!

This crowd had come here with a lofty attitude. Moreover, they had been carrying the same mindset — [The law can't hold a crowd responsible!]

[You may be extremely shameless Jun Mo Xie. But, even you will never kill someone in front of so many people in broad daylight. Even you wouldn't dare do it! Moreover, you will only be able to run and hide your tail in the face of such great condemnation. And, your Jun Family's reputation would drown in front of the entire Tian Xiang once you've fled. Even one man's spit would be enough to drown you once that time comes!]

[Then, there's the Emperor and his power. But, no Emperor can ignore such turmoil in his populace; an Emperor can't neglect the

reaction of the masses! So, the Imperial Court would have no choice but to react to this uproar once it would reach the court. And, they would only have two options — the first one would be to send troops to suppress the protest. And, the second one would be to make the Jun Family apologize in public with a proper explanation!]

However, how could the many anti-Jun factions compel the Emperor to act in their favor? They had waved their banners, and had aroused the popular sentiment in their favor. This was the only way they could ask for the Jun Family's execution...

Therefore, they felt that the Jun Family's day of judgement had finally arrived...

Their actions had obviously been very extreme. However, none of them had ever expected that the actions taken by Jun Mo Xie would be even more extreme than theirs! He didn't run or hide. Instead, he faced them head on. He didn't even deliver a great speech to explain the truth. Instead, he plainly used his power to act in a cruel and bloodthirsty manner.

The spectators felt their heart jump through their very throat as they watched this extremely cruel, torturous, and bloody scene. In fact, they felt as if their eyes would pop-out. Their vision had suddenly blurred, and they couldn't even hear properly. In fact, they felt like they were experiencing a nightmare...

They could only think of one thing; [I have to leave this place as quickly as possible! It doesn't matter if the Jun Family is innocent or not... I don't care if it shamed in front of the whole world... It doesn't matter who wins or loses in this struggle! It doesn't even matter how the others will perceive this! I want nothing to do with this! It simply doesn't matter to me anymore... this is so terrible... oh ho...]

"Ha ha ha... you preferred to have your body crushed because you wanted to leave this world whilst you remained pure, right? So,

where is that 'purity' now? Your body has been crushed! But, where have you left your purity? Why don't I see it?" Jun Mo Xie laughed in a cruel manner. He then sneered at the bloody spectacle he had created, "I can only see a pile of pulpy flesh. But, I can't see any 'purity'!"

Jun Mo Xie laughed loudly as he slowly moved towards a scholar who stood in front of him. Then, he asked him in an extremely gentle tone, "I didn't see his 'purity'. Did you see it? You please tell me if you saw it, okay?"

That middle-aged scholar had wanted to cram back into the crowd. But, his legs had become weak and powerless at the sight of this slaughter. Moreover, there were many people behind him. He had exerted his entire strength, but the people who stood behind him had made no room. In fact, he had felt that he had run into the firmest copper wall, and was left terror-stricken at this realization. And then, Jun Mo Xie had suddenly walked up to him, and had asked that question in an 'amiable' manner.

However, those light words had seemed like explosive thunderclaps to his ears. Jun Mo Xie's affable appearance had turned to that of a hellish demon in his eyes. In fact, he could even see two long horns above the Young Master's head...

The middle-aged scholar looked at Jun Mo Xie with despair in his eyes. Then, an "urgh" sound came from his throat, and he fell down like a loose noodle; he had faint...

"Ah... how did it turn out so bad...? Isn't this Young Master's tone 'mild' enough to be termed as 'friendly'?" Jun Mo Xie shook his head with regret. Then, he walked over to another person, "He didn't give me a reply... So, you come and see... Is there any purity here? Well... take a look and tell me... I genuinely wish to know!"

This man stared blankly with bloodshot eyes. His complexion became deathly pale as he subconsciously shook his head in a stiff and dazed manner. Jun Mo Xie gave a long sigh, "So, you didn't see

it either. I even thought that I was mistaken at first. After all, he had shouted so loudly that I thought it was true. So, I had believed that I would get to see his purity after his body had been crushed... But, this is such a disappointment..."

The scholar-in-question reacted the moment Jun Mo Xie turned and left; he crouched and vomited. In fact, he had vomited in such a violent manner that it seemed if he would puke out his very intestines!

"I've asked several people, but they didn't see that man's purity. How about you take a look?" Jun Mo Xie slowly walked to the three leading scholars. He then gave a kick to the fainted Yan Feng, and the scholar immediately woke up...

Then, Jun Mo Xie clutched the three of them, and forced them to the bloody mess. He then forced their heads towards it. They weren't even half-a-foot from it when he fiercely asked, "Come! Take a look! Try to find the 'purity' for me! Where is it? I'm very curious!"

He laughed cruelly as he spoke-up in a dark manner, "Purity...? Humph! Let me take a look at your purity! It's as barren as a desert!"

The three men were forced to see the blood scene up-close since Jun Mo Xie's fingers were wrapped around their heads. They felt that their brains were being hammered. They felt helpless, and wanted to vomit. Moreover, that big man was still hanging overhead, and hadn't even died yet. In fact, he was still issuing painful groans...

Those three scholars felt they were in hell. They had been gripped with such fear that they tried their hardest to faint. But, their nerves were extremely taut, and they were unable to faint. In fact, they couldn't even close their eyes if they wanted to. Instead, they could only open them to the greatest degree and see the cruelest spectacle from up-close...

"Do you see it? Is any purity here? Tell me if you see any. I'm very curious," the soft and amiable voice of Jun Mo Xie left the three men to shiver like they had malaria.

"Answer me! You'll end up like him in a moment! After all, I want people to see your purity also! So, tell me... do you see any purity?"

"N... no..." The three men looked like a spread-out tripod stand since they had been gripped together by Jun Mo Xie's hand. And, they could only shake their heads in response...

"So... you still feel pure?" Jun Mo Xie smiled like a demon.

"No, no, no... We don't feel like that..." The three men violently shook their heads.

"Ah well... So, which of those two options will you finally choose?" Jun Mo Xie asked patiently. His voice was extremely gentle. In fact, it was full of magnetism.

"I... choose... I choose the first... the first one..." the three men tried to outdo each other as they called out. They were frightened to death, and their resolve had been destroyed long ago. [What's the point of integrity? What's point of an official's lifestyle? What's the value of righteousness? Are they more important than my life? Survival is the greatest priority!]

"Very good! I'm very happy with your choice! In fact, I'm very satisfied!" Jun Mo Xie was clearly somewhat gratified as he complemented them.

"Jun... Jun... Third Young Master... I know who's behind all this..." Qin Qiu Shi raised his head, and suddenly called out loudly, "And, I'm willing to tell you! I only beg you... I beg you... please spare... please spare our lives in return!"

It seemed that this Qin Qiu Shi had finally 'renounced the darkness, and had sought the light'. It felt as if he had finally mended his ways under the threat of his impending doom. But, that youngster was very clever. So, he knew that Jun Mo Xie

wouldn't let them live even after the matter had concluded. Therefore, he felt that this moment was the most fortune for begging even it meant that he'd lose his honor in the process...

Anyway, the probably won't have to see Jun Mo Xie's face after this day...

"Spare your lives? I never expected that you'd have the courage to haggle with me at this time!" Jun Mo Xie had never even thought about it. After all, he had never been that magnanimous as a person.

A man would have to pay the corresponding costs for his crimes. And, a mistake would remain as a mistake even if the said-individual were to try remedying his errors later. In fact, it would be completely useless!

"The person behind this...?" Jun Mo Xie snorted. "You think I don't know? I know better than you about who is behind this! And, I'll think over the aspect of sparing your lives... So, get out of my way for the time being!"

Jun Mo Xie's voice was as cold as ice. He waved his hand, and his body started to whirl like a whirlwind. No one could understand what was happening. He was seen holding three very strange items in his hand by the time he stopped. They resembled horns, but they were very thin horns.

These things were crude, but they had appeared in that world for the first time — the first megaphones!

Jun Mo Xie handed one to each of them, and spoke-up in a cold manner, "Go on! Open the way for me!"

Chapter 450: Bloody Events along the Entire Way; Slaughters along the Entire Way!

He looked at the dumbstruck crowd after he finished speaking. These people still hadn't been able to react. So, he chuckled and spoke-up darky, "You people still haven't left? Do you also want to be like him? Do you prefer your body being crushed so that you leave this world pure? Anyway, I'm very interested in this purity. Does your body have it? He he, come... Let me take a look!"

Everyone recoiled in unison. In fact, many of them even cried out in pain as they tumbled over each other.

"I'm saying it for the last and final time — I won't permit this matter to be heard anywhere in Tian Xiang City after today!" Jun Mo Xie coldly swept his gaze over everyone. In fact, his voice even seemed to bringing cold winds along, "Your mouth is a part of your body. Whatever you discuss in private is your business! I won't stop it... but, I'll look for your 'purity' if I hear of it... In fact, I'll look for the 'purity' of your family... till the ninth generation!"

"Get lost!" Jun Mo Xie roared.

The crowd was instantly sent into a state of panic. They shouted indiscriminately as they went fled in disarray.

"These nobody-scholars were presumptuous enough to think that they could cause trouble for me!" Jun Mo Xie laughed heartily at first. Then, he suddenly flew up and stationed himself on the head of the big man who hung from the flagpole. He then sighed and turned towards the city's gates. Then, he shouted towards the Tian Xiang City, "Are you people tired of living?"

His voice shook the city as it surged through it like a thunderclap.

It surged forth in an imposing manner, and carried an unrivalled murderous aura. It seemed like thunder itself had descended and plowed through the city's gates.

Jun Mo Xie stood near the City's gates. The sun shone high, and cast his shadow to slant through the gates. And, it suddenly seemed as if the entire city had been shrouded by his shadow...

The thousands of wolves frenetically dashed away in order to escape. The momentum of Jun Mo Xie's aura seemed like a wild and devilish sword as it rushed into the city.

There were many people at the back of the crowd. So, they hadn't understood everything at first. However, even they had been awe-struck by Jun Mo Xie's imposing aura. So they also started to roll-about in the streets.

Fortunately, it was a broad and well-built road!

He turned his neck to look at the city's gates in a disdainful manner. He then waved his whip in the air, and a "Snap!" sound echoed. Then, he tilted his head and snorted, "I'm back in town now! So, I will see how many gossipers are there in Tian Xiang City! Let's see how many men there are willing to die a brave warrior's death! I will also see how many men wish to remain with pure, and how many men are capable of remaining pure! I will check the number! One by one!"

He bent his legs. Then, the clip-clop of a horse was heard as Jun Mo Xie shouted and took the lead to pass through the city's gates.

Thousands of people saw him enter on his horse, but they remained silent out of fear.

The heavy wheels rolled, and the carriage carrying Guan Qing Han and the other two women slowly followed after him.

Jun Mo Xie's words had made everyone's blood boil.

But, there were still exceptions. And, Jun Wu Yi was one such exception.

This Third Master Jun tilted his head, and looked at the tall and straight back of Jun Mo Xie as he rode his horse ahead. He couldn't help but mutter, "Damn it! He handled this in such a

straightforward manner. Even my lifetime-worth of influence wouldn't have been able to pull this off! This was too damn excessive!" He snorted regretfully. In fact, he felt somewhat sullen as he followed after his nephew.

Jun Mo Xie was emanating a cold and powerful aura as he rode his horse. His face was dark, his back was straight, his lips were pursed, and his sword-like eyebrows had somewhat shot up. In fact, it seemed like he stirred a panicked uproar wherever he looked...

Then, he suddenly heard someone speak in a very low voice, "I also don't know why he looks like that! He commits adultery with his sister-in-law. And yet, he arrives here with such a haughty expression? He's shameless!"

Jun Mo Xie's body remained motionless as he rode on his horse. But, there was a streak of silver light in his sleeves. Then, there was a "Bang!" sound, and a very thin man was snatched up from the crowd. The Young Master was even more straightforward this time around; he even saved himself the interrogation. The Young Master merely hung that man from the flagpole. There was a bloody cavity in that man's throat, while the expression of disdain still hadn't left his face.

This man's body had flashed with a gold light before it had gotten annihilated. So, it was evident that he was also a Xuan expert who was hiding in the crowd to create trouble. However, he had been luckier since he was already breathing his last when he was swung in the air.

There was a cry of alarm, and the entire crowd began to pull back when they saw this. They looked at Jun Mo Xie with expressions of terror. [Is this boy mad?! Will he genuinely do what he said he would? Will he murder so blatantly?]

Several men suddenly found themselves drenched in cold sweat at the edge of the crowd. They did their best to push back and

nearly twisted their legs in their attempts to escape.

But, how could they escape from the huge power-net of Jun Mo Xie's spirit sense? Jun Mo Xie's glare remained cold as a golden light quickly flashed in his hands. And, the seven or eight people who had broken into a run fell to the ground. Each of their backs had a small and bloody hole in them. The golden throwing knives flickered on their backs as their bodies got pasted to the road. The golden knives obviously shone very brightly under the effect of the sunlight...

Several members of the Heaven Destroyers Team quickly ran forth, picked up the golden knives, and respectfully returned them to Jun Mo Xie...

Jun Mo Xie's eyes remained expressionless as he took the eight knives. Then, he gave them a swirl, and they suddenly and mysteriously disappeared with the flickering of a golden light.

He then calmly continued to move forward. His dark and handsome face only had one thing written over it — [I've said this once, and I won't repeat it. I'll kill you if you dare to open your mouth! So, you open your mouth, and I will kill you!]

[Simply! Plainly! No exceptions!]

The three scholars were shouting themselves hoarse up ahead. They were also clutching those simple yet special megaphones. In fact, their slogans sounded like crying, "The Third Young Master Jun is great! The Third Young Master Jun is noble! He's the best man in the world! He's a very good man! He's a very benevolent man! We three scholars welcome him to Tian Xiang!"

They continued to shout out these slogans in a very mechanical manner. In fact, it seemed as if they didn't even know what they were shouting about. However, their faces were overflowed with tears, and there was endless humiliation written on them. But, they still didn't dare to make any thoughtless moves. And, that was because the shadow of death had still enveloped them from above.

Their voices had become hoarse, and their throats had become raw. However, they still hadn't dared to stop. And, that's because their sole aim was to survive. [What difference does a little suffering make? I need to survive...]

Suddenly, thirty-forty scholars of the Wen Xing Institute arrived in front of them. However, they stood shocked as one of them asked, "Brother Han...? Brother Yan? Brother Qin? What are you doing? Are you mad? You're opening a path for this lowlife...?"

What reply could Qin Qiu Shi and the others dare to give? They could only give hints and meaningful looks before they quickly walked on. But, that scholar didn't understand the meaning hidden in those expressions. So, his heart filled with righteous indignation as he angrily shouted, "Jun Mo Xie! Didn't your father teach you shame? You've committed adultery with your sister-in-law! That's such an immoral thing! But, you still insult my Tian Xiang's scholars?! You've gone too far!"

Many people who stood behind him had already seen that bloody scene. So, they had understood the situation. Therefore, many of them stepped forward to pull him back. However, that youngster stubbornly continued to shout, "Such a shameless man can't exist in the same world as this Shi Wen Chong!"

Jun Mo Xie looked over that person very coldly. His eyebrows moved very slightly as he replied in a faint voice, "Die!"

A sword light spun forth. It didn't seem to care who its victim was as it cut through every scholar that blocked its path. The young scholar screamed in disbelief when he saw this. Then, he also fell into a pool of blood.

Jun Mo Xie sighed as his horse passed by that scholar's body. He then softly said, "Perhaps you genuinely had guts. Perhaps you didn't wish to trouble me. But, even that's useless. And, it doesn't mean that I won't kill you. After all, how would people believe me if I didn't follow through on what I've said? You didn't believe it..."

And, I regret that. In fact, I must remember to put forth two conditions from next time onwards..."

Jun Mo Xie looked calm as he prodded his horse forward; he didn't even look back. But, his soft voice could still be heard, "First, you need to have strength to deal with every eventuality. Second, you need to have a strong backing so that others don't provoke you. You must also have unwavering courage and determination. Only then can you have enough power to target others. But, never try to become a hero otherwise..."

"You may have bones of iron. But, I see you as nothing but wretched creatures that I have to kill. Moreover, your death won't amount to any injustice."

That scholar had been cut in half, but he hadn't left the world yet. Tears flowed from his eyes as he closed them. He muttered as he inched closer to death's door, "Master... you... were wrong..."

Jun Mo Xie's pulled a slight face dozens of meters away.

[Master...? Mei Gao Jie? Kong Ling Yang?]

He suddenly waved his whip and struck the three scholars who were walking ahead. Those three screamed in pain, and turned around to face Jun Mo Xie. He gestured towards the flagpole as he quietly said, "You'll shout louder now. We'll pass the gates very soon. And, you'll shout this, 'Mei Gao Jie is a turtle! Kong Ling Yang is a pimp! Meng Family is a den of bastards!' when we pass from there. You don't want to die, right? Do this, and I'll let you live!"

The three people nearly collapsed when they heard this. How could they say something like this in the backdrop of this era's social values? After all, one's teacher held the highest status in society. A teacher-disciple wasn't a part of the five cardinal relationships. However, the teacher was placed in the highest of regards. Moreover, Mei Gao Jie and Kong Ling Yang were their teachers. [We won't have to care about drowning the Jun Family is

saliva of shame if we say this. After all, we will have been drowned in it before it would even reach the Jun Family. Moreover, the Meng Family is extremely powerful and influential. You may not have to worry about them, Jun Mo Xie. After all, you're very powerful! But, what about us...?]

Jun Wu Yi arrived close to his nephew at once. He then whispered, "This is a bit too much, Mo Xie. Be careful about meddling with the court!"

"Too much...?" Jun Mo Xie looked at him in a baffled manner, "Third Uncle, you're not stupid, right? Don't tell me that we still care about the court? Third Uncle must never forget our current identity! We're on the same level as the Silver Blizzard City! Why should we care about the insignificant Imperial Family?"

Chapter 451: Makes a Strong Entry to the City!

"A Super Family? Huh..." Jun Wu Yi became silent. But, his outlook didn't change. [Is this... is this how we become a Super Family? But, we're still the same people. So, how did we suddenly become great...?]

Jun Mo Xie smiled coldly and said, "Moreover, the Imperial Family... I lack evidence against them at the moment. The scenario where I turn the Tian Xiang City into a pile of burning ruins isn't an impossibility once I have some evidence against them! Third Uncle... do you believe what that Silver City's Xiao Bu Yu had said about the Blood Sword Hall? The Blood Sword Hall is merely a bunch of killers! So, how could they infiltrate a camp of so many thousands of soldiers and take action? Third Uncle... don't tell that me you're not thinking about it? What does this mean? Who's behind this?

"Things have come to this. So, we will only suffer if we have too many misgivings. After all... we're still somewhat weak in comparison... Therefore, we must be strong at this moment... very strong! We have proof that we have some real and powerful talent behind us! This time will be ours if we act with extreme prejudice and not rush brashly!

"What we genuinely lack right now... is time! Even a day is enough to change everything!" Jun Mo Xie thought of his supply of medicinal supplements and the Level Nine Peak Xuan Beast's core. And, his face became a little dignified as he thought of this.

Everyone was ready. The medications were also in place. The Solitary Falcon was also present. Moreover, he had the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune to protect and assist. Therefore, his grandfather's advancement couldn't be stopped! However, he had to think of a way to promote Jun Wu Yi's cultivation to the

Spirit Xuan Level. Moreover, he also had to make the Heaven Destroyers and Spirit Devourers advance. And, he'd also have to do the same with Baili Luo Yun and Hai Chen Feng's strength...

[We can barely be called a Super Family at this time. But, we're merely an empty shell even if we can act as a Super Family nowadays. So, we mustn't take any wrong steps at this important juncture!]

Jun Wu Yi's face twitched and convulsed with suffering. He had also been suspecting the things that Jun Mo Xie had brought up. In fact, he had been suspecting it for over ten years in secret; this was also something that had plagued his heart.

How could Jun Wu Yi not have suspected this? But, he didn't wish to believe it. His family had given so much for Tian Xiang... Yet, they were being treated that way...?

It was cowardly... But, human nature nonetheless! After all, the Jun Family's blood had soaked the battlefields for Tian Xiang. Their family had worked very hard. So, to believe in this cruel truth would be tantamount to destroying everything that they had built up with their heart and soul...

And, this was a serious burden that no man could bear.

"But, you won't act blindly unless you have irrefutable proof!" Jun Wu Yi stated in a low voice, "You can speak to me about this. But, don't speak to your grandfather about it... unless you have definite proof! The Old Man's temper..."

"That's obvious." Jun Mo Xie smiled lightly before he spoke in a profound manner, "You're not a fool, Third Uncle. And, neither am I. But, Grandfather isn't a fool either. So, you shouldn't worry about it. But, the Emperor is even farther from being a fool..."

Jun Wu Yi gave long sigh. Then, he became sad, and went back in silence.

Jun Mo Xie became cold again, and brandished his horsewhip.

This made each of the three scholars to twitch again. But, they didn't dare to exclaim. The Young Master Jun's tone was dark and full of murderous intention as he spoke in a heavy tone, "Shout for me!"

The three men strived to shout hard since they were enshrouded by his murderous aura, "I am the disciple of Wen Xing Heavenly Literature Institute's Mei Gao Jie and Kong Ling Yang — Han Zhi Dong... Yan Feng... Qin Qiu Shi! The Third Young Master Jun is great! The Third Young Master is noble! He is the best man! I welcome him to Tian Xiang! Mei Gao Jie is a pimp! Kong Ling Yang is a pimp! The Meng Family is a den of bastards..."

It was strange to see that the curses being hurled by the three scholars had become increasingly fluent after they had said it once. They didn't seem to care about the contempt or the curses anymore. After all, they had lost their sense of honor and shame once they had spoken these words out for the first time. Therefore, they had become far more fluent by now...

Jun Mo Xie resembled a maddened brothel keeper. He gnashed his teeth, and laughed heartily as he prodded his horse to go forward. He looked like a creature from hell to everyone who laid eyes on his expressions...

Everyone's eyes had frozen at this moment...

The Tian Xiang City had descended into utter chaos...

Jun Mo Xie's powerful entrance had resembled an unprecedented violent storm. And, it had engulfed the entire Tian Xiang City in a moment!

Several big Families had propped into action the moment Jun Mo Xie had set foot in the city. They had gathered entire lists of his misconducts, and had dashed into their palanquins to leave for the Imperial Palace.

However, the Dugu Family watched passively.

There was no sign of the Li Family either.

And, the Tang Family also stood in silence.

The Murong Family arrived, made a few discreet questions about the news, and disappeared.

The Old Man Jun sat calmly in that tensed environment, and told the kitchen staff to prepare the best food and drinks. His son and grandson had arrived. So, the old man wanted to have a good drink with them. After all, his son and the grandson were already taking care of things outside. So, what was the need for the old man to move into action...?

[It has to be said that this brat Mo Xie's methods are extremely bold! But, they're also the best methods we can use! After all, we're already stacked against everyone in society. So, we might as well go the crazy way!]

[It's like the Old Ancestor Jun had once said, "A real man isn't necessarily someone with balls! A real man is someone with an indomitable spirit!" Fu*k yes!]

[Good, good! This is the first time... go for it damn it! Ah, good one! He he he...] The old man let out a rare smile of content as he sipped his wine.

[Mo Xie is surely creating a scene outside. However, he's also marking the formation of a formidable force. This old man's strength is formidable. Then, we also have the Eighth Great Master from the prairie — the Solitary Falcon. Moreover, Mo Xie can prevail over level four Spirit Xuan experts on his own. And, it needn't be mentioned that there's that mysterious and unrivalled person behind our Jun Family. So, my Jun Family can be considered a real Super Family now. Could there still be a doubt about that?]

[My Jun Family can finally take a breather now!]

[There's not much of a need to worry about that rotten matter at

court either. After all, the Murong and the Dugu Family will suppress those poor bastards from making a fuss. In fact, we can even ignore them. I'm in a very good mood...] Wouldn't he have wreaked havoc if he weren't in a good mood? Who could've dared to say something...

The old man's face was as steady as a mountain. In fact, he was full of prideful happiness. He had even forgotten how anxious he had been a few days back...

He didn't even seem to care about the Emperor's feelings at the moment.

After all, even the Empire couldn't deal with the Jun Family at this time... And, everyone knew their own positions.

For example, the Song Family was as agitated as a cat on a hot roof. The Meng Family found it even more difficult to bear. In fact, they acted like a bald dog with a chopped tail as they desperately went to the Imperial Court with their notes. They also ran rounds to the Li Family. But, everyone could see that no one wanted to get involved with them. After all, no one was foolish enough to desire getting buried next to them...

Meng Family Head — Meng You Wei heard about the three scholars raining curses on Mei Gao Jie, Kong Ling Yang and the Meng Family. So, he dejectedly returned to the Li Family. He repeatedly tried to get an audience with them. But, he was left stumped for a long while since there was no result. He then mounted his horse, and went to the Murong Family...

Mei Gao Jie was at his home. He had been merrily waiting for the good news when he heard that his disciples were raining curses at him. And, this news left him confused and angry.

Fatty Tang was inside the Aristocratic Hall when he heard that the Young Master had returned. He clapped his hands, and jumped high like a rubber ball at first. Then, he rushed out to meet him. But, Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang pulled him back. The reason

was simple — Jun Mo Xie had given them a serious order that Tang Yuan was not to be involved in the disturbance he would create upon his return...

Perhaps the others wouldn't dare to mess with the Jun Family now. But, this didn't necessarily mean that they would take the same precautions against the Tang Family. It had to be said that the Tang Family was the last in the ranking of Tian Xiang City's powerful families. Moreover, the extreme closeness of the Young Masters of the Jun and the Tang Family was only one aspect of the matter. However, the Head of the Tang Family was loyal to the Imperial Family. So, he would never stand for his 'younger brother' facing embarrassment.

Therefore, this matter was something which Jun Mo Xie wanted to bear alone.

He would have to incite the Tian Xiang City on his own.

Jun Mo Xie eventually reached the Jun Family's mansion. He then dismounted and walked towards it. But, he turned back at the door before he entered the household, and issued a final command, "Go! Seize every property and business the Meng Family controls in the Tian Xiang City. They have been attacking me overtly and covertly! Ah, that isn't good! Hai Chen Feng will take over. You observe and see that they the Meng Family is dealt with properly. And, tell the Meng Family that they can come and talk to me if they are dissatisfied. We will seize these small interests for now. The exact ledgers can be balanced out at a later time!"

The fifty-sixty members of the Heaven Destroyers shouted their acknowledgement in unison!

[Taking over the Meng Family's properties? And, that's merely a small repayment of the interests? There are more accounts to settle...?]

Jun Wu Yi rolled his eyes. He could feel that he was finding it increasingly harder to understand his nephew.

...

Inside the Imperial Palace...

The Emperor had a deep frown on his face as he sat opposite Mr. Wen. They would talk and play chess in the past. But, the Emperor didn't seem to have the leisure to play chess... or discuss the world anymore...

And, that's because he was deeply worried!

A mountain of files had been accumulated to his side. The Emperor's face was full of agony and helplessness.

The content of those files was the same — a request to punish Jun Mo Xie!

"Requests to bring Jun Mo Xie to justice!"

"Jun Mo Xie is out of control. He doesn't care about authority. He's reigning chaos in the capital, and he's bringing shame to the land. His crimes deserve punishment. We request the Emperor to take action!"

"We plead the Emperor to act! The nation's integrity will be in peril if things continue like this!"

"We plead the Emperor to act quickly!"

The Emperor sighed. [Act... I also want to act! Wouldn't I wish to eliminate Jun Mo Xie...? In fact, there is no one who wants to do it more than me! Can... you at least be a little more considerate towards me?!]

[A man must know his limits, right? Jun Zhan Tian's strength was great, but he was still stuck at the Sky Xuan peak. After all, the Silver City wouldn't have tolerated if he had moved any further than that. Moreover, I always had means to take drastic measures against Jun Zhan Tian's military strength. In fact, sending Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi to the Southern Heaven should've acted as the first step towards the Jun Family's destruction...]

[But, life is like chess. It doesn't play out according to people's expectations. And, it's hard to predict a person's moves. After all, going to Tian Fa didn't harm that uncle-nephew duo in the least. Instead, the winds have changed, and they have returned even more powerful! Jun Mo Xie fought four Spirit Xuan experts on his own, and still managed to attain victory. What kind of strength is needed for something like that?]

[This is unimaginable!]

Chapter 452: Abandon?!

[And, you want me to act on this...? The circumstances have already spiraled out of my control! So, what action can I take? Can I even dare to act in this situation?]

...

"Your Majesty, what burdens your mind?" Mr. Wen had barely returned from the outside after witnessing Jun Mo Xie's killing spree. He calmly lifted his wise gaze to look at the Emperor, and smiled as he asked, "Is it... that Jun Mo Xie?"

"Yes."

The Emperor sighed, and motionlessly gazed at the sunset for a long time.

"I don't think that the Emperor needs to be so worried. I don't think it's necessarily a bad thing in the long run," Mr. Wen remained silent for a while before he spoke, "Jun Mo Xie's power is great. And, the Jun Family's power as a whole has also reached great heights. In fact, they had reached a league of their own. However, they don't pose a threat to the Imperial family..."

"They have reached different league, but they pose no threat?" The Emperor frowned. "What do you mean?"

"That's right. The Jun Family would've become something like the Murong Family if they had been getting powerful step by step. And, they would've had the power to cause chaos in society, and could have flipped the heavens. But, the speed at which their power is increasing is too great. They've leapt from being a regular influential family to an extremely Great Family in a short period of three to four months. He he... Your Majesty, do you know where these Super Families have been positioned since antiquity?"

Mr. Wen smiled slowly, "Such families occupy very special areas, and aren't interested in the title of the 'Emperor'. So, I'm sure that

the Jun Family will slowly fade away from all levels of society. They will wander amongst the clouds, and observe the great transformations. But, they will be indifferent to the changes. This has been the norm since ancient times. And, no Super Family has ever been an exception to this.

"And, that's because these Super Families don't pursue the glory of one generation. Instead, they seek one which endures through the long ages! They laugh at unstable situations, and remain unaffected by them. They are elated, and possess the dark of the world in the palm of their hands!

"Hence, Your Majesty need only be patient for now. This upstart family will cause a storm with their awe-inspiring might. But, they will eventually become tired of the attention. Then, they will settle in their own place. Moreover, having such a Super Family within the borders of Tian Xiang will be a great deterrent against the neighboring countries! The reason for such a huge reaction to that matter between Jun Mo Xie and his sister-in-law isn't because of the Jun Family's old enemies alone — the neighboring countries who see him as a threat have also seized the opportunity to cause trouble. After all, they would wish to create enmity between the Jun and the Imperial family even if they can't eliminate the Jun Family. Otherwise..."

He smiled lightly, "This is an insignificant affair of this person. And, it may even involve an immoral act with one's sister-in-law. But, why did it give rise to such a huge reaction? Was Jun Mo Xie's reputation ever good? Your Majesty has always been farsighted. So, you need to consider these troubles properly. That arrogant Jun Mo Xie won't act with humanity even if you handle these matters properly. But, Old Man Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi will surely regard you kindly..."

"You say this... But, how can I not know...?" The Emperor stood up and placed his hands behind his back. His expression was desolate, "That's not the problem here... The biggest problem is..."

the Blood Sword Hall..."

"Blood Sword Hall...? I remember that Your Majesty had said that it was the core of the secret strength at your hand. Ah, I see! This Wen can also more or less figure out the matter if we combine that with Xiao Bu Yu's confession. The truth of the deaths of Jun Wu Hui and Jun Wu Meng... However, the Jun Family has no evidence! Moreover, Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi still have the final say in that family. And, those two men have deep feelings towards Tian Xiang City. In fact, they have a lot of sentiment..."

Mr. Wen smiled, "Your Majesty... it's difficult to turn against one's homeland. Jun Mo Xie may not care. But, Jun Zhan Tian will. So, there's a margin for mediation."

"Margin to... mediate..." The Emperor's eyes lit up.

"Yes. Those events happened a very long time ago. Your Majesty hadn't revealed anything, but Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi are shrewd men. So, how could they not have suspected? What's important here is that the Blood Sword Hall is merely a group of killers despite their strength. So, how could it have influenced the army...? That father-and-son duo has suspected for ten years, but they haven't made a move. They've never carried out any vendetta.... Does Your Majesty know why?" Mr. Wen was calm. He obviously had a card up his sleeve.

"Why?"

"I believe that the Jun Family doesn't doubt that it had been Your Majesty's act. However, their family members — whether alive or dead — have done too much for Tian Xiang! And, this 'too much' is the reason here!"

Mr. Wen continued in a serious tone, "The Jun Family's members have been the mainstay of the Tian Xiang Empire for the past few decades. They had somewhat saved Tian Xiang, and have been its greatest servants! Tian Xiang has tens of thousands of miles under its territory, and has a huge populace because of their hard work.

The masses live in peace and tranquility. And, this is a result of the Jun Family's blood and sweat. This is because of the contributions of countless men of the Jun Family. After all, their people have expended immeasurable efforts to make such a situation possible."

He continued to smile, "So, put yourself in their place, Your Majesty. Would you ever think of destroying this country if you had done so much for it, and had paid two generations of blood for it? Would you destroy your greatest accomplishment? Would you think of destroying the safety and joy of millions of people?"

"You're right! The Jun Family is too kind. They would never do it!" A light flashed in the Emperor's eyes as he quickly jumped up. He circled excitedly, and his face started to glow again.

"However, Your Majesty will have to give them some explanations when the time comes. So, I'll give you one word of advice..." Mr. Wen smiled mysteriously. He turned down his palm and spoke, "Abandon!"

"Abandon?" The emperor trembled. His joyous expression froze, and he was left to stare blankly, "Abandon...?" His heart was in agony. "But, that is my most elite force. They have won so many battles over the years! They have given everything for so many years to make me Emperor!"

"Do I really need to abandon them?"

"Yes, abandon them! Do it even if you don't want to — you have no choice!" Mr. Wen spoke without hesitation, "You'll have to face the Jun Family if you don't abandon the Blood Sword Hall! But, the Jun Family can shake the entire world in confrontation! So, would you dare to confront them? And, the Emperor might be next if the situation worsens. Your life and the lives of the entire Imperial Family will be in danger!"

The Emperor's face became gloomy, and his body started to sway.

"Abandon the Blood Sword Hall! Not for Jun Zhan Tian! Nor for

Jun Wu Yi — but for Jun Mo Xie!" Mr. Wen sighed and continued, "Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi have spent a lot of blood for Tian Xiang during their lives! So, there's no need to doubt their sentiment for Tian Xiang! These two men won't do too much if you look at it from a humane perspective! So, I'm sure they won't do anything drastic even if they become fully aware that Jun Wu Hui's death was your doing. That's because... the Jun Family's blood, their effort, the entirety of Jun Zhan Tian's life, and half of Jun Wu Yi's life — have all been for the Tian Xiang Empire! Even the lifetimes of Jun Wu Hui and Jun Wu Meng have been for this nation along with the deaths of those Jun youngsters!

"Tian Xiang is the pillar for the Jun Family. It's the fruit of their labors, and it's also their biggest solace!

"I'm sure that Your Majesty would only need to unrestrainedly reward and apologies to Jun Zhan Tian even if genuinely gets some conclusive evidence. And, you could then swear an oath and uphold it. They will also hold their pride and accept it. They won't do it for official positions. But, they'll do it for the country's people! I'm not wrong, Your Majesty. Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi are good men who work for this nation's people. They are real, respectable, and brave men! Therefore, you can disregard those two!

"But Jun Mo Xie is different — he's completely different! He has his father's ability to lead soldiers. He had never shown his key traits before. He had always hidden his talents! But, Jun Mo Xie is acting like that now! He has stood out since the last half-a-year! He was only a debauchee wastrel in the past. But, he's like an unrestrained storm now! He could've been stopped before he had left Tian Xiang. But, he's a full-fledged eagle which has spread its wings now that he's back from Southern Heaven City. He is young, but his power has soared above the nine heavens. He's a hero who overlooks the world, and dares everything!

"Moreover, he has been vindictive ever since this vicious

personality of his has arrived! And, his behavior is even more merciless. His means are unwavering, and he doesn't hesitate while making a decision to kill. You genuinely can't afford to be at fault with him! And, he also has that powerful backing. So, he won't have any misgivings because of it. He will look at the world disdainfully if this continues. I've observed something upon his return today — no one holds any value in his eyes! No matter who they are! He doesn't care about spilling blood, and he's indifferent to any crime! Such a man is the most dreadful kind! Your Majesty needn't worry about Jun Zhan Tian or Jun Wu Yi getting their hands on a conclusive proof of what happened those days. But, everything will come to an end if this kid gets his hands on them!"

"Is there no alternative to abandoning them? I am very..." The Emperor's complexion turned pale as he clenched his fist. It seemed that he had made up his mind.

"This is the safest and the most dependable method. We have to deal with someone like Jun Mo Xie... So, we have to be on guard that this Jun Mo Xie doesn't find anything to hold on to. Your Majesty, you must know that the main difference between Jun Mo Xie and Jun Zhan Tian is that the former doesn't have any feelings towards Tian Xiang. And, from that time... Jun Mo Xie... he..." There was a strange light in Mr. Wen's eyes.

"He what...?" His Majesty asked.

"He ignores people... In fact, he might not even consider them as 'people'! He's extremely cold-blooded. And, I saw him while he was killing people. His expression maintained the same tranquility throughout the time he coldly went-about killing them. You must know that one's eyes will undergo some fluctuations even if one kills a chicken or a dog. This is because there would be surge in their energy. But, Jun Mo Xie didn't react like that at all! His expression might've belied some emotion, but his eyes remained calm. In fact, killing a person was the same to him that eating is to a hungry person... It was like a natural course of action..."

Chapter 453: The Cat's Out of the Bag

Mr. Wen's tone became heavier as he spoke, "The well-known Cold-Blooded Great Master Lei Wu Bei is known for committing massacres. But, even he will find it impossible to be as cold-blooded as Jun Mo Xie! These are the soul-sucking and blood-thirsty people who give no value to human life! Your Majesty, this Jun Mo Xie is very dangerous. In fact, he has surpassed everyone! It's in his innate nature to kill! Even the Great Assassin Chu Qi Hun may not be so dangerous!"

Mr. Wen paused for a long while since he felt something indescribable. In fact, even he was unaware that he had stopped speaking...

The Emperor trembled. He felt cold.

He didn't need Mr. Wen to speak any further to understand this matter. He already knew it very clearly now. The consequences of a man like Jun Mo Xie getting his hands on the evidence of his father's entrapment... The Emperor could imagine them very clearly...

[Jun Mo Xie doesn't care for anything!]

[Moreover, he has already grabbed a lot of power! He's already an unshakeable and formidable existence! Even attacking him suddenly will not bring the surety of results! I could storm the Jun Family's gates. However, I would have to be on guard against vengeful assassinations even if one of their top individuals manages to escape. The days of my life will be filled with unspeakable misery, and we'll have to face a lot of mental pressure. And, that's enough for anyone to drown in liquor out of sheer pressure!]

[Blood Sword Hall... I have to abandon them! I can't afford to keep them!]

"Besides, you also need to appease the Jun Family. You need to

appease them blindly. In fact, you must appease them till you're exhausted!" Mr. Wen suddenly flashed a smile, "I'm sure that the Jun Family doesn't have any concrete proof. So, we still have a margin to rescue the situation. That matter won't trouble you if Your Majesty restores the original relationship... I also remember that Old Man Jun had once proposed a marriage between Jun Mo Xie and Princess Ling Meng..."

The Emperor had a determined expression on his face as he looked at the sunset. He sighed deeply and said, "Yes! That's true."

Mr. Wen laughed and said, "Then, Your Majesty should have a plan!"

The Emperor remained silent for a long time. He then sighed, but it seemed that he wasn't very comfortable with it. Then, he suddenly asked, "Mr. Wen, do you know if the Elusive World of Immortals has a young talent like that?"

Mr. Wen was stumped by this question. He remained silent for a long while before he replied, "No, there isn't. That place has many talented people, but all of them are very old... How could there be anything like this Family?"

However, the Emperor didn't give up, "What about that land's Young Lady..?"

"The 'Young Lady'... is approaching sixty this year..." Mr. Wen smiled bitterly, "Her son is thirty, and her grandson is only five or six. The Emperor may wish to form a relationship with the Elusive World of Immortals. But, even they won't wish to make enemies of the Jun Family. After all, the strength of the person backing the Jun Family is a profound mystery. Even the Lady herself might not have good odds of success if she faces him."

The Emperor sighed and said, "I'll have to haggle with Jun Mo Xie if that's the case."

Mr. Wen also sighed and stated, "Your Majesty shouldn't be too

optimistic. It's too difficult to say if the Jun Family will accept this matter or not. It's easy to expect people to add flowers to the brocade, but difficult to expect them to provide help in the hour of need..."

The room became quiet since the two men stopped talking...

A long while passed, and the two men sighed in unison...

The Dugu Family.

Dugu Zong Heng's eyes appeared like copper bells as he looked at the movements of the girl. She had a small waist in the past. But, she now resembled a penguin as she moved down the palanquin. She swayed as she walked forward while holding her stomach. And, the old man felt as if the blood from his entire body had started to dash to his forehead.

There was an "Argh!" as Dugu Xiao Yi's mother cried from behind. She didn't dare believe her sight as she covered her mouth with her hand while tears fell down her face.

Everyone's mouths were open as they stood petrified.

The old man eventually came to himself. He resembled a mad tiger circling his cage as he started to pace around in circles. Then, he finally found a target to vent his anger at. So, he roared, and charged ferociously. He then grabbed one of his seven grandsons. And, he started to beat the youngster's entire body in a violent rage.

He also started to shout curses. However, the curses were so chaotic that one couldn't even tell what he was shouting...

The seven youngsters squatted down and stuck their heads into his crotch for safety. Therefore, the first round of kicks landed on their buttocks with 'snap' and 'bang' sounds, and their buttocks swelled as a result. [You want to beat us, right? But, you can't hit our faces. After all, we seven have spent fifteen years of our lives with you!]

Dugu Wu Di covered his head and sneaked away.

Dugu Xiao Yi rushed up to pacify the situation. And, the result was amazing. Everyone increased their distance wherever she walked to. After all, they were afraid that something might go wrong if they touched her... Dugu Xiao Yi could only feel more proud and bold. After all, it seemed like she was a firefighter in this chaotic situation. Everyone would scuttle from the spot she'd walk to. And thus, this amusing game continued for a while. Moreover, a group of the family's women would also noisily chase after her in the hope that she'd stop after paying heed to their calls.

Anyway, wasn't Dugu Zong Heng losing his temper a common sight in the Dugu Family? Therefore, Dugu Xiao Yi was also very accustomed to it.

But then...

Dugu Xiao Yi had somewhat forgotten her 'condition' in this situation. However, the thick pillow she had tied to her stomach wasn't very firmly tied. So, the ropes couldn't help but become loose as she ran around. In fact, it was a wonder that they had held up till that point...

The small support system of the pillow eventually...

The old lady had been staring at her granddaughter ever since she had arrived. And, she had finally discovered that extremely shocking thing...

Old Lady Dugu had felt that something was amiss the moment she had seen Dugu Xiao Yi enter. [Just look at this girl. Doesn't it look like...? Wait, what?] Her eyebrows had shot up, while her neck had straightened. [That doesn't look like a defiled body. How can a pregnant woman stand so straight? And, how did she get so big in these few days alone?]

However, the first impression is the strongest. Therefore, the astute old lady wasn't able to understand the matter at first. In

fact, she had even started to doubt herself. But, she then saw Dugu Xiao Yi running around. The little girl's 'pregnancy prop's ropes' had started to loosen, and the prop had slowly started to slide downwards. The pillow had initially been near her chest. However, it had soon slipped to her lower belly, and had then continued to slide downwards towards her thighs...

The old lady's eyes suddenly opened wide.

Dugu Xiao Yi also became aware that things were going wrong. So, she quickly and stealthily thrust her hands underneath, and pushed the prop up. And, she didn't dare to run recklessly again. Instead, the little girl started to look around in a sneaky manner...

"Stop! What a scandal!" Old Lady Dugu walked with her crutches as she angrily shouted.

The nine men of the Family were still having a go at each other. In fact, this grandfather-father-son gang still seemed in high spirits. Their enthusiastic exchange of punches and kicks was producing enough ruckus to give competition to a busy downtown slaughter house.

"Xiao Yi! You come over here!" Old Lady Dugu couldn't do anything about the men and their fighting. So, she turned her eyes and called out.

"Wh... why? It's inconvenient for a pregnant body like mine!" Dugu Xiao Yi slowly came over while holding her belly. She suddenly seemed docile, and looked somewhat guilty.

"You've been running around ever since you've come back. That wasn't inconvenient...? Let me take a proper look!" Old Lady Dugu carefully extended her hand, and felt the girl's belly. However, Dugu Xiao Yi spread her arms in alarm, and jumped back like a small and nimble deer. She then vigilantly spoke-up, "Wat are you doing, Grandma?! This is your grandson! You must be careful..."

She hadn't even finished speaking when there was a soft "plop"

sound. And, the 'child she was heavy with' suddenly fell down her clothes. It fell down with a "puff", bounced twice, and trembled as it rolled around three meters before it came to a halt. It was a round pillow. And, it even had embroidery on it—an adorable kitten!

A jump rope was attached to it like long ribbon. And, another one still hung from Dugu Xiao Yi's waist.

This act was obviously going to lead to a difficult aftermath. Dugu Xiao Yi quickly hopped back, and revealed a 'cat's out of the bag' expression...

"This... This..." Dugu Xiao Yi's lips were drawn. She covered her embarrassed face with her hands. She suddenly felt ashamed and speechless. Moreover, her lovely face had turned very red.

This development blew away the entire family like a landmine!

Old Man Dugu Zong Heng choked as he opened his mouth wide. His clenched fist had stopped midair, and his face had become ashen.

Dugu Wu Di slumped to the ground with his eyes opened to their extreme. He was covered in dust, and had an extremely incredulous expression.

Dugu Chong felt wronged as he looked at his grandfather. His mouth twisted as he mumbled, "I had told you that nothing had happened... I said there wasn't any mishap. It would've been impossible for me to not know if something had happened. I had told you..."

"You had also said that you're an idiot! You need a good spanking!" Dugu Zong Heng's roar was like a terrifying thunderclap. Dugu Chong withdrew his neck, and shut his mouth when he heard it.

Dugu Zong Heng's face twisted as he started to stalk Dugu Xiao Yi like a tiger. He smiled in rage, "Good! Good! Good girl! You've

grown up now. You fooled your grandfather... that's amazing..." The old man nodded fiercely; he didn't know what else to say...

"Grandpa... I... Grandpa... I... I... I..." Dugu Xiao Yi lost her mind in fear, and turned her beady eyes around. She then drew back in panic, and looked around for help. But, everyone suddenly looked away and refused to help.

[This girl is out of control. She needs a moral lesson! God knows what will happen if she doesn't get one... This is scandalous! A young girl from a big and noble family caused such an incident?! She fooled her own family. Moreover, she went ahead and faked her pregnancy in front of thousands of people to draw attention towards herself!]

"I'll break you to pieces!" Dugu Wu Di spoke everyone's thoughts out loud.

"Help..." Dugu Xiao Yi turned to run. However, Dugu Zong Heng took great strides and pulled the long ribbon that was dangling on the ground behind her. It appeared like he was fishing, and the little girl was the fish that was stuck on the baited hook. She flew back with a 'whooshing' sound, and dropped on her palms and knees with a loud "Bang!".

Dugu Xiao Yi struggled and shrieked as tears streamed down her face.

Dugu Zong Heng hadn't felt much about beating his grandsons. But, he felt sorry for his granddaughter when he had barely given two slaps to her. Therefore, he didn't hit her again...

"Let me deal with this disobedient girl, Father! I won't let her..." Dugu Wu Di crawled off the floor as he rubbed his hands and rolled his sleeves. He had a very fierce expression on his face, "This girl has played tricks on me! She deserves a moral lesson! I'll break her bones!"

"What will I hand over this girl to you for, you bastard?!" Dugu

Zong Heng's beard puffed as he shouted. "Xiao Yi's body is delicate; how can you beat her? Back off!"

Dark lines appeared on Dugu Wu Di's face. [You just gave two slaps to that 'delicate' thing. But, you suddenly feel sorry for my daughter when I want to deal with her? Can't you believe that I might also go easy on her? But, you're suddenly protecting her again now...]

Chapter 454: Leave Everything to Me!

Dugu Xiao Yi stood up sobbing, and wiped her tears. She looked like she had been seriously wronged.

The entire family became silent as they looked at that pillow in the distance.

The face of Dugu Xiao Yi's mother was full of helplessness for a long while. Then, she eventually looked at her mother-in-law, "Mother... what should we do about this?"

Old Lady Dugu panted with rage, "What should we do about it...? Put some dressing on it!" She snorted heavily before she gave a long sigh. Then, she said, "The matter has already reached this far. So, what can be done now?"

Dugu Zong Heng's eyes were opened wide. He too panted with rage, "What can be done...? This girl appeared pregnant to everyone! And, I'm sure that everyone in Tian Xiang believes that the Granddaughter of the Dugu Family is pregnant with the Jun Family's child! So, what can we do? Fu*k! This thing has happened to the Dugu Family! This old man is very furious! Anyone else taking advantage of this situation would've been better than that Jun Family! Our family is very unfortunate!"

"Father, you mean that..." Dugu Wu Di spoke-up very cautiously. He had finally understood the matter. Today's biggest error wasn't made by Dugu Xiao Yi — but by him. It seemed that everything he had spoken was wrong. And, it had now become a thorn at the old man's side...

[My maiden daughter isn't pregnant. So, she won't be birthing an illegitimate child...]

"What do I mean...? This is disgraceful! What does this mean for our family? What does this mean for your daughter? I'm saying that our Dugu Family's bad reputation will reach the heavens!

Can't you use your brains? You, you, you only want to infuriate this old man further, don't you? You idiot!" Dugu Zong Heng jumped up, and started to rain curses.

Dugu Wu Di withdrew his neck, and became silent. [I'll get a scolding if I speak up. But, he won't let me stay silent either...]

"Why don't you speak? Can't you speak? You still dare to stay quiet and rebel against me? This behooves you!" Old Man Dugu circled like an evil monster as his finger pointed at General Dugu's nose, while his saliva sprayed like rain.

[I didn't expect that staying silent would also cause so much trouble.] Dugu Wu Di had been rendered speechless.

"Tomorrow, we will arrange our men to go to the Jun Family in order to talk this matter over. We can't let that brat do the damage and slip away so cleanly! That brat is the reason behind this chaos!" Old Lady Dugu boldly made a decision, "That debauchee brat will feel very satisfied after he marries my granddaughter. Let me meet him tomorrow!"

"Tomorrow... isn't that good. The Jun family is also facing trouble right now. So, tomorrow... is troublesome." Dugu Wu Di pulled his head back to look at his mother. He had a sense of foreboding.

"I said we'll go tomorrow. So, we'll go tomorrow! And, there won't be any questions about it!" Old Lady Dugu glared wide eyed, "You father-son and seven idiots will deal with whatever's happening in the capital! What's the big deal about it? What's it worth! Even a barnyard is as noisy as this city!"

"Jun Mo Xie is massacring people throughout the capital!" Dugu Wu Di spoke-up in a low voice. However, he saw that no one reacted. So, he continued to speak, "That brat is very ferocious!"

"Very ferocious!" the old lady nodded in a gratified manner, "This old lady's son-in-law can't be a weakling! There's a rumor that he

prevailed over four Spirit Xuan experts! I had always thought that it was a rumor. But, I can tell that his power reaches the heavens now that I see him massacring the entire city. He's a powerful youngster!" Then, she suddenly became angry, "You shameful bastard! You know that we are on the same boat as the Jun Family now. But, you still haven't gone to help them?! What will you do if they bully Xiao Yi after the marriage because our family didn't support them? Will you take responsibility for it?"

Dugu Wu Di was left stunned by this.

[My parents are unreasonable! I had always thought that mother is reasonable...]

[How did they come to this? They're already thinking of Xiao Yi's happiness after marriage?]

[My mother genuinely has a long foresight...]

The women suddenly crowded around the old lady and Dugu Xiao Yi, and began to chatter and giggle. The wedding discussions could already be heard in the distance. In fact, even the birth of children and their names were being discussed...

Dugu Wu Di and Dugu Zong Heng looked at each other in dismay. They didn't know whether to laugh or cry...

A long while passed like this. Then, Old Man Dugu suddenly raised his leg and kicked Dugu Wu Di's posterior, "You're still too unhappy to help, you bastard? What are you doing standing here? What's so good to see here?"

Dugu Wu Di hastily sneaked away. But, he was still mad inside. [Jun Mo Xie... fu*k you! Everything has happened because of you... you shameless bastard...]

The seven "Heroes and Legends Bravely Rushing Forward" saw their grandfather looking at them. So, they quickly got up as well, and fled in Dugu Wu Di's stead...

The world outside was crowding with people, and the entire city

was being turned upside down. However, Jun Mo Xie was at home. And, he was preparing for his grandfather's advancement with full devotion.

[This is a world where the strong are respected. So, the faster one becomes stronger — the better it is! Anyway, where could those clown standing outside run to? A monk may run away. But, he can never run from the temples!]

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie wasn't too anxious about making reprisals. Moreover, he felt that those people would only discuss about matters that would intimidate them further...

He had first taken Guan Qing Han back to her courtyard when they had returned. However, she had told him to stay when he was about to leave...

Jun Mo Xie had turned around in astonishment... only to see that Guan Qing Han was standing delicately and timidly at the doorway. Her figure was slight, and her face seemed thinned out. She appeared to be cowering in fear as she looked into Jun Mo Xie's eyes with an expression of seeking protection.

Jun Mo Xie looked back at Guan Qing Han. And, she somewhat lowered her head as tears fell down her face, and onto the ground...

Jun Mo Xie trembled inside. [This woman!]

[This beautiful woman... this unrivalled beauty... who knows how much she has had to endure...! How much torment she has gone through?]

[Who would have empathized with her? I suppose that the men are supreme, and women are worth less than servants' clothes.] However, Jun Mo Xie had crossed over from the modern world. So, he could somewhat understand her terrible suffering. Only he could put himself in her shoes, and only he could think about her from a woman's point of view...

No one else could do it. And, even if anyone could think about it — they'd think it right!

But, was it?

This woman had always been like ice. She was a proud and cold woman. But, she was still a woman in the end. And, she had finally shown her weakness!

Perhaps the cold and aloof mannerism of Guan Qing Han's had been nothing other than helplessness of a sort. After all, a young lady in the prime of her youth had been turned into nothing but a tool to climb up the social ladder for the sake of powerful! And, men of this world had fixed that life for her...

The realization that her fiancé was someone with a heroic character must've consoled the young lady's heart a little. It wasn't long before her wedding... It wasn't long before she would be draped in silk... It wasn't long before she'd get to assist her husband in running the house and raising the children... However, she had suddenly gotten to hear the news of her fiancé's death instead of the wedding bells. Her fiancé had fallen and died in battle...

She had suffered a huge loss, but she still went ahead and got married for her family. Some of it was voluntary, and some it was forced. But, how could she have been forced if she had done it voluntarily...?

She would've perhaps become another tool for more power if she had remained with her family. But, it wouldn't have been so with the Jun Family. She would've surely been alone in the Jun Family, but she would also have been free and peaceful. Moreover, she would've been away from those ugly schemes...

Therefore, she had consented to come to her fiancé's family in despair.

Otherwise, how could a flowery girl whose tenderness could give

rise to a poetic dream in any man's life agree to marry a deceased hero for the sake of a life of loneliness?

However, Guan Qing Han genuinely hadn't had any other option.

She had already come to despair everything. She despaired of marriage... of the very thought of marriage... even of life!

Therefore, she came to the Jun Family. And, the Jun Family was fortunately good to her. But then, the matter with the Xue Hun Manor appeared after a while...

And thus, her already-despairing family had been forced into a tough situation.

Guan Qing Han had thought of dying...

However, the Jun Family would've endured the very heavens for her. Therefore, she wouldn't have regretted doing anything for Jun Family. She genuinely wouldn't have regretted! So, she followed the army to Southern Heaven City with secret intentions to sacrifice herself for the Jun Family.

She didn't need to sacrifice herself in the end. However, another mishap occurred. Jun Mo Xie — her brother-in-law was affected by an aphrodisiac and his life was rendered in peril. And, the one who had caused that evil had already fled in panic. She knew that she could've left if she wanted. But, where would she have found a woman in the military camp?

[Wouldn't Jun Mo Xie die burning with desire if we can't find a woman?]

Therefore, Guan Qing Han had no other choice but to use her body in order to save him.

Someone could argue that Guan Qing Han knew the affections Dugu Xiao Yi had for Jun Mo Xie. So, why hadn't she called her back instead?

However, how could she have explained it to the girl's family?

And, why had Dugu Xiao Yi escaped in the first place? Didn't she know the consequences of administering the drug? Who would administer an aphrodisiac and not know what would happen as a result? Dugu Xiao Yi might have been an exception, but Guan Qing Han wasn't...

She had thought; [why would she run if she has administered him with an aphrodisiac? But, would she return if she has already fled...?]

Guan Qing Han was left with no other choice once she had realized this. Therefore, she could only give her virtue to the Jun Family... She could only give her benefactor-family a chance to continue their bloodline...

Guan Qing Han had no choice. Moreover, her honor also prevented her from going back. It didn't matter how she felt about Jun Mo Xie — she couldn't cower in the face of this situation!

But, she was caught in a storm when she saved Jun Mo Xie's life. And, she was stained with the accusations of the whole world as a result. She was stained with the immorality of a relationship between a brother and sister-in-law... And, she couldn't escape that black mark no matter what the reason behind her actions...

Her honor!

The honor of the two families!

Her virtue!

Her chastity!

The pressure of these matters had left her to suffocate.

Guan Qing Han had wanted to kill herself every time Jun Mo Xie had even harbored a tiny speck of hesitation with respect to that incident. And, making herself return to Tian Xiang City was already the bravest thing she had ever done in her life.

Because she still had a little hope in her heart...

And, Jun Mo Xie hadn't let her down!

However, she still felt vulnerable like before. In fact, she felt as vulnerable as a sea weed in an ocean current.

Jun Mo Xie's heart pounded as he took two steps forward. The two had looked deep into each other's eyes. And, Jun Mo Xie had finally seen the helplessness and despair of Guan Qing Han's eyes.

Jun Mo Xie looked at her carefully as he raised his hand and held hers. Then, he spoke in a soft but firm tone, "Don't be afraid! Leave... everything to me!"

Jun Mo Xie's words were like an astonishing sword piercing through the haze in the sky. And, that sky full of black clouds was suddenly pierced by a small ray of light...

In fact, these words had resembled the grandeur of a boundless mountain... they were as inexhaustible as a bottomless river... they were as thunderous as a torrential snowfall in open summer... And, Guan Qing Han suddenly felt like she could rely on these words as if they were the unshakable base of a towering mountain peak!

Guan Qing Han's eyes suddenly shone like a full moon.

Her lips trembled a little as she withdrew her curled hand from the warmth of Jun Mo Xie's palm... even though she didn't want to.

However, Jun Mo Xie didn't let it go. He held it even tighter instead as he spoke-up again.

"Don't be afraid! Leave everything to me!"

Guan Qing Han finally submitted to Jun Mo Xie's grasp. Her lips moved, but no words came out... Only two tears streamed down.

[These hands are very strong! And, very... warm!]

Guan Qing Han's tears fell like rain.

Chapter 455: Advancements and Suspicions

Jun Mo Xie left Guan Qing Han's place, and made his way to his own courtyard to check Ye Gu Han's condition. After all, Ye Gu Han's Xuan cultivation had been destroyed, and his dantian had been damaged. Therefore, his physical condition had been rendered even worse than that of a normal man. However, he couldn't guess where Ye Gu Han had suddenly found a desire to live from. Moreover, his broken body was overflowing with vitality. And, that had left Jun Mo Xie very surprised.

What is one's state of affairs? Individual perseverance, personality, and the will to live! However, Ye Gu Han's state of affairs had surprised Young Master Jun. But, Ye Gu Han was sleeping and Jun Mo Xie didn't wish to disturb him. Jun Mo Xie had only saved him to preserve his Third Uncle's honor. In fact, he wouldn't have done it unless his uncle had made that promise. It wouldn't have matter to him how much Princess Ling Meng would have begged him. Her evocation of the selfless love hadn't moved him either. His uncle's word had been the only that had compelled him to save Ye Gu Han.

The Young Master then returned to hall, and started to plan over the preparations for his grandfather's advancement.

However, Jun Mo Xie wasn't very anxious about this. After all, he had always believed that a good thing couldn't be acquired instantly; the same was even truer for a great ones! Moreover, the opportunity could always be snatched by someone else even if it was presently in one's own hands. Therefore, it couldn't be truly one's own unless it had been digested inside one's belly.

And, the peak level-nine Xuan core's situation was something of this sort. It had once created a huge sensation, and had drawn people from every corner of the world. Therefore, such a great thing could be snatched away at any time...

The Jun Family had seized a lot of opportunities of late. And, this had materialized into many great advantages for them. Therefore, they could look down on the Tian Xiang Empire... and even the entire world! But, Young Master Jun clearly understood that the Jun Family was still very weak on the inside. In fact, they were far off from being a true Super Family. After all, this was merely a bluff — they were only an empty shell at the moment!

His fictitious Master was the largest advantage which the Jun Family had relied on. However, that extremely powerful and mysterious Master obviously didn't exist. Moreover, the Jun Family didn't have a true Spirit Xuan expert either. Jun Mo Xie may have become known for having defeated four Spirit Xuan experts. However, there was a lot of exaggeration to that claim.

The Jun Family's growth into a real Super Family would require a long period of strenuous efforts. However, it would be necessary for the Jun Family to have a true Spirit Xuan expert in their ranks until then. Therefore, helping the old man advance to the Spirit Xuan Level had taken top priority.

Jun Mo Xie took the baffled Jun Zhan Tian to the basement of the newly built tower along with the prairie's Solitary Falcon. This tower had been built as per Jun Mo Xie's special request. This tower was particularly strong, and the large granite steps were tightly wound. This had given a 'sealed' effect to the tower's interiors. In fact, the world outside wouldn't be able to hear any sounds even if someone were to deliberately shout and yell inside this tower!

This had obviously been built for this specific moment...

After all, the fluctuations in the power of a peak level-nine Xuan Core was too great!

Jun Mo Xie had given Jun Wu Yi detailed instructions in advance. Therefore, Jun Wu Yi stationed elite troops around the tower for protection once the three men had entered the tower.

Moreover, there were as many as ten more guards hiding in the secrecy of darkness. Jun Wu Yi, Song Shang, and Hai Chen Feng — the three Sky Xuan experts took to their three respective sections, and stood guard. Moreover, they took extreme precautions in doing so. They had eliminated every eventuality, and ensured that it would be impossible to disturb the proceedings inside.

Jun Mo Xie's personal teams of Heaven Destroyers and Spirit Devourers were tasked with the security of the inner-most layer. They were hidden in secret places, and were equipped with swords and the 'Xuan Beast Tendon' crossbows. In fact, their weapons were so sharp that they were gleaming with cold lights.

There were a myriad of traps everywhere — string traps, poison, smoke traps, and so on. Seven or eight places even had the secret weapons which Jun Mo Xie had forged. Moreover, these weapons had been dipped in poison beforehand. Therefore, one wrong step in the darkness, and even a Sky or Spirit Xuan expert would find themselves doomed for eternity. In fact, it could be assumed that one's blood will have spilled out in less than five breaths.

In fact, even a Great Master would find it extremely difficult to break past this kind of a fighting strength and ambush arrangements.

Inside the tower...

Jun Mo Xie took out the Xuan core, and its energy radiated everywhere. Solitary Flacon stared wide eyed, and gaped for a while. Then, he eventually spoke-up, "Fu*k! Men from around the world were fighting each other to death over this. Even I didn't bat an eye before I left the grasslands and came here over this. But, I had never imagined that it nestled in the safety of your possession. In fact, it didn't even appear out in the open! But, the thing that we had fought over... what was that?"

"That... was obviously a fake one!" Jun Mo Xie rubbed his nose. He smiled mischievously, and spoke without a hint of

embarrassment, "I had felt very bad when I saw you fight over it so enthusiastically that night."

Solitary Falcon snorted, "Just look at you smiling like that! Where are you even the least bit bothered? Even getting mad at you is a waste of feelings. Anyway, I don't care about it! I didn't want that core from the very beginning! To temper oneself and advance on one's own is the path of honor!"

"It's a good thing that you aren't offended. Such an open-minded Great Master would be perfect to guide my grandfather," Jun Mo Xie stated with a chuckle. His words had obviously been one of ridicule. However, his expression suddenly became very dignified. He then turned towards Solitary Falcon and spoke seriously.

"Please, Master Falcon!"

Jun Mo Xie had spoken these words very earnestly. After all, Jun Zhan Tian was the first amongst Jun Mo Xie's acknowledged relatives. Advancing his grandfather's strength was surely very important. But, his life was even more so. Advancing power was unimportant in comparison to preserving life. In fact, advancement was inconsequential. However, preserving one's life was crucial!

The Young Master had enough assurance regarding that matter. But, he had still spoken those words because he wanted Solitary Falcon to know that they couldn't fail in this matter.

They couldn't afford to fail!

Only success was allowed; failure wasn't.

Solitary Falcon facial expression suddenly became solemn. He then assumed a rare and dignified mannerism as he replied in a heavy tone, "Don't worry!" However, he then frowned and said, "But, I can't do this on my own. I'll require several medicines for assistance. And, those medicines are..."

Jun Mo Xie turned his palm and rubbed them together, and three

kinds of medicines came out.

Moreover, they were three wondrous medicines.

Heavenly Star Grass;

Tri-Colored Mushroom;

And, Nine Xuan Root!

Three kinds of special medicines were required to fuse the Xuan core. And, not one was missing; each one of them was available. Moreover, each of them was twice the usual quality, and far surpassed the usual standard.

Solitary Falcon exclaimed when he saw this. Then, he carefully inspected them and said, "You possess the greatest ability, you brat! There won't be any problems since you've already prepared these!"

Jun Zhan Tian had just realized that Jun Mo Xie was going to use the peal level-nine Xuan Core to force his advancement. However, he couldn't help but be annoyed, "Mo Xie, your grandfather is very old! So, what's the point of using such a great thing on me? Don't waste this extremely treasured gift! Don't waste this excellent opportunity! Moreover, you'll also be wasting the great Xuan strength of Solitary Falcon. Advance your Third Uncle's cultivation if you wish to use this on someone! That would be great for the Jun Family. In fact, it would be much better! But, using this on me is a huge waste!"

Jun Mo Xie smiled slightly. His eyes had filled with a profound emotion as he slowly said, "Grandfather's words are wrong. It's urgent to use this thing only because Grandfather is so old. A person's age is of consequence. An average person can live for about sixty to eighty years as long as there's no accident. A Xuan expert can live to an average of hundred years, and a Sky Xuan peak expert will live from hundred-fifty years to two-hundred years. However, this is only true as long as the individual hasn't

met with any serious accidents...

The Young Master then sighed and continued, "But, Grandfather has been fighting since his youth, and has been on military campaigns his entire life. So, I believe that you have suffered many major and minor injuries. Your body has been damaged over this long period of time. And, the same can be said for your meridians as well. You are in a pure Xuan environment at the moment. So, there shouldn't be a problem with your health. But, your injuries could burst forth if you were to get involved in a violent fight... or were to suffer from a sudden illness. And, your health's situation would become hopeless if that were to happen. But, your lifespan will increase by a hundred years if you use this Xuan Core. Moreover, it will nurse your health, and your physical condition will also be brought to its optimum state."

Jun Mo Xie smiled and continued, "Third Uncle and I have other means. And, they are more effective. So, don't worry about us."

Jun Zhan Tian stroked his beard as he pondered in silence. However, he still seemed unwilling to assent. After all, he had the mindset of an old man — he hated using the good things he had procured over his lifespan. Instead, he wished that those good things would be used by his descendants when they'd need them. In fact, he would be satisfied even if he got nothing of what he had earned. He'd be very satisfied indeed...

Such was the old-man-like Jun Zhan Tian currently harbored.

Jun Mo Xie saw that the old man was still hesitant. So, he hurriedly spoke-up, "I will destroy this thing if you don't agree to use it. This is a great thing, but it can stir up a lot of trouble. Moreover, Third Uncle and I won't be using it anyway. Grandfather... you must know that you're the martial backbone of this family. In fact, you're the most important individual if the overall situation is taken into account!"

Jun Zhan Tian had no choice but to agree since Jun Mo Xie had

put such a condition. However, he still tried to confirm whether Jun Mo Xie and Jun Wu Yi had any other means. After all, he needed the assurance.

Jun Mo Xie couldn't say much in front of Solitary Falcon. Some things anyway couldn't be spoken out loud. However, it took a lot of brains to dodge the old man's interrogative questions. So much so that it made his back sweat...

Jun Mo Xie was someone who wouldn't even blink if he saw the whole world being slaughtered. However, he had a very tough time in convincing this one man...

Jun Mo Xie hurriedly got busy in grinding the Heavenly Star Grass into pieces the moment Grandfather Jun eventually agreed. After all, he was afraid that the nightmare-ish interrogation would start again. He then pasted the mashed Heavenly Star Grass on the Xuan Core's surface. This gave rise to a flash of red light. And, the violently fluctuating force of the Xuan Core suddenly stabilized. In fact, it had suddenly become reserved, and had started to resemble an obedient and cultured child.

However, Jun Mo Xie couldn't even sigh due to the paucity of time. He quickly turned towards Solitary Falcon, and made a gesture. Solitary Falcon understood the tactic gesture, and went behind Jun Zhan Tian. He then placed one of his palms at the back of Jun Zhan Tian's head, while the other was positioned at the middle of his back. Jun Zhan Tian sat down crossed-legged as this happened, and solemnly closed his eyes.

The bitter and fragrant scent of the Tri-Colored Mushroom filled the air soon after. Jun Mo Xie initiated the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune, and the Tri-Colored Mushroom's efficacy started to seep into the Xuan Core; he didn't waste any of it in the process. Suddenly, that pitch-black darkness of the Xuan Core was replaced by the brightness of a rising sun. In fact, it was so bright that it was painful to even look at it...

This dazzling bright light might be difficult to look at. However, anyone under its glare would feel a sense of great peace of mind.

Jun Mo Xie didn't miss a beat, and started to make the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune work faster. The Xuan Core became bright again, and flickered violently. Then, a bright river of yellow suddenly shot out of the Xuan Core with a sweet and fragrant smell. And, it went right into Jun Zhan Tian's mouth.

The last remaining thing in the Young Master's hand — the Nine Xuan Root — suddenly turned into a thick stream of a sky blue liquid at this time, and shot into the air. It then entered the old man's mouth as well. The timing was precise; it wasn't even a moment off target!

Solitary Falcon also unleashed his great aura as this happened. And, it also flowed into Jun Zhan Tian's meridians in a continuous stream...

Jun Mo Xie finally relaxed and breathed a sigh of relief.

[Everything is going well now! In fact, this can be called half-a-success already!] Whether it was the Heavenly Star Grass or the Tri-Colored Mushroom — Jun Mo Xie had chosen the best. And, he had employed an even better portion of the Nine Xuan Root...

[There is no doubt about grandfather's advancement owing to the harmonious mixture of the three herbs and the addition of Solitary Falcon's great strength!]

Jun Mo Xie used his spirit sense to check out the surroundings. After all, this was a critical moment. And, even a little bit of disturbance could be devastating for the man advancing to the Spirit Xuan Realm. In fact, even the Great Master could suffer harm if something bad happened! Therefore, he couldn't be careless by any means.

In fact, Jun Mo Xie was very surprised when Solitary Falcon had agreed to help. He genuinely hadn't expected the Great Master to

agree so readily. After all, how could a man with Solitary Falcon's experience not understand the degree of danger in this process?

Any failure in this advancement process could lead to a calamity!

In fact, there could be a threat to both of them even if a three-year-old child were to start crying at this moment. The two of them could even spiral into a devil's bite!

Jun Mo Xie had expected that he would have to spend some serious effort in talking the Great Master into it. In fact, he had even considered the various conditions the Great Master might put forth. However, he didn't need to go to those lengths in the end. Thus, it seemed that even the vilest of hearts could develop a sentiment of attachment if they were given enough time to bond. And, even a Great Master was no exception to it.

Everything was quiet outside the tower; there was no trace of movement.

It seemed that everything was safe and sound for this process. So, Jun Mo Xie finally breathed a sigh of relief...

However, Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt that he was forgetting something. But, he couldn't seem to recall what it was even though he tried hard. So, he couldn't help but pay rapt attention to the details as he calmly pondered if he hadn't been overlooking something... or had forgetting something.

A thick white mist emerged from Jun Zhan Tian. It then gradually enveloped Solitary Falcon as well...

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but recall the pure aura of the Hong Jun Pagoda as he witnessed this scene. Then, he recalled that strange white mist he had seen inside the Tian Fa Forest. He sighed; [this world is truly strange and very big.]

Suddenly, something flashed brightly inside the Young Master's mind, and he suddenly remembered what he had forgotten.

[Mei Xue Yan! Mei Qian Qian!]

[These two women had come to the city with us. And, I clearly remember seeing them with Guan Qing Han in the carriage when I was entering the city. But, how could they disappear so suddenly and incomprehensibly?]

[When did they leave the carriage? And, when did they disappear?]

Jun Mo Xie gasped and frowned.

[There was a lot of chaos at that time. But, I'm used to dealing with such situations. My eyes look at all the roads, and my ears hear everything! They were behind me, and shouldn't have been able to conceal escaping the carriage from me. But, I still didn't notice when they disappeared!]

Moreover, the appearance of such a beautiful girl ought to have caused a sensation in the crowd. But, Jun Mo Xie clearly recalled that he hadn't seen an astonished expression in the eyes of anyone at that time...

This meant that no one had caught a glimpse of them!

[But, how could they disappear like that? I had used every method to check those two out, and I hadn't found anything odd with them! Can it be that these two women are so talented that even I can't see it? Do they have such strength that they could stealthily escape from under my nose? What kind of strength would someone need to pull that off?]

[How frightening must they be?!]

[Those two women may have been more than they had seemed. In fact, they may even have been stronger than me. But, they couldn't have been absolutely unreachable, right? Moreover, they couldn't have surpassed the level of a Great Master? That would be utter nonsense!]

[But then... how do I explain this incident if that's not the case?]

Jun Mo Xie frowned as an alarm sounded inside his head. He

replayed every interaction with them in his mind — right from the time he had first met them... and, to the time they had entered the Tian Xiang City.

He carefully went over every tiny movement, and every little expression those two women had made. And, he was finally able to find to suspicious things. First — the green-clothed girl's appearance had undergone a slight change over the course of that one month's journey. This slight change was only related to a margin variation in the thickness of her eyebrows. However, Jun Mo Xie had been able to spot it nonetheless.

[The green-clothed girl had changed her appearance. This is confirmed; there's no doubt about it. But, why did she change her appearance? It certainly wouldn't have made a difference when it comes to being inside an army camp. Could she be afraid of being recognized? But, this means that I have seen her before!]

[So, who is she?]

[That Mei Xue Yan hadn't changed her appearance. That's obvious too. Moreover, her preconceived notions about me were also obvious. And, she had continuously caused me trouble throughout the journey. That is also something I must consider. But, had I offended her in the past?]

[But, she hadn't altered her appearance, and I haven't seen her before. So, when did I offend her...?]

[Besides, I would have never forgotten such an exceptional beauty if I had seen her before!]

[Moreover, they were having a confrontation with the Silver City's team when we met them!]

Jun Mo Xie gave a long sigh; [these two women obviously aren't normal.] Jun Mo Xie thought it over and over, but he couldn't figure out who those women were.

Then, another doubt emerged in his mind. [The green-clothed

girl must've been related to the Snake King in some manner! How else could there have been so many snakes to trouble me throughout the journey? She may not be the Snake King, but she must be her sister or something! There's no mistake about this!]

[But, who was that white-clothed girl? Mei Xue Yan... I've never heard of it before. Could it be that... she's related to that Lady Yue'er from the Spirit Fog Lake?]

Then, Jun Mo Xie suddenly came up with a strange thought; [I fear that I will have many entanglements with those two ladies in the future.]

[It could possibly be troublesome...]

Then, there was the aspect of his luck with women. Jun Mo Xie knew that he looked handsome. But, he wasn't narcissistic enough to think any woman would fall in love with him at first sight...

[Everything is inextricable... I can't find the slightest of clues. This is very irritating...] Jun Mo Xie sighed.

"What are you sighing over, you brat?" a voice echoed from somewhere.

Jun Mo Xie opened his eyes to see a shining Jun Zhan Tian standing in front of him. However, Grandfather Jun was giving him a look of concern at the moment. So, Jun Mo Xie asked in a pleasant manner, "How do you feel, Grandfather? Have you made your breakthrough?"

"Breakthrough...? Isn't this a breakthrough?" Old Man Jun puffed his beard as he laughed heartily, "This is a huge breakthrough! I'd never even dreamed of such a big one in my life!"

"It indeed is! Mr. Jun's progress is genuinely unbelievable!" Solitary Falcon had done his best. His tone carried traces of exhaustion in it. However, his tone also had hints of admiration and envy...

"Your grandfather nearly sucked my energy dry in the last

stage..." The Great Master smiled bitterly, "And, that Xuan Core's strength is amazing. In fact, such a huge progress has been rarely seen from time immemorial! Such a huge progress in such a short time..." Solitary Falcon smiled in agony before he continued, "I've only practiced my entire life. But, I feel kind of stupid after witnessing such a tremendous result..."

"The advancement is huge, right?" Jun Mo Xie asked in ecstasy.

"It's far from huge!" Jun Zhan Tian laughed happily. Then, he spoke-up with a merry smile, "I was at Sky Xuan peak before the breakthrough — right at the edge of the breakthrough to enter the Spirit Xuan Realm! But, I've succeeded in reaching the Spirit Xuan Realm because of the Xuan Core and Solitary Falcon's strength!"

"Your grandfather broke through the strong barrier above the peak of Sky Xuan right after he absorbed the strength from the Xuan Core. And, he reached straight to the second level of the Spirit Xuan Realm!" Solitary Falcon sighed, "But, it doesn't end with that. The effect of that Xuan Core had slowed down by this point. However, the three medicines' power surged ferociously at this stage, and revitalized the Xuan Core's potency. This pushed things forward again. Their power then gushed through his meridians, and nearly killed us! I somehow managed to protect your grandfather's meridians. Then, I suddenly realized that... that your grandfather is one lucky old man! He luckily broke through to level three, and settled there!"

"Are you saying that my grandfather is at level three of the Spirit Xuan realm? So, he's only slightly underneath that Xiao Bu Yu?" Jun Mo Xie clapped his hands in excitement as he laughed, "The result is nearly the same as I had expected. I had thought that he would reach the second level of Spirit Xuan. But, it has gone one level beyond that!"

"What one level beyond that...?! The second level of Spirit Xuan also has three levels — basic, middle, and peak. The third level of the Spirit Xuan Realm comes after these three sub-levels. And, he

has gone straight to level three Spirit Xuan's first level! In fact, your grandfather is at the peak of the first sub-level of the Spirit Xuan's third level! Damn it! He's truly very lucky..." Solitary Falcon waved his sleeves with a 'whooshing' sound. He felt very uneasy and tired, "I'm going to sleep! I don't want to stay around you stupidly happy grandfather-grandson duo!"

Jun Zhan Tian laughed heartily as he raised his clasped hands, "Thanks so much for your great help, Senior Falcon! I can't thank you enough! My entire family can't thank you enough!"

Solitary Falcon smiled and floated away.

Chapter 456: Dropping-in to Murder

Jun Zhan Tian was very excited after having made his breakthrough. So, he kept talking for a long time before he discovered that his grandson was holding his nose. The youngster wasn't able to talk, and looked sullen as well. He then looked at the way his grandson was looking at him, and he couldn't help becoming a bit suspicious. [Is something wrong with my body? How can you treat your grandfather that way?]

He then subconsciously looked himself. And, he found that something was indeed wrong — there was something on his body. He was covered in stains. His loose robes were sticking to his body for some reason. And, his normally white gown was covered in thick layers of stain. However, the old man didn't bother to inspect the color of the stains. However, he had suddenly started to feel wrinkly and uneasy over his entire body.

The old man came from a background of generals. So, he hadn't cared about such things in the past. But, he was a duke nowadays, and had been living like a prince for many years. Moreover, he had raised his standards, and had also developed an obsession with cleanliness. And, he paid careful attention to these aspects in front of the younger generation in particular. Therefore, he cried out in fear when he became aware of this shameful incident. He then disappeared into the shadows with a 'whooshing' sound. However, he left these words behind, "This old man is going to bathe. I'll return in a moment."

Jun Mo Xie laughed involuntarily.

This was normal. After all, his grandfather had broken through a tough barrier a moment ago. Moreover, he had covered several levels, and had increased his strength by a lot. He had taken assistance from a Great Master and a very power external item. This had cleansed him very thoroughly. And, the impurity that had accumulated inside his body over the past decades had come

out as a result. Moreover, the injuries he had sustained since his youth had been cleared away along with any other dormant illnesses. In fact, the Young Master would've doubted that something may have gone wrong with his grandfather's breakthrough if this filth hadn't been ejected from his body.

Jun Mo Xie was certain that Jun Zhan Tian could easily live up to two-hundred years or more now. In fact, there wasn't any doubt about it. Moreover, his ability to defend himself had also increased by a great margin. In fact, he could even contend against a Great Master if he were to couple his current strength with the marvelous martial arts that Jun Mo Xie knew.

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie finally laid his worries to rest...

Then, the Young Master suddenly exposed a heartfelt smile. He was felt very gratified and happy at this moment.

After all, this was a world where the clenched fist was the greatest argument. So, this was the only way to ensure the safety of his family here.

What did people live their lives for?

It could be said that people didn't care for their own fate. Instead, it could be said that people lived for the sake of others — for the people they cared about... for those who cared for them... for their close and loved ones!

He had been alone in his past life. But, it would make for a perfunctory statement if one were to say that he had lived only for himself. And, that's because he also wanted to live for someone else. But, no one like that had existed in his life. So, he had lived-on by relying on the belief he held in his heart. [Who could be worthy of receiving my affections? Who can be worth it?]

He had robbed the rich to help the poor. He had reprimand debauchery. However, he had lived for his country, and he had lived for his people. In other words, he had done everything he

could to hold up the belief he had held in his heart. He had been an assassin his previous life, but he had still fought for justice. However, he had done that for the sake of the justice his heart had believed in.

He had killed and bullied without bothering about it. But, that belief in his heart had remained unwavering.

The man had walked on the most unjust roads of the world, but he had always done so to take care of the injustice in the world.

However, he had continually walked away from the so-called 'path of righteousness' by doing so.

Jun Mo Xie... Jun Xie had been very lonely. An average person couldn't understand that kind of helplessness.

However, he unexpectedly had a family in this life. Moreover, Jun Mo Xie had accepted his new identity, and had also accepted this new family.

Jun Zhan Tian had plunged the Capital in a bloodbath for him. And, Jun Mo Xie was enshrouded by a feeling of deep affection for his family when that had happened.

Therefore, Jun Xie... Jun Mo Xie didn't feel lonely anymore. And, that's because his heart finally had something to depend on!

There were people in this family who cared for Jun Mo Xie's fate. And, this was something he could live for!

In fact, Jun Mo Xie would use every means, and would go to any extent to ensure a healthy, happy, and long life for his family members. And, he would never allow anyone to destroy such a beautiful feeling!

That 'rootless' man had finally obtained the love and affection of a family! And, no one could imagine how much he could care for them in return... In fact, he could even set himself against the entire world to protect them from harm!

And, that's because he didn't wish to feel that 'rootlessness' again...

After all, it was too bitter!

Bitterness could make one lose interest in life. However, knowing that someone is concerned for oneself is an extremely warm feeling. In fact, this feeling of warmth is something one would spare nothing to protect. He would employ his very heart and soul, and would do everything he needed in order to protect it.

From healing Jun Wu Yi's legs to raising Heaven Destroyers and Spirit Devourers... from advancing Jun Zhan Tian to changing Guan Qing Han — Jun Mo Xie had taken these steps for his family's sake.

And, he would continue to do it...

Until this family's disgrace had been wiped out. Until it would stand on top of the world! Until no one in the world would have the courage to look upon it!

All living beings would look up to the Jun Family with hope as it would look down on the world.

That was Jun Mo Xie's ultimate goal!

Jun Mo Xie relaxed when he saw the murky night's scene. He ordered the guards to stand down, and made them return to normal security patrols. After that, his body swayed and disappeared from the tower's basement in a flash.

There were still some other important tasks that needed to be done that night. After all, making 'them' cower by force during the daytime hadn't been enough. In fact, it wasn't even nearly enough! After all, he'd need the heads of a few bigwigs if he wanted to get rid of the disturbance...

Some rotten scholars had dared to attack the Jun Family so openly and brazenly.

[How could the Jun Family stand above the entire world if we let everyone take cheap advantages of us? How could we become a Super Family in the future if things continue like this?! This matter is no joke!]

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie found it imperative to deal with such matters.

[You plan to use 'honor' to attack me?]

[Hehe, let's see who cares more about honor...]

[You said that I'm lowly and shameless. So, let's see what honor you hold!]

The sky was covered with dark clouds this night. So, neither the stars... nor the moon was visible.

It was a windy and moonless night. And, such a night had always been suited to commit murder and atrocities.

Young Master Jun didn't intend to commit atrocities. But, he wouldn't care about committing murder if he deemed it necessary. In fact, it seemed that he had planned to do something that was even more terrifying than committing murder...

The Mei Household...

The old man Mei Gao Jie groaned and sighed. After all, the matter had developed into such an unexpected situation. Old Man Mei hadn't expected that a debauchee like Jun Mo Xie could resort to using such tough methods on his disciples.

Jun Mo Xie had shown a strong contempt for Imperial Authority in broad daylight. The only explanations for this were that he either had enough strength to challenge the Imperial Authority on his own... Or, he had a strong-enough backing to do so! However, it didn't matter which one it was — the Old Man Mei wasn't happy to see it.

As far as the Old Man Mei was concerned — [You are wicked, Jun

Mo Xie. You should've trembled with fear in the face of such public criticism. You should have apologized, and should've begged for forgiveness. And, you should have then gone to the Emperor to beg for his assistance. This is the usual and rational course of events. After that, the officials would've raised the levels of the accusations, and would've cornered you. The military would've done everything to strike back. And, the Emperor would've stepped in to set things right. He wouldn't have uprooted the Jun Family. But, their power would've been weakened very considerably. And thus, the Jun Family's influence would eventually have disappeared from Tian Xiang! Then, that criminal Jun Mo Xie would have to die!] In fact, he wouldn't hesitate to destroy Guan Qing Han even if she had done that act to save someone. The old man respected her bravery, but he still couldn't stand that scandal. Moreover, wouldn't she proclaim Jun Mo Xie's innocence to the world if she were let off from this scandal?

They were an adulterous couple for all concerned, and should've been put to death.

It needed to be mentioned that every empire relied on these kinds of strong families. But, it wouldn't look good if one family were to become stronger than the Empire itself. And, it wouldn't be normal either.

In fact, it would cause disaster in the long run!

Jun Family and Jun Mo Xie's power had experienced a very sharp rise. However, he had suddenly been bestowed with this amazing opportunity at this time. After all, this was a huge and cacophonous scandal. In fact, this was a 'once in a thousand years' kind of opportunity!

Mei Goa Jie believed that he had guessed the Emperor's intentions very correctly. And, that's why he had assumed such an all-out hostile attitude, and had pledged to bring the Jun Family down. After all, the Emperor's backing was like having the entire Empire's support. The Jun Family was strong, but they weren't to

be feared in this case.

After all, the Jun Family was rising at the moment, but their wings hadn't fully spread open yet. Therefore, this was the best time to attack them. Such opportune timings were extremely rare to come by. So, he would have regretted it forever if he had missed it.

[But, why is His Majesty's attitude so vague now that the matter is in the open? Don't tell me that he thinks this isn't enough to make a move on them? What else could it be?]

[However, that Jun Mo Xie's arrogance has reached a shocking degree!]

[Things have spiraled out of control!]

[After all, the strength of the scholars' character has been destroyed because those three ended up raining curses on their teachers!]

The world-famous Wen Xing Heavenly Literature Institute had unexpectedly been embroiled in such a huge scandal. In fact, this scandal was even greater than that of Jun Mo Xie and his sister-in-law's! And, this was even more unbearable for the old man.

He couldn't stand the fearless, and was most worried by them. However, Mei Gao Jie felt more dejected over his failure as a teacher when compared to the Jun Family's scandal. After all, he had tutored so many unbearable disciples!

The situation had turned very chaotic in one day alone!

Mei Gao Jie felt deeply sick at heart. It could be presumed that his counterpart Kong Ling Yang was also feeling similarly anxious.

"It seems that Master Mei is in a very good mood tonight. The wind howls like the cry of a ghost on the moonless night. However, Master Mei stands arrogant and solemn under the night sky. Is this why the stars haven't dared to reveal themselves in the night sky tonight?" a faint yet clear voice came along the wind. The voice

was faintly audible, but it was still very clear. Moreover, it seemed to be carrying the warmth of a smile with it. However, it somehow seemed as if the wind had come to a stop-still when this voice had echoed. Moreover, a strange chill had suddenly permeated the entire world...

Mei Gao Jie sighed. He didn't act surprised as he put his hands behind his back and remained standing behind a stone table that was placed in his courtyard. His hands still held a half-finished cup of wine. He didn't even turn back. In fact, it seemed that he was talking to thin air as he said, "Jun-Mo-Xie?"

Chapter 457: You Will Bring Great Sufferings for the Common People!

He had spoken those three words very slowly. And, there had been a pause between each of them. However, he had also spoken them very calmly. In fact, it seemed as if he had expected and prepared for this; he knew for sure that it could be none other than Jun Mo Xie.

"Master Mei deserves to be called the wisest of his generation. He has great foresight," the faint voice still sounded like it was chatting with an old friend. It was neither angry nor anxious. Moreover, it was full of patience.

"This old man is ashamed! How could he dare to be called a wise man? And, what foresight do you speak of? The Young Master had notified me long ago; that's why I haven't slept yet. Instead, I've been waiting so that I may welcome Young Master Jun with honor."

Mei Gao Jie finally turned around. He was calm. But, there was a flash of alarm in his eyes as he looked at the youngster who stood in front of him.

[This man isn't 'that' young debauchee who I remember, right?]

There was an extremely handsome and elegant young man in front of him. This young man was dressed in white robes. And, he seemed to be standing upright in a carefree manner. It seemed that he had arrived as swiftly as the wind in the dark of the night. In fact, it appeared as if a deity had descended from the Ninth Heaven in the chaos of this night!

That aloof, victorious, cold, and elegant youngster gave a very warm smile. But, that very warm smile emanated a very cold and dense murderous aura instead. In fact, it was like the cold winds of mid-winter... maybe even colder.

That warm youngster wasn't carrying any weapons. He didn't even seem to be carrying that divine sword the rumors had mentioned about. But, the sharp aura emanating from him made it seem that he-himself was a blood-thirsty, demonic, and extremely exceptional divine weapon!

This young man was Jun Mo Xie!

The debauchee Young Master of the old days suddenly had the bearings of someone with a formidable and domineering character...

Jun Mo Xie gave a light smile in reply. His expression didn't seem to hold any resentment. He walked to the table, and calmly poured himself some wine. Then, he raised a toast, "Allow me to pay you my respects before I ask you for an explanation! After all, it's amazing to see that you're this calm. But, it's a pity that this wine is so inferior. It can't match the wine of my Aristocratic Hall. Everything is perfect... except for this. So, this is honestly a matter to pity over..."

Mei Gao Jie smiled and drained the cup with the toast. Then, his feeble body became straight as he slowly walked back. He then sat opposite Jun Mo Xie, and slowly spoke-up, "This wine is just ordinary wine; that's an obvious fact. So, why should Young Master Jun care? And, today's matter has already gone beyond my control. So, what questions could the Young Master have for me? This old man knows that he will have nothing to say in his defense as the matters stand."

"I only wish to ask this you before we start. Was this your first destination tonight?"

"Hah! I'm coming from the Kong Household!" Jun Mo Xie replied in a casual manner.

"So, I shall presume that Master Kong is dead?" Mei Gao Jie sneered.

"Correct. Master Kong's character was very unwavering. He wasn't cooperating. In fact, he was quite stubborn. So, I had no choice but to steel my heart, gnash my teeth, and stamp my feet. But, I didn't have the heart to deliver him through the road to the afterlife. So, he must be wandering around in the vicinity of the road at this time. Hehe... or maybe he dislikes the silence of the road. So, it's possible that he may be waiting for someone he could talk to on the way..."

"Ha ha! Good, good! We've been together our entire lives. So, this old man will surely join him! But, I'm very interested in knowing what questions this amazingly talented Young Master Jun wishes to ask me before I leave this world," Mei Gao Jie spoke-up after a long while. And, his tone had a hint of ridicule in it.

That poor scholar was unexpectedly acting with a rare composure and indifference at this moment of life or death. In fact, he was acting freely and optimistically.

"My first question — how did Master Mei know that I would be paying him a visit today? I clearly remember that I hadn't sent anyone to notify you," Jun Mo Xie asked carelessly. He rubbed the emptied wine glass in his hands, and rotated it. And, his eyes remained focused on the wine glass as it nimbly rotated in his hands. It seemed as if he had found it very interesting. After all, he hadn't even glanced at Mei Gao Jie even though the scholar was opposite him.

"Young Master Jun insulted my disciples in public today. And, he also made them insult this old man. This made me realize that you will come! I believed that you'd do it tonight to settle our grudges."

Mei Gao Jie smiled and continued, "Because you leave no room to maneuver. So, you and I have nothing to mediate over now! After all, I would've fought you with everything I had if you hadn't come tonight. I may not be able to harm your family. But, I have enough assurance to make a sizeable number of your underlings suffer! Those men are inside our control! And, it's unlikely that the

shrewd Young Master doesn't know this! Moreover, Young Master Jun might not care whether they lived or died. However, the Old Man Jun Zhan Tian and General Jun Wu Yi would certainly have cared!"

"That's right." Jun Mo Xie nodded slowly. This was certainly true, but it wasn't the main reason. [I've come here to check how much you know.]

"Today's matter has clearly shown that the Jun Family doesn't care about the Imperial power — nor do you fear it. So, it would've been meaningless even if I had gone to the Emperor tomorrow. However, I could've used this time to circumvent the court. And, that could've been a very hard blow to your Jun Family's power. I couldn't have destroyed your Jun Family, but I would've made you pay a huge price. In fact, it would've been a price you couldn't have afforded!"

He laughed heartily, "This old man is a court official. But, he still has enough power to win over many almighty heroes. And, I can also bring many unrivalled heroes down! And, our members have had deep-rooted and majority power within the Tian Xiang's court. So, you can't defeat us even if you have the greatest military power! Therefore, the best time for you to start... was tonight!

"Moreover, the Young Master had revealed his true powers today. So, it seems that the Jun Family's young eagle has finally spread its wings. However, he had also demonstrated that he targets the ones in power. Therefore, this old man and Kong Ling Yang were certain that we'd make for the optimum targets. I and the Young Master have had limited contact. However, I am certain that the Young Master is a vengeful person! You're a venomous person who can deal with tomorrow's storm of accusations, but you wouldn't have waited till tomorrow to deal with it!

"The Young Master may be dishonorable. However, I must say that he at least possesses filial piety. The one to bear the brunt of this attack on the Jun Family would've undoubtedly been Jun

Zhan Tian! However, you won't allow your grandfather to be attacked! Ah, this angle was something which this old man had repeatedly considered in order to deal with you. I had wished to force you into submission by using the pressure from public opinion. But, it's a pity that a man's plans don't always pan out. You adapted yourself, and displayed thunderous power while becoming tyrannical. And, you successfully destroyed the comprehensive arrangements I had laid by doing so. The young will truly surpass us elderly!

"These were the reason that left me convinced that you would come no matter what happened. You would've come for me at Kong Ling Yang's place if I hadn't been here. Your arrival was inevitable. So, how could this old man not be here?"

"This Jun Mo Xie truly sees Master Mei in a new light now. In fact, this youngster feels even more honored now," Jun Mo Xie gave a profound nod. [Mei Gao Jie has clearly made a thorough analysis of me in order to arrive at this conclusion.]

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had spoken to him with respect.

"Secondly, why would Master Mei not make any preparations even when he knew that this youngster was coming over? Master Mei may be an official, but he has orchestrated many murders. So, he could've left me to suffer serious damages because I was coming to kill him. But, I found no guards in place when I came over. It is evident that Master Mei had removed them on purpose. Why do this?" Jun Mo Xie asked the second question.

"It's like I just mentioned... I've understood you quite well even though our interaction has been limited. It may seem that the Young Master behaves rampantly, tyrannically, and maybe even absurdly... but, it can now be assumed that everything is interlinked. Moreover, your arrangements are far reaching. So, you must be thoroughly prepared since you've dared to come here. I have indeed orchestrated some deaths. But, how can I compete with your Jun Family? Moreover, I had feared that I wouldn't even

get the chance to chat with you."

Mei Gao Jie smiled farsightedly, "This old man is an extremely weak scholar. I had never understood Xuan cultivation, and never knew what Sky Xuan or Spirit Xuan is. But, I know that I'm no match for the Jun Family. However, I knew that the Young Master would definitely talk at my invitation if I were the only one present here."

"I had previously considered Master Mei to be a rotten scholar. But, I now see that he's a very wise man!" Jun Mo Xie laughed, and poured two glasses of wine. "Mo Xie again pays you respect for what you've spoken!"

Mei Gao Jie's expression remained mild and generous as he drank as well.

"My third question — this Jun Mo Xie's actions may have been dishonorable in your eyes. However, it was my business. So, what business do you have with my Jun Family's affairs? Moreover, you knew the truth of the matter. So, why did you speak so forcefully in favor of covering my head in shame and having me killed?"

This problem had genuinely left Jun Mo Xie very puzzled, "It seems that my persona vice has nothing to do with Tian Xiang's usual customs. But, why did you bother making these irrelevant connections and accusations? Why did you provoke my Jun Family's thunderous anger by attempting to get me killed? When had I ever behaved properly in the past? But, I had never seen you rallying everyone then... Do you mind being generous with your explanation, Master?"

"This dispute ends with you, Young Master. But, it had also stemmed from you! There have been disputes between Jun Zhan Tian and us. But, this old man would've never acted against him in this manner. After all, that old man has been very good for the country and its people. His son — Jun Wu Yi — has also been good. Our political views have differed, and we've struggled against that

father and son. But, we've still admired them. We wouldn't have accused them if they had been in your place. Moreover, we would've tried to save them instead! You are the reason why this matter has taken place! Young Master Jun — Jun Mo Xie!"

Mei Gao Jie smiled coldly, "Because... you don't hold anyone important! You ignore everyone in the world! This old man isn't being ridiculous, Jun Mo Xie. And, I haven't misinterpreted you either! I feel like I know the Young Master like he was an intimate friend. However, it would've brought endless misfortunes if you had inherited the Jun Family's power! In fact, I am convinced of this. The entire Tian Xiang would've enveloped into chaos! The emergence of your talents was the first signs of danger. Therefore, you needed to be strangled as soon as possible since the entire Tian Xiang would've been brought to destruction by your hands. In fact, it's only Tian Xiang for now. But, you are bound to cause great destruction to the entire world if you prevail!"

There was no doubt that Mei Gao Jie's words contained some profound meaning. But, Jun Mo Xie didn't enquire any further. Now wasn't a good time to take revenge even if Mei Gao Jie genuinely knew the truth. And, perhaps there wouldn't have been a need for any evidence if it had been the opportune time for it...

Chapter 458: How Can A Rosy-cheeked Hero Solve the Problems of Lasting Importance if He Can't Shed His Sentiments!

Besides, Jun Mo Xie had already confirmed his doubt. So, he didn't wish to re-confirm it. Every doubt pointed in the same direction. And, Jun Mo Xie only needed one opportunity; that's it.

"There's another point... Jun Mo Xie, you are very dangerous, and the Jun Family's strength is also very profound. However, the Jun Family's strength has been dispersed over these years. The land is at peace nowadays, and there seems to be no signs of wars. So, you may not have gotten the opportunity to achieve something even if you had wished to. You would've at most become another Jun Zhan Tian, and we could've endured you. Also, the country will be able to enjoy long term stability only if there's a balance between warriors and officials. However, the difference in the Jun Family's strength before-and-after the war at the Southern Heaven City is that of night and day! This kind of speed is very... frightening! I reckon that the Jun Family's power will increase two-to-three times once you've fully matured...

"And, Tian Xiang will have no rulers and officials when that happens. So, it'll truly be over." Mei Gao Jie smiled strenuously. But, his face also became proud with that smile, "This old man is a very old official of Tian Xiang. And, I have dedicated my entire life for the Tian Xiang Empire... right from my youth to the present day. And, this old man will never allow the Jun Family to rock the foundations of this Empire! I may die; but, I will die fighting!"

"I see," Jun Mo Xie narrowed his eyes, and asked softly, "But, I haven't done anything. So, why does Master Mei believe that I will destroy Tian Xiang?"

"The Young Master already understands this matter. So, why is

he asking this question?" Mei Gao Jie sneered, "Why did the Young Master pretend to be a debauchee for ten years if he possessed such exceptional capabilities? Why did he suffer for ten years when his Xuan cultivation was so great? He played the fool, destroyed his reputation, and became someone with an extremely notorious one. Why? The Young Master hadn't flown for ten years. However, he's soaring now. He's not roaring now... he's shaking the earth! You don't even respect the ruler, why?"

"Haha... there's another reason behind that. The Master has spoken this with confidence. But, he has misinterpreted this," Jun Mo Xie smiled bitterly. [This old man has amazing vision. His knowledge and experience are great as well. That earlier Mo Xie was a real scum. But, that old debauchee has become a legend in people's eyes with my rise...]

Jun Mo Xie had become a legend because he had patiently waited to rise? This can't even be called a joke! Even the former Jun Mo Xie's ghost would become frightened to death if he were to hear about this matter...

"The old man can make a guess or two at the Young Master's reasons. But, this isn't the time to discuss these matters," Mei Gao Jie smiled understandingly as he waved his hands.

"Final question — you were involved in this matter because you feared that you couldn't brave the storm. So, it may be assumed that you worked with someone else. The two Masters are deliberate planners, but I'm afraid that even you aren't this contemptible. So, this matter has someone else's involvement as well. It's the people from the Shen Ci and the Yu Tang Empires if this Young Master is guessing correctly, right?"

A tiny flash appeared in Jun Mo Xie's eyes, "Why did you commit the traitorous crime by collaborating with them to entrap the Jun Family in the Imperial Court? I had asked the Master to give me an explanation when I had first arrived. So, can you give me one now?"

"Hahaha... traitorous crime? This matter is the cleverest part in the whole world!" Mai Gao Jie laughed loudly. "The Jun, the Dugu, and the Murong Family have been defending the borders with troops without any worry. There will be a fit of chaos for some time if the Jun Family is extinguished. However, the Empire can use the resources it's been saving for many years even if the other two empires join hands and invade us. In fact, there won't be any change in dynasties even if we lose the war. But, this sort of a disaster is imminent if you're allowed to grow! However, Tian Xiang's survival is easier if there's only the temporary chaos of Jun Family's elimination. So, we had no choice but to weigh our options!"

"Master Mei, I ask you to take note..." Jun Mo Xie looked coldly at the freely-talking old man. His glare was biting cold, "Perhaps your inference is reasonable. But, it's only inference; nothing more! In fact, it's entirely different from fact! Moreover, you've used this inference to harm my Jun Family — to harm this country's guardians! Didn't you ever feel your actions were excessive? Did you ever think how many people could've died because of your unconfirmed inference?"

"Perhaps it could be said that you have some grudges against the Jun Family. Maybe it could be assumed that I'm not pleasing to your eyes. But, this can't hide the fact that you've distorted the truth to attack us! Moreover, your inference is merely your personal opinion at best. You don't have any proof. Also, you used this method to humiliate an innocent and good woman who readily sacrificed her virtue to repay my family's kindness! And, you clearly knew that she was innocent. You knew that she had nothing to do with any of this!

"Moreover, you also know that her past has been as clear as ice even if she has lost her virtue to me! And, you also knew that my Third Uncle had taken her in as an adopted daughter. So, she wasn't the daughter-in-law of the Jun Family anymore. She wasn't

my sister-in-law anymore! But, you didn't let go of her former identity, and you used it to attack her! Let me ask you something since you've acted like this — is the happiness of women something one can abandon, trample, or exploit as per their wishes? Is that so in the eyes of great scholars like yourself? Can you sacrifice anyone for your goals? I wish to know why a great and virtuous scholar did this even though he desires to uphold a just and righteous environment..."

Jun Mo Xie continued to rain his questions down in a sharp and biting-cold tone.

Mei Gao Jie looked up haughtily. He didn't seem ready to concede anything, "This is quite common. In fact, I even disdain to explain this. But, I'll give an explanation since the Young Master has asked. It wouldn't have mattered if it were that particular woman or this. I would've even sacrificed the country's Princess for Tian Xiang! Sacrificing one woman for the good of the Empire is a good thing. She's only a woman. So why not...? Why shouldn't I...? So what if she's innocent?! She's only a woman!"

"Don't you think that these words of yours are shameless, Master Mei?" Jun Mo Xie sneered. "What if it were your daughter or wife? Would you still do it?"

"Absolutely! And, that's how it should be! It's the natural order of things, and this old man doesn't begrudge it! I would've sacrificed their honor for the country! I wouldn't have stinted to put family before righteousness even if Guan Qing Han had been my daughter instead! In fact, I would've personally punished her!" Mei Gao Jie raised his head with pride. He did it resolutely, and without any hesitation. It was evident that the old man was prideful about his devotion to the nation.

Jun Mo Xie smiled. He realized that his thinking was irreconcilable with that old man's. [He will argue with me for seasons, and will still speak of justice with the force...]

"Then, let me ask you this — how much guilt did you feel when you did this?" Jun Mo Xie suppressed his boiling blood.

"Ridiculous! This matter was justifiable! So, what's the need for guilt? Women are like clothes! So, what's the big deal if we abandon them like clothes?" Mei Gao Jie looked at Jun Mo Xie with contempt. "I had always thought you were a character. But, I had never thought that you would be such an emotional child! Let this man at death's door give you a warning — 'How can a rosy-cheeked hero solve the problems of lasting importance if he can't shed his sentiments?!' Don't make me look down on you now!"

"It's my fault! The words you just spoke ruined any illusions I had harbored about respecting you as a person! I genuinely shouldn't have talked to you about such matter..." Jun Mo Xie shook his head in defeated as he chuckled, "I'm never sentimental! But, you can't think of touching my people even if it's for the country's sake! This is the other reason why I've come to you today, Master Mei! And, you could've never thought of it!"

"Master Mei, you are full of self-righteousness and love for the honor of your country. But, men like you will never know a man's persistence! So, you may succeed in politics, but you'll never become a real man! In fact, you and those disciples you taught are surrenders and compromisers in my eyes if I were to be honest about it. I haven't entered the Imperial Court. So, I can't say for sure. But, I presume that the Imperial Court must've felt disgraced by the likes of you!"

"Bullshit!" Mei Gao Jie retorted. He had taught many young disciples. It had been his greatest achievement, and the greatest source of his pride. The fact that his disciples were spread throughout the land and were governing had given him an immense sense of comfort. Jun Mo Xie could've talked about anything else, and he wouldn't have harbored any sentiments. In fact, he would have laughed it away. But, the youngster's remark over this matter had instantly triggered his rage. In fact, that

miserable grey-haired old fellow had suddenly become aggressive and emotional.

"Which disciples of mine aren't the pillars of the government? Nineteen of my disciples have already become minor governors at the frontier! They've received ocean's worth of favors from the Emperor and the nation! They're like the greatest pillars of the Empire! What qualifications does a rich brat like you have to speak such ill of my disciples, Jun Mo Xie? They are the most famed talents of the Empire!"

He stood up. His face had reddened with emotion, and his fingers were trembling.

"Sit down! Your emotional upheaval isn't worth a fart, Old Man! I'm being generous to your disciples by calling them 'trash'! After all, trash has some value of re-use! But, they don't even that much value!" Jun Mo Xie sneered and turned his palm. "Open your eyes, and take a look at your disciples, Mei Gao Jie! They've have received ocean's worth of favor from the Emperor and the nation, right?"

A thin booklet appeared in his hand. Then, he tossed it towards Mei Gao Jie.

Mei Gao Jie was left dumbstruck after he had looked inside. Therefore, he looked at Jun Mo Xie in a suspicious manner first. Then, he looked down at the booklet again.

It contained the "glorious achievements" of his disciples.

A disciple of his' had bullied a rich merchant into giving him bribes in some month of some year. He had forcefully taken someone's daughter as his concubine on another date. Moreover, he had even hounded her parents to death...

There were many other cases of his disciples breaking the law. In fact, there were many of them... as many as a dozen or so of them. Moreover, all reports were based on material evidence. So, there

were no doubts regarding them.

And then, there was another...

The investigations of those incidents were dated. Moreover, the investigating officers and the dates were different for each case and crime. In fact, some of the pages were old enough to have yellowed to some extent...

These were mountains of irrefutable ironclad evidences. Even death by a thousand cuts wouldn't be enough if those men were to be punished in accordance to their crimes...

Mei Gao Jie's hands shook after he had browsed through the booklet. He then slammed it on the table with a "Bang!"

This house and courtyard had been bestowed upon him by the previous Emperor as a reward for his services. However, one wouldn't be able to find any expensive items around the house. In fact, it seemed as if he was a penniless old scholar. However, the bribes his disciples had taken were astronomical. In fact, some of them were even higher than the sum of his decade's worth of government earnings!

Chapter 459: Not One Will Get Away With It!

Mei Gao Jie burst into tears. He felt too ashamed to show his face to Jun Mo Xie's sharp and disdainful glare.

These were the disciples he had spent his blood and effort on. These were his Empire's brightest of the brightest. He was proud of them, and he had cultivated them to become the Empire's pillars. But, their conduct was no different than that of corrupt officials. However, were they any different from a termite that was eating into the country's woodwork?

Mei Gao Jie was in a daze; he didn't speak-up.

"Mei Gao Jie, you've spent your life's hard labor in training those disciples. You had proudly thought that they were the country's brightest. In fact, this is only a small part of them. After all, you've lead the Wen Xing Heavenly Literature Institute for decades. How many of such disciples did you teach over that time period? Mei Gao Jie, you've always stood at the peak of righteous morality, but you've never known the filth that thrives in the world beneath you. Yet, you accuse me of bringing about the destruction of Tian Xiang! But, why don't you open your eyes and see who has been bringing destruction to Tian Xiang?

"The destruction that you'll bring to this nation will be far greater than what I would. In fact, it's several thousand times! Ten-twenty-thousand times! So, let me ask you Mei Gao Jie — what qualifications do you have to criticize me? You say that I may cause a rebellion. But, where do you think I will get the military strength for it from? They will rise amidst the victims of your disciples' bad governance! Therefore, I can say that Mei Gao Jie will become my greatest co-conspirator, my greatest helper, and the strangest secret accomplice in case I were to revolt! Do you agree with what I'm saying — the great and wise Mei?!"

Jun Mo Xie chuckled, "Don't say you didn't know. I thought that we were different people. But, no! We're the same! But, who doesn't like to claim that they are clean?! After all, every raven sees calls itself clean when it sees a crow! But, they're the same! Isn't it?"

Mei Gao Jie staggered back. His previously calm appearance had vanished by now. And, his complexion had turned ashen instead...

"Mei Gao Jie... Master Mei is a very wise man! You keep repeating that you've cultivated bright minds to act as pillars for the Empire. In fact, you've been saying it for decades! But, did you see what you've cultivated? They're nothing more than termites that will bring the nation to disaster! Hahaha... it's so very laughable! Do you see where you live? How are you different from a beggar? But, do your clean hands cancel out your crimes? No! Your crimes are innumerable! You had said that I would bring disaster to the land, right old man? Pardon me, but I can't even find an adjective to describe the amazing work you've done for the Empire!" Jun Mo Xie's words became increasingly sharp.

Young Master Jun's true goal had finally been exposed at this moment...

Jun Mo Xie's main aim was to deal with those great hypocrites. But, Jun Mo Xie's investigations had only been the tip of the iceberg. After all, the Wen Xing Institute's filth had been entrenched very deeply inside the Tian Xiang Empire.

Moreover, these men had a lot of power in their hands. Only a few of them were in higher ministries. But, they could still bring about great damage.

However, Jun Mo Xie wasn't a heroic person. So, he wouldn't have dealt with these people if they hadn't offended him. He would only have dealt with these injustices if he had encountered them...

However, the scholars had become a pain for Jun Mo Xie the moment they had led the masses to attack him. And hence, Jun Mo

Xie had taken the steps to first remove those human filths!

He could even kill ten-thousand men if they dared to block his way. In fact, he would even kill a hundred-thousand if they stood in his path! Jun Mo Xie wouldn't even think twice about killing over a hundred-thousand people like these ones!

[I'm an assassin, but I believe in good things! I don't seek justice, but I will act with fairness!]

[No matter who it is... I'll be fair!]

[Not for the world! Not for Law! But, for myself!]

This was part of Jun Mo Xie's belief.

"Master Mei... have you ever calculated the amount of losses you've caused the Empire? Do you think I wanted to insult you when I belittled your disciples in the scholarly retreat? I only shut their mouths to reprimand you into waking up. I had hoped that you'd get back on the right path! But, it's a pity that you've stubbornly followed the wrong one instead. And, you've kept repeating those words 'all for the sake of Tian Xiang'. So, tell me now... How will you face your sins? How will you redeem yourself of them?" Jun Mo Xie's voice was somewhat sinister.

"I had previously allowed your students to insult their teachers. After all, I wanted to show that they'd betray their own teachers! You should be thankful to me, and grateful to me! In fact, you should worship me! But, I want to see how a dignified hypocrite like you can have any standing in society after you've been exposed!"

Jun Mo Xie maliciously spoke his thoughts.

"Redeem my sins?" Mei Gao Jie's blurred vision became clear as he grasped the last straw which would save him, "Can I truly redeem my grave sins?"

"Some sins can't be redeemed. But, we can still remedy some of them. And, I'm sure that Master Mei can lessen those sins if he

strives!" Jun Mo Xie sounded like the 'Wolf' who was trying to entice 'Little Red Riding Hood' as he carefully spoke these words of guidance.

"Haha... Jun Mo Xie! I can clearly see your true intentions now! You want to use my hand to root out my students so the Wen Xing Institute can never stand in Tian Xiang again! I can see your intentions clearly. But, I'm the reason behind these crimes. My hands are clean, and my heart is loyal. But, how can I not attempt to clean what I'm leaving behind...? I know fully that you're using me. But, I'll still happily oblige!"

Mei Gao Jie smiled bitterly. He then frowned before he spoke, "Heaven's... pity me. I had lost my way, but I've have finally woken up. However, I must pay for everything I've done in the past. I must make things clear! But, scholars can't be destroyed. And, Tian Xiang can't be either. However, Tian Xiang will certainly need a new atmosphere! How did this old man ever become such a callous teacher?"

Tears flowed as he started to tremble while speaking. He recalled the students he had taught... from the common youth to the renowned scholars. They had advanced in their careers with the passage of time, and had become minor governors of the frontier areas. Some had even become senior officials. He had labored his entire life. And, he had harbored many expectations in return. However, his efforts had unexpectedly come to nothing...

He had worked painstakingly to establish the Wen Xing Heavenly Literature Institute. He had wanted his name to be immortalized in the books of history; he had hoped to be remembered in the annals of history. It now seemed that his name would indeed be recorded in the annals of history. However, his name would be remembered with eternal infamy...

[Was it a mistake?]

"Master Mei, your starting point wasn't wrong. Nor can anyone

criticize your initial intention. But, you had overlooked human greed."

Jun Mo Xie saw through what the old man was thinking. So, he straightaway assuaged his doubts. "Ability is obviously a necessary aspect. But, virtue is more important! An exceedingly talented man can bring an equally exceeding calamity if he doesn't have virtue. Your institute always posed as righteous. But, you only spoke of righteousness — as if it was merely a slogan. It never became the heart of the education. And, this righteousness has become a weapon you attack others with because of this. In fact, this meant that you had acted with self-righteousness even if you had done something wrong!"

Jun Mo Xie laughed and said, "After all, one's guilt is of no significance if they can find a high-sounding justification. And, this was even easier to grasp for your studious and educated scholars! Therefore, they became increasingly self-righteous. And, the long-term consequences of this are rather easy to imagine..."

"Virtue is the first thing a child must be taught about!" Jun Mo Xie continued, "This is the true aim of education."

"Virtue is the first thing a child must be taught about..." those words resounded like loud drums. In fact, they seemed so loud that they exploded in the old man's mind, and he suddenly understood many things...

Then, he went to the other room, and returned soon after. However, he was carrying a thick binder that contained a roll of names. The names of different people were listed inside it along with the careers they had embarked on. In fact, it contained everything... where they held office, where they were transferred, what they were doing now... Everything was marked very clearly...

Every individual was listed very clearly.

This had previously been the greatest source of Mei Gao Jie's pride. In fact, he used to show it off very frequently. However, it

had become the death mark for his students now...

"Jun Mo Xie! It doesn't matter if you're good or bad... Or if you're doing this for justice or personal grudges! But, this old man has been convinced by what you've spoken about the true meaning of education! So, I request you to eliminate these black sheep! I'll be indebted to you for it! And, I will repay this debt in the next life!"

Mei Gao Jie's complexion was proper as he continued in a stern voice, "But, you must do a proper research! You can't hurt the innocent amongst my students! Otherwise, this old man's ghost will never let you off!"

Jun Mo Xie snorted and spoke, "I never thought of myself as a good man. But, I'm far more conscientious than you are. I won't be able to sleep at night if I mistakenly kill a good man. And, what meaning will life have if I can't even sleep peacefully?"

Mei Gao Jie burst into laughter. His voice was shrill as he said, "Only a good man can get a good sleep. But, a good man must have a good heart to start with. And, he must be educated properly as a child for that to happen. This old man has taught thousands of students. But, I've only realized the true meaning of 'education' today. This old man genuinely regrets it. Why had I turned a deaf ear to these words before...? Why had I scoffed at them? Hahaha... I had desired my name to be remembered throughout history... only to have it go down in infamy at the end! I regret it! I regret it a lot!"

"To clean my house with the help of my enemy! Such a ridiculous thing can only happen to me — Mei Gao Jie! Hahaha..."

He laughed and stepped back. Then, he rushed forward. Jun Mo Xie sighed, and flashed aside.

The old man Mei Gao Jie's head slammed against the stone table with a loud "Bang!" His brain ruptured as a result, and he died. However, the grey-haired man's eyes didn't close, and remained open to stare at the gloomy sky. One could even see a vague hint of

shame in his eyes...

"Mei Gao Jie, you spoke with conviction. But, your pedantic thoughts were hopeless to begin with. You were muddleheaded, but your heart could still distinguish right from wrong! You were damned, but you weren't wretched! But, you offended me without being a wretched man. So, you were damned nonetheless!"

Jun Mo Xie took the binder. He felt neither happy nor sad as he said softly, "I won't kill good men... But, I won't let a single bad one get away with it."

Chapter 460: Tian Xiang is Filled with Blood!

The entire Tian Xiang was filled with blood that night.

The night had followed right after the bloody events that had plagued the city a bit earlier. But, the degree of massacre on this night was even grander.

There was no sleep reserved for that night.

Jun Mo Xie had made his powerful entrance earlier this day. And, he had made the three scholars abuse their teachers in public. The news of this incident had surged forth in every direction. However, this shocking news hadn't even died down when more news spread — more than seventy business estates belonging to the Meng Family of the Tian Xiang City had been attacked. This was even more shocking than the previous news.

The Martial of the Army — Jun Zhan Tian — had ordered all troops to be on standby. They were not to rush into action. And, those who disobeyed would be executed.

An order came from General Dugu Wu Di soon after. And, this order stated that — no soldier was to rush into action. In fact, no soldier was to leave the garrisons. Moreover, the violator wouldn't receive amnesty from death.

The Murong Family wasn't willing to lag behind either. And, they quickly recalled their men as well. The Li Family also didn't make any remark in taciturn agreement. Meanwhile, the other big families of Tian Xiang had seemingly chosen to wait and observe from the sidelines.

And then, the Imperial Court acted in accordance — no Imperial guard was to leave their post without permission. And, they were to wait for the Imperial edict.

It could be said that the Imperial Family had turned the Tian

Xiang City into a restricted area along with the help of the other powerful families. However, they had allowed one entity to operate openly inside this restricted area. And, that single power had enveloped the entire restricted area!

And, that individual entity with unconditional power over this restricted area was the Jun Family!

Many groups of warriors from the Jun Family had attacked the Meng Family's estates. And, they had evicted the Meng Family's men from those estates without mercy. Anyone who had shown any resistance was beaten into pieces. So, many limbs were broken that night. And, even the number of lives lost wasn't small. Basically, the Meng Family's power had been thoroughly removed from the Capital City.

However, the Jun Family wasn't the only power on the move. Even the Dugu Family's military might was at play. Consequently, the city had momentarily been alarmed by this mutiny-like situation. Jun Mo Xie had staged slaughters on the streets, and had flowed rivers of the blood. People had screamed on the flagpoles until they had met their end! The shock of that event hadn't been subsided when these new set of events had unfolded...

In fact, it hadn't even been evening time when the crushed corpses of those three absconding scholars were found at the city's gates.

This had resulted from the counter-attack of the so-called hypocrites. But, that wasn't it...

And, that's because many officials were killed later that night...

The Minister of Rites — Zhao Cheng Jun — leaned forward in the dark of night. He seemed to be writing at a tremendous speed. He was writing a memorandum that attacked the Jun Family on multiple levels. He was prepared to brave divine death the next day. But, he still wanted to defeat them.

Minister Zhao was unexpectedly confident at that moment. Over three-hundred scholars from the unrivalled Wen Xing Institute had signed a joint statement under the leadership of their two teachers. And, this statement had also accused the Jun Family. [Wouldn't it be a spectacular scene?]

[I'm sure that no Emperor can disregard this! The Jun Family's power may exceed all levels, and they may even control Tian Xiang's military. But, they are only one family; nothing more. Can they ever surpass the entirety of Tian Xiang's bureaucracy?]

[The Jun Family has sent that little beast on a killing spree. After all, they intend to intimidate and hinder us. But, what difference does that make? He's only one bold and reckless man! Humph! The noisier he gets — the better it will be! The more people he kills — the better! After all, there will be no margin left to maneuver in the end! Thus, the Jun Family will be destroyed and consigned to eternal damnation!]

[Create disturbances, Jun Mo Xie! Create a lot of disturbance! How much disturbance can you create? You will die the moment the Emperor wants you to! And, we men have enough power to influence the Emperor's wishes!]

[We can get you killed through the Emperor! In fact, we can get your entire family killed! The Imperial edict will spell your doom!]

[The Jun Family is doomed to end!]

Therefore, Minister Zhao had stayed awake the entire night, and had written an excellent memorandum. And, it would be a great weapon at the court the next day...

[I've finally finished it!]

Minister Zhao sighed. He couldn't help but read it again. And, he became very impassioned as he read it to himself. In fact, he could even visualize His Majesty as he'd read his excellent memorandum, "The Jun Family is Tian Xiang's benefactor. However, their crimes

can't even be washed away by their deaths! In fact, that would require digging up their graves and whipping their corpses!"

"Jun Mo Xie and Guan Qing Han are the main culprits. And, they seemingly don't have a single shred of shame! Calling them 'a bandit and a whore' would be too polite and nice. This man is lowly, and that woman is depraved. They have no sense of shame, and no shred of decency! It'll be unfair to the common people if they are alive. It will be unfair to Tian Xiang, and unfair to the whole world! Therefore, they must die to redeem for their sins!"

"It's an excellent memorandum! The accusations in this official memorandum are optimum! I fear that I will never write such a good memorandum again..." Minister Zhao read through his work very joyously. Then, he exclaimed with satisfaction, and shook his head with pride. He felt that this was the first time he had written such a good memorandum ever since he had left Wen Xing Institute. His words were sharp, but seemed to be backed by conclusive proofs. They were mere words. However, they could put a man to his death. It was extremely rare to come across such memorandums that could kill people!

"It's indeed a very good letter!" a voice sighed from behind Minister Zhao when he was boasting with satisfaction.

"Yes! Uh..." Minister Zhao nodded with pride at first. But, he was suddenly startled the next moment, "Who's there?"

"The memorandum is great. But, the man isn't so good. Yet, you were right about what you said after you wrote it. You will never be able to write such a good memorandum again. And, that's because Minister Zhao won't get such an opportunity again. After all, people with talents such as yours mustn't stay in this world. So, you must go to hell. It'll suit you better."

A white-clothed youth slowly paced forth as these gentle words were heard. He then quickly arrived in front of Zhao Cheng Jun, and took the memorandum. Then, the memorandum suddenly

turned into ash and scattered in the wind...

After that, the youngster turned his cold eyes to give an icy look to Minister Zhao.

His eyes were like two sharp swords!

"Jun Mo Xie? You... How did you come in?" Minister Zhao stood up in panic under the Young Master's cold gaze. He frenetically called out, "Come here... someone... someone, come here..." but, his voice wouldn't escape his throat. In fact, his voice was so weak from fright that even he couldn't hear himself. He even didn't know what he had said...

Jun Mo Xie smiled in a grim manner. Then, he suddenly raised his hand, and got a choke-hold on Zhao Cheng Jun's neck. He then picked the Minister up, and the victim's feet left the ground...

Minister Zhao was extremely frightened at this time. He couldn't make any sound... let alone speak full sentences. Moreover, his windpipe was being strangled. So, the man's face had become red, and his feet were helplessly shaking in the air. However, his eyes still begged for mercy...

He wanted to beg for forgiveness, but he still couldn't utter a word.

"You wanted to hurt me?" Jun Mo Xie was calm. His eyes were like a cold and deep lake. He looked at Minister Zhao's face and asked.

"I wouldn't have cared much if you had wanted to hurt me. But, you will die if you wish to harm my family!" Jun Mo Xie increased the pressure in his clasp. He then heard Zhao Cheng Jun's neck bone make a strange sound. He then spurted out his tongue after a while. And, it nearly hung down to his chest. It could be assumed that Minister Zhao looked extremely pathetic...

"You also wanted to hurt my woman... and, in such a vicious way at that?!" Jun Mo Xie applied more pressure. His heart was

merciless, and his face was still tranquil.

But, Zhao Cheng Jun's neck issued a clear sound as it snapped.

"There's nothing wrong when you speak manner about power. It's even fine if you call black as white. In fact, that requires a lot of skill. However, it's the sanctimoniousness of your hypocrisy that has damned you!"

Zhao Cheng Jun's body slammed onto the ground as Jun Mo Xie let go of his throat. His limbs twitched for a bit, but he eventually became still. He was dead, but his eyes were still opened wide. And, they were full of fear and disbelief...

"He even dares to die with grievances in his heart!" Jun Mo Xie gracefully wiped his hand with a towel that lay nearby. Then, he stepped forward.

However, he had stepped on the face of Minister Zhao's corpse with that action. Then, he disappeared.

Two sudden 'pops' were heard when he disappeared. These noises were made by Zhao Cheng Jun's bursting eyes...

A white sheet floated from outside. This sheet had something written on it. It settled on Minister Zhao's badly disfigured face, and covered that extremely cruel sight...

The white shadow flashed like a ghost, and it struck many places in Tian Xiang like lightning. And, an official died where it stopped. Moreover, each of those officials died in a horrible manner...

Almost eighty-percent of the officials who had passed out from the Wen Xing Institute were massacred.

Over thirty people had been slaughtered in one night!

Some of these men lived on the east of the city, and some of them were on the west. They didn't live near each other. Nor were they assembled in the same place. But, all of them were murdered in one night. Most people believed that this had been done by an

organization of assassins. And, there must've been at least ten skilled assassins to achieve such results...

These officials were the capital's powerful and influential bureaucrats. So, would they have proper protection details...? However, someone had still killed them so stealthily and silently even though they had protection. Moreover, the murder has disappeared without a trace afterwards...

Several officials were even killed in their sleep. And, the people sleeping beside them didn't even come to know about it. They only found themselves sleeping beside a dead man the next morning...

The dead men's expressions were those of extreme horror... or maybe torment. But, the people sleeping to their side still hadn't realized a thing...

Such assassins and such assassination skill were very rare and shocking!

Another thing common about those who had been murdered was that each one of them had a white sheet on their faces. And, this sheet detailed the reasons for their execution. Each of these men was guilty. And, some conclusive proof was left on the sheet above their bloodied faces.

Countless people in Tian Xiang lit firecrackers when they heard the news of those officials being murdered. In fact, it had appeared as if they were celebrating New Year's. However, many people lit incense sticks, and kowtowed to the heavens as tears streamed down their faces.

However, the calendar was nearing the end of the year at this time. So, people had anyway bought firecrackers and incense sticks in preparation for the New Year's celebrations. In fact, they would've faced much difficulty if they had wanted to avail them in such large quantities at any other time of the year. But, this was also a time when these items were very popular in the city. So, their prices were obviously soaring.

The people who were praying and celebrating were those who had been persecuted and made to suffer by those officials. They had helplessly begged and implored the heavens in the past. But, they were only left frustrated. However, the Gods had finally opened their eyes, and had done them good by punishing the evil. The consequences of evil had finally been brought forth. These people didn't know who that beloved great hero was. But, that unnamed hero had now become a cherished and revered household name in Tian Xiang City!

Countless citizens cupped their hands and prayed for this mysterious hero's long life!

Most people thought that it was done by the Jun Family. After all, these dead officials were the people who would've spared no efforts to use that matter between Jun Mo Xie and Guan Qing Han to get rid of the Jun Family. In fact, they were part of the main force which was attacking them inside the Imperial Court.

Therefore, it was perhaps a form of retaliation from the Jun Family.

However, everyone kept these matters in their hearts. No one dared to speak about it since they couldn't repay their kindness by doing that. Therefore, they only prayed for the Jun Family's well-being in silence.

Jun Mo Xie was still in his victorious white clothes at dawn. He had appeared in front of the Jun Family Household's door with a smile. His face was brimming with satisfaction, and his entire body was emanating a particularly warm aura. The Young Master's expression was sharp, yet gentle. His sword was at his waist, and not a single speck of dust could be seen on his clothes. In fact, it looked like the Young Master had gone for a morning walk, and was only returning in leisure after he had picked some flowers.

No one would've ever believed that this warm, gentle, and handsome Young Master had returned after executing a massacre

throughout the city. Let alone the fact that he had taken the lives of over thirty officials in the process!

The sword at his waist was as clear as water, but it had already had its fill of the official's blood.

Wen Xing Heavenly Literature Institute had spent a lot of efforts in the past decades. And, that was the reason why so that many of its students had been able to climb into high positions. Each of them had been amongst the brightest of their generation. Moreover, an immense amount of silver and labor had been spent on getting them into those positions.

However, the Young Master's sword had destroyed that!

Jun Mo Xie could've made his men do this. But, he hadn't carried out such assassinations for a long time. So, he had an itch to do it himself. And, he felt extremely happy after he had sent those insects to hell.

He had done this for the sake of the Jun Family. But, he still felt very pleased after he had harmed those people. In fact, this made his mind feel at ease, and had cleared his conscious. The entire matter had been extremely bloody. But, the Young Master didn't feel that he had committed a crime. Instead, he had a gratifying feeling that the heaven's laws had embodied into his sword, and justice was in his hands. He felt that he could reward the good, and punish the evil.

An outsider may feel like this cruel man was addicted to murder. But, Jun Mo Xie harbored no such feelings.

[How is what an outsider likes or feels any of my concern?]

[I will act as per my conscience; not of the outside world's!]

[And, my conscience is clear with the thought of delivering the heaven's justice!]

Jun Wu Yi was standing at the door of his courtyard; he was smiling as he was looking at his nephew. The secret of Jun Wu Yi's

legs hadn't been a secret ever since he had beaten the tyrannical Xiao Han in front of the entire army. So, he was finally free of his wheelchair. Therefore, he had been doing everything while standing up in the past few days. In fact, it had seemed that he even wanted to sleep in a standing position.

Those without disabilities can never understand the pure joy of standing on one's two feet. This was an extremely joyful feeling...

It could be said that Jun Wu Yi standing up on his feet was a trivial matter in comparison to the great rise of the Jun Family. After all, many of the factors that had been bullying the Jun Family had been somewhat put to rest...

"Are you done? Did you get a kick out of it?" Jun Wu Yi asked.

"Ah... I'm very satisfied! But, it's not the killing alone... there's something else which has satisfied me..." Jun Mo Xie smiled mischievously when he saw that Jun Wu Yi was about to lecture him. So, he quickly slipped into his courtyard while he said...

"Ah, I haven't slept the entire night. I'm very sleepy. I'll go to bed now, Third Uncle! See you tomorrow!"

[See you tomorrow? Its early morning, and you still say 'see you tomorrow'?] Jun Wu Yi was in no mood to scold his nephew. So, he shut his mouth, and smiled helplessly. [My nephew has grown up. His skills have also reached unrivalled heights. His behavior has also become more appropriate. So, it's better to leave him...]

On the same night... And, at the same time...

There was an extremely bitter struggle between two giants at the peak of a snowy mountain.

The elders and others from the two families were returning under the Third Elder's leadership when they were suddenly met by powerful experts headed by the Silver Blizzard City's Great Elder Xiao Xing Yun.

Everyone had been in a very serious mood as they had made their

way back to the Silver City from far off.

The three members of the Xiao Family were either dead or half-dead. These three men had been important people in the Silver City before they had embarked on this trip. However, they had been branded traitors as now. The Third Elder was in his seventies and eighties. But, this huge contrast had even left him to feel very uncomfortable.

Those two elders of the Xiao Family had grown up with him since childhood like brothers. There had been some friction between them over the years. Some struggle and scheming had also been a part of their journey. But... they had still faced many hardships together over these eighty years.

They had been like brothers for eighty years!

He had belonged to the Han, and the others had belonged to the Xiao Family. But, even constant enemies of eighty years would develop some emotions... or even interdependence with regards to each other. They certainly weren't on friendly terms anymore. However, the sight of one's companion of eighty years in a half-dead and crippled condition had left the other to feel distressed...

[But, why did they betray us? We would've still been the Silver City if we had carried on like this. Wasn't that good enough? It wouldn't have mattered whether the Silver City was in the hands of the Han Family or the Xiao Family. After all, the Silver City would still be the Silver City, right? Who in the world doesn't know that there isn't any real distinction between the Han and Xiao Family of the Silver Blizzard City? One family is the named ruler of the City; that's all! But, how's that even important?]

[Would the Silver City's name have changed if the Xiao Family had assumed control? It wouldn't have been a change in the reign of a nation's dynasty!]

[So, why?]

Chapter 461: What is True, and What is Not

The Third Elder was awfully broken-hearted. He was also quite mad and puzzled.

The Seven Swords and the Third Elder had covered their long and arduous journey in that grim mood, and had finally returned to the Snowy Peaks. And, they went to the Silver Blizzard City the moment they returned to the Snowy Peaks.

The entire sky had been enveloped in a blizzard. And, it was extremely cold.

However, the Silver City's people were obviously accustomed to that cold. So, they didn't care about it. In fact, they were habituated to such a nasty weather. After all, they had grown up in such conditions. These people were obviously unafraid of the cold, but the same couldn't be said for the injured ones. However, they didn't need to worry in reality. They had surely been branded as traitors by the Silver City. However, their companions had still looked after them after being angry at them for a few days in the beginning. Therefore, their injuries hadn't worsened.

After all, humans are emotional beings at the end of the day...

Mu Xue Tong had inquired whether they should send an eagle to notify the Silver City's higher ups of their arrival in advance. However, the Third Elder had resolutely shot down that idea after giving it some thought.

And, he hadn't said no without reason either. After all, the Silver City was controlled by the Xiao Family regardless of how things seemed from the outside. This had been particularly the case ever since the birth of Little Princess Han Yan Meng.

[I had always believed that the Han and Xiao Families were one family. Who could've said that we weren't the same? We hadn't even thought about this matter. But, it suddenly seems that the

Xiao Family had been obsessed with this the entire time. The thought that I had never even considered has suddenly left my blood to run cold!]

[The letter would surely fall into the hands of a Xiao Family member first if we sent an eagle ahead of us. And, our Han Family would be pacified if that happened.]

Therefore, the wise Third Elder took the safer option, and decided to travel overnight to the Silver City. After all, the Lord of the City and the Old Master of the City would spot their arrival as long as they were to appear at the gates of the city.

However, he had never expected to be intercepted by the Great Elder Xiao Xing Yun at the base of the peak. Moreover, the Great Elder was also leading a team of powerful experts.

[How did he get the news to block me off like this?]

"Elder Brother? How come you're here?" The Third Elder looked at Xiao Xing Yun in astonishment. It wasn't that he was prepared to blindly trust a poisonous snake. After all, he knew that his Elder Brother had sinister motives. However, that man had still been his 'Elder Brother' for eighty years. So, he couldn't change the usual term of address when that man suddenly appeared in front of him.

The Third Elder had cursed him a million times over the course of the journey. But, he still found it difficult accept such a cruel reality when he was confronted with that familiar and amiable face.

"Elder Brother...? Ha ha ha... you still dare to call me 'Elder Brother'?" Xiao Xing Yun's face darkened as he gave him a deep look. In fact, it seemed like he would swallow him whole, "Two of my younger brothers are dead because of you. My grandson is half-dead because of you. My great-grandson is dead because of you. Moreover, two more of my brothers have been rendered crippled for life because of you! You..."

"Do you think you can still call me 'Elder Brother' after everything that has happened? How did you even dare to voice the words 'Elder Brother' in flattery? I won't allow you to address me like that!" Xiao Xing Yun sneered. His glare was as sharp as a knife, "Han Fei Yun, you've boldly created strife within the Silver City by having them killed. You've committed the greatest sin. And, the heavens won't tolerate this! However, you're still standing instead of kneeling and admitting your guilt!"

"Ha ha ha... Xiao Xing Yun, I won't call you 'Elder Brother' if you don't want! Anyway, why are you distorting the truth when everyone here is well aware of it? I'd like you to ask your conscience... do you still think that you're even worthy of being called 'Elder Brother'?"

The Third Elder's beard trembled as he gave a mournful laugh. He then slowly looked up, "Xiao Xing Yun, I had never thought that you would instigate this betrayal! You've betrayed the Silver City. But, you're too arrogant if you think that you can take the Lord's place. The heavens will not abide by such vile ambitions!"

"Instigate betrayal? Ha ha ha..." Xiao Xing Yun laughed insolently, "You say that I seek to betray? Everyone knows who the first true Lord of the Silver City was, right? So, let me remind you why my Xiao Family's ancestor died — it was for your Han Family's sake! My deceased ancestor had set up the Silver City, and he had advanced it step by step. And, he eventually died for it. However, the next generations of the Xiao Family had already been born by that time..."

"It is undeniable that the son inherits the father's mantle. So, tell me something Han Fei Yun — shouldn't Han Zhang Meng have succeeded the deceased Old Lord at that time?" Xiao Xing Yun had spoken in a very dark tone.

The Third Elder had been rendered speechless. These arguments sounded and seemed in proper accordance. In fact, it was reasonable to argue that the Han Family's ascension to the Lord's

position had been inappropriate.

However, the Han Family had never let the Xiao Family down in any way. They had even been aware that the Xiao Family had been doing many injustices in the name of the city. However, they had ignored it. In fact, their guilty conscience had encouraged the rising flame of the Xiao Family's arrogance in the past centuries. Moreover, the Han Family's children had been taught to have tolerance for the Xiao Family from the start. And, that's why Xiao Han was able to cause such a huge disturbance in those days...

"What? You've got nothing to say now? The Han Family should've supported the Xiao Family's younger generation for the Lord's position if they had genuinely felt gratitude and brotherly love towards their benefactor! They should've tried their hardest to help. After all, this is the best action one can take after someone does them a huge favor. But, your Han Family had usurped the Lord's position in the sly of that nonsensical oath. In fact, they had shamelessly done this in front of the entire world!"

"The true Young Lord of the City became a follower of the Silver City as a result. And, the Han Family went from being the follower to the Lord! There's an old saying for this — 'give a few drops of water, and they'll thirst for a whole river'! The Han Family usurped the city's command from the descendants of their very savior! Ha ha ha...! Moreover, the Han Family even managed to act with such self-righteousness after they had usurped those descendants' position! In fact, they were even praised by the entire world for their actions! This world is ridiculous! Don't you find it ridiculous, Han Fei Yun? Why don't you speak now?" Xiao Xing Yun became even more aggressive after he saw that Han Fei Yun had remained quiet.

"You're talking nonsense! Many parties were vying with each other after the defeat of the Great Alliance. The Silver Blizzard City had run into a lot of trouble, and was facing crisis as a result. The rest of the world would've swallowed us whole if order wasn't

brought back by such extreme means! Therefore, the Han Family's chief had bravely gone forward. And, he had taken over the city. Moreover, he had step-by-step formed its base during unsure times! The Han Family had fought every battle from the forefront in order to protect your Xiao Family! Your Xiao Family was always in safe positions, and your sacrifices had also been the least! Can you deny that?

"Moreover, the Silver Blizzard City was only a medium-sized force in society in those days. But, it's now a world-renowned superpower that can crush anyone. Our Old Lord had taken-on a huge problem at that time. And, he had worked his entire life to bring the Silver City to its current status! It can be said that the Silver City has reached its present glory because of the Old Lord's efforts! Can you deny this? Why can't your Xiao Family speak to its conscience? It's very interesting to twist the truth. Isn't it?"

The Third Elder laughed loudly. His face was full of hatred, "Han Family has dealt out too many reparations for your Xiao Family over these centuries! We have cleaned our guilt too many times! Moreover, it wasn't for that oath alone! However, that oath has still allowed you to pressurize the Han Family for so many centuries! So, what grievances do you have?"

Both sides had shed all pretenses, and were in open conflict now. In fact, everything was out in the open now.

"Bullshit! The Silver City was the Han Family's home! So, why wouldn't he do his utmost for it? He obviously wanted to build a foundation for himself! So, he stole it from someone else! Ha ha... the Xiao Family's position was stolen by the Han Family, and you still have the nerve to speak with such a pompous attitude? In fact, you even have the nerve to involve the critical situation our city had faced at that time! But, why did the Han Family retain its control over the Silver City once that crisis had passed?"

Xiao Xing Yun roared angrily.

"Wouldn't the Silver City's prestige have remained the same if the Xiao Family had resumed control over the Lord's position? Would our city's power have weakened? What nonsensical argument is this? Are you telling me that the Han Family wouldn't have done their best for the Silver City if they hadn't been allowed to take over?"

Xiao Xing Yun snorted and continued, "Your words are truly shameful! You have been shamelessly using that excuse to cover your vile actions! You've been using that excuse to shove your argument down people's throats! Your family has been unbelievable vile! What shamelessness do you speak of? Your Han Family has been wearing the hat of shameless this entire time!"

"You are twisting words and forcing logic!" The Third Elder's eyes were misty and red. His finger trembled, "A leader's strength and courage relates directly to the power of the city he controls! Don't you understand such a simple thing? The next generation was young and cowardly at that time. So, how could they have supported our city during those turbulent times? How were those descendants better than the Old Lord's skill in strategy? You only wish to add more guilt by using those words. Moreover, you are even trying to use the memory of your ancestor's sacrifice in your selfish struggle for the city's control! Don't you think that you're being too despicable?"

Xiao Xing Yun sneered aloof and unconcerned, "Don't speak nonsense! And, there's no need to stall for time either, Han Fei Yun! Do you know why this old man is wasting so much time in arguing with you? It's because no one from the Han Family will ever come here from the Silver City's peak! In fact, I'm sure that no one will pass from here for two months! So, I've nothing to worry about! Ha ha ha... I've been holding these words in my heart for so many years! But, I've finally spoke them to my heart's content! I believe that I can speak these words squarely and uprightly to the whole world! And, I'm sure the whole world will be convinced by

them!"

Xiao Xing Yun had roared those words out. But, he spoke with an extremely sad and hollow voice afterwards, "My second brother and I had planned this over our entire lives! And, our desires are within reach now. However, he won't be able to witness it! He will never be able to see it!"

"My second brother... he'll never see it!" he roared as his body trembled and eyes watered.

The Xiao Family's powerful and mighty Xing Yun and Bu Yu had never been separated since childhood. However, they had been broken apart forever when they had reached such an old age...

It was impossible to describe the pain of Xiao Xing Yun's heart...

Consequently, he had come to hate the Han Family's members even more... especially the ones who stood in front of him at this time.

"Xiao Bu Yu is to blame for courting disaster for himself and Xiao Han! What does the Silver City have to do with it? What did we have to do with it? But, you still wish to take it out on us? That's ridiculous!" Han Fei Yun gave a sharp glare as he secretly grasped his sword, "This is rebellion, Xiao Xing Yun! This is a rebellion against the Silver City!"

There was a flash as a sword was unsheathed with a "whoosh", and a piece of clothing fell to the ground.

"I break my ties with you from this moment forth! I discard the friendship we have shared!"

Chapter 462: A Battle of Certain Death

"Ha ha ha... good! Good! Good! End the ties! Break it clean!" Xiao Xing Yun laughed heartily. A light flashed in his eyes, and an increasingly murderous desire flashed in them. He then shouted after waving his hand, "Come everyone! Kill these rebels! Don't let anyone live! Kill without quarter!"

A circle of white-clothed men with swords appeared behind him with an explosion.

Han Fei Yun's body had flown backwards the moment he had spoken of breaking the relationship. He then quickly arrived in front of Mu Xue Tong, and spoke-up in an urgent and low voice, "Things don't bode well. I fear that there's a traitor amongst the Seven Swords. So, it won't end well here. You must protect the little princess. Escape the first chance you get. The Silver City seems close, but it still isn't within reachable distance. So, you must turn around and rush to Tian Xiang City. Then, you look for Jun Wu Yi and Jun Mo Xie! They're the only ones who can help us now! Remember this when we go all out and hold these people off! You must remember this! This concerns the Silver City and Little Princess's future. You mustn't fail!"

He quickly finished speaking those words while he was surrounded by silver-robed swordsmen. Each of them had a gloomy expression in their eyes, and a savage look on their faces. They had greeted him with respect by calling him an 'Elder' in the past. However, they showed no quarter as they unsheathed their swords towards him.

Xiao Xing Yun whistled, and five white-bearded men rushed out with drawn swords. The surface of their swords had two colors. And, they seemed to be oozing the anger of a dragon!

"Spirit Xuan second rank! The Doubled Snow Swordsmen!" the Third Elder — Han Fei Yun — cried out in alarm.

These were five gifted experts of the Silver City. These five men had suffered a devil's bite during cultivation in the past. But, these five men were very tenacious by nature. So, they had found another method so practice cultivation. And, this strange cultivation method had opened a different channel of meridians inside their bodies. Their meridians had been sealed off during the devil's bite. However, those sealed meridian had also opened up as a result of their successful endeavor.

Each of these five men possessed the strength of a second grade Spirit Xuan expert. However, this strange cultivation method had made each of them twice as strong as a regular Spirit Xuan Expert. Moreover, half of their composition was cold, while the other half was warm. And, they were capable of making these two sides intersect!

[But, these men had gone to the desert fifteen years ago to deal with their defects. And, there hasn't been any news of them since then! Everyone in the Silver City thinks that they've died there, and have gotten buried in the sand. But, they've suddenly appeared here like this!]

"What?!" The Third Elder quickly jumped back in shock. His expression in his eyes was one of extreme alarm, "How are you here? Didn't you people die in the desert fifteen years ago?"

The five men were expressionless. It seemed that they had no idea what this man in front of them was talking about. Their swords formed a colorful net of sword-attacks, and a biting cold murderous aura plummeted downwards with an explosive sound.

The Seven Swords screamed in unison as their glittering swords intertwined. Then, they charged straight ahead. They had done this to create a time window for the task the Third Elder had previously spoken about.

The Fifth Elder's beard fluttered, while his sword appeared like a dragon as he charged towards Xiao Xing Yun. His target had been

his revered elder brother until recently. Therefore, he had tears in his eyes even though he had brandished his swords.

However, Xiao Xing Yun's eyes were full of cruelty and venom. He quickly raised his sword, and a cold light emanated from it as he attacked without mercy.

Xiao Xing Yun had brought a lot of people with him. In fact, there were no less than a hundred men there. Moreover, most of them were Earth and Sky Xuan level fighters. In addition, he also the his own might to rely on apart from the Spirit Xuan strengths of those five Doubled Snow Swordsmen. This setup had clearly indicated that he had intended to kill the Third Elder.

However, the Third Elder had taken little rest on his long and arduous journey to the Silver City in contrast. Moreover, he only had the Fifth Elder and himself. And, both of them were at the Spirit Xuan level only. The Seven Swords' strength was formidable, but they too would struggle while facing those five Doubled Snow Swords. However, the opposition had too many in numbers. So, they managed to turn the tide against them in the wink of an eye.

Mu Xue Tong was holding his sword. He had also pulled the little princess towards him. He was concentrated on using all kinds of tricks while looking for even the smallest of opportunities to escape. In fact, the lives of the others didn't matter to him anymore.

After all, the Silver City's safety was more important!

The Silver City would one day know of this truth if he and Han Yan Meng were able to escape.

[Xiao Family's conspiracy mustn't prevail.]

Even Mu Xue Tong believed that he was the best person for Princess Yan Meng to escape with under these circumstances. The Third Elder obviously had more of a chance to break the siege and

escape with the princess. But, he would continuously be hindered by the enemy the entire way. Moreover, Xiao Xing Yun was bound to keep his eyes on the Third Elder. It was possible that the Third Elder could still break away with some luck. However, he wouldn't have been able to escape far since he'd be burdened with the princess.

Therefore, the strong could only sacrifice themselves and delay the pursuers as much as they could in order for him to escape with the little princess.

However, this wasn't time for any courtesy. So, Mu Xue Tong understood what the Third Elder had said, and agreed to it in a tacit manner.

Han Yan Meng felt despair when she saw that group of people fighting to death around her. She was familiar with most of those people. They had regarded her as a treasured gem, and had carried her around in childhood. They were like close relatives to the little girl.

However, a few of her relatives had suddenly rebelled, and were attacking to kill the people who were trying to defend her...

[All of us are born from the same source. Yet, we're fighting to kill each other!]

Han Yan Meng started crying, and her vision became blurry. After all, she was pure-hearted, and didn't understand why this was happening... She only knew that the heavens had changed their colors...

The Third Elder had a sudden idea while fighting. And, he quickly drew back while the Fifth Elder and the Seven Swords took-on most of the fighting. He then suddenly issued a very violent and powerful sword light.

It seemed as if a sun had risen to the sky in the pitch dark of night!

Ten-thousand sword-lights rushed down... And, it seemed as if the galaxy itself was falling. The Third Elder had exhausted his strength with this sword attack.

This was a fight between life and death!

Mu Xue Tong silently grabbed the little princess, and dashed away like a whirlwind in accordance with his instructions when the Third Elder unleashed these sword-lights.

Xiao Xing Yun suddenly sensed that things were amiss. So, he roared, "Stop them! Capture that little wench!"

He then suddenly turned to the other side, and roared, "Do it!" And, things changed very suddenly with that order. One of the Seven Swords' sword-light changed directions, and attacked the limbs of his own brothers.

It was unknown how many years of brotherhood they had shared...

This attack drew out many screams. Three of the Seven Swords stared wide-eyed as blood flowed from their chests. They slowly turned to look mournfully at their younger brother. Their eyes were full of sadness, confusion, and anger....

That man's eyes were full of guilt. Then, a complicated expression bubbled up in his eyes as he confessed in a low voice, "I'm sorry. I'm a man of the Xiao Family."

The eyes of the three people filled with a sense of realization. Then, they fell to the ground with a serene expression in their eyes.

They hadn't had the slightest trace of resentment on their faces till the moment they died. Perhaps it could be said that they had regarded him as their brother until the moment they had died.

However, the last expression in the eyes of those three men had been one of endless pain...

"Ah..."

The Third Elder roared when he saw this frightening scene. He had already guessed that something like this would happen. He had already anticipated this misfortune, but still found it hard to endure the sight of it. He sprayed blood from his mouth and painted his beard red. The Elder waved his sword once, and two perfectly round sword-lights were shot from it. These sword-light made many people scream, and their blood splashed onto his body. However, the two escaping individuals had been intercepted by now.

Han Fei Yun roared when he saw this. His body got enveloped in a sword-light as he dashed towards Mu Xue Tong and the little princess like the wind.

Han Fei Yun entered into their encirclement, and quickly moved Mu Xue Tong and Han Yan Meng behind his own body. Then, the old man acted like an un-crossable mountain, and shouted as his hair and beard flared open, "Who dares to come and fight me to the death?!"

Mu Xue Tong carried Han Yan Meng away without looking back in the backdrop of the mountainous blockade of his body. He had slipped away into the distance like smoke. However, Han Yan Meng's voice could still be heard from far off. In fact, her delicate and anxious voice continued to echo, "Third Grandpa..."

But, the Third Elder wasn't able to hear that anymore.

His glare was unwavering as he looked at the youngest of the Seven Swords. His eyes were filled with so much hatred that it seemed as if he would eat him alive. If eyes could kill... then the youngest of the Seven Swords would've been delivered to the doors of death after slashing with a thousand cuts!

"Why?" The Third Elder trembled as his eyes filled with tears. He slowly took a step, and asked with childish innocence, "Why? Wan Cheng Guang! Why? Why did you do such a thing? You were

freezing in the snow when the Old Lord had brought you into the city out of compassion. He raised you with great care, and you even became one of the Seven Swords! So, why did you do such a thing?"

This nearly hundred-years-old man had been shedding tears for the past few days. It was visible how violently vicious these repeated mental blow had been for his psyche. The Third Elder had cultivated his mind to for nearly a hundred year. However, he still couldn't bear these blows...

Wan Cheng Guang's face had become somewhat pale under the Third Elder's hateful glare. He couldn't help but take a step back. His eyes brimmed with guilt as he murmured, "I... I also didn't... want to do this... Third Elder... But, I'm from the Xiao Family... My real name is Xiao Jian Meng! In those days... I..."

"Ha ha... didn't you think it was strange how I got this information, Han Fei Yun?! Do you realize the answer now? This is only one of the many great secrets of the Xiao Family! In fact, this only one of our many trump cards! Your Han Family is as good as destroyed, Han Fei Yun. And, it will be forgotten soon enough. But, I will leave your corpse intact for the sake of our previous mutual affection."

"Ha ha... Do you genuinely believe that this will happen, Xiao Xing Yun?" The Third Elder had deliberately chosen the narrowest part of a ravine to make his stand. He was only one man and one sword. So, he knew that he was going to die...

"Kill him! Kill him quickly! We can't let those two fishes escape our net! The consequences will be unbearable if that happens!" Xiao Xing Yun waved his hand as his face filled with a murderous intention.

The remaining three people of the Seven Swords and the Fifth Elder had been bathed in blood by now owing to the many rounds of skirmishes. However, they stumbled to the Third Elder despite

the exhaustion, and made a stand next to him. Their glare was one of determination. And, their expression was one of indifference.

They wouldn't even look at the traitor anymore.

[He's unworthy of our gaze!]

The Third Elder roared as the crowd of enemies swarmed-in, "Stop them at all cost! They mustn't take a single step forward from here!" The other four replied their assentation. Their eyes were brimming with determination, and their swords were like silver-ice as their sheen filled the sky with a bloody light.

They were destined to be unlucky today.

But, they'd never allow themselves to be sacrificed like an ordinary beast.

[We will strive to give the little princess more time as long we draw breath!]

[Each moment adds a little more hope!]

[For the Silver City's future!]

[For the Silver City's tomorrow!]

The two sides clashed like bloody tornados. The ground was slowly dyed the color of cherries. The blood slowly started to collect together, and started to form small streams soon after...

The cold wind screamed. The snow fell like leaves in autumn...

Chapter 463: Three Assassins

Mu Xue Tong pulled the Silver City's Han Yan Meng tightly to him with one hand, and gave everything he had as he dashed through the snow. He didn't even dare to glance back. And, that's because he knew that his speed would slow down if he were to glance back for even a second. And, there was a chance that he would get caught if he was slowed down even momentarily. However, that would mean that the sacrifice of the Third Elder and the others would go in vain.

Therefore, he lowered his head, and escaped in grief and indignation with every ounce of strength he could muster.

He could hear those resounding and landslide-like explosions in the distance behind him. It seemed like a Spirit Xuan expert was giving everything he had. In fact, it seemed that he was even depleting his hidden tricks while doing his best to attack the enemy. Mu Xue Tong was only at Sky Xuan, but he had been considered a prodigy. There were many Spirit Xuan experts in the Silver City. So, he could recognize the meaning of such explosions very clearly.

The Third Elder was laughing shrilly in the distance, "Are you enjoying this, Xiao Xing Yun? Ha ha ha..."

Xiao Xing Yun sounded furious, "So, you're going all out? Everyone, use everything you've got, and cut that bastard up with your swords!"

After that, there was a sound denoting the clash of several weapons. However, a weak sounding mournful cry arose in the distance soon after. It was then that the Third Elder spoke in a resolute manner, "Come! Accompany me! Ha ha ha..."

"Bang!"

There was a violent explosion accompanied by a succession of

blood-curdling screams...

A drop of tear flowed out from Mu Xue Tong's eyes.

He knew what this meant...

Han Fei Yun had sacrificed his life in that explosion.

[The Third Elder hasn't even left his body intact to stall time for us... to stall for only a little more time...]

Mu Xue Tong rushed through the dense and snowy pine forest with a 'whooshing' sound along with Han Yan Meng. He left faint footprints that lead to three directions. Then, he took a deep breath and used his entire strength to fly high. He flew for over two-fifty meters as a result. He looked around for a second. Then, he descended downwards behind a cliff that lay ahead. They then disappeared behind the cliff....

This diversion was the best way to escape.

Xiao Xing Yun arrived in extreme hurry after a while. He looked around very carefully at first. Then, he waved his hand in anger, "Search very carefully! The snow has footprints on it! So, they couldn't have gone far! Divide the teams, and carefully follow the three tracks! That little traitor is all that's left now, and he hasn't suffered enough! Look everywhere! Search every bit of land! Dig out three feet of snow if necessary! They don't need to be left alive if found they're found! Kill them without mercy!"

...

The Young Master Jun lay down to sleep. He had a good nap, and slept through till the next day. He felt like he hadn't had such a satisfying sleep in a good while.

Little Ke kept guard at his door. However, the little girl acted very diligently and responsibly. So, no one went inside to disturb his sleep.

It wasn't until noon the next day that someone came-in with

news. It was about Baili Luo Yun. He had returned to meet the Young Master. Jun Mo Xie stretched his body for a moment, and sat up. He then muttered, "He has arrived three days earlier than I had expected!" he stood up after he had spoken those words. Then, he spoke, "I'll meet the youngster myself!"

Baili Luo Yun's entire body was dusty. So, the talented youngster looked travel-worn when Jun Mo Xie went to meet him. His face looked wind-beaten and exhausted. But, his expression had still remained resolute. In fact, it was as sharp as a spear's tip. Moreover, his body had a somewhat ruthless aura about it.

The young expert emanated a very cold, dense, and awe-inspiring aura as he stood there. And, the Jun Household's guards felt great unease because of it. In fact, they couldn't help but be vigilant against it. The guards who kept watch at the Jun Household's doors were merely ordinary soldiers. However, they were still veterans of numerous battles. So, one could well-imagine the grandeur and tyranny of an aura that could make them feel so uneasy...

A thin line of light flashed in Baili Luo Yun's eyes when he saw that Jun Mo Xie had come to meet him in person. So, he solemnly cupped his fist and said, "I'm back Young Master!"

"Welcome back!" Jun Mo Xie gave a faint smile, and asked, "How're things going?"

"I've killed those fifty people. There was no trace left in those places... except for those verses you had mentioned," Baili Luo Yun had spoken with a trace of indifference. But, even that indifference had contained incomparable confidence and pride.

"You did great! Thanks for the hard work!" Jun Mo Xie patted his shoulder, "I've set aside a place for you. Go and rest. Other matters can wait!" Jun Mo Xie frowned since Baili Luo Yun's disposition hadn't been rectified. And, the Young Master had clearly sensed the pride he had given his report with.

[This is unacceptable... An assassin with such pride...? How is that a good thing?]

"Young Master... What about my... my father... he..." Baili Luo Yun's head sank as he spoke-up with some hesitation.

"I said that the other things can wait. Didn't you hear?" Jun Mo Xie's expression was profound. His eyes then looked meaningfully at Baili Luo Yun while emanating absolute authority.

Baili Luo Yun understood the meaning of this. His complexion became green as he said respectfully, "This Luo Yun will do as you bid!"

Jun Mo Xie laughed windily, "I know that you ask this out of filial piety towards your father. But, this is the only time I'll allow it. This mustn't happen again!"

Baili Luo Yun's expression turned extremely respectful as he said, "Many thanks, Young Master!"

"An Emperor is never short of hungry soldiers. I promised you something, and I've obviously fulfilled it... They entered Tian Xiang City three days ago. Moreover, I've made residential arrangements for your esteemed father. You don't need to worry about your father. In fact, you might as well take a look. Follow me!" Jun Mo Xie walked forth, and led him to the back door.

Baili Luo Yun was a smart man. He only needed to be given an indication, and that was enough for him to understand. There was no need to explain any further. He'd understand everything well-enough.

There was an impressive house not far from the Jun Manor.

"The Luo Yun House!"

Those big and golden characters hung glittering in the sunshine. They appeared glorious in gold.

There were many guards at the gate. They were full of vigor, and

had doughty statures.

Baili Luo Yun's father sat on a chair at the center of the courtyard. He wore a luxurious black leather gown, and his face was brimming with satisfaction and happiness. There was a pretty young maid behind him, and she was massaging his shoulders in a diligent manner. Several servants were busy cleaning the courtyard.

Baili Luo Yun was pleasantly surprised to find his father's complexion much better than before. His complexion was robust and rosy. And, each bit of him had a healthy luster to it. In fact, it seemed like the man had been reborn. He seemed to have become younger by a few years. Even the wrinkles on his face had receded by a fair margin.

"This is your home — Baili Luo Yun's home," Jun Mo Xie smiled as he spoke softly.

"My home..." Baili Luo Yun was astonished.

He had a home and a family in the past. But, that 'home' of the Baili Family was a place of bitter memories for him. It had been a cage which was hard to escape from. He had never harbored a sense of home towards it.

[How could I ever have thought that I would have a home here? A brand new home at that! A home only for my father and me...]

Baili Luo Yun's heart felt warm as he looked at the flowers and trees in the courtyard. It was a wintry November at this time, but the young man still felt warm.

His previously ice-cold heart had suddenly warmed up!

Jun Mo Xie smiled faintly, and walked out in a calm manner. He had left Baili Luo Yun to experience the new-found gifts of having his own home.

The Young Master obviously understood such a feeling. Therefore, he didn't disturb the youngster.

Baili Luo Yun became emotional, and rushed out after a moment. His expression became solemn, and his body straightened as he saw Jun Mo Xie. Then, he kneeled in a serious manner.

Jun Mo Xie used his left hand to support Baili Luo Yun. He had obviously realized that Baili Luo Yun had intended to kneel and bow in patronage. So, he spoke-up in a melodious voice, "What are you doing? I'll obviously make proper arrangements for you since you're working for me. I've done this so that you don't have to worry. This is the natural order of things. So, don't do this. I want a reliable subordinate. But, I don't want you to kowtow like an insect!" He then stiffly pulled him up.

"Maybe the Young Master feels he ought to do it. But, this is like a heavensent favor for me," Baili Luo Yun spoke solemnly as he stared at Jun Mo Xie. His gaze had filled with reverence for the first time aside from when he had awed at Jun Mo Xie's strength.

"But, you needn't do this! Please understand one thing, Luo Yun. You don't need to say much. You also understand matters. So, we might as well speak openly about this. I won't reward you if you become useless to me. And, you must realize that your value isn't limited to a house! We still have to rampage over the entire world! And, I need your skills for that! Remember what I had said earlier — that was the only time. This shouldn't happen again!" Jun Mo Xie spoke slowly.

His words had been blunt. Perhaps a bit unpleasant as well...

But, Baili Luo Yun knew that it was genuine truth. And, that had made these words pleasant to hear.

Everyone dreams about good things falling in their laps from the heavens. But, no one ever think about why it should happen. Why would good things ever fall in one's laps? Why would anyone reward oneself if they don't have any skill or haven't done anything of significance?

This is exactly the reason why one gives presents to the

government official, and not a farmer. After all, an official can do the work which a farmer can't. Obviously, it'll be a different matter if one looks at his flower of a daughter...

However, understanding is truth one thing. And, being able to state it so frankly is another. Moreover, doing what one has said was a different matter altogether. [Don't the big families have hundreds of talented fighters in their ranks? Even the richest man in the world may die while paying for their subordinates' expenses of each talented individual was assigned a house full of servants...]

[The Jun Family has many peerless experts. So, why is the Young Master taking care of me in this manner? Don't tell me that I'm more useful than those old foxes... or even a Sky Xuan expert?] Baili Luo Yun lacked the self-confidence when it came to this matter.

Therefore, Baili Luo Yun nodded in a solemn manner, and didn't show how moved he was again. Instead, he spoke-up firmly, "I understand."

"Ah... excellent! It seems that you've forged ahead in your Xuan strength's ranks as well! You were at Jade Xuan Peak the last time I saw you. But, you're at the peak of Earth Xuan's lower level now! You will be at the middle rank of Earth Xuan after one more step! This rate of progress is quite fast. It's indeed lightning fast!" Jun Mo Xie looked over, and spoke-up somewhat flabbergasted.

"This is thanks to those divine pills from the Young Master. I had broken through the blocked of Jade Xuan after I took that pill. And, I was able to advance to the Earth Xuan Realm. I continued to absorb the strength of the medicine for some time. And, even I found it difficult to believe that taking a pill could make me advance so greatly. It's genuinely a heavenly pill!"

Baili Luo Yun again looked emotional the moment that topic was brought up. His limbs trembled in excitement as he recalled the moment when that earthen color had dazzled on his body for the

first time. He couldn't help but become red.

[My divine pill should increase a person's cultivation by ten years, right? However, his breakthrough goes against the usual norm!]

Jun Mo Xie stared wide eyed. He gaped, but remained silent. [What kind of person is he? Many of men had taken that pill before. But, no one had advanced levels in such a terrifying manner. Yet, this guy has advanced so much with only one pill? He made it to the breakthrough. That's possible. But, he went even forward until he reached the peak of the next sub-level?]

[This speed is amazing!]

This advancement was still far short of the seven-eight levels Jun Mo Xie could advance in a single time. But, Jun Mo Xie understood the difference well.

[I can jump more than ten levels in one go. But, that's because I have the ultimate cheat-tool — the Hong Jun Pagoda! So, my body's aura can be replenished anytime and everywhere. But, this Baili Luo Yun has nothing. He only has innate skill. But, this kind of innate skill is not normal!]

[It is worth it to invest a lot in such an innate talent. The only bad thing about this youngster is that he still can't follow strict orders. But, this important rule can be established slowly and steadily.]

[After all, the canal is formed when the water flows.]

"There's a new task for you. You will be responsible for training your body's overall development this time." Jun Mo Xie handed Baili Luo Yun some loose papers. These papers had a few body poses along with some notes on them. Each posture was extremely odd... almost exceeding the limits of the human body's ability to adapt.

Baili Luo Yun took a quick glimpse of the paper. And, he couldn't

help his eyes from flashing. An average person would look at these postures, and would find them outlandish and undoable. However, Baili Luo Yun was a genius at martial arts. Moreover, he possessed excellent comprehension ability. So, even a quick glance was enough for him to assess that these postures contained endless potential.

Baili Luo Yun genuinely thirsted to improve his strength. So, this was the best and biggest rewards for him.

Baili Luo Yun had been slaughtering people the entire journey here. And, he had gradually started to enjoy it as well. Therefore, he was quite satisfied with things. However, he had always enjoyed the process of increasing his strength in a gradual and procedural manner.

Therefore, Baili Luo Yun didn't hesitate, and agreed to it without a thought.

"Here is a list of names. I want you to memorize them. You must kill one of these people after every three days you spend in training." The glint of a cruel light flashed in Jun Mo Xie's eyes, "You decide who you'll kill first. These men are our enemies! However, there isn't much of a hurry when it comes to dealing with them. So, we can clean them up slowly. There is no urgency. Do you understand?" Jun Mo Xie said slowly.

Baili Luo Yun nodded slowly while taking the precious papers into his possession.

"I want you to reach the Earth Xuan Peak in three months," Jun Mo Xie moved his hands behind his back as he said these words lightly. "I will help you break through from Earth Xuan Level when the time comes. I will get you to the first ranks of the Sky Xuan Realm... maybe even higher!"

Baili Luo Yun trembled. But, there was a fiery light in his eyes.

Jun Mo Xie returned to his courtyard, and heard Guan Qing Han

play her flute in her area next doors. The music was mournful. It still emanated a heavy pressure. In fact, it emanated an unbearably heavy pressure....

Jun Mo Xie sighed and shook his head. His gaze then fixated on the two crazed figures that were inside his courtyard at this time. They were the two young kids who had previously nipped at their fingers to write their blood oaths.

Those two kids didn't have a tongue, and one of them didn't even have an arm. Moreover, it was the right arm.

He had given them a training manual before he had gone to the Southern Heaven City. The level of training was three to four times of what children their age could endure. Moreover, the foundation of their bones weren't good. So, their prospects weren't good even if they trained with everything they had.

However, Jun Mo Xie was surprised to find that these two children had somehow persisted even though they appeared so thin that they would get blown away by a gust of wind. In fact, they had somehow increased their capacity to train by three to four times.

It could be said that the Spirit Devourers and Heaven Destroyers were training to their limits. However, these two kids were training themselves to the edge of their lives by the same analogy. They would train four times a day, and they wouldn't stop unless they felt that they would die. Moreover, they would resume training the moment they felt that even a little strength had return to their bodies.

And, they had been doing this for the last three months!

They had already broken the wooden pikes that Jun Mo Xie had grounded for them. In fact, they had done so several times.

Jun Mo Xie felt a cool feeling in his heart when he saw the two going ahead with his training.

It had surprisingly come as a surprise to Jun Mo Xie. After all, the Young Master was also a human at the end of the day. He had experienced two lives, and he had a cheat-tool like the Hong Jun Pagoda. But, he still nurtured the same expectations another person would. Therefore, he would also be amazed by things that were beyond his expectations.

Those two eleven and twelve year old kids were very weak, but they seemed like wolves when they fought.

Two very hungry wolves at that!

There was no hesitation from their part. And, they showed no mercy either. Every punch and every kick could be called fatal. One of them would often get kicked down, and would be left to struggle on the ground for a while as a result. However, the other would only look-on with a cold and unflinching glare. There was no scope for helping the other in getting back to their feet. In fact, the fallen kid would be given a few more kicks.

And, the fallen kid would also get up to fight back the moment his opponent eased up. The two would continue to batter each other every day in this manner. They wouldn't even spare each other's throats; nor the solar plexus... They would even batter the area between each other's legs.

Attacking that area without any misgivings could genuinely kill a person...

The two knew that should've been helping each other. But, now wasn't the time to do so. Instead, now was the time to fight a decisive battle. After all, they would be killed by others in the future if they couldn't endure this training now. And, wasn't it better to die by one's brother's hand...

The training undertaken by those two was simply shocking.

These two kids' innate talents differed very greatly from that of Baili Luo Yun's. However, the same couldn't be said for the

murderous aura these two kids exuded from their bodies. In fact, their ruthlessness was even more prominent in comparison.

Those three had an assassin's disposition, and Jun Mo Xie had discovered this. In fact, they'd make for the three great assassins!

Old Man Jun had visited these kids once. However, he hadn't been able to forget their frightening nature and training even after he had returned to his study...

In fact, Old Man Jun had said that those two kids weren't even human. A General who had waged battles his entire life had been left this shocked by their training. This showed how fierce their training was...

Jun Mo Xie's courtyard had been clean before he had left. In fact, the ground had become as strong as steel after the ferocious spiritual strength he had unleashed some time ago. But, he found the ground was full of potholes now. The magnitude of change wasn't very great. But, it was still damaged.

Moreover, that damage had been done by the bodies of those two kids.

Even heavy iron hammers may fail to do this kind of damage. However, the bodies of these two kids had managed to do this over the course of their training in the last three months. So, it could be seen what condition their training had reached by now...

Jun Mo Xie sighed at first. Then, he clapped his hands and said, "Come here, you two."

Jun Mo Xie was surprised when the two came over. They had grown a bit taller. Their muscles had also hardened. However, they had an expression in their eyes which belied their indifference towards life. And, this had surprised Jun Mo Xie more than anything else.

The two knelt in unison, and lowered their heads in respect. This was their set-greetings to Jun Mo Xie. The Young Master had

told them not to do this. But, they never changed, and had continued to do this. The Young Master also knew their stubborn personalities. So, he had let it slide...

"Get up. I want to see how far your bodies have been trained," Jun Mo Xie extended his hand. Then, he released his spiritual sense, and checked their meridians. He sighed lightly at his observation.

The two kids were training extremely hard. No one could deny that. Their bodily strength and coordination had made great progress.

However, the two kids' innate restrictions were still there.

The innate talent of those two was much lower than that of Baili Luo Yun's. In fact, the difference was that of the sky and the ground... or the heaven and earth...

Jun Mo Xie felt that he would need to refine a different kind of medicine for them.

He fished out two 'Ten Years Dan' from his chest pockets, "Take these! Then, practice your Xuan cultivation practice accordingly."

Their innate talents were meagre. And, they only had three months of foundation in their support. So, these two would suffer immense pain if they were to take these pills so rashly. In fact, the pain would be tenfold of what an average person would suffer. But, Jun Mo Xie had realized that these two kids' nature was quite fierce after he had seen their training.

[Others wouldn't be able to endure it. But, those two little kids certainly would.]

It could be said that these two kids would see very quickly results once they had ingested these Ten Years Dans. However, these had begun their Xuan cultivation only three months ago. Therefore, their cultivation was only the beginning of the starting stages. In fact, they had only reached the third level of Xuan Cultivation at

this time. However, these Ten Years Dan pills were in defiance of the natural order of things. And, the absorption of their efficacy would prove to be an uncomfortable experience even for a Silver Xuan expert...

However, their meridians would expand to an extreme degree if they willed through it. The more one bears, the more one gains. For example, it would make no difference to a Spirit Xuan expert if they took those pills. There wouldn't be much of a reaction. They would only absorb ten years' worth of pure aura after ingesting the pills. That's all.

But, these two kids had weak meridians. Therefore, using these pills would give them a great start. In fact, it could even compensate for their lack of innate talent.

The muscles of their bodies underwent a painful expansion as Jun Mo Xie looked-on. Their gnashed teeth made loud 'buzzing' sounds. However, they still pushed through it, and didn't issue a single groan of pain. They blindly and silently endured it. Even an adult wouldn't have been able to endure one-tenth of that pain...

They were sweating bullets!

Jun Mo Xie watched as their weak bodies shudder. However, Jun Mo Xie suddenly remembered a knife-wielding technique when he saw that trembling stump of arm — left-handed blade technique! Moreover, it was one-armed blade-wielding technique!

This blade-wielding technique was extremely severe. In fact, it was a killer technique!

This blade-based technique had been designed by a senior in his previous life. That man's swordsmanship was world-famous. His strength was even more renowned. Unfortunately, his enemies had managed to ambush him one day. And, they had chopped off his right hand at that time. But, they deliberately didn't kill him. After all, his skillset would be useless since his right hand had been chopped off. So, he wouldn't be able to use it anymore. His

enemies had obviously planned to cripple him so that they could shame him in front of the entire world.

However, that man wasn't discouraged. He took immense amounts of pain to contemplate matters. And, he created an extremely powerful left-handed blade-based technique after ten years of hard work. He then went back, and killed his enemies after his blade-based technique was ready.

That man had been no match for his enemies even when he had been at the peak of his prowess. However, his enemies weren't even able to fight back once he had designed and completed his new blade technique. And, this was enough to assess the true hegemony of that technique.

However, that blade-technique was extremely dangerous. It was an extremely strange method as well. It could cut the user's body if they weren't careful. And, that's because every chop against the enemy would come from a very unexpected angle. This obviously made it very difficult for the enemy to guard against the strikes. But, it was also quite dangerous to practice as well.

However, this was the only method that kid with only one arm could use.

The other kid's limbs were still intact. However, Jun Mo Xie had planned to teach that other kid a very strange sword technique as well. The two of them would form a very deadly force after they had combined their blade-techniques in a harmonious manner.

The two kids had suffered the pain for an hour. They had lain twitching on the ground during the later part of it. Even their sweat wasn't visible. In fact, they had clenched their teeth so hard that even the root of their teeth had started to bleed!

The veins of their body had pulsed to their skin.

The two of them were still gnashing their teeth even though the severe pain had ended by now. In fact, their muscles had become

so taut that they couldn't even open their mouths...

The Young Master's formidable spiritual power surged forth, and loosened them up. The two finally opened their mouths, and saw each other's pained expression. They were covered in wisps of blood. But, their eyes were filled with an expression of non-acceptance.

"This is a set of blade-wielding moves." Jun Mo Xie conveniently grabbed a blade. He held it in his left hand, and raised it as he said, "This will suit you!"

The face of the one-armed kid became fervent as he heard this. And, he watched Jun Mo Xie's every move with careful attention. His eyes were opened wide. He didn't even dare to blink in fear of missing some minute detail...

Jun Mo Xie moved slowly. His Xuan strength circulated under his feet as he moved, and left shallow footprints on the hard ground. He then moved into the same track marks as he demonstrated that technique for a second time, "Did you understand?"

The one-armed child nodded twice. His talent was very limited. He wouldn't have understood much of them technique even if it had been displayed once again. In fact, he wouldn't even have remembered many of the strokes.

However, he had clearly understood Jun Mo Xie's intentions — he could practice this technique by re-tracing Jun Mo Xie's footprints.

Then, Jun Mo Xie taught the other kid a different sword technique, and told the two of them to practice. Suddenly, the guards came-in and announced, "The Dugu Family has sent an invitation. They've invited the Young Master for dinner today."

Jun Mo Xie was stumped by this. [What? I'm invited for dinner? What's this?]

Chapter 464: The Consequences of Being Forced to Loose Weight

[Is the Dugu Family is looking for me to talk about Dugu Xiao Yi's marriage?] This was the only possibility that came into Jun Mo Xie's mind. [How will I face it if they raise the issue of an engagement?]

The invitation card spoke very clearly. It was quite concise and comprehensive. It only had one sentence, "The Jun Family's Mo Xie is requested to come to the Dugu Family's Manor for a visit," The inscription unexpectedly bore Dugu Zong Heng's name.

The handwriting was very clumsy. In fact, it was almost unsightly. But, the tip of the writing brush seemed to have been full of hostility. It was bold and uncouth. So, it was evident that Dugu Zong Heng had personally written it.

This was an exceptionally simple invitation card. But, it portrayed the importance the Dugu Family had attached this meeting. It also depicted their resentment...

Old Man Dugu Zong Heng had written it himself. And, this was enough to tell the importance they attached to it. But, the concise wordings pointed straight to the heart of the matter. So, that one sentence belied their helplessness and unwillingness regarding the meeting.

The Young Master secretly made his calculations. [The Dugu Family would also wish to re-establish the little girl's reputation apart from talking about my marriage to her, right?] After all, that girl had returned in front of everyone with a big belly. It was one thing to joke about it. However, wouldn't any resolute person find it odd that her belly had become that big in only three or four months? But, the fact remained that the little girl's reputation had been ruined. And, this point had also touched Jun Mo Xie.

The Jun and the Dugu Family could be considered well-matched as far as the facts were concerned. In fact, there were no others who were better matched. But, the Dugu Family would never allow their only granddaughter to be a concubine. In fact, it wouldn't matter to them even if they knew that Dugu Xiao had still retained her chastity. Moreover, they wouldn't understand that Jun Mo Xie only cared about Guan Qing Han.

It was extremely necessary for them to establish the little girl as the first woman. Guan Qing Han had sacrificed her virtue to save the Young Master. And, it was pleasant to say this... But, she had been the Young Master's elder sister-in-law at one point of time. Therefore, there would always be some social trouble in the name of Jun Mo Xie's elder brother even if he were to undertake the wedding ceremonies with her. After all, Guan Qing Han's past status would never allow her to become his true wife. However, the little girl had great relations with Guan Qing Han. So, it would make for a good arrangement if the little girl was the first wife, and Guan Qing Han was the concubine.

Jun Mo Xie frowned. [This must be why the Dugu Family is looking for me so urgently.]

However, wasn't Old Man Dugu looking for the wrong person? Shouldn't he have been looking for Jun Zhan Tian instead of Jun Mo Xie? After all, Jun Zhan Tian was the figurehead of the Jun Family. Moreover, the matter of a youngster's marriage must be brought to their parents and grandparents first...

Moreover, Jun Mo Xie wasn't someone who could face Dugu Zong Heng this directly.

After all, his status wasn't sufficient.

Jun Mo Xie was currently covered in fame, and had experienced rampant military success. However, this wasn't good enough.

This aspect of status has nothing to do with one's personal strength. Instead, it was the natural order of respect amongst men.

The Young Master was a youngster even if he had become wise during his two lives. Moreover, marriage was a major turning point in one's life, and Jun Mo Xie had no experience in this matter.

Jun Mo Xie folded the invitation card. He didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

Jun Zhan Tian confronted Jun Mo Xie's misgivings after he heard about this. However, the Old Man only curled his lips as he disdainfully spoke, "What's so strange about this, Dear Little Grandson? It seems that Old Dugu Zong Heng had no choice but to come to this after he heard the roars of that tigress at his home. I reckon that it's that tigress who intends to see you in person. That old fool Zong Heng wouldn't have called you in any other scenario. I assume that he's still unwilling to invite you on his own... That's all there is to it... Anyway, aren't you usually very bold and daring? So, why are you acting so timid and fearful now? Get lost, and don't trouble this old man's training!"

It had to be said that the two old men had been interacting their whole lives. So, they had developed a good understanding of each other's thought processes. And, Old Man Jun could speculate the truth by merely giving it a second's thought.

Moreover, his speculation wasn't even close to the facts — it was exactly the same as the facts!

The old man heartlessly expelled the overly-suspicious youngster with his final words. He then continued with his cultivation and training. After all, the opportunity to make such a breakthrough was rare to come by. So, wouldn't he wish to stabilize his newly attained realm as soon as possible?

Jun Mo Xie smiled bitterly, and suddenly discovered a thick stack of papers on the old man's desk. They were folded open. And, it was evident that these were the secret reports that had been brought by the messenger eagles.

The one on the top read, "The western province's magistrate has been killed at his home. It is suspected that he was killed by the assassin — 'Drifting Cloud'. This assassin has been recently wreaking havoc. The assassin only left behind a verse of a poem, 'Good and evil will eventually be distinguished. Heaven's justice can't be escaped'. So, it seems like the work of that 'Drifting Cloud' only..."

Below that was a short reply in Jun Zhan Tian's handwriting...

"Investigate quickly!"

The next one was mostly similar. Jun Mo Xie counted. There were fifty of them. Not a single extra. And, each of them was regarding the fifty people Baili Luo Yun had killed.

Jun Mo Xie could only sigh. [Such an efficient intelligence system is remarkably desirable. Baili Luo Yun has barely arrived in Tian Xiang City. But, a summary of his actions are compiled here. Moreover, the Old Man has already read everything. This shows that the information had arrived before Baili Luo Yun.]

The Jun Family controlled this intelligence network. However, it was a pity that its real master was the Imperial Family of Tian Xiang Empire. In fact, it wasn't under the Jun Family's influence by any means. This meant that this network would become useless in case of a feud. Moreover, it would also become a huge problem.

Jun Mo Xie frowned. He put the sheets back to their original place, and slowly walked out. He had barely exited when a guard hurried over. The guard was followed by a grotesque-looking fat individual.

Jun Mo Xie was shocked at first. He was almost unable to recognize Tang Yuan. He hadn't seen the Fatty for three months. But, he had become even fatter now. Moreover, it wasn't like he had become a little fatter — he had accumulated several more layers of fat around him!

Tang Yuan was merely round in the past. But, he looked like a triangle now. His huge head appeared like a sharp point while the rest of his body spread out to the sides.

"Third Young..." Tang Yuan became excited and emotional when he saw him. He pounced as he came over while panting. It seemed that the Fatty wanted to give him a bear-hug.

"Stop!" Jun Mo Xie jumped in fright. "What are you doing these days? And, how did you become so fat?" He looked his counterpart over, and frowned. "You could at least see the back of your legs earlier. But, even that isn't possible anymore!"

"Ah... Don't you say...!" Tang Yuan put-on an expression of misery, "Your brother has been suffering this entire time. I was forced to lose weight over these months..."

"What? Forced to lose weight...? Bullshit!" Jun Mo Xie exclaimed, "Did forcing you to lose weight result in you reducing it from one-fifty kilos to two-hundred?"

"Wrong!" Tang Yuan addressed Jun Mo Xie's mistake in a serious manner. "I wouldn't have been so depressed if it had been two-hundred. It has reduced to two-hundred-and-sixty from one-eighty..."

"I... fu*k!" Jun Mo Xie couldn't close his gaping mouth. A long while passed before he shouted, "You went from one-eighty to two-hundred-and-sixty in only three months... that's over eighty kilos! Damn! Even a pig won't gain so much after eating itself fat for three months!"

"Pig...?" Tang Yuan spoke with annoyance. "I have a special reason for this!"

"What special reason? Don't tell me..." Jun Mo Xie blinked. It had to be said that Fatty Tang's body type couldn't be described as "fat" anymore. The word appropriate would be "horrifying" now...

"That vile woman Sun Xiao Mei has been forcing me to lose

weight every day!" Tang Yuan wanted to cry, but no tears came out, "She whips me every morning, and shouts at me to run! She chases me, and makes me work out every day when I have nothing to do. And, not one person takes my side at home! In fact, everyone chases me along with that vile woman! How did my life become so hard? Someone even follows me to the Aristocratic Hall to supervise me!"

"I still don't understand. After all, everyone is trying to get you to lose weight. Moreover, these are very effective and regular methods to lose weight. So, how are you still like this?" Jun Mo Xie became even more puzzled.

"Exercise is exercise, Brother. But, I get hungry after I exercise! In fact, very hungry... I almost starve!" Tang Yuan gnashed his teeth and shouted, "I get hungry after every work out! I used to have three meals a day before I started this weight-loss thing. And, one meal used to contain six steamed buns back in the day. But, I have nine meals a day nowadays! And, one meal has ten steamed buns! And, that doesn't include the midnight snacks..."

Jun Mo Xie nearly fell down. A black line appeared across his face. [This man... must be a legend, right?]

"Of course... getting fatter makes sense!" Jun Mo Xie nodded repeatedly. His face was full of amazement, "No wonder you've become so wondrously huge in this short period of three months! It is very... reasonable. After all, you have such a strong justification for it. In fact, it would've been bewildering if you hadn't gotten fatter..."

"Exactly!" Tang Yuan sighed as he comforted his belly, "I could at least hold my belly in my arms in the past. But, I can't even do that now..."

"It seems that we still need some tougher exercise..." Jun Mo Xie's face was full of regret.

"You still want to toughen the exercises? I'll break through three-

hundred kilos if you make them any tougher..." Tang Yuan looked unhappy. He gave a lowly look to Jun Mo Xie. Then, he again became very excited, "Anyway, we've created a miracle, Third Young Master! Your pills have sold for extremely high prices in these past three months! Moreover, it's unceasingly breaking records these days! The bottles you had left behind have turned into a treasure trove! We've made about nine-hundred-million shining-white silvers! And, this is only Aristocratic Hall's share! The Little Prince's share isn't included in this! His share has already been delivered to him..."

"What the...? Nine-hundred-million? Nine-hundred-million...?" Jun Mo Xie was thoroughly shocked by the immensity of this number. It's not that he had never seen money before. In fact, he had expected that those medicines would sell for a lot. But, he had never expected them to be so popular...

[I can conveniently prepare eight to ten bottles of those medicines. But, wouldn't I be able to make hundreds of million with my fingertips if genuinely got down to business? Has this world lost its mind? Isn't this too much of an exaggeration...?]

"Moreover, I haven't even auctioned the medicines you sent recently — the Bone Tempering Pills." Tang Yuan mysteriously raised a finger. "Would it work out, Young Master? Are you sure that it's fine to auction it?"

Chapter 465: Tang Yuan's Agony

"It's only a medicine, isn't it? We have plenty of it!" Jun Mo Xie's lips curled in disdain, "Sell it off! The more popular — the better!"

"I feel relieved since you've said this. I'm describing this Bone Tempering Pill as a dream medicinal supplement that 'remodels one's entire bone structure, restructures one's entire muscles and meridians to give them a stronger body, and advances their Xuan Levels very quickly!' How about this? Isn't it trendy? Our medicine can be described in big words on paper now! Your medicine is magically effective my brother. Us two brothers will work together. We'll work our hearts out. And, we will provide the public with a divine medicine they had dreamed of!"

Tang Yuan laughed and slapped his belly with a 'bang'. He then spoke with joy, "I have made up another tag line for this medicine. You listen to this, 'Are you worried about your mediocre aptitude? Are you worried that you can't match up to your peers despite your great efforts? Are you worried that you can't advance? Are you worried that you can't become strong? Come take this pill. It 'remodels one's entire bone structure, restructures one's entire muscles and meridians to give them a stronger body, and advances their Xuan Levels very quickly!' It'll have the desired effect! You will become a talented genius! Silver and gold will rain from the sky. Take it now! Come! What are you waiting for? There's no time to lose! Or, the opportunity will be lost! The divine medicine has arrived! It'll be on auction for only seven days! You simply can't be late! Don't miss this and regret it your entire life!' How is it? Isn't it good?"

Tang Yuan seemed very satisfied as he finished speaking. He then saw that Jun Mo Xie's frozen eyes were looking at him.

"Fatty Tang... you, you, you... you've come from planet Earth, haven't you?! Damn! Why didn't you tell me?" Jun Mo Xie grabbed his shoulders. His eyes were brimming with tears now.

"What? What... planet Earth?" Tang Yuan was stumped. He didn't know whether to laugh or cry. "You are a planet! You think I want to be fat...? I don't want to be fat!"

"Ah...? So, you're not?" Jun Mo Xie sighed with disappointment, "It's just you have immense talent...! You can come up with such great advertisements. You'd have great prospects in advertising if you went to Earth!"

"Advertising...? Right... We will only be able to sell these things if we spread the word far and wide!" Tang Yuan suddenly realized the meaning of those words. However, he didn't stop looking reverently at Jun Mo Xie, "Third Young Master, you're the one with the greatest talent in reality. That one line embodied everything! This brother's admiration for you is as endlessly as the water of a large river. My mind moves like a violently surging gale on the ocean when my eyes behold the sight of you!"

"Bullshit! Stop talking nonsense! How do you plan to sell these? What minimum price do you estimate for them?" The Young Master didn't know whether to laugh or cry as he waved his hand.

"The efficacy of these pills is likely to be the same as those previous ones. And, they had sold for a base price of around half-a-million silver for two pills at the auctions," Tang Yuan flashed a ruthless smile. He had extended five of his fingers, "My initial estimates suggest that the price can also go over five-million for two pills. It's important to know that the invitation cards should be addressed to the Xuan-based families of the society. After all, these medicines are what they need the most!"

"..." Jun Mo Xie was rendered speechless. He had suddenly realized that the person facing him was an out-and-out business man. [This chap is asking an exorbitant price of five-million for two small pills! Moreover, this is for two pills which aren't even important to me...] It must be mentioned that only ten silver taels could treat an average household of three to a comfortable lifestyle for half-a-year!

"This is going to be so much fun! This fu*king fun!" Tang Yuan was excited. His eyes were filled with the gleams of glittering silver, "I had always dreamt of such a day... when I would sit comfortably and count the money. Damn! But, I had never expected that I would get to count silver notes instead of silver coins! In fact, I sometimes even pull a muscle in my hand while counting the money. This is so much fun! I count it every evening myself, and the counting continues to till midnight! This is great..."

"You... are too great!" Jun Mo Xie felt defeated. He had never imagined that he would ever be left so speechless. [The entire wealth of the Aristocratic Hall couldn't even be replaced for silver coins. In fact, it can be estimated that even one-tenth of our money would be enough to fill a room. And, Fatty Tang would probably lose a good amount of weight over one night's counting session. In fact, he would tire himself several times in one night since that much silver would cover the entire room. I guess he'd lose about ten kilos of weight in one night. Even the food he'd eat wouldn't affect his weight...]

[Hang on?] Jun Mo Xie was thinking along these lines when he suddenly hit upon an exceptional idea that could make Tang Yuan lose weight. And, he couldn't help the corners of his mouth curling into a slight but extremely sinister smirk.

Tang Yuan was struck dumb when he saw this, and stood shivering at this side, "Is someone scheming against me? Do people still wish to scheme against me? I have Song Shang to protect me. Should I still worry about someone scheming against me?" Fatty muttered to himself in a low voice.

"Ah, Fatty... Tell the buyers that the transactions in the coming auctions will be done in either gold or silver coin. We won't be accepting silver notes anymore! Moreover, the auction will be postponed by ten days so that everyone gets enough time to mobilize the funds," Jun Mo Xie suddenly remembered his 'golden'

technique. He figured that he could use the metal from those coins to temper and improve his Blood of Yellow Flame sword.

Moreover, this would also make Fatty Tang lose weight.

"Huh? We're transacting in silver and gold coins from now on?" Tang Yuan was confused, "What do you want with those, Third Young Master? We'd end up with a lot of coins!"

"I have a lot of use for them! Just do what I've said!" Jun Mo Xie replied in a serious manner.

"Okay. You must have your reasons. I'll go and get it done..." Fatty Tang was somewhat puzzled, but he still agreed to it. "But, I ask the Third Young Master to do me a favor first."

"What happened?"

"It's still that vile woman — Sun Xiao Mei. Ah, you don't know... This about that bottle of pills you had given me to give to that woman. Sun Xiao Mei took half of it. But, a problem arose when she finished it," Tang Yuan issued a prolonged sigh.

"What happened? Were there any side effects?" Jun Mo Xie's interests were suddenly raised. [Tang Yuan's appearance makes it seem that something must've gone wrong.]

"Ah, the medicine is very effective! That vile woman has become slim now. She can nearly be compared to Princess Ling Meng in that regard! But, the problem is that... her face looks even uglier now!"

Tang Yuan tried to cough up tears he said, "Third Young Master... you see... Sun Xiao Mei can make anyone lose their wits if you look at her from behind. But, she can scare away a million men once she turns to face you! This kind of a contrast makes me crumble. And, this is particularly true when I think that she's going to be my wife in the future..."

"The face...? How is it ugly?" Jun Mo Xie became very puzzled. That pills he had supplied should've helped in getting and

maintaining a nourished and youthful appearance. So, how could her face become ugly? This obviously defied the common logic.

"Xiao Mei had eaten some unknown thing when she was a child. Then, she suddenly started to become ugly, and also started to lose shape. That's why that woman wasn't easy on the eyes. But, her body started to change after she took your medicine. In fact, it seemed that even her bones were slimming down. Ah, she became increasingly slimmer... I looked at her, and used my position to give her another half-a-bottle from the hall's quota..."

Tang Yuan embarrassingly scratched his head as he looked at Jun Mo Xie, "I saw her again after a few days. And, her rear-profile had started to look even more fascinating! In fact, it had become far more elegant! But, her face... had become even uglier! Moreover, there were many kinds of swellings, lumps, and warts! Ah, Third Young Master! You don't know of the pain in my heart! It's such a good figure... it is a pity that..."

Jun Mo Xie understood the matter when he heard this. It seemed that Sun Xiao Mei's huge built wasn't her natural one. That unknown thing she had eaten had somehow wrought damage to the hormonal balance within her body. Consequently, her constitution had started to lean to a more manly form. But, the Young Master's pill had become an antigen to that. Therefore, Tang Yuan had unintentionally forced that poison out of Sun Xiao Mei's body by giving her more of the medicine. However, this had resulted in a drug-abuse. And, that poison had moved towards her face, and had left it to look horrible. This had then resulted in the current scenario where 'one would harbor nefarious thoughts when they'd see the rear, but retreat in fear and self-defense when they'd see the face'. It was a subtle situation...

"It's not that serious; I'll go and take a look. I don't think it's that big a deal. I'll return you an undeniably beautiful wife. But, you must be careful, Fatty. Sun Xiao Mei will trample you if she becomes beautiful..."

"Huh?" Tang Yuan said shocked, "Don't mention about. It's not that I don't know. That woman has a fierce character. And, she'll probably get worse if she looks better. But, it wouldn't kill me, right?" He thought for a moment, and became distressed. He then said in agony, "But, her face will kill my desires at this rate if she doesn't..."

"Ah, I've got to admit that you've got a point..." Jun Mo Xie consoled. Then, he rolled his eyes and said, "But, my dearest brother Fatty... let's be honest for a second... I understand that your wife has this peculiar condition. But, wouldn't it be considered cheating since you had misused your position at the Aristocratic Hall to get those medicines?"

"Uh..." Tang Yuan rolled his eyes.

"You also know the strict rules of our Aristocratic Hall. We sell our items many after increasing their prices by many times of the highest market price. And, we'll deduct the cost of those pills from your shares," Jun Mo Xie showed no quarter, "And, I'll confiscate your shares if these things happen again."

"Don't... No. No. Don't do it Third Young Master! That's only shining money! But, that shining money is my life! You plan to take your brother's life?! I'm your brother..." Tang Yuan let out a miserable and mournful shout. It was like the man's heart had been ripped out. He teared up, and his nose ran as he retorted, "You can't do this! You're very cruel, boo hoo..."

[I had never imaged that this would happen to me. I've been robbing the whole world with my tricks. But, I never thought that Jun Mo Xie would rob me upon his return! Is it karma...?]

"Then, you take your pick — do you want a pretty wife or do you want money?" Jun Mo Xie held his hands behind his back as he ignored Fatty's pleading.

"This... this... money is my life... But, a wife is like a lifeline. A lifeline is more important... Of course, I want the wife..." Tang

Yuan grunted and grumbled as he rolled his eyes at first. Then, he finally made a determined decision.

Chapter 466: Ye Gu Han's Epiphany

"Isn't that right?" Jun Mo Xie opened his eyes wide, and stared at him. "Don't think I won't get to know if you stuff your pockets, you brat! This is only a small lesson! One bottle contains hundred pills, and each is worth about a million on an average! You've taken away fifty pills. And, we usually consider double the prices under these circumstances. This means that you need to cough out a hundred-million right now!"

There was a "Bang!" as Tang Yuan fell face up. His mouth was foaming, and his body was twitching.

However, Jun Mo Xie ignored it, and continued, "I'll count to three, and I'll double the amount if you don't get up by then. So, it doesn't matter to me even if you remain dizzy for a long time as long as you have the funds to afford the time!"

But, Jun Mo Xie hadn't even begun counting when Tang Yuan nimbly jumped to his feet, "You needn't trouble yourself with the counting. I admit to it, fine? You're very fierce, Third Young Master. You opened your mouth, and spoke of a hundred million straight away... I barely have three-hundred-million in total!" Tang Yuan gnashed his teeth hard as he spoke-up in a hateful tone at first. He then suddenly felt that he had lost his tongue...

"Huh...? Three Hundred million?! Fu*k! Damn it, you're quite the businessman, Tang Yuan! You've filled your coffers pretty well! I'm your dad! And yet, you've coveted three-hundred-million from me! You have two choices now — first, you cough up that three-hundred-million you've embezzled from me. Or, second; you accompany me to the Dugu Family in the evening," Jun Mo Xie spoke-up ferociously with a desire to exploit.

It needed to be mentioned that Tang Yuan owned twenty-percent shares in the Aristocratic Hall. And, the Aristocratic Hall had made profits worth nine-hundred-million till date. This meant that his

share was about one-hundred-and-eighty-million. However, Jun Mo Xie had never expected this Fatty would've siphoned-off three-hundred-million for himself. [There would be no other person in the entire Tian Xiang who'd have such a freakish net-worth...] Jun Mo Xie would feel very uneasy at heart if he didn't exploit this fat pig in any manner...

"Isn't that easy to choose? We two are brothers! So, I will obviously follow you wherever you go! In fact, I will follow you to a tiger's den without hesitation! So, what's the big deal with the Dugu Family's house? Shit! Ah! The Dugu Family...?"

Tang Yuan hit his chest vehemently and hurriedly promised. He suddenly realized that he had spoken of the Dugu Family just when he finished talking. He couldn't help but shiver. Then, he raised his head bitterly, "Third Young Master, your brother can't uphold his promise. I can't help it. I just remembered that I've something important this evening. And, I must handle this matter..."

"Is that so? I'm sure you'll make the right decision. And, I'm sure you'll decide to accompany me," Jun Mo Xie chuckled as he replied.

"I'm genuinely busy. And, I seriously can't delay this matter!" Tang Yuan smiled as he looked at the Young Master. He thought that he could still get the better of things...

"I won't force you since you're busy. So, give me the three-hundred-million instead..." Jun Mo Xie raised three fingers.

"Oh... That matter is very trivial, Eldest Brother. Hehe, its not that important... Anyway, it's my duty to accompany you to the Dugu Household. How can I even say that I won't go? Damn! Will it still be no good? Damn it... I'm even willing to sell my-fat-self to that terrifying Dugu Family for you. That should be enough, right?" Tang Yuan's face was tragically heroic and solemn.

"Well, that's almost okay. In fact, I nearly believed that you were busy after you said it with such a flustered face..." Jun Mo Xie clapped and laughed, "Oh, and that one-hundred-million..." Tang

Yuan's spirits rocketed. After all, there was a chance that even his hundred-million silver taels could be exempted if he accompanied the Young Master to the Dugu Family... [How good would that be...]

[It would be worth it even if I was bullied at the Dugu Household...]

Therefore, he looked at Jun Mo Xie with excitement. However, he only heard the Young Master say, "...I think I'll live to see a fine tomorrow in that case. Anyway, I think even the Dugu Family might not be able to eat the amount of fat you've got on you..."

Tang Yuan fell loudly on the ground. Even his gulp was audible...

Jun Mo Xie noticed that there was still a lot of time left. So, he made Tang Yuan wait for him in his area, and asked him to chat with Ye Gu Han. Then, he quietly slipped away...

And, that's because chatting with Ye Gu Han was a difficult assignment on its own. This was because that man always spoke to himself, and never paid attention to anyone else. He would talk with passion about the topic that interested him. Moreover, he'd get angry if his audience didn't listen to his words. The man's Xuan strength was crippled. Even Tang Yuan could beat him if he were to get angry. But, could anyone have the heart to beat-up a crippled man? However, one would have to listen to him if they didn't have the heart to beat him...

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie pushed Tang Yuan up to the task on this day. Fatty Tang was very excited at the beginning. After all, Ye Gu Han's passionate story had circulated amongst every youngster of the capital.

Ye Gu Han's attachment... Ye Gu Han's love... Ye Gu Han's legend...

However, Tang Yuan hadn't even spent five minutes when he started to regret it...

Ye Gu Han was clearly immersed in his own world. He spoke about it again and again. The man told the story from start to finish, but it seemed as if he was narrating it to himself. In fact, he didn't seem to care if anyone was listening. After all, he was only responsible for narrating it... But, he would get upset if Fatty would leave. Then, he would stare wide-eyed at the Fatty while abusing in a loud voice. The other party would've gotten very angry if they hadn't seen his deformity...

Tang Yuan wanted to cry, but was devoid of tears. [I've given up a hundred million, and I've also promised to accompany the Third Young Master to the Dugu Household. The Dugus are the nightmare of this city! But, I'm still being made to sit and chat with this madman... This is unfair...]

Then, the sharp 'whooshing' sound of a wind from the outside attracted Ye Gu Han's attention. Ye Gu Han stood up, and moved forth to see out the window. And, he couldn't move his eyes away from what he saw. He then quickly walked out.

The two kids were training outside. One was practicing with his blade, while the other was using his sword. Their movements were youthful and inexperienced; they weren't skillful by any means. On glance was enough to tell that they had started to learn martial arts very recently.

However, the child who was using the blade had still attracted Ye Gu Han's gaze...

[That child is using a left-handed blade technique!]

[Moreover, this is a purely one-armed blade technique! After all, the slashes are going towards the direction of the right arm. So, the user will chop-off their own arm if they use it with the right hand...]

Ye Gu Han was a veteran expert. So, he could obviously tell this at a glance. [This blade-technique was designed by a one-armed man. There's no other way anyone could've come up with such a

technique for the disabled to use...]

However, his right hand had also been chopped off. Consequently, he was also someone who could only use his left hand. Ye Gu Han knew that he was finished ever since he had lost his right hand. His sword had been his lifelong companion. And, he had certainly tried to use it on the odd occasion. However, he could no longer use his sword style since he had lost his right hand. Moreover, he had somehow survived that tragedy by a twist of luck. But, his meridians were still a mess, and he couldn't use his Sky Xuan strength anymore. And, these blows had gradually left Ye Gu Han to despair...

However, Ye Gu Han had suddenly found a new hope. [Other people can create such a left-handed blade technique... and, that too presumably after suffering from injuries. So, why can't I create a sword technique that suits my left arm? Wouldn't it make for a formidable skill if I can develop it on the base of this unconventional blade technique?]

Ye Gu Han watched-on as that kid stubbornly trained with his blade. He was continuously slashing it over and over...

However, he seemed like a fool...

That youngster kept training with his weapon. But, he had seemingly failed to grasp the main points. However, he heard someone speak-up just as he became vexed, "That move should be done like this..." A hand suddenly took-over his blade, and demonstrated that move with ease.

The kid simply couldn't tell who had managed to perform this technique with such brilliance.

Moreover, that person had also used his left hand.

Therefore, the kid turned his head, and found that this person was Ye Gu Han!

Ye Gu Han's face shone with a fervent splendor. His eyes

gradually became red as he looked at the blade he held in his hand. He then calmly stuck that knife to his face for a long time. Then, he softly said, "Thank you. Thank you for letting me know that I'm still useful! I'm not a downright waste yet..."

Then, he stood up; and, stood up straight!

The pride and heroism of winning a thousand difficult battles had suddenly returned to him!

Guan Qing Han was frenetic and confused by the time Jun Mo Xie arrived to see her.

"How are you doing?" Jun Mo Xie smiled and sat down beside her.

"Not bad," Guan Qing Han smiled lightly.

"We will sometimes think excessively about a terrible thing until we come to confront it. But, we'll find that it wasn't necessarily awful when that time of reckoning arrives. In fact, there's nothing that can make our life horrible. Everything is the same, and everything is nonsense. It'll become much easier when you stop fearing it," Jun Mo Xie pondered and said, "And, this is no exception; understand?"

"Yes, I didn't expect this. I had never even dare to harbor such excessive expectations. I had never hoped that things would go away like this," Guan Qing Han nodded gently, and gave a melancholic smile as she spoke, "I had thought that this problem would make life difficult. I had believed that I wouldn't make it through."

"No. This matter isn't fully over yet," Jun Mo Xie smiled, "That's because you haven't faced your own problems yet. Third Uncle is preparing to accept you as his daughter in front of the whole world. You will be a daughter of the Jun Family once that happens. You won't be the eldest daughter-in-law thereafter. And, anyone who tries to use that matter to defame you will become an enemy

of the Jun Family. And, they would then have to accept the ruthless fate of being eliminated since they will become our enemy."

"Foster Father is a good man..." Guan Qing Han sighed emotionally. Her eyes shone as she looked at Jun Mo Xie, "It's you... who lacks consideration."

"Where does this come from?" Jun Mo Xie was stunned by this.

"I heard that Mei Gao Jie and Kong Ling Yang were killed. Did you do it?" Guan Qing Han gave him a somewhat accusatory stare, "These two scholars were somewhat conservative, but they were still upright men. Moreover, their knowledge was amazing, and they had served this nation with all their heart throughout their lives. So, it's still excessive to kill such great men!"

"Hehe... you still don't understand! Good men can sometimes bring about great harm when they do bad things. And, it doesn't matter what their convictions may have been, or what their purpose was! Moreover, the disaster wrought is greater if the moral character of the person is nobler! In fact, they may even directly or indirectly hinder the progress of all mankind! You won't understand what I'm saying..." Jun Mo Xie sighed as he spoke. He couldn't help but think of his deeply missed motherland.

China!

Chapter 467: Visiting the Dugu Family

The four great inventions of ancient China had been game changers. The people had flourished as a hundred schools of thought had contended. The heavenly conqueror Genghis Khan had proudly conquered most of the world once.

However, the arrogance of the scholars had directed that great country with their narrowed wisdom in the era that had followed. And, they had closed the country off to the rest of the world. The enemy outside had made tremendous improvements as time had passed. However, these scholars had remained unaffected even though they knew. They allowed others to take advantage of their very own inventions. And, they were later attacked using these very inventions... and were forced to suffer great losses! They were thus left to lag behind in both military and economy. And, this same condition had continued to prevail since. Therefore, they were forced to put their efforts into chasing others instead of leading the world.

These causes and effects were the result of those scholars' arrogance.

But, were they bad people? No! Each of them only had old-fashioned and arrogant mindsets. But, their moral characters were better than many men. In fact, each of those men could be called pure and good people. But, they were still the main reason why the country had lagged behind.

Jun Mo Xie could only sigh whenever he'd recall this extremely sorrowful and helpless history...

A good man turned bad is much worse than a bad man!

What kind of reasoning would this make for? Most people would be left flabbergasted if one were to speak of these things.

However, this is a fact of time!

It can't be erased. In fact, it's impossible to erase.

So, were Mei Gao Jie and Kong Ling Yang good men? Yes! And, nobody could deny it. Even Jun Mo Xie couldn't deny it! But, these two men wanted to leave their names in glory for eternity. And, the decisions they made for this reason had caused harm to millions of people in Tian Xiang...

However, what would be the criteria for evaluating the pros and cons of their work?

Jun Mo Xie was a bit disappointed as he muttered, "Or maybe that's only a change of perspective. What every person does seems correct in their opinion. But, who could've thought so far ahead? No one would be able to do anything if they were to put so much thought into their actions! And, the people who don't do anything are only mediocre!"

"So, we can only abide by our hearts," Jun Mo Xie said in a heavy manner, "You needn't worry about those useless people. There isn't a single man in this world who'll interfere with our decision. Not one! So, you be at ease. I'll never let you be sad. Nor will I let others off easy."

Guan Qing Han sighed softly. [Jun Mo Xie is wrong, but he still seems to make sense. He seems to be full of rebelliousness as well. I can only understand half of it...]

"Let's not speak of these things. You came to look for me. What's the matter? What can I do?" Guan Qing Han raised her spirits and asked.

"Nothing in particular. I heard you play some music earlier. So, I thought about seeing you. But, I had to visit Grandfather in his study first," Jun Mo Xie briefly spoke about the Jun Family's information networks as he said, "We may have become powerful these days. But, we're also standing opposite to the Imperial Family in some ways. In fact, we may end up in a battle of life and death against them if some conjectures turn out to be true.

However, I believe that this hidden intelligence network could be a big problem. In fact, it's giving me a headache. This has made things very complicated..."

"Oh... So, that's the issue..." Guan Qing Han frowned. She then thought for a moment and said, "How will the Imperial Family deal with the people commanded by the Jun Family if we become enemies? Will they trust those people? I don't think so! They will plan kill those people instead! They would even be willing to kill some of their own by mistake, but they won't let anyone suspicious off! In fact, this would be more of a possibility given the current Emperor's extremely suspicious mindset..."

"That's right! These words have roused me from my dream!" Jun Mo Xie suddenly brightened up. He then said while smiling, "I have bewildered the authorities. The Imperial Family won't let them live. I'm suspicious. Then, this analogy makes them even more suspicious! I've finally figured it out! This puts me at ease, ha ha! It's all thanks to you — my darling!"

Guan Qing Han's face reddened. The first half of that guy's words was quite serious. And, she also felt happy that he had figured out his problem. However, she hadn't expected that man to come up with those final words...

"Who... who is your darling?! Don't talk nonsense!" Guan Qing Han rebuked. She then became embarrassed, and started to feel her body's temperature rising.

"Ah... I! I'm my darling... alright? Ha ha ha..." Jun Mo xie laughed heartily and escaped. He left behind a furious Guan Qing Han to stamp her foot. She eventually calmed down after a while. However, her face still remained red with a blush...

The sun was setting as Jun Mo Xie set out carrying a gift box. He was accompanied by Fatty Tang, and a number of guards. The entire retinue then journeyed towards the Dugu Family's household...

The Young Master Tang sat swaying on a summer palanquin, and followed Young Master Jun.

This palanquin was mainly used during the summer time. No one in Tian Xiang would use this palanquin in the winters. In fact, Tang Yuan was seemingly the only person in the entire scope of land who was using this palanquin in the winters...

However, Tang Yuan had no other choice. His body had become too huge. And, the palanquin he had brought couldn't be used anymore. Plus, the new palanquin hadn't arrived yet. There had been a small incident the last time he had sat in a palanquin. The palanquin bearers hadn't even carried him halfway when the palanquin had broken from below. This was then followed by a crashing sound as he had fallen down on the ground. The reason was obvious — the palanquin's structure hadn't been able to put up with his terrible weight, and had broken...

Jun Mo Xie increasingly felt that Fatty Tang needed to lose weight. [He will die of excessive fat if he continues to put on weight like this...]

His bodily fat could still be considered normal in the past. But, it had reached the point of obesity by now. In fact, an extreme degree of that...

This could possibly even pose a threat to his life.

The Hong Jun Pagoda couldn't provide a weight-loss pill. And, this had left Jun Mo Xie to feel very helpless. [Would I need to use a knife to cut out his fat?]

The four bearers were left to pant and drip with sweat by the time they completed this journey to the Dugu Family's gate!

The four bearers felt that they would collapse by the time Tan Yuan slowly wriggled out from the palanquin with difficulty.

Lifting a palanquin for other people was a means to make money... And, one could get paid for their hard work. But, lifting

this person's palanquin was nothing short of excruciating. The four bearers momentarily had an urge to resign. After all, that fat man's weight had increased at a frightening rate. His weight had been around a hundred-and-fifty kilos a few days ago. It was surely more than an average person's weight, but the four bearers had still agreed to lift him. After all, the fat man didn't pay a low wage. In fact, he paid thrice the amount anyone would. The four men were surely left exhausted at the end of the job, but were still the objects of envy for their peers.

However, the Fatty's weight had increased by almost half his original number. In fact, the four men felt that carrying a bison would feel lighter than Tang Yuan. And, that's because even a bison's weight couldn't match that of Tang Yuan's...

Their peers no longer looked at them with envy these days. Instead, it seemed like they were watching a play...

However, what happened next was rather unexpected for Jun Mo Xie... [The Dugu Family is surely showing some guts...]

He was welcomed by an unmanned gate.

He held out his invitation, and waited for a long time before a guard came rushing. The guard then gasped for breath, and said, "The Old Lord has bidden the Young Master to enter."

Jun Mo Xie exclaimed an 'Oh' before he spoke-up, "How come there's no one to greet me here?"

The guard rolled his eyes and thought; [I've already told you very clearly. But, you still want someone to come and greet you?] Therefore, he only replied, "The Old Lord has said that the Young Master isn't an outsider anymore. So, there's no need for formalities or false welcomes."

Jun Mo Xie nodded and said, "That's very good! Everyone here is one family. So, I also won't regard them as outsiders. I have something else on my mind today. And, I'm sure that everyone in

the family will understand if I come again another day."

It seemed like the Young Master had heard, "The Old Lord isn't home. Can the Young Master come later?" He then turned around without delay, and started to walk away. [Damn you! I was willing to come here because you invited me. And, you're treating me like this now...? You think you can bully me like this?]

[Anyway, you're the one who's anxious. I don't care!]

[Let's see who's afraid of who... Don't you provoke me! I'll marry your granddaughter. Then, I'll take her back, and hit her eight times a day!]

The guard stared at him stumped as he turned to leave.

It wasn't like he had never seen anyone acting arrogant in the past. However, he had never seen anyone daring to be so arrogant towards the Dugu Family.

Tang Yuan's palanquin bearer's nearly started to weep. [You won't even let us catch our breaths... you brat? We pitiful chaps have carried him so far...]

Jun Mo Xie had moved quite far in a wink. And, it seemed that he had no intention of returning.

However, a figure came flying out from the Dugu Family's gate at this moment, "Please stay, Third Young Master Jun!" It was Dugu Chong.

"Everyone in the family is waiting for you inside, Third Young Master! Are you genuinely going back? Everyone is here. There's no need to worry! The food has been prepared with a lot of effort!" Dugu Chong's expression was amiable and warm. He ran up, and grabbed Jun Mo Xie's hand, "Come, come! Come with me!"

He then turned his head and scolded, "Didn't I say that I'll come and greet him myself? What's this about 'no need to greet'? How are you a gate-guard? How can you talk such nonsense?! Third Master Jun is a respected guest! How can you dare to offend him?"

You get twenty lashes for this. And, that's a small punishment for this huge offense!"

The guard begrudgingly shut his mouth, and hung his head.

Jun Mo Xie almost laughed and turned around. He found that Dugu Chong was very interesting. After all, the youngster had betrayed himself the moment he had opened his mouth. Moreover, his ability to act and speak with righteousness wasn't small either. So, it wasn't surprising that there were rumors about the youngsters of the Dugu Family being a pain in the neck. They weren't false either...

He had first said that he would come out to greet Jun Mo Xie. Then, he had said "What's this about 'no need to greet'?" Didn't this imply that he was listening when the guard was talking to Jun Mo Xie...

Moreover, he even seemed proud of himself after he had said this... Jun Mo Xie had never seen something like this before...

"Haha... people don't understand propriety. Third Young Master shouldn't be bewildered. I bid you to enter," Dugu Chong was aware he was talking big words, and he seemed to be admiring his own wit. However, he then saw the mountain of flesh a wink later, "Ah, Young Master Tang... The Young Master is becoming increasingly... mighty! This brother genuinely admires you!"

Tang Yuan snorted. However, that big piece of flesh managed to remain motionless as he laughed and said, "Ah, this Tang Yuan also admires Young Master Dugu! I'm extremely honored!" However, Dugu Chong couldn't help but get angry when he heard the weirdly sarcastic manner in which those words were spoken.

Tang Yuan used to be a disappointing character in the past. In fact, he wasn't necessarily any better than the original Jun Mo Xie. And, he would've retreated in fear if he had seen any of the ruthless seven Dugu Brothers in the past. But, the fat man's self-confidence had inflated since his net-worth had risen over a

hundred-million. Consequently, he could even dare to speak up when he saw that Dugu Chong was acting wickedly.

Dugu Chong led the way once he had choked upon his rage. However, he had a dark line across his face as he thought, [How can I bring shame to this fat man today? And, this Jun Mo Xie is also very unpleasant to look at! His appearance is so sloppy. How can my sister fall for him? Moreover, he's even going to be my brother-in-law?]

[Our Family is very unlucky!]

Dugu Chong thought of this, and lifted his big and chimpanzee-like face upwards since he had an urge to sigh.

Chapter 468: What is Pagoda Suppresses?

Jun Mo Xie felt like he had stepped into Yang Zirong's shoes as he entered the lobby. He felt as reluctant as that man had when he had entered the Tiger Mountain as an undercover spy.

Dugu Zong Heng was sitting on the Lord's chair. His shoulders were draped with tiger fur like the lead antagonist. His high-perched body slightly tilted downwards. He was looking down at Jun Mo Xie like a high lord would on a peasant. His expression was remarkably similar to that of the Bandit Warlord Hawk's character from the Tiger Mountain's epic. In fact, it seemed that only a little adjustment in his expression would eliminate any need for disguises if he wanted to look the part.

Dugu Wu Di was staring wide-eyed with his ox-like eyes. His hand was pressed aggressively on his sword hilt, and he stood upright in front of Old Man Dugu. His expression was so vigilant that it seemed as if he was on the lookout for an undercover spy on the Tiger Mountain's fortress. He didn't have any pockmarks on his face like the lead counter-man from that epic had. However, he was certainly looking the part without it as well.

The seven burly and tough brothers stood at the two sides. Each one of them seemed ready to take aggressive action. This scene seemed so lifelike in depiction that one would have a hard time in defending the infringements...

Jun Mo Xie felt that he would reflexively end-up saying "Our Pagoda Suppresses River Monsters," if a Dugu had said, "Our master lords over tigers". And, the following jokes about the face being red and yellow would've flowed out even more fluently...

However, it would've been impossible to recreate an "Our master lords over the tigers" dialogue even if the setting looked very similar.

No one spoke for a long time. The atmosphere was quite stifling.

Everyone in the hall was looking at Jun Mo Xie's face with a solemn and ferocious expression. The Young Master Tang was standing behind him. But, Tang Yuan seemed to be fighting his own battles. His lips were blue, his face was white, and he could barely stand up straight.

A long while passed before Dugu Zong Heng roared, "You! Jun Mo Xie?"

Jun Mo Xie was still immersed in the wonderful reverie about the resourcefulness of the great Yang Zirong. Therefore, he subconsciously moved his right hand in front and blurted out, "The Pagoda suppresses... En...? May the Old Dugu be safe and healthy!"

"The Pagoda suppresses...? What is that?" The nine men from the Dugu Family were left baffled, "What pagoda are you telling our Dugu Family about... you great brat Jun? What tricks are you up to?"

"Ah... the pagoda... what I meant..." Jun Mo Xie rolled his eyes and spoke in a hurry, "...what I meant was that I clearly felt your mountain-like imposing aura when I entered this hall. It felt like a huge pagoda that supports the heavens. It subdued me there and then. Uh... that's what I meant."

Dugu Zong Heng's face beamed with joy when he heard this. He wanted to laugh out loudly. But, he restrained himself, and maintained a solemn mannerism. He then appeared cold on the outside as he said, "Oh? Am I that mighty?"

"You're overflowing with it. Respected Old Man possesses formidable might!" Jun Mo Xie raised a thumb.

"You're a good youngster! You possess discerning eyesight!" Dugu Zong Heng's laugh was refreshing. His steel-needles-like broad quivered as he said, "Your tongue also comes up with sweet sounding words!"

A dark line covered Jun Mo Xie's face.

"You don't need to rely on flattery and buffoonery. I can see that you're trying to look good!" General Dugu Wu Di saw his father laughing, and felt the atmosphere changing. So, he yelled out to remind him that the matter wasn't done with. After all, they couldn't let that brat get away with it.

"Ah, ahem! Ahem..." Dugu Zong Heng coughed and seated himself upright.

"How am I indulging in buffoonery? Isn't your father mighty? So, why would you say that I'm only trying to look good? Hehe... you're too kind, Uncle Dugu! I never leave my name behind whenever I do a good deed! But, I always do good deeds. Doing good deeds isn't difficult for anyone. But, rarely does anyone persevere throughout their lives to do good deeds... like I do..." Jun Mo Xie's words sounded sincere. He walked about the room. Then, he found an empty chair, and sat on it.

Moreover, his seating position was directly facing Dugu Wu Di.

Dugu Wu Di wrinkled his nose in anger. [Many people think that our Dugu Family's people are a pain in the neck. But, I'd like to show them that this brat here is a true troublemaker!]

[My father and I made half-an-attempt to scare him, but this one wasn't stunned in the least. In fact, he annoyingly sat down. Moreover, he has been talking self-righteously, and has even dared to boast about persevering throughout his life to do good deeds! In fact, he didn't even blush while saying it. He's nearly as good as me...]

"Who told you to sit down? Stand up!" General Dugu was left to fume with rage, "I — your future father-in-law — haven't given you permission to sit! But, you sat down so arrogantly. I'll kick your buttocks into the sky!"

"Oh... ahem! Ahem! I was wondering while I was coming here —

why would the Old General call me over so suddenly? So, I thought about it, and recalled that... perhaps the Dugu Family might be wanting to hand-over that small amount of money which they've owed me for a few months now..."

Jun Mo Xie crossed his legs noisily, "Therefore, I came over with extreme anticipation. Ah... But, it seems that you don't have the funds. It hasn't been a short while since you've owed me. This matter shouldn't be dragged along any further. Anyway, the end of the year is a good time to settle debts. Moreover, it's only a small amount of money. It was nine-million, right...? No wait. There's about a zero short in that..."

He spoke, and loudly snapped his fingers. Then, he pointed at a maid at the side, "The lovely lady over there... can you please bring a cup of tea...? Ah, that's my mistake... Please bring two cups... he he... And, it seems that the weather is bit too hot for my brother. He's getting very sweaty. So, he needs to re-hydrate very quickly..."

The maid knew that she mustn't smile. So, she hurriedly restrained herself.

[What are you saying? The weather is hot? It's midwinter right now...]

[Besides, what are your eyes made of? Your fat brother is clearly very scared! Even I can see it...]

Jun Mo Xie's words led to a dramatic change in the situation. General Dugu was suddenly stumped when the talk came to debts. [Small amount of money...? Ninety-million in silver is a small amount? Doesn't it hurt when he speaks? Who in all of Tian Xiang can bring forth such a "small amount of money?"]

However, General Dugu also realized his point. [This boy is clearly threatening me —I'll straightaway talk about those ninety-million if you treat me badly. I have the identity of an indelible creditor. Moreover, this is a creditor who can make the Dugu Family go bankrupt!]

General Dugu gasped and wheezed in anger at first. Then, he eventually roared, "Come on! Bring the tea! And, bring a chair for Young Master Tang as well!" Then, he thought for a second, and added, "Bring the largest chair. And, something that can put-up a fight when someone sits on it!"

Dugu Chong and his brothers assumed a very strange expression as these words were spoken. In fact, they had to restrain their impulse to laugh.

"Ah, Fatty... this old man had invited the Jun Family's Third Young Master Jun Mo Xie for a banquet. So, why have you come along?" Dugu Zong Heng looked at Tang Yuan. He had glared wide-eyed as he had spoken this. His meaning was clear, 'I haven't invited you. So, why are you here?'

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but admire that. [This old man speaks very directly. In fact, he hasn't even ordered him to leave in a direct manner.]

Tang Yuan thought in the secrecy of his mind; [You think I would've wanted to come to you? I would never have come here if Third Young Master hadn't forced me with money.] However, Old Man Dugu had asked him a question, and Young Master Tang was an experienced businessman. So, he knew that this wasn't the time to get scared. His stomach was still feeling the pangs of fear, but his mind had stabilized. Therefore, he braced himself as he replied, "Third Young Master and I are very close friends. However, we haven't been able to see each other in months. Today was the first time we got to meet. Moreover, we youngsters aren't very talented. And, I didn't wish for the Third Young Master to be alone on this road. So, I had no choice but to accompany Third Young Master while coming here when he decided to pay his respects to Old Dugu."

Tang Yuan was a true friend. He could be even called an unyielding one. He had surely been dragged there by Jun Mo Xie. However, he could also see that Jun Mo Xie was afraid of the Dugu

Family for some reason. Moreover, he knew that Jun Mo Xie would be at a disadvantage if he were to say something inappropriate. Therefore, he also raised his hands in support...

"So, that's the case. You're very loyal!" Dugu Zong Heng nodded and spoke, "I'll take your word for it. Sit."

Tang Yuan thanked him, and sat down on the huge chair that had just been brought for him. His nervousness had been expelled by this point. It must be mentioned that the quality of chair was outstanding... it merely creaked.

Dugu Zong Heng opened his eyes wide, and carefully sized up Jun Mo Xie and Tang Yuan. Then, he sighed after a good while, "The two notorious debauchees of the capital are two genuine men in reality. I had never expected this!"

He then looked at his seven grandsons. They started to fidget and cower in fear under his gaze. Old Man Dugu couldn't help but be disappointed at this...

Dugu Zong Heng had praised them by calling them "genuine men"! So, it was evident that Jun Mo Xie and Tang Yuan weren't lowly in his opinion by any means. And, that's because even his own grandsons hadn't received that praise from him yet...

It needs to be mentioned that every aspect of this meeting had been specifically arranged in the Dugu Household. The old man had created that solemn atmosphere himself. Then, there was the veteran General of a hundred battles with his imposing aura present amidst this setting. An average person would've sunk under the pressure long ago. In fact, the said-individual wouldn't even have been able to breathe. In fact, the Fatty from four months ago would've probably pissed his pants if he were here instead...

However, Jun Mo Xie had acted in a very natural manner after he had arrived here. In fact, he had even laughed and jeered. It had seemed as if it was the most common thing to do. No average debauchee could've had such bearings. Tang Yuan had surely felt

somewhat restricted earlier. However, even he had become freer by now. He couldn't be considered to have the same bearing as Jun Mo Xie. But, Tang Yuan had still managed to act freely in such an atmosphere. And, that in-itself could be considered an achievement...

However, it was a bit arbitrary of the old man to consider his grandsons unequal to those two youngsters. After all, his grandsons... and even his son had been terrified of being chided by him their entire life. So, it was like cat and mouse with them. How could they act freely and comfortably when they'd see the cat?

However, even these annoying men wouldn't act scared if went to someone else's house and weren't accompanied by the old man. After all, wasn't it these seven brothers who had smashed Jun Mo Xie's wine jars that day?

Then, there was a 'clinking' sound. It was followed by sounds of footsteps as the great door at the back of the hall opened, and a group of women came inside. They were led by an old lady. She had a ruddy complexion, and was enshrouded in grace. She was leaning on crutches, and was being supported by two thirty-year-old women as she walked in.

Chapter 469: Old Lady's Persecution

Dugu Xiao Yi had returned to her original slim figure behind the Old Lady. However, she stuck out her tongue, and gave a meaningful look as soon as she saw Jun Mo Xie. She had indicated; [be careful.]

"That is Jun Mo Xie? Stand up in front of this old woman! Let me see what sort of a hero has made my granddaughter so crazy and rebellious!" The Old Lady came from the back and stood in front of Jun Mo Xie. She then started to look around in search for the lowly swindler who had cheated her granddaughter.

Jun Mo Xie started to sweat. [I had always heard that the Dugu Family is a den of troublemakers. And, those rumors weren't without reason. Even this Old Lady is so doughty! It wouldn't have been easy for Dugu Xiao Yi to grow up in such an environment. In fact, it would've been hard for her to not be bold...]

He had no choice but to stand up and say, "That youngster is me."

"Oh... And, is that Tang Yuan?" the Old Lady asked.

The "youngster" Fatty hurriedly bowed in reply.

The Old Lady smiled slightly, "The capital's new God of Wealth is extraordinary!"

[Huh? Capital's God of Wealth? Fatty's got a trendy nickname...] Jun Mo Xie was stumped. He then angrily glared at the grinning Tang Yuan. It wasn't surprising that Fatty had become well-known due to the Aristocratic Hall. Moreover, his social status had also increased many-fold. Therefore, the title of 'God of Wealth' wasn't baseless to be honest...

Jun Mo Xie cursed in silence as the Old Lady waved her hand, "You seven brats go outside and play with Young Master Tang. There's no work for you here. And, be a good host to your guest!"

The seven "Heroes and Legends" hastily agreed, and escorted

Fatty out. The speed of their movements could be called 'fast and urgent'. In fact, it seemed like they were being chased by a dog...

"Sit down; don't be so formal," Old Lady Dugu nodded. She then turned, and went to sit at the head-chair besides Dugu Zong Heng. Then, an army of women came and stood behind the Old Lady. However, those daughter-in-laws were watching and observing the Young Master very carefully. After all, they were curious about the ill-reputed Young Master who had bewitched their little girl, and had made her fall head over heels.

It was particularly true for the lady on the old woman's left. She was glaring at him without end.

Dugu Zong Heng and Dugu Wu Di had lost their fierce mannerisms when the Old Lady had arrived. In fact, they had become silent out of fear, and hadn't dared to speak loudly since.

"Jun Mo Xie... Er... this youngster looks very good. Very good... He's an attractive young man," the Old Lady praised. She then turned her head, and spoke to the others, "His nose, and his eyes... are placed like that of a mannequin."

The other women nodded in agreement.

A black line spread on Jun Mo Xie's face. [Huh? Can these words be considered a compliment to a person's appearance? It suddenly seems that I'm not a man... I'm a mannequin that resembles a man. And, what's with the eyes and the nose? That's where a nose is supposed to be. Would this place be occupied by ears instead? Are they complementing me... or disparaging me?]

"Ah... Jun Mo Xie... you brat. You've already brought this matter about. So, I now wish to know what you plan to do with my Xiao Yi," Old Lady Dugu spoke-up in a very direct manner. She even saved on the small talk as she straightforwardly raised this extremely sharp and obtuse question. Moreover, she didn't hesitate or avoid the issue...

"What do I plan to do?" Jun Mo Xie was stunned for a second, "The good lady's words are very startling. I don't even know what I've done. Therefore, I request the Old Lady to kindly explain the specifics of what I've done...?"

"Humph! Your eyebrows and eyes look good. But, your mouth is very crafty. You incited our Xiao Yi to act pregnant in front of everyone that day. Don't you understand the consequences of that?" Old Lady Dugu's face was calm, and her tone was evenly tempered.

"Yes. That incident happened due to a lack of consideration on Miss Dugu's part... Eh...? But, I didn't incite it! I've never done such a thing. I haven't even thought about it. I only saw..." Jun Mo Xie hastily clarified.

However, the Young Master hadn't finished speaking when the Old Lady interrupted, "I'm also certain that you didn't do it willfully, you brat. But, it doesn't matter if you incited this or not. After all, the girl did it for your sake. Do you deny it?"

Jun Mo Xie had no choice but to nod. In fact, he couldn't even think about denying it.

Young Master Jun had maintained a clear conscience throughout both of his lives. Therefore, denying this point would've tarnished his clear conscience. And, that would've resulted in immense guilt within his psyche.

"This has brought the greatest amount of harm to our Dugu Family's reputation. Don't you know this as well?" the Old Lady shot those aggressive questions back-to-back.

"Yes... But, this is the Dugu Family we're talking about... So, it shouldn't be that serious a matter, right?" Jun Mo Xie frowned slightly.

[The Dugu Family's reputation has always been a byword for doughty and shameless. So, it could be said that it was never the

greatest to begin with. Moreover, anyone with a discerning eye would easily have seen through Dugu Xiao Yi's act. So, will it genuinely be that serious a matter if I don't marry Dugu Xiao Yi?]

"But, this incident has had a huge impact on Xiao Yi's reputation. And, this is something which you should keep in your mind, right brat?" The Old Lady snorted. She couldn't help become angry when she saw that this youngster wasn't on the same page.

"It will indeed have a huge impact," Jun Mo Xie nodded with honesty.

"So, what will you do now?" The Old Lady turned her back, and turned back again.

"I don't have a concrete plan for now to be honest," Jun Mo Xie told the truth.

"No plan...?" The Old Lady suddenly stood up, "Are you saying that you won't own up after eating the platter clean?"

"How am I not owning up after eating the platter clean? I didn't even eat anything. So, how could I have cleaned the platter?" Jun Mo Xie thought that he'd die of being wrong accused; [How could I even explain this to everyone? In fact, this little girl's actions nearly got me killed one time. I can't overlook her infatuation with me. But, I can't overlook the price I've paid for it either. Lady, you think I'm not capable of going round-and-round when it comes to beating the bush? Even I'm a bit angry because of this entire fiasco! And, why am I suddenly being bullied by everyone?]

"Let me tell you where things stand — Xiao Yi is deeply in love with you. So, you mustn't fail her, you brat! Otherwise, this Old Lady will never let you off!" the Old Lady said slowly. She then looked into Jun Mo Xie's eyes, "You're worried about Guan Qing Han, right?"

Jun Mo Xie frowned and spoke, "I ask the Old Lady to feel relieved. I won't turn my back on Guan Qing Han even if I do

accept this proposal. And, I won't turn my back on Xiao Yi either. I obviously have my plans."

"You have a plan...? Ha ha... having three wives and four concubines is a normal thing. However, there needs to be a distinction in status even if this is a common thing."

The Old Lady smiled as she looked closely at Jun Mo Xie, "Every house of men must have its leader. Similarly, there must be a leader amongst the wives as well. Wouldn't everyone struggle against each other if there's no leader? Won't that be a chaotic situation? How would that be good for you? And, that's why I've called you today. I wish to ask you — who is your first choice for a wife? Is it Xiao Yi or that girl?"

"A well-stabilized harem can bring peace to the world. These words are for the emperors. But, they also apply to regular families. And, a peaceful family is the way to move up in life," the Old Lady slowly looked at Jun Mo Xie. "Moreover, it is good to fix these things as soon as possible. Otherwise, it can give rise to long nights of big dreams that may be shattered in the future."

"What does the Old Lady mean?" Jun Mo Xie raised his eyebrows.

"Our Dugu Family has only one daughter. And, won't permit her to become a concubine! Our Dugu Family won't stand to lose our reputation! Therefore, it is important that Xiao Yi is married. Moreover, she has to be married as the first wife!" The Old Lady snorted.

"The first wife...?" Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but smile. "The Old Lady still seems to be joking! But, this isn't funny even if it was intended to be a joke!"

"A joke...? Don't tell me that you still wish to make Xiao Yi a concubine? How preposterous of you!" The Old Lady glared wide-eyed, and gripped her crutches so tightly that they broke.

Dugu Xiao Yi suddenly became panicky for the fear of a fall out

between her crush and her grandmother. So, she suddenly came up and grabbed the Old Lady's arm. She then shook it, and threw a tantrum, "Grandma..." She also gave an imploring look to Jun Mo Xie. It seemed that she was imploring him to stop being confrontational with her grandmother. After all, her marriage made in heavens would be ruined if these two had a fall out.

[I've had to do so much for the both of us to be in such a good situation!]

Jun Mo Xie was about to explode a moment ago. But, he calmed down when he heard Dugu Xiao Yi speaking-up. After all, Jun Mo Xie had been reminded of the deep feelings she harbored for him. Therefore, he took two deep breaths, and controlled his anger even though it was on the verge of exploding. But, his expression had become extremely solemn and dignified by now.

"Let me explain something very clearly since Old Lady Dugu has brought up these topics." Jun Mo Xie's gaze became as sharp as swords. He swept his eyes over everyone present, and they all felt their hearts stop, "I believed that my marriage is my business! It's my business; and my business alone! Moreover, it is a big decision of my life! So, it's important that I carefully choose the woman with whom I wish to spend my life. After all, my carelessness could result in a lifetime of hatred between two families instead of only two people. Therefore, this decision can't be taken lightly.

"Xiao Yi has always been deeply attached to me. And, I knew this since the very beginning. But, I've always thought she is too young and naive. Thus, her nature hasn't been fully formed yet. Therefore, it was possible that she may have run into a more ideal husband in the future. And, this is why I had never given a straight reply. However, that trick of hers on the way back nearly got me killed. I was very angry with her over that matter to be honest. But then, she came out with that big stomach in front of everyone at Tian Xiang City's gates. And, that moved me. It genuinely moved me. And, I decided to make Dugu Xiao Yi my wife as a result —

my... Jun Mo Xie's acknowledged wife!"

The Old Man Dugu and his lady's expressions and minds were eased when they heard these words.

However...

"But, this doesn't mean that I'll accept this overall proposal," Jun Mo Xie's words stopped the Old Lady on the verge of asking a question, "Xiao Yi administered me that medicine in the Southern City. And then, she showed up with that belly at this city's gates. She did those things out of love for me — Jun Mo Xie. A man isn't a plant. So, who wouldn't be touched by it? I was genuinely and deeply moved by the reckless actions she took for my sake."

"But, we also have to look at the other side — these two events are evidence of her selfish actions at the end of the day! She acted selfishly out of her feelings, and took extreme actions. This has forced me and even the two families to accept this situation. Her actions left us with no choice! I'm sure that no one can deny this. And, I'm sure that you're also very bitter about it!"

Chapter 470: This Is the Way to Go About it

"However, she did both these things on her own initiative. And, the consequences it led to were irreparable and grave. What had happened that day was very unlucky for me, but it didn't harm me much. But, Guan Qing Han was nearly forced to commit suicide by those rotten scholars' accusations. What would happen to the relationship between our two families if that issue was brought to the table of discussions? There wouldn't be any margin for leeway in that case!

"I'll be faced with an existential question if I accept this wedding. But, the two families will fall out if I don't accept this marriage. It's fortunate that I've always had a favorable opinion of this little girl. So, accepting this marriage wouldn't be too difficult. But, what if I hadn't liked her in the first place? It could be assumed that our families would've become mortal enemies, and would've skirmished for years without an end! And, that wouldn't have led to the Jun Family's end. However, it would've marked the end of the Dugu Family! And, these consequences are something which neither of us could bear!

"Moreover, this is something that can be avoided! And, I must say this even though Xiao Yi is here right now... She's willful! She acts rashly without caring about the consequences. So, how can I ever be relieved while leaving the first wife's position in her hands?"

Jun Mo Xie had spoken these serious words in a very gentle yet solemn manner.

Dugu Xiao Yi had lowered her head in shame. In fact, her small head was nearly buried in her chest right now. After all, she was a very smart girl. And, she had long ago realized that her rash actions had brought-about very vile consequences. Therefore, she didn't have much to say in her defense...

Old Lady Dugu opened her mouth with the desire to speak

something; she wanted to give an explanation for her granddaughter. But, she couldn't say a single word, and only sighed in the end. Dugu Zong Heng and Dugu Wu Di also looked at each other. They tried to put themselves in others' shoes, and realized that even they wouldn't want such a bold wife.

"But, Xiao Yi is still young..." It was the lady at the Old Lady's side... the same one who had been staring at Jun Mo Xie the most intently since the start. She was Dugu Xiao Yi's mother. So, she had hastily butted-in to give an explanation for her daughter's actions.

"Yes, this girl is very young. But, that isn't a reasonable excuse for what she has done! She's the youngest child of the Dugu Family. The Dugu Family has spoilt her, and that has led to such terrible and lamentable consequences. This little girl's behavior represents the very upbringing of the Dugu Family! Kindly pay attention to what I'll say now..."

Jun Mo Xie sternly continued, "Let's suppose that your seven grandsons create a huge disaster and land themselves in a lot of trouble because of it. The older generation of your family wouldn't get involved in that mess. They would let these youngsters handle things on their own unless the matter is extremely serious. Now, let's suppose that something bad happens to Xiao Yi instead... The Dugu Family wouldn't even care about right or wrong in that case. In fact, the young and old would rush into battle alike. Moreover, it wouldn't even matter if it's right or wrong. It would be justifiable to get involved as long as it concerned this little girl. However, it's fortunate that this girl is good-natured. Otherwise, she would've given rise to many irreparable consequences by now!

"Furthermore, Dugu Xiao Yi's present behavior stems from the fact that the Dugu Family's power is supporting her at the back. But, imagine what will happen if she marries into my Jun Family, and gets our power to support her as well? Her support will have increased by many folds! I reckon that a few noble Xuan

Families might be able to resist. But, most noble families would be pushed to destruction because of her rashness in case she foolishly did something against them!

"Perhaps she has the potential to be a first wife in the future. But, I can't agree right now. In fact, I can't dare to agree!"

Jun Mo Xie spoke upright and unafraid, "Let's exchange our positions. Would you ever agree to it if you were faced with something like this? So, why should I be forced into doing so?"

"I won't take another wife for now. And, I already have Guan Qing Han! Guan Qing Han was forced to pay the ultimate price to save my life because of Xiao Yi's mistake. And, that has resulted in such a tangled situation! It won't sound pleasant... But, I would've died if it weren't for her. And, how would you have faced the Jun Family if something like that had happened to me? Moreover, how unfair would it be to Qing Han if I decided to take Xiao Yi as the first wife? Qing Han ended-up at the receiving end of those rotten scholars' accusations because she covered for Xiao Yi's mistake. In fact, she could've been consigned to eternal damnation! Would she be able to withstand if we still propped this little girl above her...?!"

"But, Guan Qing Han has always been known as your elder sister-in-law. So, how can she be your first wife?" Old Lady Dugu pondered on Jun Mo Xie's words at first. Then, she asked him that question.

"The Old Lady speaks of what was before. But, that is a matter of the past now! Guan Qing Han is now my third uncle's adopted daughter. And, I'm sure that this isn't a secret anymore. So, why can't I marry her now? Moreover, I don't wish to divide their standings. The aspect of elder and smaller are akin to fighting for a position... However, you'll be considered an elder sister as long as everyone accepts you. And, this stands true even if you're the youngest!"

Jun Mo Xie smiled faintly, "I've always had a passive position on this matter when we come back to main issue... And, I don't wish to be this passive. But, the talks for this marriage are happening too hastily right now."

"So, what you mean to say is that... you won't make Xiao Yi your first wife?" Dugu Zong Heng looked very fiercely at Jun Mo Xie. His body slight stooped forward, and he emanated huge pressure as he spoke-up in a dangerous tone.

"Hehe... I've tried to give a reasonable analysis. I'm a man who handles things with principle. I don't like being threatened no matter what... Nor do I care where the threats come from!" Jun Mo Xie replied in a subdued voice, "I'll lose interest if people start giving me threats in matters that are so important as far as my life is concerned. So, I might as well break the marriage instead..."

Jun Mo Xie's tough and unyielding reply upset Dugu Zong Heng. So, he glared back wide-eyed with his ox-like eyes. In fact, it seemed as if his beard would burst into flames.

"Good. That's very good! Let's not entangle ourselves in this issue any further!" The Old Lady suddenly broke into a smile. She then continued while beaming, "Xiao Yi's position hasn't been determined yet. But, I'm sure that Mo Xie won't think about this matter any time soon. So, this matter is like getting engaged for now. And, I'm certain that the young ones will do fine on their own when it comes to matters of the future. So, why should we worry so much? Everything will be fine as long as Mo Xie is good to Xiao Yi. It'll be fine as long as he loves Xiao Yi.

"Moreover, Mo Xie hasn't yielded despite facing the pressure from the entire Dugu Family at once. His words were certainly unpleasant to hear. But, it has to be said that we can't deny any of them. Everything he said was true. And, everyone has heard them very clearly. However, this leaves me to see him as a praiseworthy man! He's mighty and unyielding; he's a real man! I would've considered Mo Xie to be a spineless man if he had gotten swayed by

our roars and had agreed to anything we would've said... In fact, I would've had doubts about going ahead with this marriage in that case. This boy Mo Xie looks good to me. He looks very good to me. My old self can't help but admire him..."

Dugu Zong Heng and Dugu Wu Di were left baffled by this. [Make up your mind. It was you who had said that he isn't good. But, what can we father-and-son do in any case? It was your idea to test him here. Now, you're only telling us to not test him. But, who'll dare to say anything even if they have something to say since you've passed this notion...?

"You two men will make an appointment with Jun Zhan Tian in a few days. And, you will settle this matter quickly. The first or whatever else can be left for later. But, we must quickly seal this engagement first."

The Old Lady made slight gestures towards the two men while she made her plans. But, she didn't even look at them, "Ah, you will personally go in order to show good faith. Then, you'll send a wedding planner after you've made a proper agreement. You'll then exchange the relevant documents, and set an auspicious date. You must see what time is most suitable. But, we must quickly arrange an engagement ceremony."

She pondered for a while. Then, she again spoke-up, "This ceremony will mean a great bustle since the Imperial Family, the nobles, and officials will arrive for it. Moreover, we'll be recovering the money we'll have gifted them for a few years. However, I'll record the names of everyone whom we will have gifted something. And then, you two will go and recover the money we've spent on these gifts over time. It'll be a very thick and detailed record. You'll memorize the names of everyone we'll gift something on Xiao Yi's wedding. And, I'll write each one of their names down. We won't let even one of them off! We must at least recover the money we'll have spent on the celebrations..."

"We'll also make a list of people whom we don't consider

important. After all, we'll have to give them some face. Therefore, the way to deal with this matter is this — we'll wait for these two to get married. Then, we'll send out the invitations to those not-so-important people. But, we don't need to make it extravagant for the wedding. We'll only invite a few hundred people to the marriage. But, we can expand the scale if the Jun Family also pays for the marriage. After all, this is also related to the Jun Family's honor...

"The number we invite must be clear. Let's say that we could've given four hundred gifts. But, we'll only make do with giving out four hundred gifts by that analogy. And, there's no need to call people who won't be able to return the gifts. Moreover, we'll invite everyone who has birthdays or namedays in the coming weeks. We'll go and say, 'Hey, isn't it your birthday as well? Great, we'll just be exchanging gifts in that case. After all, the dates are very close!'"

Even Jun Mo Xie's head got drenched in cold sweat this time around.

[This Old Lady thinks things over to the greatest extreme!]

[This isn't a family... this isn't a normal family by any means. They're insane!]

Dugu Wu Di's big mouth curled into a smile. He continued to nod with the expression of a miser, "Correct, that's absolutely correct! Mother is brilliant!" [We can quickly repay the debt we owe to the Jun Family once we've collected some money in this manner...]

"Inform the astrologers to select a propitious date! And, you must tell him to stagger that date with the time of birthdays! Then, inform Kong Ling Yang to come and preside over the wedding..."

Dugu Wu Di interrupted her the moment she said that, "Mother, Kong Ling Yang is dead," he glanced at Jun Mo Xie as he said this. [Kong Ling Yang's murder was either this kid's doing... or it must've been a ghost's!]

"He's dead? That's such a pity. He was a talented person!" However, the Old Lady's expression didn't even change when she sighed. It seemed as if she didn't pity that a great talent had been lost. In fact, she was more mournful on the passing of the best wedding overseer instead of the death of an excellent scholar, "Go and find someone from the greatest institutes of learning in that case. And, be courteous to them..."

Dugu Zong Heng nodded and replied, "This is easy. We don't get along with those chaps. But, it doesn't matter in this case. We'll tie them up with a rope and bring them here if they don't agree willfully. And, I'd like to see if they have the guts to not show us respect once we bring them here in ropes!"

"That's good." Old Lady Dugu nodded in a relieved manner. "You men must sort out the other matters on your own. After all, mixing women with those issues isn't a good thing."

Jun Mo Xie violently rolled his eyes. [What's all this?! And, you still call it 'not mixing in matters'?! You're basically running the show here... Moreover, that Dugu Zong Heng ordered to bring those people by binding them with rope! And, this old woman has commented "that's good," to such an outrageous thing...]

Jun Mo Xie collapsed...

Chapter 471: I Can Cure This Illness!

"You men go and drink. We women have no reason to join you! Come with me, Xiao Yi!" The last part was spoken a bit harshly. And, that was because Dugu Xiao Yi had begun to move towards Jun Mo Xie for a chat. However, she came to a stop when she heard this...

The Old Lady suddenly stopped while she was leaving. She then turned to look at Dugu Zong Heng and Dugu Wu Di, "Ah, I forgot to ask you one thing. Didn't you say that Jun Zhan Tian's grandson was an unbearable debauchee, difficult to educate, extremely rotten, and worth less than a dog's meat? These were the words you two had spoken. But, how is everything so different when I see him today? I think this one is much better to behold than those seven idiots out there. You two will give me a proper explanation for this later."

Dugu Zong Heng was stunned.

Dugu Wu Di was stupefied.

[Explanation? What explanation? How can we explain?! We also want an explanation for Jun Mo Xie's rapid growth over these few months! But, who will explain it to us?!

"He's such a good youngster. He possesses a strong character, and doesn't submit to tyranny. He has an unwavering mind, doesn't speak out of place. So, how can he be called a debauchee? Did the two of you deliberately distort the facts for me because you don't think much of the Jun Family? Or are you worried about the Emperor's opinion? Are the two of you worried that the union of two military families through marriage will look suspicious to him? Humph! Let me tell you that your narrow-minded fears have messed with my precious granddaughter's marriage! Is my granddaughter's lifelong happiness determined by your likings or fears? In fact, I find this Jun Mo Xie to be far better than the two of

you! And, let me tell you that I'm very angry about this matter! I'm not done with this yet! This isn't finished for the two of you!"

The Old Lady roared before she finally left. The Dugu father-and-son looked at each other. They wanted to cry, but couldn't conjure the tears...

That army of women slowly retreated. However, the men could still hear the Old Lady's harsh voice echoing as the women left. It sounded like a battle cry..."I don't care how you go about it, but we have to turn this little girl into someone worthy of being a first wife! And, as soon as possible! You've spoilt her. What have you been teaching her? She is supposed to behave like a girl from a powerful family; don't you agree? Would you ever want a girl like this one as the first wife for your own son? I'll leave this matter to the eleven of you! And, I personally sweep your bodies outside the family's door if you're not successful at this task. Xiao Yi, why are you frowning my dear one? Come to Grandma and smile! Don't fear; leave everything to Grandma! Grandma will fix everything for you! She'll take of everything..."

The eleven ladies who had been scolded by the Old Lady a moment ago became silent when they heard this last part. Dugu Zong Heng, Dugu Wu Di, and Jun Mo Xie also felt powerless...

She had given a harsh chiding to the ladies on one hand. And, she had fiercely protected her granddaughter on the other...

[How can you teach her anything like this? What can one achieve in their life with this?]

The three men looked at each other in silence. They were quiet for a long time. Old Man Dugu Zong Heng was the first to react with a shout, "Get some fu*king wine! Serve it! Serve it! Are you people fu*king dead? Hurry up!"

Dugu Wu Di also jumped into action when he saw his father yelling. He didn't yell himself, but he moved his hands and made a few gestures to help...

The table was filled with good food and fine wine in no time.

Dugu Chong and the others had also returned with Tang Yuan. Their timing was also good; they were truly well trained.

The eleven men sat down around two tables. They had initially wanted to merge their tables. But, everyone had a big body; except Jun Mo Xie. In fact, they could be regarded as 'huge' from the standards of an average person. And, Fatty Tang was particularly huge. In fact, he took the place of four men when he sat down. Everyone was silent. It could be assumed that they wouldn't have been able to move their hands to eat their food if they had sat around the same table...

Dugu Zong Heng drained his cup of wine in a toast, and wiped his mouth, "Jun Brat, it needn't be mentioned that you must take very good care of my precious granddaughter. This man won't leave you alone if you hurt her even a little! Others might be afraid of that old Jun Zhan Tian, but this old man isn't!"

Jun Mo Xie couldn't even force a smile since he understood this very clearly. These words had been meant in a good way. However, everything coming from the mouths of this family's people sounded like a provocation or a threat. After all, the people of this family could never speak gently...

"Yes! Jun Mo Xie, I'll flay your skin if you dare to trouble my daughter!" Dugu Wu Di raised his glass and clanked it against Jun Mo Xie's. Then, he looked up and gulped. And, the wine disappeared from his glass...

"Brother-in-law... haha... Brother-in-law! Come and drink..." The towering 'Heroes and Legends' rushed forward, and toasted with their wine glasses. Their attitude had made it evident that they wanted to get the "pretty boy" drunk.

Dugu Zong Heng looked at the youngsters and sighed. He couldn't help speak-up in a desolate tone, "You boys drink up! I won't accompany you... this old man can only drink three glasses

now... But, I could've drunk a thousand of these without getting drunk in my youth! I used to be an elegant and towering hero!"

Dugu Wu Di hastily comforted him, "Father, you needn't be worried about it. The injury on your lower back is serious! But, your injury won't inhibit you once we find that Snow Ferret's fur. Then, you can also drink as much as you like!"

"The Snow Ferret's fur... it's easier said than done! That thing is amongst the hardest to find in this world! I've already searched for it for ten years now, and I still haven't found the slightest of clues in this regard! Capturing a Snow Ferret is more difficult than getting a Level Nine Xuan Beast's Core! It's even rarer than that!" Dugu Zong Heng's enthusiasm was waning.

"The Old Grandfather's lower back is injured? What kind of an injury is it?" Jun Mo Xie stared blankly for a second. He then asked in an inquisitive manner.

Dugu Wu Di stared stumped at first. Then, he recalled that this guy was the same great doctor who had cured Jun Wu Yi's legs. So, he couldn't help but look with hope as he said, "My father had sustained injuries in battle when he was young. He had injured his meridians. And, he hasn't been able to drink properly ever since. In fact, drinking a little extra can often give rise to difficulty in breathing. We still haven't found an effective cure for it... Would you like to examine it?"

"Let me see," Jun Mo Xie impolitely grabbed Dugu Zong Heng's left hand. He then extended two of his fingers to check the Old Man's pulse, and initiated the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune. This instantly enabled him to visualize the condition of Dugu Zong Heng's meridians in his mind.

"His meridians are fractured and withered. Don't tell me there was no cure to treat this?" Jun Mo Xie contemplated for a long while before he withdrew his hand. He then said, "It must've been an arrow wound on his body. It had injured his lungs. It wasn't

that serious in the beginning, but it has become a perennial disease over the course of time. So, I fear that the legendary Snow Ferret's fur will also be a temporary solution only..."

"Huh? It's that serious...? Do you have a cure?" Dugu Wu Di was shocked.

"It's not that I don't have a cure... it's just... it's comparatively difficult. Moreover, it'll require at least half-a-month of skill and effort," Jun Mo Xie frowned. However, he had spoken with assurance.

"It'll be cured in half-a-month? That's not long!" Dugu Wu Di's voice trembled as he stood up. He then suddenly grabbed Jun Mo Xie's shoulders, "Worthy son-in-law, I won't have any objections in the matter between you and Xiao Yi if you cure my father's injury!"

This had been extremely effective. After all, Dugu Wu Di had straightaway called him a 'worthy son-in-law'.

[You obviously won't have any objections! It's I who has objections!]

Jun Mo Xie rolled his eyes and replied, "It's nothing major for the time being. I'll give you a prescription. You go and get those medicines. Have him take them every morning. Then, come to my place everyday from the third day onwards. I'll put him under a needle treatment. It should most likely heal in about ten days if the treatment is regular."

Jun Mo Xie smiled as he spoke. Then, the Young Master took a pen and inscribed the prescription. Dugu Wu Di took it from him like it was the most treasured gem in the world. In fact, his fingers had trembled with emotion when he had done so. He then quickly kept it in his chest pocket, and continuously patted it to ensure that it was there.

Old Man Dugu's injury was one of inconvenience in reality, but it wasn't too severe. His meridians were merely damaged. It may

have seemed like an incurable disease to medicinal experts of that era, but it was nothing to the Young Master. The Old Man had been living with this injury for around ten years. But, it wasn't nearly as serious as the poisoned paralysis of Jun Wu Yi's legs. It would be fine after he had used the Hong Jun Pagoda's aura to treat it. After all, it was the purest aura from the origin of that world.

A vague plan had already begun to form inside Jun Mo Xie's mind. [How can I let the Dugu Family off so easily after I help them with this? I'll obviously make these two generals pay a fitting price. I'll talk to them about that wine money's matter when the time is ripe.]

However, Jun Mo Xie didn't have any plans when it came to the relationship between him and Dugu Xiao Yi. After all, this matter was about his private relationship with that girl. So, he didn't wish to exploit that matter. Moreover, that would go against his own feelings and interests.

Everyone began to party after the matter at hand was settled.

Dugu Zong Heng was especially grinning from ear to ear since he had found hope of full recovery. He couldn't drink, but he had become extremely jovial. Therefore, he strongly urged everyone to drink more. In fact, his widened eyes were surveying for anyone who drank less.

Tang Yuan had drained more glasses in comparison. He was fat, but his capacity for drinking wasn't very good. In fact, he had stealthily gone out, and had vomited out three cups worth. But, he continued to drink after he returned, and had somewhat lost consciousness as a result. Then, he got up with the final bit of soberness left in him, and went out trudging and swaying towards the latrine pit; he didn't return after that. Jun Mo Xie heard a loud splashing noise later. It sounded as if it had come from a pond. It seemed like a huge monster had fallen down a lake, and had created an immense splash with his fall. But, he didn't take it very

seriously. After all, this was the Dugu Household; not the Jun Household. Who knew what the Dugu Family was up to in there?

General Dugu didn't know how much he had drunk. The eight men of the Dugu Family were baffled in the beginning, [How come this Jun Mo Xie isn't getting drunk even after he has drunk so much?] However, everyone later came forth, and stopped caring about Jun Mo Xie. So, they raised their cups high, and roared, "Cheers!" Then, they raised their necks...

Dugu Wu Di eventually narrowed his big eyes, pulled out his huge tongue, and put his big bar-like arms around Jun Mo Xie's neck. Then, he slurred drunkenly, "Uh... hic... I truly... trust you with this matter, Elder Brother... hic..."

A pained color spread across Jun Mo Xie's face. He didn't know if he could accept this hierarchy of address...

Dugu Zong Heng quickly gave a harsh slap to his son's head and started to abuse, "Your mother...! That's your son-in-law!"

Chapter 472: A Joke... Or A Set-Up?

The seven "Heroes and Legends Bravely Rushing Forward" shouted loudly in their drunken state. They cried themselves hoarse while singing songs. Their intoxicated eyes eventually started to narrow, and the seven brothers finally rolled onto the ground. They then shook the heavens with their snoring.

Everyone had drunk so much that they couldn't even hear what the maid said when she came in...

Even the Young Master didn't escape the scene. He spent the night at the Dugu Family's household. He had no other choice; he was also quite drunk. The Young Master had forced out a lot of wine from his body by cheating. But, the amount that had remained was enough to be compared to drinking an entire vase. The wine had eventually started to take effect, and he became drunk as a result. He tried to find Tang Yuan, but was unsuccessful. So, he merely went to the guest room in his drunken state, and fell asleep.

He heard two maids whispering outside when he got up the next day, "Hey, do you know about the 'esteemed guest' who had come yesterday? He had drunk too much..."

"Ah, I've heard about it. But, not in detail..."

"I'll tell you. But, don't tell anyone else..."

"Uh, I swear I won't tell anyone else..."

"I heard that the fat man went to the latrine yesterday. And, he vomited there for a long time. Then, he jumped into something; can you guess what it was?"

"What?"

"He jumped inside the latrine pit! It seems that he wanted to catch some fish in-there or something... Ah, good heavens! And, that was after the heavy rains he had poured in there... So,

everything splashed out... Ah... It's so disgusting..."

"Did he fall in for real? What was done afterwards?"

"It took many men to get him out. The smell was terrible, and the entire place was in a horrible mess. That fat man had properly gone into it. It took more than ten men to pull him out with a rope. And, all of them also got covered in it... Blueergh! Then, they dragged him to the pond, and washed him five times. After that, they took him to the guest room. But, they said that the room was still stinking. So, they had no choice but to bring seven or eight buckets and wash him twice more before it was clean..."

"Uh... that Young Master was being tossed around, and he still didn't wake up?"

"He didn't wake up! Moreover, he kept shouting that he wanted to catch the fish..."

"Wow... this is too much..."

"There's more to it. I heard that one of our young masters was squatting in there when Young Master Tang had gone in. However, Young Master Tang simply grabbed our young master and tossed him out. I guess that's a good thing. Else, Young Master Tang may have taken him along into the latrine pit. Our young masters are surely big. But, they can't match up to Young Master Tang. Then, our Young Master was still lying perplexed on the ground outside when he heard Young Master Tang talk about going for fishing... And, he jumped into it after that..."

"Ah? Ha ha ha... But, I still find it funny."

"Ha ha ha... I'll die of laughter..." Jun Mo Xie guffawed as he overheard that. He fully understood that this was embarrassing for his brother, and he shouldn't laugh at it. But, the Fatty had overdone it this time. In fact, even the heavens would've heard the sound of his fall given his weight...

The two maids were startled when they heard the Young Master

laugh. But, they relaxed when they saw him walking out while laughing to ask about Tang Yuan's whereabouts. It was important to know that this family's household rules were extremely strict. In fact, the maids couldn't even let the guests learn that they were discussing about their matters.

Fatty was sleeping wrapped in quilt when Jun Mo Xie found him. The entire room reeked of alcohol.

Jun Mo Xie couldn't detect any trace of what had happened last night when he saw Fatty like this.

Young Master Jun had found that matter very funny. Fatty had gotten too drunk. He had then had some more wine, and had run to the latrine pit in order to catch fish. But, doubts had suddenly begun to rise within Jun Mo Xie's mind when he saw Fatty Tang lying down.

Tang Yuan may not have been a respectful character. He may be thoughtless, or disappointing; maybe even tacky. But, he shouldn't have lost his head to that extent. He may have gotten extremely drunk. But, he wasn't weak-minded enough to have gone fishing in the latrine pit. Moreover, what kind of a pit would be big-enough to fit Tang Yuan's massive body inside it?

[Could he have fallen inside it? Moreover, could he have gone that deep into it?]

[It isn't a fu*king swimming pool!]

Jun Mo Xie didn't know how the other families' latrine pits were designed. However, he knew the Jun Family's latrine pits. There were a few pits for the family's members. Some pits were reserved for the guests. And, there was a large pit for the family's guards. The pit for the guards was fairly huge and low quality. However, the other pits were high quality set-ups. So, there was no chance that someone could accidentally fall into it. Moreover, one had to reckon Tang Yuan's body size. And, Young Master Jun estimated that the Fatty would've had to put in a fair amount of struggle to

make his way in. Moreover, he still wouldn't have been able to fit his entire body into it...

Therefore, the issue was... [How could Tang Yuan fall inside?]

And, the sole explanation was...

[Was it planned?]

Jun Mo Xie gently tapped into Tang Yuan's Qi stream, and carefully examined his whole body. But, he couldn't see anything peculiar. So, he stood up and muttered for a while. He then walked out and lazily gestured to the guards, "Take me to where I was drinking last night."

The guard was in front of the family's future son-in-law. So, he didn't dare to ignore. And, he took Jun Mo Xie to the place where they were drinking last night. The mess had been cleaned up long ago. But, the faint smell of alcohol still hadn't dissipated from the surroundings.

Jun Mo Xie went to the place where Tang Yuan had been seated the previous night. However, Fatty's 'special seat' had been taken away by now. The Young Master then asked, "How many toilets are there around this place?"

The guard was stumped for a second, "There are a few around here. The others are further away."

"Take me there. I want to see them," Jun Mo Xie waved his hand.

The guard was extremely astonished by this. He thought; [this future Son-in-law is very strange! Everyone has visited the rock gardens and similar places before. But, this is the first time someone is visiting the toilets!] However, the guest had made a request. Moreover, this youngster was no other than the family's future son-in-law. So, he didn't have any choice but to agree. He then took the Young Master there.

Doubts continued to arise in Jun Mo Xie's mind as he saw three toilets in succession. There wasn't a trace in those three toilets.

However, these were only three of the toilets in this area. So, where was the one Tang Yuan had used?

"Are there any other toilets here?" Jun Mo Xie pensively asked in a faint tone.

"There are more. But, they're a bit far off. And, that place is used by a lot of people. So, it's unbearably filthy..." The guard felt an indescribable touch of chill. [This Young Master Jun is very strange. An ordinary person would hold their nose in such places. But, he goes there so calmly. In fact, he doesn't even frown!]

"Damn! Take me there." Jun Mo Xie's face remained calm as he walked out.

The guard became nervous. He had realized that something was wrong. [I fear that this future son-in-law is investigating the matter of Tang Yuan and the latrine pits.] So, he led Jun Mo Xie to the scene of the incident. But, he gave a meaningful look to several guards along the way. He had bid them to bring the Young Masters and the Lord. After all, this could be a big deal...

Jun Mo Xie paid no attention to it. [Let him spread the news. After all, it's important that this matter is reported to the Dugu Family. So, this man is only saving my time by doing this...]

Jun Mo Xie moved his hands to his back as he arrived at the latrine which was the scene of the previous nights' incident. He then attentively looked around. [It must've happened here. There's a deep pit after a few steps. However, there's a small protrusion of about forty-fifty centimeters at the edge of the stairs. This ought to be here to ensure that no one would fall drunk inside. In fact, this would even prevent the kids from falling inside.]

[I must say that the Dugu Family has done an efficient job.]

[But... how did Tang Yuan fall inside?]

There was still a pond somewhat far away. But, it was slightly frozen because of the winter. Jun Mo Xie's expression continued to

become colder as he looked around. Eventually, he snorted and stepped out. He then asked, "I heard that there was another Young Master who had availed this toilet last night. May I ask who that person is?"

"Yes. That's the Second Lady's nephew. He's been here at the Dugu Family for many days..."

"Call him over! Tell him that this Young Master wants to ask him something!" the guard hadn't even finished speaking when Jun Mo Xie interrupted him. Moreover, Young Master Jun's voice was cold, and his words seemed to be full of killing intention.

General Dugu arrived outside the latrine by now. He seemed to be burning with anxiety. He was accompanied by three Dugu Brothers — Dugu Ying, Dugu Xiong, and Dugu Hao. Dugu Ying spoke-up when he saw Jun Mo Xie coming out of the toilet, "Why are you looking at the latrines so early in the morning, Brother-in-law? Haven't you found a place to squat yet?"

However, Dugu Wu Di noticed that Jun Mo Xie's expression was dark and murderous. And, he figured that something was wrong. So, he asked, "What happened, Mo Xie?"

"Tang Yuan got drunk on wine last night... hehe... his luck is bad. He then fell into this latrine pit. That's what has happened..." Jun Mo Xie stretched his finger and pointed at the latrine pit at the back. Then, his glare became cold and electric as he turned to look at the Dugu father and sons.

"He fell in this latrine?" Dugu Wu Di was a straightforward person, but he wasn't a fool in any way. How could he have become a renowned general if he were? His mind worked quickly, and he understood the matter, "How could he have fallen in it?"

"So, General Dugu also wonders about it...? I also have doubts about it... There are many latrines in your house. So, why would he wish to come so far? Moreover, this isn't his home. So, he would've been unfamiliar with this place. And, he had also been

drinking. However, he came here to jump in this pit an entire kilometer away from the banquet hall..."

Jun Mo Xie sneered in a mischievous manner, "Don't tell me that Fatty was possessed by a ghost?"

Dugu Wu Di's face looked like he had drowned. Tang Yuan may not have looked much. But, he was still the next confirmed heir of the Tang Family. Moreover, Tang Yuan wasn't like before anymore. He was the main operator of the Aristocratic Hall now, and he was known as the 'God of Wealth' in the Tian Xiang City. It could be said that his social status had improved by many folds. Moreover, he was also Young Master Jun's acknowledged brother. How could that be ignored? They would have to deal with extremely grave consequences if there was even a little mistake in handling this situation.

General Dugu turned to his three large sons, "Who can tell me what's going on here...?"

"It's very common, Dad... what doesn't happen when someone gets drunk? Fatty Tang has a cumbersome body. He drank a lot, and fell into this pit. I don't think there's a need to make a fuss out of it," The corner of Dugu Ying's mouth curled slightly. He wanted to laugh. After all, this matter was very amusing to him.

"You're disgraceful! You want to laugh? Don't you have any brains? Does your brain have fungus in it?" Dugu Wu Di nearly vomited blood at his son out of anger. [It's not worth fussing about? Don't you see that your brother-in-law is nearly ready to go on a killing spree? Oh, and then there's Tang Yuan's cumbersome body. Do you think he would've run a kilometer after having so much to drink?]

"I've heard that there's another Young Master here," Jun Mo Xie narrowed his eyes and smiled. However, he had unexpectedly spoken-up very gently, "And, he was squatting in the same toilet with Tang Yuan for some reason. I would like to see this person."

Chapter 473: No One Can Insult My Brother!

Dugu Wu Di's expression became pained. That Young Master was his second wife's nephew. And, he hailed from the Huang Family of the Golden East City. The Huang Family was also considered to be somewhat of a Xuan Family. But, it was still far beneath the great families like the Jun and the Dugu Families.

That Young Master had overestimated the Huang Family's prestige, and had come here with an odd request. Even the Second Lady didn't know how to handle him. So, she went straight to Dugu Zong Heng and Old Lady Dugu behind Dugu Wu Di's back. However, both of them had refused him on the spot. This was because his family was an unsuitable match. Moreover, he himself was a worthless man.

In fact, Dugu Zong Heng had said, "What? This little shrimp has come to our Dugu Family to seek a marriage? We might as well marry her off to Jun Mo Xie! After all, at least the Jun Brat's family's status is good!"

However, that youngster was very thick-skinned. And, he made use of his aunt's status in the Dugu Family after he was rejected by the old couple. He wanted to wait until Dugu Xiao Yi had returned since he wished to ask her opinions on this matter. After all, those two had played together in childhood. In fact, they had grown up as childhood sweethearts. The two of them hadn't had any connection for many years. But, they still had that childhood connection as an emotional foundation.

Then, he heard that the Dugu Family had once rejected the Imperial Family's proposal for marriage. So, it seemed to him that the Dugu family was looking for a good family for their girl, and weren't very particular about status of the family. Moreover, he heard that the young girl had fallen for Jun Mo Xie — a thorough hoodlum and debauchee. And, the entire Dugu Family was against this. So, this youngster's heart became even more elated...

Therefore, he shamelessly waited for Dugu Xiao Yi to return.

The Second Lady had beseeched Dugu Wu Di when it came to this. So, General Dugu hadn't paid much attention when it came to the matter of giving shelter to this youngster. After all, the Dugu Family was big, and could take care of the food and lodging of many people.

However, the matter of Dugu Xiao Yi's marriage came up again very recently. Moreover, it could be said that her nuptials had been fixed with Jun Mo Xie. Therefore, Dugu Wu Di had obviously started to find the presence of his wife's nephew somewhat irksome. After all, it would be terrible if something bad happened at this stage...

The General had been planning to send that youngster back for a few days. But, he had never expected Jun Mo Xie to spit that name at this moment...

This was the Dugu Family's household; not the Jun Family's. But, Jun Mo Xie had still spoken these words. So, this meant that he was extremely certain about this matter. Moreover, it seemed that he had the means to determine that it was that other Young Master who had done this...

The Dugu Family's reputation would melt like candlewax if this turned out to be true. After all, that woman from the Huang Family was Dugu Wu Di's second wife. She wasn't some common concubine either — she had come here with a proper wedding procession. She certainly wasn't his first wife, but she was still considered his wife nonetheless. However, Jun Mo Xie's current expression made it seem as if he wouldn't care about the Dugu Family's reputation if this turned out to be true. In fact, it seemed that he wouldn't be appeased even if the entire family were to kneel in front of him.

[When has this youngster Jun Mo Xie ever shown care for human life?]

"That little bastard! He has created such a big trouble for me!" Dugu Wu Di spoke those words in resentment. He was extremely annoyed. [Why didn't I send him back earlier? I shouldn't have listened that woman's blabbing! Damn it! Isn't this a disaster? And, that woman has brought this upon us. Her love for her nephew has brought us to the gates of hell!]

[Can you provoke this brat Jun Mo Xie? He'll slaughter everyone in your family by merely looking at them! In fact, your insignificant Huang Family can't even provoke that Tang Yuan! And, it doesn't even matter if he's a member of Tian Xiang's Tang Family! He himself is enough to deal with you people. After all, he can simply put a bounty on your heads to have you guys killed!]

[You've got some guts!]

Everyone present was either embarrassed... or at their wits' end. However, the three Dugu Brothers' case was slightly different since they had thoughtlessly folded their arms, and were waiting to watch the drama with indifferent expressions. Dugu Wu Di quietly beckoned a guard. He then ordered him to find the Old Man Dugu, and request him to come over. After all, Dugu Wu Di knew that he wouldn't be able to stop his 'good son-in-law' if Jun Mo Xie went mad.

That Young Master was finally brought swaying to the end of the path under everyone's watchful gaze. He had been smiling wholeheartedly as he came over. But, he looked stumped for a moment when he saw that everyone was standing in front of the latrine. However, he reinstated his composed appearance very quickly.

Jun Mo Xie's drooping eyes moved slightly as he looked at that 'not-a-Dugu' Young Master in the distance. Young Master Jun's eyes were like binoculars, and he could easily see the other Young Master's expressions even when he was over thirty feet away. In fact, Jun Mo Xie could see each bit of his face very clearly.

That included the flash of alarm on his face, and the panic in his eyes! Moreover, Young Master Jun had also seen how that youngster's opened palms had turned into closed fists as he walked towards them in a cautious manner. Also, the twitching of his neck's muscles had given away how stiff he had become when he had seen everyone.

[Right; it should be this youngster's doing!]

[That's ample evidence.]

"Are you looking for me, Uncle?" That Youngster had finally arrived close. He respectfully and cautiously walked towards Dugu Wu Di. His figure was slim and straight. He looked elegant and handsome at first glance. But, his eyes drooped, and his expression was evil. Moreover, his lips looked cruel, thin, and merciless. Moreover, he had a very perverted expression on his face.

"I'm not looking for you — Young Master Jun is." Dugu Wu Di calmly turned his face to look at Jun Mo Xie. "You will give honest replies to any questions the Young Master Jun has for you. Is that understood?"

"Young Master Jun? Young Master Jun Mo Xie?" That Young Master quickly looked at Jun Mo Xie and nodded. He then smiled and spoke, "My Family name's Huang. I'm Huang Shu Liu from the Huang Family of the Golden East City." His eyes had a small flash of amazement. After all, the debauchee with such a loathsome reputation in the entire Tian Xiang had turned to be an extremely good looking youngster.

"Huang Shu Liu? This name means 'a man who looks perverted'! It suits you well." Jun Mo Xie nodded before he turned his eyes, "I've heard that you saw Young Master Tang go to the latrine last night. Or, he seemed to have pushed you out of there last night...?"

Huang Shu Liu was stunned at hearing those words. He said, "Yes, that mishap had happened last night. I still have lingering fears from it. But, what is Young Master Jun getting at...?"

"I'm not getting at anything. I only wish to ask where you saw Young Master Tang last night...? Was it on the path, or was it inside the latrine?" Jun Mo Xie smiled gently and asked.

However, Jun Mo Xie was feeling very impatient within. In fact, he would've straightaway used his hypnosis technique to look into this youngster if it weren't for the respect owed to Dugu Wu Di's presence. After all, he was merely at Silver Xuan Level. So, how could he not be an easy target?

However, they were at the Dugu Family's residence. And, Dugu Wu Di was at his side at the moment. Moreover, Jun Mo Xie genuinely wanted to preserve the Dugu Family's reputation in this matter.

[I'm stuck!]

"It was here in the latrine... hehe... I like staying clean. I had some stomach problems last night. But, I didn't go to the guest room's toilet for the fear that the sound of my bowel movements would disturb the honored guests. So, I came here... hehe... since I was ashamed that someone would hear me." Huang Shu Liu's eyes didn't change expressions as he smiled.

"Is that so? But, I must ask you take note, Young Master Huang. I had only asked you where you had seen Tang Yuan. I never asked you why you had come so far to relieve yourself." Jun Mo Xie looked at him with a cold glare, and slowly attacked him by surmounting pressure, "Please answer my question!"

"I had come here and squatted down when he suddenly burst in. He then grabbed my neck, and threw me out. I got so scared that I jumped with fright. Hehe..."

Huang Shu Liu laughed and spoke smilingly, "I'm sure that everyone can understand how bad a situation I was in. After all, I had barely dropped my pants when I was suddenly picked up. It had scared me so much that I nearly got a diarrhea. He-he..." he laughed twice at first. Then, he realized that no one else had found

it funny. So, he awkwardly stopped laughing.

"After that...?" Jun Mo Xie asked in an unfeeling tone.

"I reacted to it after that, and saw that it was Young Master Tang. So, I started to beg for forgiveness. I said, 'Please wait a moment, Young Master Tang. Let me pull my trousers, hehe... However, Young Master Tang was very drunk, and he couldn't understand me. He then threw me out. And, I fell down on my ass when he threw me out. My butt was nearly torn to flower petals. In fact, I hadn't even pulled my pants up by then. After that, my belly started feeling unwell again... and I nearly disgraced myself..."

"It was midnight when Tang Yuan had come here last night. And, there were no stars or moon in the sky. So, the visibility must've been very low. Moreover, you had come to the latrine, and were caught off guard by his actions. So, it must have been even more difficult to see. And, this is particularly true when your neck was held like that. After all, your head must've been facing downwards at the time. So, how were you able to see that it was Tang Yuan? Do you even know Tang Yuan in person? Moreover, it seems that your Xuan strength is at the Silver Xuan Level. Tang Yuan is big in size, but his strength is meager. How is it possible that he was able to throw you out so easily?" Jun Mo Xie ignored him, and continued to speak in a grim way.

"Obviously. But, I had seen Young Master Tang when he had come... So, how could I dare to resist him?" Huang Shu Liu looked away as he hastily replied.

"But, the Dugu Family had only invited me last night. Only Jun Mo Xie! So, didn't you find it strange when you saw Tang Yuan?"

Jun Mo Xie looked at him with pity, "Huang Shu Liu, this is your last chance! You'll still find it difficult to escape death even if you hide behind your uncle's trousers in case I investigate and find something strange! So, think clearly..."

Young Master Jun had stopped his pressure as he had asked that

question. And, Huang Shu Liu had felt a little relieved as a result. However, he suddenly felt an aura pressing down on him a moment later. And, this aura was a hundred times stronger than the one he had felt before. In fact, Young Master Huang felt like kneeling in respect for a moment...

"I... really saw him there! I'm telling the truth!" Huang Shu Liu felt that his head would burst from the chaos in his mind due to Jun Mo Xie's pressure. He was drenched in cold sweat now. He wanted to give explanations in his defense. But, how could his mere Silver Xuan strength ever compare to Jun Mo Xie's. He had been calm a moment ago. But, Jun Mo Xie's imposing aura had drawn his mind into chaos by now. Consequently, he got panicky, and couldn't come up with words. "I can testify with my character, and I'm sure that Uncle and the others can also testify for me... Moreover, how could I have pushed him down that pit?"

The three Dugu Brothers also sighed when they heard. Even they had found these words fishy.

After all, Jun Mo Xie had never asked how Tang Yuan had fallen into the pit. But, that man had replied, "How could I have pushed him down the pit?"

Wasn't that a confession?

"Now what?" Jun Mo Xie looked at Dugu Wu Di. Dugu Wu Di sighed, and closed his eyes at first. He then spoke-up after a long while, "Jun Mo Xie, he's still my nephew. Can you at least leave some honor for my sake..."

"But, he has insulted my brother!" Jun Mo Xie coldly interrupted his future father-in-law. "And, no one in this world can insult my brother!"

Chapter 474: A Despicable Conspiracy

Jun Mo Xie's tall body was straight, and his face had a sneer as he set his gaze on Dugu Wu Di, "Don't say that I must do this for the Dugu Family's reputation! In fact, I won't even do it even it was the Emperor's request! I won't save anyone's face now. In fact, I can't do it!"

Dugu Wu Di's lips squirmed. He felt very exhausted, "You can't do it? Can't even... Young Master Tang do it?"

"I request you to not speak of it. You and my third uncle are friends for life and death. So, I only ask you this — what would you do if you went out with my third uncle and someone pushed him into a dung pit?" Jun Mo Xie asked coldly.

"Fu*k that! Who'll dare to do it?! I'll destroy his entire family!" Dugu Wu Di became enraged, "Who dares to mess with my Third Younger Brother?"

"Would you still ask me to stand down in that case?" Jun looked at him in bafflement. His face was cold, but he was still elated. [General Dugu has always been a great friend!]

Dugu Wu Di was left tongue tied. In fact, he wasn't even able to say a single word.

[Honestly... I would also feel the same way if I were in his shoes!]

Jun Mo Xie turned his knife-like glare towards Huang Shu Liu, "Moreover, he must've had a reason since he has done this. Don't tell me that you don't want to know what that is?"

"No. I didn't do it! Why are you arbitrarily saying that I did it? Tang Yuan had fallen inside the pit due to his own carelessness! How does it involve me? Why are you levying these accusations against me?" Huang Shu Liu suddenly jumped up. His spit was flying everywhere. After all, he knew that his Huang Family couldn't provoke the Dugu Family, or the Jun Family... or even the

Tang Family.

This meant that he would be done for if he sat on those charges. In fact, his entire family could face the danger of being destroyed.

Jun Mo Xie reached out with his hand, and pressed Huang Shu Liu head. Jun Mo Xie's movements were dull and slow. And, Huang Shu Liu had clearly seen Jun Mo Xie's hand approaching, but he couldn't have avoided it even if he had wanted to...

He looked stumped at Jun Mo Xie's right hand on his head. He then felt an abundance of powerful and hard-to-resist surge of energy seeping into his body. This energy then took control of each part of his body. In fact, he couldn't even close his eyes of his own desire if he wanted to. Then, he heard Jun Mo Xie's voice echo in his ears, "Open your eyes, and look at me!"

Huang Shu Liu couldn't help but open his eyes and see. However, he only saw a pair of eyes right in front of his own. Then, these eyes squinted and slowly turned into pools of inviable depths. He suddenly started to feel a subtle sense of drowsiness. And, everything started to seem like a dream to him. Huang Shu Liu did his utmost to struggle, but only to find that the two deep pool-like eyes had somehow turned into vast and starry skies by now...

The brightest of starry skies... the most brilliant of starry skies...

That cluster of stars glittered as he felt himself floating... he felt that he was lost in the boundless sky, and had no goal or direction to look towards.

Then, he heard an exceptionally mild and amiable voice. However, the voice seemed quite unclear and remote. In fact, it resembled an extremely warm lullaby. It unexpectedly made him relax. In fact, it made him lower his guard. This voice in his ear made him feel as secure as he used when he would lie down on his mother's lap in his childhood days.

Huang Shu Liu's expression turned from incredulous exhaustion

to an extremely amiable one. It was also full of longing and comfort... and even extreme relief.

"What is your name?" the voice was still gentle. It resembled a spring breeze that had caressed a willow branch. But, the fragrance of flowers was still lingering in the wind. It was similar to a mother's whisper... or loved one's consolation.

"Huang Shu Liu..." Huang Shu Liu's face had a pleased, relieved, and gentle smile on it.

....

"What... were you doing last night?" Jun Mo Xie asked gently. Some of the Dugu Family's people were standing beside him. And, all of them had a look of extreme astonishment on their faces. [There's such a terrible method in this world which can control a person's mind...? A person will delightfully reveal his deepest secrets under the effect of this technique!]

[This is unbelievable!]

"Last night... last night..." Huang Shu Liu's gentle expression suddenly turned somewhat sinister, and somewhat pained, "I was at the Dugu Family's residence last night.... And, I heard that they were hosting their future son-in-law last night. Damn it..."

"Oh? What does that have to do with you? And, what did you do about it?"

Huang Shu Liu's expression became increasingly pained, "I should be the future son-in-law of the Dugu Family. I've been longing for Dugu Xiao Yi for six long years! She has grown up. But, her sight hasn't matured to see the truth of men. So, she settled on an incomparably horrible and loathsome trash of a debauchee. But, how can I admit defeat to him?! Moreover, our Huang Family isn't very powerful! And, it's been bullied over and over again since long now. In fact, it would've been destroyed if it weren't for our status of being related to the Dugu Family. But, my Huang Family can

live without any worries if everything goes right between me and Dugu Xiao Yi! After all, we can't get closer to the Dugu Family with just my aunt. But, it would be different if I become Dugu Xiao Yi's husband... In fact, it can be considered more than a step closer!" he chuckled twice with pride while speaking this.

Everyone became quiet. [He has longed for her for six years?! She's only sixteen-and-a-half years old right now! This means that he has been after Xiao Yi ever since she was ten years old...]

[That's too early!]

"I had heard that the Dugu Family had rejected a proposal from the Imperial Family. So, I quickly rushed over to look for her parents. Anyway, the Dugu Family didn't seem very pleased with the Jun Family's heir either. However, I — Huang Shu Liu — am also considered a bright youngster of my generation. And, our families are already related. So, thing could turn out bright as long as my aunt would sweetly persuade Xiao Yi's parents. But, I had never expected that they would refuse so plainly. Moreover, they even hosted their future son-in-law in front of me!"

Everyone grunted one-after-the-other as they came to understand the matter. Dugu Zong Heng had also been informed of the situation. So, he had also rushed over by now while bustling with energy. But, his face became purple with anger when he heard that youngster speak those words. So, he moved forward to slap him.

Jun Mo Xie lightly shook his head, and waved his hand in order to indicate to the Old Man to not act recklessly or alarm his quarry.

"Oh... hosted the future son-in-law... So, what did you do?" Jun Mo Xie's voice became increasingly gentle.

"What did I do? What could I do? Hehe... I couldn't stand it! I could hear them drinking and shouting loudly. They were making so much noise that I couldn't even sleep. So, I quietly went to see what this legendary new Son-in-law of the Dugu Family looks like.

Then, an extremely fat man came out staggering from the doorway by the time I reached there. He grabbed me, and told me to take him to the toilet. What kind of an insect did that Fatty take me to be? He had drunk so much that he couldn't even open his eyes to see my elegant-self?! He was as blind as a bat!

"I asked him who he was. And, that Fatty replied, 'Jun... Jun...' this made me even angrier. It seemed to me like he was the future Son-in-law. I had believed that the Dugu Family was looking for a good Son-in-law. But, he was an extremely obese... thing! Compared to me... Nah! He couldn't even be compared to me! Damn it! Who could stand such an unbearable thing?!"

"So, you..."

"I took him to the latrine and turned around. However, I suddenly thought that he could choke and die if I pushed him into that pit. He would at least become a huge joke even if he didn't choke or die. And, how could the Dugu Family make him their son-in-law if that happened? Wouldn't my value also increase at that time? He he..." he sniggered maliciously, and his face got covered with an expression of malevolence.

Everyone sighed. [He's a typical vile character.]

"So, I checked around to see that no one was there. Then, I assisted that hateful Fatty by holding his arm to a bigger latrine pit. But, this latrine was very far, and that Fatty was too heavy and unwieldy. In fact, I nearly died while bringing him here. Moreover, this Fatty was extremely muddleheaded, and was vomiting everywhere. He even thanked me after he vomit over me! And, that was when I kicked him inside. It's a pity that he didn't die. Damn that Fatty..."

Everyone had finally understood what was going on...

"This matter was supposed to have happened in secret. But, some guards came-up to the latrine at that unfortunate timing. It was too late for me to hide. So, I shouted at them to come and help... I

told them that the Young Master had fallen into the latrine pit..."

He put on an expression of annoyance as he said this, "I realized that this Fatty wasn't Jun Mo Xie when they came over. I figured that I had made a huge mistake this time! After all, that Fatty wasn't Jun Mo Xie. But, he wasn't from a small family either! In fact, he was the heir to the Minister of Revenue! So, I couldn't let anyone know that it was my doing! After all, my whole Huang Family would be in danger of being destroyed if someone found out! I wasted so much effort... but only to provoke such great trouble!"

Jun Mo Xie's hand struck this youngster resolutely, and he fainted as a result. Then, Young Master Jun stood up and shook with laughter, "The Dugu Family genuinely has a lot of hidden talent! In fact, it even has such a young and promising Young Master for a relative! We two brothers were drinking at your household, but we didn't expect that we would be plotted against whilst being your guests! I don't know if this could be considered a deliberate assassination plan...? This... is genuinely unimaginable..."

The men of all three generations of the Dugu Family became flushed with anger.

They had been ashamed by the fact that such a thing had happened inside the Dugu Household. Jun Mo Xie's voice hadn't been loud, but it had felt like a hot knife whilst being plunged into their innards.

The Young Master's tone was dull, but his words were as sharp as knife. Moreover, they were full of truth. In fact, there was no exaggeration.

This was undoubtedly an extremely humiliating matter for them. After all, that unimaginable event had happened at the Dugu Household, and it would certainly destroy their reputation. One of their relatives had pushed a guest into a latrine pit in their own

household! And, the fact that it could be called a 'deliberate murder attempt' didn't make things better...

Moreover, this particular guest was Grandson to Tang Family's Lord Tang Wan Li. And, he was the son of the Minister of Revenue! He was the Tang Family's future heir, and Tian Xiang City's God of Wealth!

The Dugu Family would be ridiculed throughout the Xuan Xuan Continent if the news of this spread out. Who would dare to come and drink at the Dugu Household in the future?

"Guards! Come here! Take this brat for his execution, and feed his chopped meat to the dogs!" Dugu Zong Heng roared in fury. "Send a letter to the Huang Family. Tell them to give me an explanation for this! I will send an army if they don't satisfy me in this matter! Tell them that my armored horses will trample over the Golden East City! And, not a single member of the Huang Family will be left alive! Let's see who dares to play games inside my house again!"

Chapter 475: Brothers!

Old Man Dugu was extremely angry. He was jumping and roaring, and his face was emotionally charged and indignant.

Dugu Wu Di was full of resentment. His facial muscles twitched, and his cheek muscles throbbed. He couldn't restrain his anger. After all, his daughter had finally found an ideal husband. In fact, Jun Mo Xie seemed like a giant amongst men at that point of time. Dugu Wu Di was certainly reluctant to admit it, but he had accepted it inside his heart.

[It needn't be mentioned that my daughter had appeared in front of the city's gates with that big belly! So, who except Jun Mo Xie would dare to marry her? This entire matter had been sorted after much difficulty. I was drinking happily with my son-in-law last night. Moreover, Jun Mo Xie had even promised to treat my father's injury! This could be regarded as two happy events for my Dugu Family! It was like adding more happiness to a good day!]

[However, this nephew wanted to push my son-in-law into the latrine pit at such a critical moment?!] Dugu Wu Di wiped his cold sweat. [It's fortunate that he made a mistake and pushed Tang Yuan instead. Suppose he had genuinely pushed Jun Mo Xie...]

Dugu Wu Di couldn't even imagine what would've happened in that case. [One thing would've been for certain though... My little girl's mind would've become very troubled. And, there would've been no hope of healing of my old man's injuries for decades! Moreover, Jun Zhan Tian would've sent a huge army to attack us! After all, would that Old Man's temperament have allowed his grandson to suffer this shame?]

After all, it's acceptable if one's kin dies. However, one can never stand their kin being insulted...

The two families would've become irreconcilable enemies, and the situation would've devolved into a very nasty one.

The Father and Son were roaring, and the courtyard was in utter chaos. That's when a group of women rushed over, "Why are you two going wild so early in the morning?" it was Old Lady Dugu who had asked this.

"I'm not only going wild today — I'm also going to kill!" Dugu Zong Heng jumped and cursed, "What about it?"

The Old Lady glared wide-eyed. She was about to get angry when a delicate and pretty woman dressed in luxurious clothes rushed from behind her. She had a panic-stricken look on her face. "Liu... Child... What happened? Why are you lying on the ground?"

She called out for a long time, but he remained unconscious. So, she couldn't help but cry out in alarm, "What is the matter, my husband?!"

"What's the matter? Ask your nephew! Your Huang Family imparts very good education to its youngsters! I never expected that your Huang Family would have such deep thinking! That's good scheming... very good scheming!" Dugu Wu Di came to the point despite being enraged. His face was cold as he cursed.

Jun Mo Xie realized that this household was getting very noisy with their personal business. And, he felt that it was extremely unbearable. Moreover, he was still an outsider. So, he started to move away. However, he had taken only two steps when he suddenly stopped and turned around. He then pointed at Huang Shu Liu, "This man is a relative of the Dugu Family. So, I won't do it myself! But, he must die! There's no room for discussion in this matter. This Jun Mo Xie is ready to explain things to the Huang Family if they have any objections in accepting this verdict. In fact, I can give them an explanation anytime and anywhere!

"He shouldn't have entrapped my brother! I don't care what wrongs he has done before! Nor do I care about how honest or good he has been in the past! He can't escape death for this! Who dares humiliate my brother? No one! Also, I don't know how Fatty will

take revenge against him! I can't guess how he'll plot against the Huang Family. But, I will lend him my unconditional support!"

His voice was awe-inspiring, cold, and grim. His sounded like a Supreme Monarch who had declared the verdict for execution.

No one saw that invisible energy as it silently flowed from his pointing finger, and made its way into Huang Shu Liu's head. He had effectively ensured that this youngster wouldn't see another day even if the Dugu Family decided to make some secret plans.

There was no quarter; no quarter at all.

[I won't leave my enemy with any hope of getting back to their feet!]

[And, my brother's enemy is my enemy!]

Jun Mo Xie walked forward in a cold and detached manner after he had finished speaking. And, everyone couldn't help but give way wherever he went.

"Stop!"

The Second Lady's face was cold as she stood up, "Young Master Jun, you're Xiao Yi's future husband. So, you're not an outsider anymore. May I ask what offence my nephew has committed against you that you must consign him to death like this? Shouldn't I get an explanation?"

Jun Mo Xie didn't turn back as he replied in a dull manner, "What offense did he commit against me? Please ask General Dugu. However, I can happily tell you that the Huang Family would've been annihilated before sunset if it weren't for their relations with the Dugu Family! In fact, not a single soul would've been spared!"

Jun Mo Xie put his hands behind his back, and grimly concluded, "So, you should rejoice!"

After that, Jun Mo Xie ignored her and walked away. [It doesn't matter who you are. You must never mess with my brother! But,

you will pay the price if you mess with him!]

[And, an unimaginable price at that!]

The Second Lady was about to say something further when General Dugu came up, and gave her a slap. He then cursed, "You still dare to nag, you hag?! The Dugu Family's reputation has been ruined because of a hag like you! And, let's not even talk about the reason you married me at that time. It wasn't a simple one, was it?"

The Second Lady was also a bright person. She had inferred the entire situation after she had looked at the scene. And, General Dugu's slap had ended her resistance in its entirety...

"Young Master Jun Mo Xie! I beg you! Please forgive my nephew!" the Second Lady cried and shouted. However, she couldn't think of any reasons to justify her plea for leniency at this time. After all, what were her qualifications or backing worth while facing a bigwig like Jun Mo Xie? The Second Lady thought for a long while before she finally remembered a family legend. She then recklessly shouted, "Young Master Jun... Young Master Jun! My Huang Family has an ancestor in the boundless ocean of blood..."

"Boundless ocean of blood...?" Jun Mo Xie stopped in the distance. Then, he slowly spoke, "Nothing can be done if someone messes with my brother. In fact, it doesn't matter if their father is the King of Heavens!"

He then left...

"You still haven't gotten lost to your room, you Hag?! You've lost the respect to stand here! Go to your room, shut yourself up, and ponder over your mistakes! Get lost!" Dugu Wu Di berated in a loud voice. But, he still felt for his second wife in his heart. That was why he had agreed for her nephew to stay there. That's why he had overlooked when she had bypassed him and had gone directly to his parents the last time. But, who could've endured such a chaotic and huge matter?

Dugu Zong Heng's face also became dark. He suddenly howled at his son, "You brat... you're also a bastard! You can't even take care of your woman! She still weeps uncontrollably; what a scandal! Dugu Hao! Quickly take your mother to her room! You're still pestering here, you bastard Wu Di? Why haven't you gone to check on Tang Yuan?" the Old Man stamped his feet after he spoke those words.

Dugu Wu Di instantly came to his senses. After all, the key to this matter wasn't Jun Mo Xie... or the Dugu Family! The key was Tang Yuan!

Jun Mo Xie's first priority was Tang Yuan's reputation. And, he would consider the Dugu Family second. After all, they were future in-laws now. So, this family would keep his matters a secret until they could sit and resolve them at a later date.

However, Tang Yuan was the key. The Dugu Family would be extremely lucky if this matter was covered up. But, they needed to ensure that this matter didn't become public in case it wasn't covered up in its entirety! After all, the consequences would be dire if this matter reached Old Man Tang's ears! Therefore, Dugu Wu Di quickly complied, and hurriedly rushed after Jun Mo Xie to catch up with him.

But, this matter had made this father-and-son duo realize something very clearly...

The news of Jun Mo Xie killing Kong Ling Yang and Mei Gao Jie had reached them a while ago. And, Old Man Dugu Zong Heng had then said, "This Jun Mo Xie is vicious and merciless. He can kill without a thought once he has decided to do something. And, no man must ever mess with him... or his woman... or his family!"

It was clear that Jun Mo Xie's family and woman were his soft spots. And, one would have to face the wrath of the heavens if they ever dared to attack the dragon's soft spot!

However, they had realized another thing after they had

witnessed today's matter. No one must mess with his brother apart from his family and woman; especially the brother he had acknowledged!

After all, he had created such a massive uproar at his future in-laws' place for the sake of his brother even though he had drunk wine with them last night.

In fact, it had seemed that he wouldn't leave the Dugu Family with a shred of honor.

However, it was a pity that this father-and-son duo had neglected another aspect. And, it was a very important aspect. It was possible that these two had grossly overestimated their family's influence. The Young Master had agreed to not pursue this matter any further. But, would the Fatty also agree to do the same?

Money could enslave demons; it could also act as God. In fact, money was omnipotent in many cases!

Fatty Tang was the new God of Wealth in Tian Xiang City. And, how could this aspect be taken lightly?

Old Man Dugu looked at the six of his grandsons that remained there. He then gave a long sigh, and spoke in a low voice, "I've invested most of my heart in this matter regarding Xiao Yi. This old man will be very relieved if Jun Mo Xie ever recognizes you kids as his brothers..."

Dugu Zong Heng's voice had been very low when he had spoken those words. And, the six brothers hadn't been able to hear him properly. Therefore, they picked their ears, and looked sideways as they asked, "What...? Grandfather, what did you say?"

"Nothing. Just chop-up this brat, and feed him to the dogs. I feel annoyed when I look at him," Dugu Zong Heng felt his interest somewhat waning. He couldn't even get angry after having witnessed the chaos Jun Mo Xie had wreaked...

[This is what a real man should be like!]

[He doesn't even fear the heavens for his brother's sake. This is a real man! A real and loyal man!]

Dugu Zong Heng recalled what Jun Mo Xie had said last, "Boundless ocean of blood? Nothing can be done if someone messes with my brother. In fact, it doesn't matter if their father is the King of Heavens!"

[He's an arrogant brat! But, he's a great brat in truth!]

[How did I take him to a debauchee in the past?]

The Old Man shook his head, [Had I lost my mind?]

"Grandfather... do we kill him for real?" Dugu Jie bitterly raised his face and asked. He was the closest to Dugu Hao, and he was also comparatively well-acquainted with his cousin. Consequently, he couldn't bring himself to do it.

"Kill him! And, do it quickly!" Dugu Zong Heng's eyes became fierce. He spoke-up in a serious tone, "This is a direct order!"

The six brothers quickly stood up at the same time. In fact, they stood as straight as a ramrod, "We'll follow the order!"

Tang Yuan still hadn't woken up by the time Dugu Wu Di arrived. His snores were still shaking the heavens.

Jun Mo Xie saw General Dugu, and figured why he had come here. So, he said, "Tang Yuan had a lot to drink. So, he may not be able to remember."

"That'd be the best!" Dugu Wu Di sighed. His face had somewhat reddened. He coughed and spoke, "This entire... incident... was..."

Jun Mo Xie smiled in a strange manner. It seemed that he couldn't even imagine this uncouth fellow apologizing. So, he said, "Don't worry. I'll tell Tang Yuan to not speak of this incident outside even if he does remember about it."

"That's good!" Dugu Wu Di wiped his sweat. Then, he thought of something and asked, "Don't tell me that Tang Yuan doesn't even

know what happened? Did you find it out yourself? Tang Yuan didn't look for you to complain about it?"

"Brothers are precious to the heart. Would I be called a 'brother' if I waited for my brother to come to me for help? Could I still be called a brother? Could I still be considered a brother?" Jun Mo Xie smiled faintly, "I was that brat's target. However, Tang Yuan was humiliated instead of me. He faced that absurd disaster while I remained unaffected... But, I can't be called his brother if remained indifferent to this incident!"

Jun Mo Xie smiled slightly, and looked at the sleeping face of Tang Yuan. Then, he turned his head, and gazed outside as he calmly said, "My brother's problem is my problem."

Dugu Wu Di trembled as if he had been struck by lightning.

Jun Mo Xie's words had reminded him of his revered elder brother Jun Wu Hui and second brother Jun Wu Meng. He remembered how these brothers used to go outside the city to roam. These brothers were robust and in the prime of their lives at that time. Jun Wu Hui had once stood at the top of a hill, and had looked at the distant sea of clouds. The affairs of the world became faint to them as he patted his shoulder and said, "You are my brother, Wu Di; like Wu Meng and Wu Yi. All of you are my precious brothers!"

Dugu Wu Di still remembered what Jun Wu Hui had said. He had stood at the top of the hill while proudly facing the boundless earth and the ocean of clouds. However, his tranquil voice had brimmed with deep emotions of brotherhood.

Jun Wu Hui had obviously made a vow that he would even fight the heavens for his brothers' sake.

[Brothers! It's a sacred term!]

Dugu Wu Di would remember those words throughout his life.

However, Jun Mo Xie had spoken those words with the same

tranquil tone and resolute attitude of Jun Wu Hui's. The expression on his face, and the manner in which he had spoken them was also the same. There was no difference. In fact, he even looked like Jun Wu Hui from the side...

Even the expression in his eyes was the same.

[Brothers!]

[My brother's problem is my problem!]

["You are my brother, Wu Di; like Wu Meng and Wu Yi. All of you are my precious brothers!"]

These words by Jun Wu Hui would echo in his heart forever... [Jun Mo Xie acted recklessly for his brother's sake. He didn't even care about provoking a huge monster like our Dugu Family. But, what have I done for my brother?]

[What did I do when I knew that my brother had died...? When he had died wrongly after being entrapped?]

Dugu Wu Di's throat started to choke. He couldn't even breathe. A strong fit of emotion was rising within him. He coughed with difficulty, and suddenly ran out while covering his mouth. He had even covered his eyes... He had rushed out blind...

He didn't say anything. He had nothing to say.

He returned to his room, and looked at the private memorial tablet he had setup in Jun Wu Hui's memory. Dugu Wu Di continued to look at the ice-cold tablet for a very long time. His fingers trembled as he said in a quivering voice, "Elder Brother... Elder Brother... I miss you... this Little Brother can't..." Tears started to flow from his eyes. He then lay on the ground, and burst out crying.

Chapter 476: Only Blood is Capable of Washing Away this Humiliation!

It was time for the midday meal when Tang Yuan woke up. Tang Yuan opened his eyes wide, and crawled up to stand. He then roared, "Damn you motherfu*kers! I'm your grandpa! You brats have got some guts to be messing with Grandpa Tang! Wait and see what Grandpa Tang does!"

He had started to curse on one hand. But, he had clutched his head and groaned on the other.

His hangover was extremely painful. Even his big skull was finding it hard to endure.

"Pop!" the fragrant alcoholic smell of excellent wine assailed his nose. He then heard Jun Mo Xie's voice, "You're awake? Drink this cup of wine. It will sober you up."

Tang Yuan retched as he raised his teary eyes, "Third Young Master... Please don't mess with me. Your brother is a respected senior now..."

"Go and wash your face. Come and speak to me after you've become sober. I have to tell you something," Jun Mo Xie looked at him. "And, you're indeed growing up!"

Tang Yuan sniggered mischievously. He then disappeared outside like a wisp of smoke. He asked a maid to bring water so that he could wash his face. However, Tang Yuan refused the reasonably cool water, the warm water, and the lukewarm water. Instead, he dipped his big skull into ice-cold water. He lifted his head out of the water after a long time. He then shook his head, and water sprayed everywhere. Then, he took a towel, and carefully wiped his head. After that, he waved for the maid to leave.

Tang Yuan looked at Jun Mo Xie and grinned, "I was very drunk last night, Third Young Master."

"Ah, that you were! You had a lot to drink!" Jun Mo Xie nodded. "Does your head still hurt?"

"There's no pain, but I can't remember what happened last night. Some issue was at the tip of my tongue. And, it was a very important matter. But, why can't I remember it?" Tang Yuan tilted his head. He had a vexed expression on his face.

"It's mustn't have been a big deal if you don't even remember it," Jun Mo Xie sighed and nodded in silence. Jun Mo Xie wouldn't have worried if Tang Yuan had tried to get to the bottom of the matter after waking up. However, he had said that he couldn't remember anything...

Jun Mo Xie had understood his indication, [This guy is indicating that we can't have that conversation even if he remembers the matter. He's not willing to mention it; at least, not at this time.] After all, the Young Master knew that Fatty Tang wouldn't consider this event to be a trivial one either! However, it would be very awkward if they spoke about it right now. After all, this time, this place, and their current company were inappropriate to discuss this matter.

Fatty wasn't trying to preserve his own reputation alone; he was also trying to save Jun Mo Xie's honor. After all, this had happened in the Dugu Family's house. And, Jun Mo Xie was nearly certain to be the future Son-in-law of that family. This incident wasn't directly related to the Dugu Family's actions. However, Tang Yuan still couldn't reveal it for the sake of his brother. Well, it would be inappropriate to do so for the time being at least...

Tang Yuan's face seemed merry as he smirked and said, "It's a bit late already. So, I should quickly return to work. After all, I need to inform those 'fat sheep' to come loaded with silver and gold coins for the auction. Ha ha! We'll make it big profit this time again, Third Young Master!"

"Humph! It would be better if you don't 'stuff your pockets under

the table'!" Jun Mo Xie gave him a harsh look.

Tang Yuan yelled back since he felt wronged, "But, Third Young Master... I'm such a kind and honest person! I'm genuinely a good kind of guy..."

The two men laughed loudly as they walked out of the room.

Tang Yuan and Jun Mo Xie had seemed very relaxed when they said goodbye to the Dugu Family. They didn't even mention about getting drunk the last night. This was rather opposite of what the tensed Dugu Zong Heng had expected...

They saw a corpse in front of the gate. It was covered in white cloth, and was being carried in. Tang Yuan's pupils contracted when he saw this. He had an extremely profound look on his face as he turned to look at Jun Mo Xie.

Jun Mo Xie looked at Tang Yuan with an expression of astonishment. And, he suddenly felt that his friend had grown up a lot. [He has matured over the last few months. This brother of mine is finally capable of being my brother!]

They didn't speak a word the entire journey.

However, Tang Yuan called out to Jun Mo Xie when the two young men were entering the Aristocratic Hall. There wasn't a trace of smile on the usually smiley face of Tang Yuan. Instead, there was rarely seen expression of seriousness. And, his eyes seemed to have a sharp and incisive splendor to it. "Third Young Master... was that man's death your doing?"

"Yes. It was me!" Jun Mo Xie didn't turn his head. He didn't want to see Tang Yuan's expression. "That brat is dead. You have my full support no matter what you want to do."

"Yes. He's dead. But, this matter isn't over yet," Tang Yuan had seemingly gnashed his teeth while speaking, "Who was he?"

"He was from the Golden East City's Huang Family," Jun Mo Xie replied in a dull tone. Then, a thought came to his mind — [The

Huang Family is finished.]

Tang Yuan's personality wouldn't allow him to stop unless he had carried out satisfactory revenge since he knew where his enemy's home was. He simply wouldn't stop unless he was satisfied with the result!

Tang Yuan's influence and net worth could ensure that his power and control would make the Huang Family look insignificant. In fact, he could even shake up a powerful family in the Tian Xiang City. After all, money could enslave demons. In fact, it could even act as God. Thus, many difficult matters become easy if one has accumulated a terrifying amount of money.

The previous night's incident had been extremely humiliating for Tang Yuan.

He was a Young Master of the Tang Family. He was the future successor of the great Tang Family. He was the Second Master of the Aristocratic Hall, and the newly-proclaimed 'God of Wealth' of Tian Xiang City. However, he had been pushed into a latrine pit!

No one with those four identities could ever bear such humiliation... even if he was drunk on wine! He couldn't take it lying under any circumstances!

And, only blood was capable of washing away such humiliation!

Huang Shu Liu was dead. So, it was impossible for Tang Yuan to vent his anger at him. However, he still wanted to take revenge. Therefore, the Huang Family of the Golden East City was bound to face a tragedy. After all, it had become the object on which Tang Yuan would take out his revenge for the humiliation he had suffered.

Jun Mo Xie could imagine how fierce Tang Yuan's revenge would be. In fact, the sight of it would be so appalling that even the heavens would be shy from it. After all, some innocents would also get caught in the midst of it.

However, Jun Mo Xie wouldn't prevent Tang Yuan from taking his revenge. After all, Tang Yuan would never be able to raise his head if he didn't do this. He would always feel ashamed as long as the name of the Golden East City's Huang Family continued to exist.

This was merely a psychological issue. But, it would spread darkness in his heart. And, that darkness would plague him in every aspect of life.

"Golden East City's Huang Family? That is a very big family!" Tang Yuan sneered as these disdainful words of destruction exited his mouth, "I'll make them very happy! I'll tell them to wait for Grandpa Tang!"

Then, he turned his head, and spoke extremely slowly, "I need to use the Aristocratic Hall's strength, Third Young Master."

Jun Mo Xie didn't hesitate. He readily promised, "Everything doesn't need to go through me. The strength and manpower of the Aristocratic Hall is at your disposal from now on. And, that includes the entire nine-hundred-million in silver. Moreover, you only need to speak to me if the Aristocratic Hall's manpower isn't enough. And, I will do my best to help you!" Jun Mo Xie gave him a profound look, "It doesn't matter what you want to do. Remember; nothing is out of bounds!"

Tang Yuan paused for a long while. He then inhaled loudly from his nose, and said, "You fu*king... you fu*king... hehe... I only wish to borrow a little manpower from the Aristocratic Hall. I'll use my own methods to settle this. I'll be very unsatisfied if I entirely rely on your strength, Third Young Master. But, I'm certain that my current strength is enough to solve many problems."

Tang Yuan's words had undergone a drastic change. He had mumbled the first-half, and had even chocked somewhat. Moreover, his diction had been unclear. But, the second-half was spoken very fluently and clearly.

It symbolized that Fatty had smoothly managed to control his emotions in this brief moment.

The two men stood opposite each other for a moment. Then, Tang Yuan suddenly asked, "My actions may give rise to a lot of public anger. It may also give rise to some very serious consequences. So, why don't you try to persuade me on this? I'll listen as long as you say it."

"What should I say? You genuinely want to hear what I have to speak? And, will you be happy even if you listen to me? So, why should I make my brother unhappy for outsiders?"

Jun Mo Xie spoke slowly, "I've said that I'll deem your actions right... no matter what you do! This may give rise to a strong opponent. But, we'll face them together. If we die because of it — so be it! What's the worst that can happen? This is a world where the strong prey on the weak. It's a society where a clenched fist is the ultimate argument. So, we can say nothing if we die in case we're weaker than the opponent. But, why should we submit to humiliation if our strength is greater than them? Anyway, who the fu*k thinks so much and so far into the future? Did I take the public's approval before I dealt with that matter a few days ago? Were the consequences very trivial? But, why can't my brother do it if I can?"

Tang Yuan remained silent for a long while. He then solemnly patted Jun Mo Xie's shoulder, "You're a good brother!"

Suddenly, a strange splendor enveloped Fatty's round and plump face. He then grabbed Jun Mo Xie's hand, and sniggered in a mischievous manner, "Come and take a look at my wife's face!"

Jun Mo Xie shrugged his shoulders. That sudden change in Tang Yuan's complexion had somewhat baffled him. So, he forced a smile, and followed him inside.

Jun Mo Xie saw Sun Xiao Mei's back, and felt alarmed upon noticing the extremity of the change.

She was still tall, but her previously solid and thick frame had disappeared. It had been replaced by an incomparably graceful figure. It seemed that she possessed the charm and grace even the companions of the Gods couldn't match. Such was the temperament she possessed.

She could leave a man with an impulse to commit a sin!

Jun Mo Xie gasped in surprise.

It had only been three months. But, the change that she had undergone had scaled the difference between the heaven and the earth.

Moreover, such changes were apparent in both – the husband, and the wife.

The sharp increase in Fatty Tang's weight was a huge miracle. And, Sun Xiao Mei seemed like she had been born a-new. She had transformed into a beauty from the shape of a big and bulky man!

"Hi beautiful..." Jun Mo Xie called as he walked past.

"Jun Mo Xie?" Sun Xiao Mei was surprised when she heard Jun Mo Xie's voice. So, she turned around... but only to hear Jun Mo Xie's blood-curdling scream. He spoke-up in an extremely pained tone, "How could this be? This... this... ah..."

[I wanted to commit a crime when I looked at her from behind. But, I suddenly find it reasonable to defend myself after I've seen her face.]

[It's too frightening!]

Tang Yuan also wanted to cry, but didn't have tears. He said, "She can make anyone lose their wits if you look at her from behind. But, she can scare away a million men once she turns to face you! Are you convinced now, Third Master Jun?"

Chapter 477: Tang Yuan's Romance

Sun Xiao Mei's face was covered in acnes and pus. The scores of pimples and warts had spread over her face like a forest. It didn't look like a woman's face anymore. In fact, it didn't look like a person's face. Only the black and white of her eyes could be seen on her face. However, they were glaring fiercely at Tang Yuan, and it seemed as if they were on the verge of shooting flames.

"Oh... my God!" Jun Mo Xie's face revealed a fake expression of fear. He had tried to make it look as if he had seen a ghost.

Sun Xiao Mei nearly stamped her feet in anger since she was being mocked by those two hateful men. Young Lady Sun's physique had transformed in its entirety, but her innate temperament hadn't changed one bit. She had been somewhat afraid of Young Master Jun when she had raining curses at him after that matter with Princess Ling Meng. But, he had jeered at her appearance at this time. And, that was something she couldn't endure. So, she rose above her fears and shouted, "Do you two men wish to court death? You're mocking me instead of thinking of ways to help me! Do you need a beating?"

"He he... We've dared to mock your face. But, this indicates that we have a cure for it; we wouldn't be mocking you otherwise. Young Lady Sun is very intelligent. How could she not see this?" Jun Mo Xie clicked his tongue, and tilted his head as he looked her over. He then spoke, "However, the Young Lady's current beauty is too rare a sight! So, I need to appreciate it very carefully. After all, I may not be able to appreciate it later..."

Sun Xiao Mei became angry and anxious. She covered her face, and started to stamp her feet. Then, the Young Lady suddenly let her leg fly while stamping her feet, and kicked Tang Yuan's posterior, "Fatty Tang! You bring your brother here, and he mocks me after he looks at me. And, that too at my face! What do you think I am?!"

Tang Yuan screamed upon receiving the kick. He then clasped his posterior, and imploded, "Third Young Master, please start quickly! Have pity on me, Brother! This hag has been driving me insane these past few days. Even my merry and great appetite has started to wither..."

Jun Mo Xie laughed mischievously as the sound of his fingers' snaps echoed. He smiled and said, "Wow... she's genuinely someone with a devilish face yet an angel-like body..."

Tang Yuan fled with a 'whooshing' sound, "I'm going to arrange that matter regarding the gold and silver coins for the auction. Third Young Master will treat you... slowly and steadily. And, I'm certain that you'll get rid of your illness with the help of his medicines."

"Damn! You're going to leave your wife to me like this? You must be feeling very happy..." Jun Mo Xie let out a scream of horror. After all, he had been left to face that terrifying face on his own. Jun Mo Xie's courage could certainly soar to the heavens on ordinary days. However, even his nerves had started to fail him at this juncture...

"Ha ha... you won't bully your friend's wife. Can't I even have that much faith in the Young Master? I would've felt slightly uneasy about leaving her to a pervert like you if her face was fine! But now... it depends on your ability..." Tang Yuan's voice echoed from the distance. However, he had gone so far that his last words didn't even reach their ears...

"This is such a terrible loss!" Jun Mo Xie sighed. He snapped his fingers and let out a low whistle. Then, he said as his body moved forward, "Come here girl. Let this brother take a look at..."

A "whoosh" sound was heard as a knife flashed; it nearly cut Jun Mo Xie's fingers...

Jun Mo Xie laughed as he dodged it.

"You're a very violent girl! Fatty will have a very happy future!"

....

Jun Mo Xie finished Sun Xiao Mei's treatment after a while. Sun Xiao Mei's illness wasn't that serious if truth were to be told. After all, it was merely a case of hormonal imbalance. There was no place the poison could be drained from. Therefore, it had gathered on her face. It was certainly an incurable disease as far as that era's medicine was concerned. But, it was an easy thing for Jun Mo Xie.

This problem couldn't be compared to that of his Third Uncle... or even Old Man Dugu. In fact, this was a piece of cake.

He initiated the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune, and the pure aura travelled into the meridians above Sun Xiao Mei's neck. Then, it pushed forth onto her face. She felt cool on her face as this happened. In fact, it was a very pleasurable sensation. But, this pleasurable feeling lasted only for a moment. After that, she suddenly felt a piercing pain... as if tens of thousands of ants were crawling on her face.

The pimples on Sun Xiao Mei's face had burst by the time Jun Mo Xie withdrew his hand. However, a lot of pus had flowed out on her face as a result. Jun Mo Xie stretched his hand several times. But, he felt too embarrassed to do it himself. Therefore, Young Lady Sun herself got some water to wash her face.

Sun Xiao Mei tried to wash her face with cold water. However, the creases on her face made her feel very uncomfortable. The many pimples which had ruptured by now had also started to itch very severely. And, she eventually couldn't help but scratch them. But, the Young Lady couldn't help but feel the thin layer of skin there as she did this. She then opened her eyes, and saw that she had nearly peeled off the entire layer of skin from her face...

It was a layer of dirty skin.

Sun Xiao Mei cried out in fear, and threw it away. But, she

couldn't prevent herself from feeling her face. She was pleasantly surprised to realize that her face had become quite smooth now. So, she washed her face as quickly as she could, and jumped to look at herself in the mirror. The face of the woman in the mirror still had some red patches. But, the surface of face was quite clear. Her face wasn't as terrible as it was before. In fact, it was heavenly even...

Glossy skin was exposed over large parts of her face.

[It worked out so quickly!]

Sun Xiao Mei stared stunned at the mirror.

A long time passed before two streams of tears flowed down her face.

Jun Mo Xie had been standing behind her. He sighed and said, "We need to do this at least two more times... Then, your face will transform into the beautiful flower it should've been. In fact, I'm certain that another flower would be added to the peerlessly beautiful garden of Tian Xiang City by then. You'll be counted the same as Xiao Yi and Princess Ling Meng — a springtime flower. Someone without a rival! You will be transformed three hundred percent. But, it's a pity that such a beautiful woman is that Tang Yuan's fiancée. My spirits dampen as I look at this disequilibrium. This is a waste of a valuable thing. But, I'll make a beautiful woman like you my ninety-ninth concubine if you come with me."

Jun Mo Xie's pretext of saving someone from a dire situation was getting 'increasingly excessive'. The first half of his speech was pleasant to hear. But, the second part of the man's speech was very brutish.

"Go to hell!" Sun Xiao Mei suddenly forgot that she was emotional. She then mercilessly struck at her benefactor with her fists and her embroidery-clothed leg since he was mocking her.

Jun Mo Xie laughed in a merry manner.

Sun Xiao Mei suddenly gave a long sigh after a while had passed. She then said, "Young... Master Jun, there aren't enough words to thank you. But, you're Fatty's brother. So, I won't say much more. I only wish to ask you for one thing. Fatty's weight... is there a chance of reducing it? I'm worried about Fatty's health. Once he reaches his thirties..."

[This damned couple is too much! I first dealt with this woman's face. And, she simply turns around and requests me to reduce that guy's weight!]

"It's very dangerous... But, you will need to make him work with everything he's got if you want him to lose weight," This issue had become a headache for Jun Mo Xie as well. [How can that guy lose weight the way he eats? He eats meat, drinks soup, and eats a hundred steam dumplings in one day! Could this guy still be called a man? And, can he lose weight...? That's a fantasy!]

"Please... you must help him lose weight! He's certain to die if he continues to gain weight," Sun Xiao Mei seriously raised her head, and gave a worrying look to Jun Mo Xie. "Fatty had once said... that he would personally take the initiative to cancel our engagement if my face is restored. It doesn't matter what he is like. He's a good man in my eyes! I... I... wish to be with him! I wish to live my life with that man... I want to grow old with him!"

She even blushed a little as she spoke those words.

[Fatty's a good man?]

[When did that Fatty become so noble?]

[Isn't this like a fairy tale?]

Jun Mo Xie was left flabbergasted. He picked his eyebrows, and asked in a low voice, "It would be difficult to make Fatty lose his weight. And, he isn't easy on the eyes. However, your face has been restored. In fact, you've now become a beauty who can bring down cities. Moreover, Fatty is willing to cancel his engagement with

you. So, why don't you seize your freedom? After all, you could easily find a man who looks better than Fatty. All of us are acquaintances here, but what I say is true!"

"Jun Mo Xie, Fatty had sounded very sincere and honest when he had spoken about breaking our engagement. However, I feel that you sound..."

Sun Xiao Mei returned to her usual tranquil self. She wiped her tears, and looked at Jun Mo Xie, "Are you testing me for your brother? Do I seem like a fickle and unfaithful woman to you? Am I like that?"

"Ah... that..." Jun Mo Xie was somewhat embarrassed. He rubbed his nose and didn't speak anything in reply.

"Tang Yuan is fat, and his looks aren't outstanding. In fact, I'm certain that no woman would find him attractive. And, I'm the same. But, Tang Yuan handles himself like a real man even if he's fat! And, I'm glad of this. I had resisted my father's decision when I had learnt that I would be getting engaged to Tang Yuan. I had told him that I wouldn't marry such a notorious fat man. However, I eventually made peace with the fact that I'm very ugly, and I couldn't land a great husband. But, I've changed my mind after getting to know him over these past months!"

Sun Xiao Mei spoke softly, and gave a meaningful look with her blurred eyes, "It doesn't matter if he's good or bad... I've settled on him whether he's a good man or a tyrant! I'll be perfectly happy being Mrs. Tang whether he loses weight or not. I'll become the wife of an official if he becomes an official. And, I'll accompany him to the warehouses if he becomes a businessman. In fact, I'll stay by his side and beat the dogs with a cudgel if he becomes a beggar!"

"Fatty is a good man, and I'm fond of him!" Sun Xiao Mei raised her head to look at Jun Mo Xie. She then spoke slowly, "It doesn't matter if he's rich or poor... or handsome or ugly. I wish to

accompany him throughout this life! In fact, I would rather not have my appearance fixed if it disturbs our marriage. After all, we'll be able to stay together if both of us have a huge deficiency in appearance..."

All women cherish their appearance. Sun Xiao Mei had looked ugly most of her life. However, someone like her would never give up on the opportunity of suddenly transforming her appearance into that of a beautiful woman. But, Sun Xiao Mei was ready to renounce her beauty for an ugly man who had next-to-no redeeming qualities. Who wouldn't be emotionally moved by this?

Chapter 478: Throw Away the Nine-Hundred-Million, But Don't Forfeit Conscience!

"Good! You've spoke very well," Jun Mo Xie was solemn. He couldn't prevent himself from applauding. He walked two steps, and spoke in a profound manner, "This Jun Mo Xie thanks you for my brother, Sister-in-law."

After that, Jun Mo Xie turned and walked out with long strides. He was happy inside; he felt genuine happiness for Tang Yuan.

"I'll become the wife of an official if he becomes an official. And, I'll accompany him to the warehouses if he becomes a businessman. In fact, I'll stay by his side and beat the dogs with a cudgel if he becomes a beggar!" [Every man dreams of this kind of love. Fatty Tang's life will never be in vain since he has found this love!]

"You still haven't told me if there's a way to make him lose weight!" Sun Xiao Mei anxiously called out from behind.

Jun Mo Xie stopped with his back towards her. He then raised his hand, and gave a 'thumbs up' sign. Then, he laughed heartily, "I will always do whatever I've promised! Nothing in this world is impossible for this Jun Mo Xie! However, you mustn't feel sorry for him when the time comes and you see him suffer! Moreover, I hope that you'll always remember what you've said today! I've taken it to heart!"

Sun Xiao Mei stood there as Jun Mo Xie's figure disappeared from there. She snorted and said, "What was that for? 'I hope that you'll always remember what you've said today!?' You've taken it to heart? Do you think I'm taking this lightly? Do you think I joke around with my feelings? This is truly laughable! I'm not a man, but I still take responsibility in my heart!"

....

Tang Yuan didn't hold his tongue while ordering people around. Orders incessantly flew out of his mouth in a smooth manner. After that, Hai Chen Feng arranged the Aristocratic Hall's manpower. Each one of them obeyed the orders, and quickly moved out. And, they used any means to travel to every nook and corner of the continent as per Tang Yuan's order.

Jun Mo Xie also heard a few words. He could hear Tang Yuan speak that the Bone Tempering Pills were directed towards the Xuan Families of the continent. After all, these Bone Tempering Pills were tailor-made for those Xuan and military families.

Tang Yuan's primary goal was quite clear.

However, the far-off Xuan Families would find it difficult to transport their gold and silver till here... But, Jun Mo Xie suddenly had an idea — [These people can bring their silver tickets to Tian Xiang City. And, they can exchange them here. Couldn't we make a profit by looting them? For example, a silver ticket worth one-thousand silver coins would only amount to eight-hundred silver coins. Hehe, this is a great business opportunity...]

Tang Yuan's work-related engagements came to an end after a long time had passed. Only Song Shang and Hai Chen Feng remained with him at this time. Jun Mo Xie stood leaning against the doorway. Tang Yuan's expression was gloomy at this moment. His eyes then moved towards Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang. And, a solemn expression spread across his face as he slowly said, "I want to make an important announcement."

Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang rolled their eyes. After all, they would get saddled with bitter work every time Tang Yuan would speak like that. And, it seemed like this time wouldn't be an exception either.

"We have to launch a decisive attack on the Huang Family of the Golden East City. We must attack them from all sides — whether it

is land or water. Use everything in our arsenal. And, even the things we don't have. Use both light and dark methods. Don't stint any costs. Ignore any collateral damage. But, we must destroy that family as quickly as we can!" Tang Yuan emphasized each word.

"Hai Chen Feng, I request you to make use of your contacts. Get in touch with the administrations of the underworld gangs inside the Golden East City. Commit any means of crimes necessary; cause commotion, threaten, kidnap, and blackmail the Golden East City's Huang Family. Kill any officials of the Golden East City who dare to assist the Huang Family! I'll deal with every consequence!"

Tang Yuan's plump face had a rarely-seen murderous look on it. He smiled and said in a cold manner, "Wait till the Huang Family is in a tight spot. And, bring them to me when that happens!"

"What is the estimated amount of funds you're expecting to spend on this?" Hai Chen Feng frowned. He asked in a worried tone, "It must be mentioned that this is an all-out attack against a reasonably powerful family. Can our Aristocratic Hall afford the expenses of getting over with it in a short period of time?"

He secretly wondered; [This guy is usually smiling like the Buddha. So, what offence did the Golden East City's Huang Family commit against Tang Yuan to force him into scheming against them like a ravenous wolf?]

[This Huang Family is truly out of luck...]

"I'm employing you along with all the resources of the Aristocratic Hall for this matter. And, I'll use the Tang Family's resources if that isn't enough! After all, I'm the future successor of the Tang Family!" an extremely cruel light flashed in Tang Yan's eyes as he replied in a low voice.

"Young Master Tang, is Young Master Jun aware of this matter?" Song Shang frowned.

"I know. And, I support this with my full strength! Everything

will be done as per Tang Yuan's orders! Tang Yuan is the main proprietor of the Aristocratic Hall! And, his orders are of the highest importance. So, you don't need to question them — you mustn't question them!" Jun Mo Xie uttered in a low voice. He had been leaning at the doorway, but hadn't uttered a word until now. Therefore, no one had noticed his presence.

Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang quickly jumped up to greet him.

"We'll do it. There's no problem if that's the case!" Hai Chen Feng became calm and walked forth. Then, he calculated everything in advance, and went through the simulations, "I have one more question to ask. Why are you doing this?"

"Why am I doing this? Why do I need to justify it?" The muscles on Tang Yuan's face twitched. He gnashed his teeth as he replied.

"You certainly don't need to give the reasons," Jun Mo Xie slowly walked in. He looked at Tang Yuan, "But... let me remind you, Fatty. We can go mad, we can act in an evil manner, and we can ignore everyone in this world! We can even look at people like they are straws. But, we mustn't lose our conscience!"

"We must make reprisals, but we can't be excessive! Someone has provoked us, and we'll certainly kill them in response! However, each crime has its perpetrator. The Huang Family hasn't educated its people well. But, the others are innocent in this matter. We're only venting your anger. And, I hope that you understand this. You said that you want to look at them when they're in their worst state. I want... you to understand! But, I won't stop you if you go and kill all nine generations of their family!"

Jun Mo Xie slowly continued, "And, that's because you are my brother! I'll even accompany you to the very depths of hell!"

Tang Yuan's face convulsed in pain. It then slowly filled with a sense of gloom as he remained silent. A long while passed before he spoke-up in a hoarse voice, "Don't worry... I only want them to know that everyone will pay the price even if one of them makes a

mistake — not that one person alone! I obviously won't mind annihilating them if they don't understand this."

Jun Mo Xie chuckled and patted his shoulder. But, he didn't speak any further.

"I'm only trying to vent my anger. In fact, you also know that I'm only trying to vent my anger. But, you're willing to give me nine-hundred-million for it? You're willing to give me everything we have?" Tang Yuan was somewhat emotionally moved.

"That's because you're my brother! So, I'm willing to accompany you on this madness! After all, can nine-hundred-million buy me a new Tang Yuan? I'll withdraw from this if they can!" Jun Mo Xie smiled.

Tang Yuan suddenly turned away and laughed. However, he somewhat choked with emotion and coughed as he did...

Song Shang and Hai Chen Feng looked at each other. Their eyes belied the fact that they were also slightly sentimental.

[Throwing away nine-hundred-million so that your brother can vent his anger and breathe a sigh of relief? What kind of brotherhood is this? How many brothers since antiquity were prepared to throw away nine-hundred-million for their brothers?]

[The Emperor? Would even he do it? Never!]

[This is nine-hundred-million! It's not nine-million, not nine-hundred or nine-thousand! Even the public treasury of a big nation like Tian Xiang doesn't earn a hundred-million in an entire year!]

[Tian Xiang's public treasury wouldn't earn this much in even ten years! And, would the Emperor spend that entire sum of money on one person... would he risk his own life for a friend...? Would he spend his entire fortune on a friend? Spending nine-hundred-million in silver? You could build a city with that much money!]

[No one has ever done this since ancient times!]

They didn't say anything. Instead, they quietly went out to arrange what the Fatty had ordered them to do. Consequently, only the two brothers remained there.

Jun Mo Xie spoke-up from behind in a faint voice as they left, "Each one of you should take a Bone Tempering Pill first. You'll feel the effects. And, I'm certain that it'll improve your abilities very considerably!"

Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang were overjoyed by this. So, they thanked in unison.

Tang Yuan finally sighed in relief when he saw the two men leave. However, it suddenly seemed that he had exhausted his strength. He sat paralyzed in his chair. And, he had covered his face with his hands...

Tang Yuan jumped up after a short period of time, and sneakily looked around. After that, he went to the doorway, and poked his head out. Then, he went to the window to close it shut. And, he took this opportunity to wipe his eyes with his sleeves. He thought that Jun Mo Xie hadn't seen it. But, Jun Mo Xie had seen that even though Tang Yuan didn't know that he had...

"What are you doing? Why are you acting like a sneaky ghost?" Jun Mo Xie looked at him. "Don't worry. Even a Spirit Xuan expert or a Great Master wouldn't be able to eavesdrop on us as long as I'm here."

"That's good!" Tang Yuan moved mysteriously. "Something seems wrong of late, Third Young Master."

"What's wrong?" Jun Mo Xie raised his eyebrows.

"There's something wrong with the Imperial Family. It can be said that something is wrong with the Emperor." Tang Yuan breathing had become somewhat hurried, "Young Master, everyone was already prepared for you the moment you left from the Southern Heaven City. In fact, they had prepared everything in

advance, and they would ambush you at the city's gates. However, you went on a killing spree upon your return. And, you slaughtered everyone who laid in ambush for you. After that, you took away the Meng Family's properties. You basically killed everyone who had launched those sharp attacks on you. Then, over thirty government officials died in a bizarre and mysterious manner. I'm certain that I would see your hand behind these events even if I use my knees to think! I would try to prosecute you, and confiscate your belongings for the huge crimes you committed. So, don't you find it strange that we haven't seen the Emperor make any move as of yet?"

"Should I find this strange?" Jun Mo Xie put his chin on his hand, and assumed the posture of a great 'thinker'.

"However, the Emperor hasn't even invited you to the Imperial Court ever since you've returned!" Tang Yuan said in a deeply worried tone, "You have to be mentally prepared for this, Third Young Master. The Jun Family is flourishing at the moment. But, you may not be able to do anything if he wants to get rid of it. After all, the strength of an entire nation isn't something an individual can compete against!"

"I'll take note of that!" Jun Mo Xie's expression became increasingly less serious.

Chapter 479: Tracking and Reverse-Tracking

"The Tang Family has always been loyal to the Imperial Family. My grandfather has always been loyally devoted to His Majesty, and my Family will surely follow his." Tang Yuan frowned. He was quite distressed. "My grandfather had fought alongside the Emperor in those days. The Emperor may decide to deal with the Jun Family. And, my grandfather... he will..." Tang Yuan clenched his teeth, "He'll stand on the Emperor's side!"

"I understand!" Jun Mo Xie patted Tang Yuan's shoulder to console him, "I won't hurt him."

"Thank you!" Tang Yuan put down the great weight on his heart.

"Oh? You've learned to thank me? Do you feel better now, you bull?" Jun Mo Xie tilted his head and looked at him.

"Hehe... we're brothers! I didn't wish to say what I said a moment ago. But, we're brothers! And, I will always stand by your side, but..." Tang Yuan's expression was very serious.

"Fatty, you're also aware that my desire is to make my family and brothers feel safe and happy, right? And, my brother's family is obviously included! But, you've sounded like an outsider by thanking me for it!" Jun Mo Xie chuckled gently as he spoke.

"You're my brother. We're brothers for life..." Tang Yuan's vexed face suddenly underwent a change. He grabbed his head in embarrassment, and spoke-up in a nervous tone, "Third Young Master... that matter needs to be settled. But, it can't be known to anyone in the family! And, Sun Xiao Mei can't learn of it either... Otherwise, I'll be so embarrassed that I'll never be able to show my face to anyone!"

"What can't be known to anyone? Are you speaking... of 'that' matter? Damn!" Jun Mo Xie jumped in surprise. Then, he started

to pace around the room, "Why didn't you say so before?! You see... I spoke of it only a moment ago. I wasn't careful, and it slipped out in front of her... Ah, that entire matter... I thought that you were husband and wife... So, it wouldn't be much... Ah, blame me for it! Blame me! I'm so stupid!"

Tang Yuan thought that he was playing a joke at first. But then, he noticed that Jun Mo Xie looked upset. In fact, it didn't seem as if Jun Mo Xie was acting. Fatty couldn't prevent his heart from slowly sinking. His plump face gradually became dark. Then, his body started to slump, and slowly slipped down. He then asked weakly with the last bit of hope, "Really?"

"Of course... It's true! I can lie to you in this matter. But look at my face!" Jun Mo Xie's face was covered with a color of regret.

There was a "Bang!" as Tang Yuan finally fell to the ground. His eyes looked lost as he cried without tears, "Finished... I'm finished..."

Jun Mo Xie said in grief, "It's too early to say that. In fact, there should still be some time. She was preparing to go the Tang Family when I last saw her..."

"Huh?" Tang Yuan's over two-hundred-and-fifty kilos of bodily meat jumped up like a carp. His facial expression made it seem as if he had learnt of his mother's demise. He looked up and screamed, "My mother! My life is horrible! Xiao Mei..." After that, he rushed out like a truck that was loaded with horsepower. A few "Banging" sounds were heard as he disappeared without a trace...

Jun Mo Xie chuckled mischievously. He gestured towards a maid to take away the tea pot. Then, he crossed his legs, and stretched his toes. He then snorted and started to tune up an old folk song, "My team of a dozen had seven or eight gunmen when I had started out..."

Then, he frowned and said, "This song has a serious problem with its lyrics! How can a dozen people have seven or eight

gunmen? Did they have women soldiers as well?"

He then suddenly heard Tang Yuan yelling in the distance, "Nothing happened! I swear by the heavens! It's nothing! Go and ask Third Young Master if you don't believe me! I only wanted to look at you... It's nothing! Don't ever let me enter the bridal room if you find out that I've lied to you! You must believe my words!"

Then, he heard an extremely furious and irritated voice, "Why won't you tell me if it's nothing? And, why shouldn't I go home? Will you die if you speak of it? What's the worse that can happen to you? Will you die if you speak of it? And Jun Mo Xie...? Call him here! No! I'll go and look for him! I'll ask him and get to the bottom of this!"

He heard a loud "Bang!" afterwards. And, this was followed by the sound of footsteps. Then, the sounds of Tang Yuan falling over echoed. These sounds were also mixed with his frightful screams of pleading, "My lady... my dear lady... please forgive me..."

"Why do you beg for forgiveness if you haven't done anything wrong?"

"I... I... I... Argh! Third Young Master! You've killed me today! You've gotten me killed! Argh... my mother!" Fatty Tang violently screamed towards the heavens.

Jun Mo Xie chuckled in a mischievous manner. [You had ruined the mood, you brat! So, I'll let your wife fix it by tidying you up!]

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie raised his head and shouted, "What did you do? Didn't you just go out to drink with some escorts? What's this fuss about? I'm very confused by this!"

Sun Xiao Mei was stumped when she heard this. She then quickly grabbed Tang Yuan's ear, "You fat pig! Didn't you say that you were accompanying the Third Young Master to the Dugu Household, you brat? You went drinking with escorts?! Hah! You're great! You're really great..."

Tang Yuan started crying to find some tears. How could he explain it? This explanation was obviously wrong. But, giving the correct explanation would be worse... Therefore, he could only scream his throat hoarse while he cried in a daze, "Dear lady... look at my belly... How could I be drinking? And, which girl would accompany me? It'd be crushing death..."

Jun Mo Xie sniggered as he spoke, "Oh... I suddenly remembered something..." Then, fled away and his body disappeared from the scene...

However, he could still hear the mixed sounds of kicking, punching, and interrogation in the background.

Jun Mo Xie felt very relaxed in his heart as he drifted out to the street with a 'whooshing' sound. However, Jun Mo Xie suddenly felt as if someone was following him. So, he sped up and took turns round many corners. Then, he initiated the Yin-Yang Escape, and disappeared without a trace.

No one else could see him. But, he was still there at the same spot as before. However, he had become invisible. Nothing strange happened for a while. So, he started to doubt his suspicions. But, that was when a flash of green light occurred, and he felt a chilling sensation over his entire body. This kind of dense and chilling feeling was similar to the one that a forest full of cold vipers would emanate. This chilling sensation travelled from his head, reached his spine, and quickly made its way to his toes...

It seemed as if a ferocious and poisonous snake had appeared.

Jun Mo Xie was extremely familiar with that feeling. He instantly recalled the time when the Cold-Blooded Great Master Lei Wu Bei had fought the Snake King Green Hunter!

The Snake King's aura had been as awe-inspiring when she had first appeared at that time.

Jun Mo Xie suddenly came to realize a lot of things in this

moment...

That green light flashed as it searched everywhere within fifty meters at a great speed. Then, it went straight into the sky. It flew to over thirty meters in the sky, and looked around with its sharp and incisive eyes. It floated down after some time had passed. Then, this individual raised their sleeves, and disappeared without a trace with another flash of green light.

Jun Mo Xie smiled amiably. It was the white-clothed girl's younger sister — Mei Qian Qian!

He had finally ascertained that Mei Qian Qian was the Tian Fa Forest's Snake King.

She was Green Hunter.

He had felt that something was wrong when he had first met the two sisters on that road. Then, they had disappeared inside the city even more mysteriously. [They're following me... What do they plan to do? What are they attempting? Are they doing something against the Jun Family?]

[A Beast King as strong as a Great Master has followed me to Tian Xiang City... Could they be aware of my secret?]

Jun Mo Xie suddenly thought of something. He let the aura from the Hong Jun Pagoda out, initiated the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune, and used his spiritual sense. It then moved to chase after its target like an invisible shadow.

That green light floated, flashed, and changed directions at least ten times. After that, she darted out like an arrow from a crossbow, and moved towards a place outside the city with a 'whooshing' sound.

The Snake King's speed was extremely fast. In fact, it seemed as if her body had turned into an image of a meteor. And, it appeared as if her green clothing would catch flames any moment.

She didn't have any misgivings even though the hours of broad

daylight were upon at this time. And, that was because she was confident that no ordinary person would be able to see her owing to her present speed. In fact, the said-individual wouldn't be able to see her face even if they were to come face-to-face with her.

They would only feel that a sudden and cool breeze had blown past them. But, they would never suspect anything else.

[I believe that even a talented Xuan expert wouldn't be able to see me unless they were at the Sky Xuan realm. In fact, even a Sky Xuan expert would have to focus their entire power in their eyes. And, they would then have to stare towards the path I'm taking with extreme attention in order to see me.]

[And, in case someone wanted to track me...]

The Snake King was confident that even the world-renowned Solitary Falcon wouldn't be able to catch up to her in a short period of time.

This lightning-fast speed was the Snake King's innate skill.

And, no ordinary human could accomplish such ultra-fast speeds.

Consequently, the Snake King had left the city within moments...

What was worth mentioning was that she had dashed past the fifteen-to-eighteen meter tall city walls with ease. It had seemed as if the city's walls were like flat ground to her.

In fact, the city walls 'were' like flat ground for the Snake King!

Moreover, the Snake King hadn't used even the slightest of her strength to achieve this flight of fleet. The speed of her flight hadn't reduced one bit, but her body had slowly started to get nearer to the ground. She eventually reached the nearest point over the ground. Then, she extended her toes, and dashed forth at an even greater speed.

A withered tree trunk swayed behind her in a gentle manner...

"Green Hunter is worthy of being the Snake King!" Jun Mo Xie

admired in secret. [A regular person wouldn't have been able to attain such high speeds. In fact, I believe that even the Solitary Falcon wouldn't be able to do it. After all, he's a human.]

It was the innate ability of one of the great Beast Kings from Tian Fa Forest.

No one could learn it.

The Snake King continued to rush out at a crazy speed. Consequently, she had travelled a dozen kilometers away from the city within a few moments time. A mountainous forest appeared in front her soon after. And, the woods grew denser and lushier as she continued onwards. However, her slender body suddenly paused. And, she abruptly stopped moving even though she had been travelling at that immense speed. She then suddenly rose up into the air like a rocket. And, it seemed as if she was ready to hunt.

She then suddenly looked back. And, her lovable, charming, and innocent-looking face got exposed in the air. Her green clothes whipped at the air, and the hem of her gown fluttered over the earth as if she was an immortal. However, she had also emanated an extremely sharp killing intention.

Her eyes were clear and cold as she looked behind her with a sharp gaze. The Snake King's imposing and earth-shattering aura rose violently. And, all the plants and trees in the vicinity of several hundreds of meters were stricken down as a result.

She had sensed that someone had been following her!

Chapter 480: Sees the Two Pretty Women Again

Jun Mo Xie's body was pushed away by that violent and fierce aura whilst in his state of invisibility. And, he fell scores of meters away like a kite which had its string cut.

He couldn't help but feel like yelling out. It was fortunate that he was invisible at the moment. Otherwise, his body would've been revealed. And, it was evident that the Snake King was an even match for the Great Masters.

The Snake King looked around for a long time, but didn't find anything strange. She couldn't help mutter in surprise, "I'm sure that someone was following me... But, why is there no one around right now? Was I imagining things? That can't be true! How can I imagine things?" Therefore, she carefully looked around again, but still didn't find anything behind her. Her body then flashed, and she quickly descended to the ground. There was no sound or movement from the undergrowth as she stealthily hid there. And, she was now intently observing the area in silence.

The look on her face was that of confidence and calm. It seemed as if she could wait there for an indefinite period of time. This meant that the person who was following her wouldn't be able to find a trace of her. Therefore, the said-individual would have no choice but to come out in order to look for her after some time had passed.

However, they'd become the target of a formidable attack from the Snake King once they came out!

Therefore, the Snake King confidently waited for her pursuer to come out.

However, no one showed-up even after she had waited for a long time. The sun had initially been right above her. But, it had slowly

started to slant towards the west by now. However, she still hadn't been able to detect anything.

"Was I genuinely mistaken?" the Snake King thought aloud in confusion; an hour of her vigil had passed by now. [My follower would've had to come out in order to examine the circumstances by now... even if they've reached the level of the strongest of the Great Masters...]

Unfortunately, the Snake King was unaware that the person she was waiting for... wasn't very far away from her!

Jun Mo Xie was the King of Assassins of his generation. He would've already died about eight-hundred times by now if he didn't have patience which far exceeded that of a normal person. Moreover, Young Master Jun could also achieve an amazingly stealth state since he could draw support from the Yin-Yang Escape. In fact, he believed that he would've been able to hide his presence with ease even if he were up against a dozen enemies.

However, the Young Master's train of thought had taken a very strange turn at this time...

He stared engrossed at the Snake King's prone figure as she lay on the ground. He couldn't help exclaim in secrecy, "That tight ass is so great! I feel that it's top quality! No. I'm certain that it's top quality... Ah, this Young Master wants to grope it. Will it feel even better than that little guy's..."

The Snake King finally decided to give up since she didn't find anything after a long while had passed. But, she was still on-guard like before, and hadn't relaxed one bit. Her body was still on the ground as she started to move backwards. She appeared like a fish as she moved through the undergrowth. Then, she turned around without any visible movement or indication. This was followed by a 'whooshing' sound as she quickly moved through the undergrowth. However, there were no visible signs of movements around the grass as her body suddenly disappeared in the dense

foliage.

In fact, it seemed that she hadn't brushed against a single yellowed leaf or withered grass even though it was early winter.

A faint smile surfaced on Jun Mo Xie's face as he calmly continued to follow her.

One could avoid being followed by people or animals if they followed strict anti-tracking methods. But, could someone avoid being tailed by a ghost? Moreover, Jun Mo Xie was using the Yin-Yang Escape at this time. Therefore, he was moving at lightning speed whilst maintaining a presence that was as faint as that of a ghost.

The Snake King didn't find any sign of her pursuer as she continued to move into the forest. She had been suspicious throughout her journey, and had changed directions several hundred times. But, she still hadn't been able to rid her heart of that subtle feeling of being followed.

And, this helplessness had brought one of the greatest of Tian Fa's Beast Kings to a state of near-crumble.

These Beast Kings had an innate ability which was able to sense that they were being tracked even though the Young Master was using such a marvelous tracking technique.

This could even be called the 'beastly instinct' by normal people. Or maybe even a 'sixth sense'...

Jun Mo Xie was using the ingenious Yin-Yang Escape. So, even a strong person wouldn't have been able to notice anything if he had been following them. For example... the Solitary Falcon would've unknowingly led Jun Mo Xie to his lair if he had been in her place.

However, the Snake King had discovered something unusual about the situation. In fact, she had sensed that someone was following her. And, that in-itself was something extremely unexpected for Jun Mo Xie.

The Snake King was eventually pushed to the edge of her patience. So, she hissed and stepped onto a tree's branch. Then, she spoke-up in a loud voice, "May I dare to ask where the strong person is following me to? What does he wish to ask for? I request that he show himself! This little girl would give consideration if you seek something!"

The empty mountains remained silent. There was no response; not even the sound of a falling droplet.

The Snake King was angry and anxious at the moment. That was because she'd reach the place where these two sisters were staying if she moved further into the forest. And, she would lose face if some capable and mysterious individual was able to trail her there. In fact, she would have to return to Tian Fa if she allowed that to happen...

After all, she would've led the enemy to her senior, but she still wouldn't know who he was...

What could this be called?

A clear voice echoed at this moment, "What happened, Green Hunter? Why are you looking so confused? Is someone following? You don't need to panic even if someone has followed you!" an extremely delicate white figure appeared as that soft voice resounded. It seemed like a fairy from the ninth heaven had descended to the human world.

The environment of the entire mountainous forest became magical the moment she appeared. In fact, every blade of grass seemed to be brimming with vitality.

Green Hunter came down from the tree as light as a feather. But, her expression was one of humiliation. She had obviously gotten rid of that hideous appearance from before. Consequently, she looked attractive even though she was standing in front of the fairy-like white-clothed woman — Mei Xue Yan. In fact, the two sisters looked even more dazzling when together. The white-

clothed Mei Xue Yan appeared to be brimming with unmatched grace and magnificence. But, Green Hunter looked more lovable and charming.

"Elder Sister, you don't know this, but I've clearly been sensing that someone has been following me. I changed directions several times, and I used every secret technique I know to find out who it is. And, I still didn't spot anyone. However, that feeling of being followed still exists in my heart. Their method was obviously very superior, but that kind of an unknown had left me very frightened. So, I had to use Elder Sister's remarkable technique because I nearly crumbled from fear. I was confident that I could slip away using your technique. But... I'm still very unsure about the result, Elder Sister. I know that you'll say that I'm being overly suspicious. After all, who in this world can possess such a remarkable technique..." the usually calm and collected Snake King looked very tired as she spoke-up with some hesitation.

"Foolish girl! Your cultivation level can be considered amongst the best in the world. So, you shouldn't be so hesitant and indecisive under such circumstances!"

The white-clothed girl smiled and continued, "You think someone's following you. So, that must be the case! After all, this intuition is an innate skill of us Xuan Beasts! And, there's no question about it! It may be assumed that your pursuer has a superior technique. Humans have a very reasonable saying for this, 'You may be at the top of the world. But, there's always someone above you'. You're confident that someone has followed your trail even though you've used my anti-tracking techniques. But, can't someone in this world surpass me?"

"Elder Sister means to say that... such a powerful expert exists in this world?! And, he may even be superior to you?" A light flashed in Green Hunter's eyes, and her expression became sharp and eager.

The white-clad girl smiled gently and replied, "I don't know

whether he's stronger than me or not. After all, he could possibly be an expert who has specialized in the art of tracking. But, we should keep going. It doesn't matter why this person is following you. But, they must have their goal since they're doing this. However, they haven't shown themselves throughout the journey. And, it may be assumed that he may not expose himself anytime soon either. So, let's ignore him for the time being. And, I'm certain that he will jump out on his own accord when the time is right. Tell me, what did you learn from this trip..."

The white-clothed girl had smiled as if nothing bothered her heart as she had spoken this. Then, she turned around in a fluid motion, and pulled Green Hunter's arm. It appeared as if two young girls were playing and strolling in the forest. They then walked a few steps, and sat down under a tree.

Young Master Jun had been in hiding this entire time. However, he couldn't help but whine in the secrecy of his heart.

He had been around fourteen to fifteen meters away from the Snake King. But, he didn't know why his heart was suddenly feeling a large and formidable pressure. In fact, he felt that he wouldn't be able to withstand this pressure even if he were to make successive breakthroughs. Moreover, he felt as if he would land himself in greater dangers if he forced himself to stay there. His heart had been repressed very tightly at this moment.

Jun Mo Xie had never doubted his intuition. After all, this intuition had faithfully saved him uncountable times in the past. So, he stuck himself into a tree the moment he felt that feeling rise within his heart.

[Yin-Yang Escape — escaping into a tree!]

He had entered into that tree the very moment the white-clothed girl had appeared in front of Green Hunter...

And, it couldn't be said whether this had happened by accident or not... But, Mei Xue Yan and Green Hunter had sat down at the

roots of the very tree he had possessed.

[This is very good!]

The Young Master Jun Mo Xie didn't dare to move.

He didn't dare to move recklessly even if he was still using the Yin-Yang Escape. After all, there would be a small fluctuation in his aura if he moved. The fluctuation would be very minute. But, those two women weren't to be trifled with. And, they would surely sense it at such close a distance. Then, they would start looking for him. He could certainly switch modes and become hollow if he wanted. However, he would need a small amount of time and space in to do it. But, he didn't have this luxury as things stood at this time...

Moreover, Jun Mo Xie wasn't certain whether the white-clad girl had drawn the Snake King to sit at that tree on purpose. However, he absolutely couldn't dare to move since there was a chance that she might have done so intentionally...

Fortunately, Young Master Jun's previous life's reputation as the 'King of Assassins' wasn't undeserved. Moreover, he was already in hiding. And, doing so for three to five hours... or even three to five days wasn't a problem. After all, this master assassin was habitual to lying in wait by himself for long periods of time...

The eyes of the white-clad girl were filled with a deep sense of wonder over the Snake King's perception. She was certain that the Snake King hadn't been mistaken in what she had sensed. After all, the Green Hunter possessed an insanely high cultivation. Moreover, she also had the innate instinct of a Beast King. Therefore, the notion of her being 'overly and unnecessarily' suspicious was next to being a big joke.

[It must be true if she has felt something!]

[There's no other reasonable explanation!]

So, she determined that someone was following Green Hunter.

But, what surprised her was the fact that even she couldn't be sure if such a person genuinely existed. Moreover, that she couldn't even discover where the pursuer was hiding...

Therefore, she had suggested taking a moment of rest.

Chapter 481: Mei Xue Yan's Reaction

The decision to sit under that tree had only been Mei Xue Yan's intuition. There was no specific reason for it; it was merely her Xuan Beast instinct. She had felt that there was something wrong with that place... that there was something strange about it. But, she couldn't explain what was wrong and strange about it.

"I feel that the brat is becoming increasingly mysterious," Green Hunter was with her trusted elder sister now. So, she had let go of her suspicions for the time being. She felt an incomparable sense of security because she was in her elder sister's company. Therefore, it didn't matter to her who she was being followed by as long she was with her elder sister. In fact, she wouldn't feel any fear even if it were the Emperor of the Heavens; she would still remain fearless and unafraid!

"Mysterious? Why do you say that?" The expression on Mei Xue Yan's face didn't change one bit. She had merely frowned slightly.

"That's right. I heard that he had gone into a mad frenzy after we had left at the city's gates. He had used extremely cruel and bloody methods to stop those rumors. Then, he openly and blatantly sent his guards to one of Tian Xiang's major families on the same afternoon — the Meng Family. And, his men plundered and seized everything the Meng Family owned. Then, he killed the leaders of this entire episode even though they happened to be two of the most respected scholars of Tian Xiang. He also killed over thirty other officials that same night! But, Tian Xiang's Imperial Family didn't do anything about it. He then went to the Dugu Family the next day in order to discuss marriage..."

"Discuss marriage?" Green Hunter hadn't even finished speaking when she was interrupted by Mei Xue Yan, "Discuss marriage? Whose marriage did he wish to discuss with the Dugu Family?" Mei Xue Yan's expression had become as cold as ice when she had spoken those words.

"Whose marriage...? He obviously went to the Dugu Family to discuss the marriage between Dugu Xiao Yi and him..." The Snake King stared stunned at her elder sister.

"Oh... I thought it was about Jun Mo Xie's marriage to Guan Qing Han. I was a bit shocked since I thought why he would go to the Dugu Family regarding that marriage... Your speech was very unclear, girl. Why didn't you explain that earlier?" Mei Xue Yan rebuked as she looked at her.

The Snake King's brain short-circuited for a moment. [Why would he go to the Dugu Family to discuss his marriage with Guan Qing Han? Wouldn't that be ridiculous? How could Elder Sister think that? Is it too hard to think of this?]

"What happened then? You've already given away the climax. So, there must be something interesting behind it, right?" Mei Xue Yan asked dimly.

"The men got drunk. And, a brother of Jun Mo Xie — Tang Yuan — was schemed against. In fact, he was pushed into a latrine pit... Elder Sister, you don't know... That Tang Yuan is super fat. I looked at him... He must be at least two-hundred-and-fifty kilos... However, Jun Mo Xie had a flare up at the Dugu Family because of this matter. And, he didn't even care for his relationship with the Dugu Family since he forced his future-in-laws to kill their relative in order to take revenge for his brother."

"...he didn't care for his relationship..." Mei Xue Yan was leisurely gazing at the transient clouds. She then said indifferently, "It seems they're done talking about that marriage..."

The Snake King was again left astonished. [We've mainly come here for Jun Mo Xie's master. The refined pills from the Sacred Fruit are also on the roster. But, why is Elder Sister concerned about the issue of Jun Mo Xie's marriage?]

"It's a pity that your little sister hasn't found any tracks of Jun Mo Xie's mysterious master. I thought that Jun Mo Xie was bound

to request his master when facing those huge disturbances. But, I had never expected that this brat would deal with it on his own, and would genuinely end-up resolving everything..."

Green Hunter frowned, "Jun Mo Xie certainly handled everything in a very unscrupulous and lawless manner. But, it made me feel that he has an extremely powerful backer. And, this backer is someone whom no one can mess with. Moreover, it seems that he'll appear anytime and anywhere this brat needs him to.

"Therefore, I believe that Jun Mo Xie's backer is hiding inside the Jun Family's residence," the Snake King came to a resolute conclusion and continued, "Therefore, I had decided to follow Jun Mo Xie, but that brat is very skilled. I had barely started following him from the Aristocratic Hall, but he sensed that I was following him. In fact, I lost his trail after two or three turns..."

The Snake King's face became red, "But, I had been gone for a long time. So, I decided to return. However, I had barely covered half the way when I started to sense that I was being followed. And, that feeling got more intense the moment I was flying over city walls!

"The person who was following me was extremely strong. But, I didn't feel that he harbored any malice towards me. In fact, I could sense that aspect very clearly..." the Snake King lowered her brows as she spoke this.

She had finished speaking a long while ago, but there hadn't been any response from her elder sister. So, she couldn't help but feel weird. She then looked at her side, and saw that her elder sister's face was dull. But, a complex luster was flashing in her eyes nonetheless. Mei Xue Yan's gaze was fixated on the ground at this time. In fact, it seemed as if she hadn't even heard her speak.

The Snake King felt startled by this, and followed her elder sister's gaze. But, she didn't find anything strange. So, she couldn't

help but find that even stranger. [What are you thinking, Elder Sister? Why are you acting so strange?]

"Green Hunter... Let's talk frankly for a second — what would happen if we were to injure or kill Jun Mo Xie?" Mei Xue Yan was looking to the front; it seemed as if she was talking to thin air.

"Injure him? Kill him?" The Snake King Green Hunter jumped scared. "We can't do that, Elder Sister...! Didn't I tell you that our Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit is in the hands of that brat's master? We'll have no hope for ourselves if he decides to keep the fruit in case something happens to Jun Mo Xie. Moreover, his master possesses extremely great strength! Our Tian Fa forest is anyway going to face those Three Holy Lands. So, we can't afford to have another powerful enemy!"

"You're right. Our Tian Fa can't afford to have too many powerful enemies in these troubled times. But, we still need to put pressure on Jun Mo Xie. And, that pressure should be enough to threaten the safety of his life. After all, he'll have to ask his master to come out if that happens... Isn't this what you also want? Jun Mo Xie's master will never appear if he's able to settle every matter by himself!" Mei Xue Yan replied slowly.

Mei Xue Yan's words undoubtedly made sense. In fact, the method she had proposed was the most effective means they could use under these circumstances. But, the Snake King still felt extremely baffled by this proposal. [Elder Sister acts strange whenever Jun Mo Xie's name is mentioned. She wants to injure him if she's not already talking about killing him! And, now she wants to exert huge pressure on him! Has that brat somehow managed to offend her ...?]

Green Hunter had even felt her elder sister's heart stir with anger when she had mentioned Jun Mo Xie. She had sensed that Mei Xue Yan's mood had become chaotic. But, the latter had forcefully suppressed it.

Moreover, all the plans to torment Jun Mo Xie while they were travelling from Tian Fa had come from Mei Xue Yan...

[What's all this about?]

"Okay... Elder Sister... what sort of pressure should we put on him? It must be moderate in my opinion. It won't have any effect if it's too little, and it may have side-effects if it's too much. After all, we're looking for that mysterious and skilled person at the end of the day," the Snake King asked with caution.

"I've determined one thing for sure! Jun Mo Xie will invite a lot of people in a few days if my estimation is correct. He's going to hold a huge banquet. Then, the Imperial officers will make an announcement to the entire world. They'll declare that Jun Wu Yi has taken Guan Qing Han as an adopted daughter — that'll be an opportunity for us. Moreover, that Dugu Xiao Yi had appeared in front of the city's gates with that big belly. So, the Jun and the Dugu Family wouldn't want to delay the matter of their marriage. And, they'll undoubtedly hold a large ceremony once these two are related by marriage. In fact, they'll at least get engaged very soon even if they don't get married right away — that's also... an... opportunity for us..."

Mei Xue Yan's beautiful eyes were usually filled with the arrogance of a hegemon. However, a cold light flashed in them as she said, "Isn't he being allowed to embrace two great beauties with a relaxed mind? Isn't he enjoying his great luck with beautiful women whilst his heart is at ease? Aren't things becoming too easy for him? How can something like this be allowed to happen in this world?! That dirty brat doesn't deserve this!"

The Snake King felt that this was extremely preposterous. She thought; [What is this? We had originally come here to draw support from Jun Mo Xie's master! Our aim wasn't to set ourselves against the master-and-disciple in hatred! But, Elder Sister's proposal is directed against Jun Mo Xie's women! Does she intend to embarrass him? Is this how she wants to put pressure on him?

But, doesn't this look like a bit of jealousy...]

However, she absolutely wouldn't say it. She'd never dare to do it...

She couldn't have imagined that Mei Xue Yan was thinking... [You filthy brat! Our account from Tian Fa still hasn't been settled... And you're already taking a wife? You seem very pleased with yourself! Humph! Wait and see how I torture you!]

"You go and prepare our meal. I'll sit here for a while," Mei Xue Yan spoke calmly as she looked up at the sky.

The Snake King stood up. She hesitated a bit as she thought of something. But, she didn't say anything. She eventually flew away like a gust of wind.

However, she didn't even remotely feel that she was being followed at this time.

The gentle mountain breeze continued to brush against Mei Xue Yan for a long time. She then suddenly muttered in a calm manner, "You've been here for a long time. You've also heard our conversation. And, I think that's enough. So, you should come out now."

She had still been looking at the sky in a calm manner while she had spoken this. In fact, even her posture hadn't undergone the slightest of changes.

Jun Mo Xie snorted coldly. [This Young Master is using the Yin-Yang Escape right now. So, he can walk uninhibited since no one can see through it. And, neither can you! You think I'll come out just because you told me to? Who do you think you are to believe that you can spot me? I only require one second of free time when you leave this tree trunk... I'll trick you by quickly escaping into the Hong Jun Pagoda when that time comes! Just you wait and watch!]

Jun Mo Xie had previously taken Mei Xue Yan to be a delicate

and timid woman. However, he had now realized that she was an outstanding Xuan expert with a cultivation that was much stronger than the Snake King's. This Mei Xue Yan was the only one who could be compared to the Tian Fa Forest's Venerable Mei when it came to the aspect of strength. In fact, their strengths might not have differed by much.

[The Tian Fa Forest has another person with such a terrifying character! I must reassess Tian Fa Forest's strength because of this!]

However, Jun Mo Xie was confident that she wouldn't be able to find him since he was using the Yin-Yang Escape. Therefore, he wasn't worried.

Chapter 482: Threatened You; So What?

Mei Xue Yan waited for a while, but saw no sign of movement. So, she sneered and waved her hand. A strong wind silently blew out as a result. There were many tall and thick trees in the vicinity. In fact, they were so thick that it would require several people to fully encircle their girth. However, they started to tremble with a 'whooshing' sound under the wave of her palm. Then, they started to crumble in silence...

It started with the roots. And then, the trunk started to follow... The bottom of the trees started to transform into a pile of powder. In fact, the upper body of the trees continued to sink and turn into fine powder until the huge treetop had also been brought down.

Eight lofty trees of that dense mountainous forest vanished within a moment. And, they had been replaced by eight piles of fine powder; they appeared like grey piles of ash. Each one of them was conical in shape. Each was around three meters in height. No sound had been issued from them during the process of transformation.

It seemed like those eight trees had never existed in that mountainous forest. Moreover, it seemed that these eight piles of powder had remained there since antiquity...

Jun Mo Xie sucked cold air. [What technique is this? She merely waved her hand in order to bring about such a huge transformation! This Mei Xue Yan is terrifyingly strong!]

Mei Xue Yan's white dress fluttered lightly at its edges as she insipidly said, "Jun Mo Xie, you still don't intend on coming out? Did you see that? Who in your Jun Family can match the power I possess? I'll count to three. I'll fly to Tian Xiang City if you don't appear after that. And, I'll kill Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi! I know you had once said that you don't like taking threats. But, I'm threatening you right now! Your mysterious master may be my

equal. But, do you think that he'll be able to protect your Jun Family his entire life! Can he protect everyone from me?"

Her eyes were apathetic as she looked up to the sky. Her red lips moved slightly as she said in a faint manner, "One!"

Jun Mo Xie was still hiding in the tree. However, his mind was in a state of utter shock at the moment. [How did she know that I'm the one who's hiding here? And, how is she so confident about it?] Jun Mo Xie had genuinely felt very nervous when he had heard her call out his name.

Mei Xue Yan had spoken the truth. She was skilled enough to kill anyone she wanted dead. In fact, even the Eight Great Masters wouldn't be able to stop her!

He hesitated — only to listen-on as Mei Xue Yan continued in a faint tone, "Two!"

She slightly raised her beautiful face, but remained gazing at the sky. She looked like an innocent young girl who was trying to count the stars. But, the murderous intentions that were being exuded from her body were nothing short of being exceptionally resolute.

"It seems like you don't plan on coming out," Mei Xue Yan sighed, "That's also good! I'll go and kill Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi! I hope there's still some time for you to stop it. Ah, you can stop this! Hurry up and go to your master for help! And, I hope he makes it in time!" she stood up after she had spoken this. Her face filled with killing intention, and the temperature of her surroundings suffered a dramatic drop. Her body then flashed, and transformed into a white line in the sky. She had already crossed over sixty meters in one second!

She was headed towards Tian Xiang City!

Then suddenly...

"Stop!" Jun Mo Xie shouted from behind her. Mei Xue Yan

stopped, and slowly turned around. She then saw that a youngster was standing tall and straight where she had been sitting a moment ago. He was looking at her; his gaze was cold and sharp.

"As expected... it's you! It is you!" Mei Xue Yan's lips curled into an ice-cold smile. She gently tucked her hair behind her ears as she softly floated down. She then walked back in a slow and leisurely manner.

"How were you certain that it was me? I'm sure that my master's technique doesn't have any flaws. No one can see through it!" Jun Mo Xie didn't intend to hide matters since he had already shown himself. So, he sat down where Mei Xue Yan was previously seated. He then grinned, "Its still warm here... my ass feels very comfortable. Truly very comfortable..."

Mei Xue Yan became cold. Her expression was fierce as she glared wide-eyed. But, the depths of her eyes were brimming with traces of embarrassment as she lightly spoke, "You told me that yourself."

"I told you myself?" Jun Mo Xie was baffled by this.

"Your secret technique is precisely as exceptional as you say it is. Perhaps there's no one in this age and world who can see through it. But, the uniqueness of that technique is a give-away... I had observed your moves when you were fighting Xiao Bu Yu. Everyone knows that your moves are exceptional and ever-changing. In fact, they can't even determine where you are. You're suddenly at the left... or at the right... or at the front or at the back. But, I noticed that your techniques have already transcended the basic laws of the mortal body. That's because your corporeal body would go into some exceptional form every time you vanished. So, it would seem like you had disappeared! And, you weren't merely hiding either. Nor were you concealing yourself at a great speed! I'm sure about this much!"

She smiled faintly, "I can't track the Snake King even if I use my entire strength. That's because her innate skill comes from the

heavens. No one can ever track her. However, someone was able to follow without revealing themselves. I believe that only your master's disciples are capable of achieving this with the help of the techniques that he had passed on; no one else can do this.

"The Snake King said that she had sensed someone following her. And, she wasn't able to find who it was. However, that was enough to ascertain that you were this mystery pursuer! After all, your master wouldn't be bored-enough to do something like this!" Mei Xue Yan looked at Jun Mo Xie in a calm manner, "And, it turn out that my guess was correct!"

"Why did you threaten me if you had guessed that it was me? Do you know what you said has already crossed that 'bottom line' for me! You must know that every individual who has crossed that bottom line has paid a terrible price for their mistake! And, nobody is an exception to that!" Jun Mo Xie was feeling very gloomy. So, he spoke in a bad mood as well.

"That wasn't a threat. My words were very likely to come true! That's because I would've killed those two if you hadn't appeared," Mei Xue Yan continued, "I wasn't joking with you! I don't need to use threats when it comes to killing! Killing isn't a big deal for me!"

"Are you forcing me?" Jun Mo Xie's expression became extremely sharp as he gave a grim look to Mei Xue Yan. He then spoke, "Are you forcing me to oppose you? Do you think you can trifle with me?"

Mei Xue Yan laughed loudly at first. Then, she looked at Jun Mo Xie in an arrogant manner as her sleeves floated like a cloud. Her expression was one of disdain, "You? Oppose me? I don't understand where you get such confidence from? Did you get it from your imaginary master?"

Jun Mo Xie's expression was of a man who had seen a beautiful Empress, but still wasn't interested in her. He spoke slowly and coldly; he didn't hold back, "A real man will only use his own

strength. He won't rely on anyone else's. But, Mei Xue Yan... do you think that I won't be able to kill you because you're a woman of considerable martial skill and unmatched magnificence? Or do you think that I won't kill a woman?"

"Is that so?" Mei Xue Yan tilted her head slightly. Her snow-white cheeks seemed translucent in the sunlight. One look at her would leave any man to believe that he was having an unreal dream.

"Men and women are nothing more than husks of skin to me. You look very pretty right now. But, you'll become a mere pile of bones after your death! And, this Young Master has no interest in a pile of bones!"

Jun Mo Xie's body emitted a demonic aura. His glare slowly became like a sharp sword or a keen knife... He was looking at Mei Xue Yan with a gaze that reeked of viciousness. Then, he spoke in an unhurried manner, "Woman, it doesn't matter who you are... or what kind of robust strength you possess. You must remember one thing — you must never cross my bottom line! Otherwise... you'll regret it! You'll have to pay a price you can't afford! In fact, you won't even be able to imagine it!"

"Are you threatening me now?" Mei Xue Yan looked up. She didn't have any expressions of anger on her face as she asked in a faint voice. In fact, she even found this slightly funny. After all, Jun Mo Xie's strength was like that of an ant in front of her. But, he had still dared to threaten her!

"Threatening you? I don't think I was threatening you. My words were very likely to come true! Anyway, so what if I've threatened you?" Jun Mo Xie sneered, "What will you do about it? Or, are you like me now that you can't tolerate threats?"

Jun Mo Xie had landed this counter-attack without batting an eye.

It was the same threat. Mei Xue Yan had threatened Jun Mo Xie, and that had made him angry. So, Jun Mo Xie threatened her in

return. But, that left Mei Xue Yan to feel very humiliated.

After all, the massive disparity in their identities didn't allow her to be threatened by someone like Jun Mo Xie.

Jun Mo Xie's voice had barely faded when he saw the snow-white image flash in front of him. Her palm swept with a 'whoosh' as it came towards him; it was aimed at his cheek. The air also echoed with a "whoosh" sound...

It couldn't be avoided. He had never expected that Mei Xue Yan would possess such great speeds. Jun Mo Xie's expression suddenly became cold. But, he didn't try to dodge. Instead, he merely struck back with his hand. He was up against the most beautiful woman in the world. However, he had shown her no mercy!

"Hah!"

Mei Xue Yan looked upwards as Jun Mo Xie's palm brushed past her cheek. However, Jun Mo Xie was also able to avoid her strike as a result. The two of them had moved in a similar manner. Both of them had moved their legs backwards...

Mei Xue Yan's leg moved like lightning as it kicked Jun Mo Xie's knee.

Jun Mo Xie's right leg moved similarly as he aimed a kick at Mei Xue Yan's dantian.

Mei Xue Yan's hand circled above at the same time. Her fingers then curled into hooks as she grabbed at Jun Mo Xie's eye.

Jun Mo Xie's fingers also turned into an eagle's claw as he grabbed his target; but, his target was Mei Xue Yan's throat!

Those two experts had started fighting to vent the anger they had been accumulating inside. They were tangled together, and neither was willing to give in.

Jun Mo Xie didn't have a choice. After all, he knew that his strength as well as the level of his Xuan Qi was far inferior to that

mysterious woman's.

Therefore, he could only resort to using such a method.

However, Mei Xue Yan unexpectedly realized that she was coming up short. And, that made her ponder. [A woman would always be at a disadvantage in a close-fisted fight.]

"Bang!"

The two fighters flew back at the same time. Jun Mo Xie staggered back a step, and stood still. But, Mei Xue Yan's beautiful face had turned pale in anger, "You're a very ruthless man at heart, Jun Mo Xie!"

Chapter 483: Fights Mei Xue Yan!

These two had launched attacks on each other a moment ago. Mei Xue Yan's attacks had been very fierce. But, they weren't fatal for Jun Mo Xie in any way. Those attacks would've at most crippled him even if they had struck their target. Moreover, her attacks had provided for a lot of leeway. However, each one of Jun Mo Xie's attacks had been fatal!

The hunter had become the hunted in a split second. Mei Xue Yan had already been brought to the gates of hell twice. In fact, she had been forced to activate her Xuan Qi since she was left stunned by the sharpness of Jun Mo Xie's attacks.

[I had never expected that this seemingly angle-like handsome youngster would unleash fatal attacks on me even though my strikes weren't intended to kill him!]

"We're on the same boat! But, you won't get another opportunity!" Jun Mo Xie smiled faintly and coughed. He had made a mistake a moment ago. But, this thrilling exchange had left him fearful in his heart. After all, he had just faced three or four instances where he could've been crippled.

[I would've been doomed to lay here forever if I had shown any leniency towards her. She would've crippled my legs, and blinded my eyes. I would've had to live the rest of my life in darkness!]

[This beautiful woman is very dangerous!]

"I'm not going to let you off either! But, let's not use our Xuan Qi. Let's have a fair fight to see who emerges the victor!" Mei Xue Yan snorted and stretched her body. She had been renowned for her dexterity even before she had become a Beast King. In fact, her speed and dexterity was the one and only of its kind even amongst the millions of Xuan Beast in the forest.

However, she had found herself at a disadvantage when she had

exchanged blows with that brat. In fact, she had been forced to use her powerful Xuan Qi to shake him off. This was unimaginable for her. And, it was also extremely humiliating...

[I must redeem my honor!]

[There's no turning back on this!]

This was no longer a battle of anger; it was one of honor now!

Jun Mo Xie wasn't even remotely timid in front of his extremely powerful enemy. He lightly chuckled as the expression in his eyes became ice-cold. He was as calm as the snow, and as silent as the glaciers. But, Jun Mo Xie moved into action the instant Mei Xue Yan's body showed the slightest trace of movement.

The Young Master's long and jet-black hair suddenly spread out behind him as he charged forward with vigor. This gave rise to a 'crackling' sound. But, this sound hadn't even gotten the time to subside, and the two opposing figures had already become entangled.

The two individuals had become entangled so closely that they seemed inseparable. Their figures seemed to form one white image. 'Pop''Pop' sounds echoed everywhere. And, no one could tell how many strikes each of these two individuals had produced within this split second.

This kind of close quarter hand-to-hand fight is dictated by a person's reflexes and agility. However, the fight between these two couldn't be considered one of life and death anymore. Instead, this hand-to-hand combat was only a means for these two individuals to vent their anger at each other.

Mei Xue Yan was gloomy; very gloomy. She was so gloomy because Jun Mo Xie had dared to threaten her. Moreover, he was merely an insignificant human who hadn't even reached the Spirit Xuan Realm. She didn't care much about the threat itself. The thing was that Jun Mo Xie had nothing to rely on... apart from

those pills from the Sacred Fruit. He obviously hadn't told her this, but she knew it nonetheless.

Therefore, Mei Xue Yan felt that she had suffered a loss. Moreover, that loss couldn't be absorbed. And, this had only made her more sullen...

But, it didn't matter how gloomy she felt about it. After all, she'd be compelled to submit to that threat since she didn't have a choice.

And, how could Jun Mo Xie not feel gloomy? He was equally gloomy. In fact, he was feeling extremely gloomy. Jun Mo Xie was accustomed to being at an advantage. He was used to having the upper hand over others. He had fiddled with the Great Masters even when his strength had been feeble in the past. He had the Beast Kings of Tian Fa in the palm of his hands. How could someone so outstanding accept someone else's threats?

However, he had no choice but to come out after Mei Xue Yan had issued that threat. He couldn't ignore that threat; he couldn't refuse to care about it. And, that was because this threat had been issued against two of his closest relatives. He had only known those two relatives in both of his lives. These were the two people he cared the most about. The Young Master couldn't replace those two...

Consequently, he felt that he had suffered a loss. So, he was extremely and equally sullen.

But, it didn't matter how gloomy he felt about it. After all, he'd be compelled to submit to that threat since he didn't have a choice.

The mood of these two entangled fighters was quite similar despite the difference in their reasons. And, both of them were trying their best to beat the other, and neither was willing to accept defeat. In fact, they were ready to get beat up, but they weren't prepared to give up on beating up the other person.

Any other pair would've smiled and called it quits by now. However, these two were going toe-for-toe, and weren't willing to accept defeat. Both of them had suffered hidden losses even though they were evenly matched. But, both of them still believed that they could win.

However, they were still using their strikes to venerate each other in a way when it came to it. After all, they wanted to see who would fall first, and who would laugh in the end.

Moreover, these two were bound to have a cooperative relationship because of the Sacred Fruit of Tian Fa, and because of Tian Fa's matter with the Holy Lands. But, the outcome of this battle would decide the relative positions of these two people. And, it would also decide how much weight their words would carry.

Therefore, the two of them were employing their unique skills to the pinnacle in this hand-to-hand fight.

Jun Mo Xie had a custom that he would always put his entire effort; it didn't matter how weak the enemy was. He always wanted his first move to be such that he wouldn't need to make a second one — the same way a lion puts his full strength behind every pounce whenever he attacks a rabbit. After all, the ability to kill the enemy was the best way to protect oneself. He had always practiced that golden rule. In fact, this was the greatest experience of the King of Assassins.

However, Mei Xue Yan was being very tactful. And, her tact was allowing her to repel Jun Mo Xie's attacks. Then, she'd move to counterattack. In fact, Mei Xue Yan would even manage to counterattack in-between strikes if Jun Mo Xie attacked with a closely-linked series of maneuvers. Consequently, their fight continued to become increasingly intense...

The speed of these two figures became increasingly fast as the fight dragged on. It was like two tornadoes were winding together. In fact, it was unclear as to who was who. The Snake King had

stealthily returned to the vicinity by now. However, this scene had left her stunned.

[There are many kinds of Xuan Beasts in Tian Fa Forest. In fact, it's full of strange things. But, no one has ever been able to match Elder Sister's agility! Even the renowned Long Crane and I won't be able match Elder Sister's moves despite teaming up against her! And, this brat is only a mere human! But, he's somehow a match for Elder Sister! In fact, some of his attacks are even pushing her back! How can this be possible?]

[He... what is he?]

Mei Xue Yan was becoming increasingly gloomy. But, this gloom was different from the one she had felt some time ago. And, that was because this one had sourced from the threat of Jun Mo Xie's skill-set. [This brat is very fierce! Every move and every stance of this brat is fatal. Moreover, his attacks never land at the place he initially makes it seem like they would! It doesn't matter how well I dodge. And, it doesn't matter how sharp my counterattacks get... this brat always figures the spot that's most vulnerable to a fierce counterattack in advance!]

However, the fact that had left her speechless was that he didn't care that his opponent was a woman; and, that too an extremely beautiful woman! Moreover, he was entirety indifferent to whether the areas targeted by his attack were taboo or not. He didn't care whether he attacked her guts, chest, abdomen, eyes, or throat. Instead, he was prepared to attack every place which would leave his opponent to worry...

His moves were fierce and crafty. He would attack important joints of the body in case he wasn't trying to land a fatal blow. Mei Xue Yan knew that even a Great Master would feel extreme pain if they weren't careful and were struck by his moves in return.

[Even I won't be an exception!]

[How can he be this skilled?] Mei Xue Yan had realized one thing

while fighting Jun Mo Xie — each of his moves had only one purpose. And, that purpose was to kill — to kill his enemy.

Humans may have never liked the Xuan Beasts. However, such a degree of fierceness was still very rare.

But, Jun Mo Xie was displaying it right now!

Mei Xue Yan was confident that her innate agility was much greater than that of Jun Mo Xie's when it came to the subject of raw skills. But, Jun Mo Xie's fighting style had been vicious from the start. And, he had also been using mean tricks in addition to his viciousness. Therefore, it was becoming somewhat difficult for her.

That was because he could attack her while defending his vital points. It was like he was a hedgehog; she couldn't pick a spot to strike him at. His attack and defense fit-in very seamlessly. In fact, it seemed as if he could see where the openings in his defense would arise when he would launch an attack. So, he would correct them in advance. In fact, he would secure those spots before he'd even make a move. Therefore, that 'opening' would turn into a trap if Mei Xue Yan were to attack it. In fact, it would turn into a fatal trap for her!

It was a terrifying tactic — a perfect move!

Mei Xue Yan had faced against innumerable enemies over the course of her lifetime. But, she had never seen such a fierce person. He was very clear about his advantages, and even clearer about his weaknesses. And, he would attack even more sharply whenever he noticed an opening in the enemy's defense...

[This guy is a monster!]

[I could hit him twice. But, I would fail to hit any of his crucial parts... Well, I at least wouldn't be able to strike the parts that would cause him any serious damage. However, he would easily be able to strike me during the time I'd strike him twice. And, his

strikes would certainly leave me in a very uncomfortable position afterwards...]

[He would pay no attention if I were to strike him twice. He could endure it. But, his return-attacks would be fatal for me! In fact, the most useless of his attacks would render me incapable of fighting back!]

[I could obviously crush his entire body if I were to even strike his toes in case I was using my proper strength. In fact, it wouldn't matter even if he were to use his full strength to defend. But, I had said that we shouldn't use our Xuan Qi in this fight when we had started. Don't tell me that someone of my status would have to go back on my word against this brat?]

Mei Xue Yan didn't know that this was very unpleasant for Young Master Jun as well.

Jun Mo Xie was whining inside. [This woman is too much. And, I don't mean that for her body alone. She's tough — mentally and physically. Her agility skills are also formidable. It's like she's a fish that has been dipped in oil; she's so slippery that she doesn't stay in my hands. So, how am I going to hit her?]

Suddenly, a divine flash appeared in Jun Mo Xie's mind in the midst of fighting. He then withdrew and shouted, "You were the one who was scheming against me throughout the journey from the Southern Heaven City?"

Mei Xue Yan's cold and beautiful face didn't undergo any change of expressions. In fact, she charged-in like a whirlwind when he retreated. She then showered him with nineteen fists, thirty-four palms, thirteen elbow strikes, and thirty kicks. She even jeered as she unleashed those attacks, "You're realizing that now...? You're indeed very slow of thought! Did you like the taste I gave you during the trip? Was it memorable?"

Jun Mo Xie's expression became calm as a dark light flashed in his eyes.

Chapter 484: Takes Advantage and Suffers Losses

That return journey from Southern Heaven City was the most humiliating experience of both his lives. The name Evil Monarch had always stirred fear in the hearts of everyone in his previous life. Consequently, no one had dared to mess with him like this...

And, no one had dared in this world either.

Those sullen situations and humiliations had forced Jun Mo Xie to sneak into the Hong Jun Pagoda from time-to-time. In fact, he had been forced to train in hiding. His strength had increased by a huge degree because of that. But, Jun Mo Xie still felt that he had been forced into doing that!

After all, that wasn't of his own initiative.

Therefore, Jun Mo Xie had wanted to get back at his perpetrators, but he had never figured out the identity of the people who were messing with him. However, he had already identified the Snake King Green Hunter. And then, he had seen Mei Xue Yan. Moreover, he had also assessed Mei Xue Yan's frightening strength over the course of this close-quarter combat. Then, Mei Xue Yan had admitted to those mischiefs. Consequently, he had finally determined that this cold woman had been behind everything.

Jun Mo Xie gave a long roar. He ignored Mei Xue Yan's charge. He pivoted, soared high, and flipped backwards to retreat. But, he then began to change directions in a mysterious manner in order to dodge her attacks. He changed his direction about five or six times, and came close to Mei Xue Yan amidst her attacks. However, his body suddenly dropped...

[Okay girl, let me teach you a lesson if that's the case! Let me also make you experience the feeling of being played with. Let's see if

you enjoy it; let's see if this turns out to be a fond memory for you!]

[Your Xuan strength is much superior to mine. But, you've set the condition of not using Xuan strength in your arrogance!]

[We've got quite the rivalry between us. And, setting this condition was as good as asking for a thrashing. You must know that I'm a proud and merciless man. I won't show any leniency even if you're a girl. I'm going to destroy you!]

Mei Xue Yan suddenly felt that the fight's intensity had increased. In fact, this massive increase in pressure had begun to suffocate her to some extent. Jun Mo Xie's body had somewhat fallen. However, he still launched an attack from this position, and let his right foot lose. His right foot was aimed at her throat, but his left foot had also been sent to attack. Moreover, his left foot was aimed at the lower female parts of her body.

"That's shameless! You're despicable!" Mei Xue Yan's face became cold as her body leaned forward. Her right hand moved like lightning in order to chop at Jun Mo Xie's left leg. But, she realized that she was chopping at empty air. Meanwhile, Jun Mo Xie's hands turned into fists. They then made a whistling sound in the wind. Mei Xue Yan twisted her waist back, and moved forward to get the advantage. Then, her knee ferociously charged towards Jun Mo Xie's abdomen.

There was a "Bang!" as the two fighters' knees collided. Mei Xue Yan's body retreated an inch. However, hers and Jun Mo Xie's knees had remained motionless between them. Suddenly, there was a strange movement below Jun Mo Xie's knee. Then, his knee somehow inverted, and a kick flew towards Mei Xue Yan's thigh.

The Young Master's knees were raised. However, he had managed to land this kick even though his right heel was facing upwards. Moreover, his calves had also gone upwards in a similar fashion. This was extremely abnormal. It simply violated the laws of nature. It was important to know that one couldn't assume this

posture unless the bones of the leg had broken or shattered...

However, Jun Mo Xie had somehow employed this posture to attack.

Mei Xue Yan had profound battle experience. However, she couldn't help but become startled when she saw this. And, her body quickly retreated in a daze. But, Jun Mo Xie quickly raised his lowered head, and directed it upwards to slam into her forehead. Mei Xue Yan cursed, "You've got balls!" as her white palm glittered beautifully while moving towards his forehead. This strike didn't contain her Xuan Qi. However, this strike would easily split the Young Master's forehead into smithereens if it were to land.

However, Jun Mo Xie's hair band suddenly burst open with a 'Crack'. His long and jet-black hair became as straight as arrows. The hair then resembled millions of sharp needles as they turned towards Mei Xue Yan's upper body to pierce it.

Even hair could be used to injure one's opponents!?

However, this wasn't the end of Jun Mo Xie's attack. One of his shoulders leaned away from his body. In fact, it seemed as if it had dislocated from his body as he shrugged it to block Mei Xue Yan's left palm.

This change had happened very suddenly and unexpectedly. Mei Xue Yan had calculated very kind of scenario. However, she realized that this strange attack was enough to end this fight. After all, she didn't wish to be pierced by those needle-like strands of hair. She lightly breathed out as her body faced upwards. Then, she quickly rose upwards, and retreated backwards. These two movements had been completed in a blink of an eye. However, Jun Mo Xie's hands came like thunder, and struck at her soft bosom as this happened!

Mei Xue Yan was startled by this, and cried out in anger. In fact, she was unable to adhere to the restriction of not using Xuan Qi anymore. And, her beautiful body rocketed skywards as she let out

a cold snort in anger and shame.

Jun Mo Xie only felt his palm touch something silky, soft, and plentifully elastic. In fact, he wasn't able to beckon enough strength to injure the enemy for a moment. However, Mei Xue Yan's body was already in the midst of moving upwards. His hands were pasted against her chest a moment ago. So, his hands opportunely moved towards her abdomen because of her upwards motion. However, he felt like they had slid into a canyon from the high mountains... from hills to plains. Moreover, this road between the mountains and the plains had been a very comfortable one. And, this journey had left him with an indescribable feeling... like he was caressing something satin and warm...

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help himself as his hands instinctively moved to a certain area of her body. Then, he instinctively kneaded... However, this kneading motion nearly made the rapidly ascending Mei Xue Yan fall down!

It felt like he was kneading cotton. Moreover... it was plentiful and fine cotton...

The youngster couldn't help but blurt out, "Nice!"

The quickly ascending Mei Xue Yan suddenly felt a sense of huge loss. She then fell down from the sky. The weather in the sky also became dark. She had remained pure ever since she had taken human form. In fact, most people didn't even know that she was a female. But, this lecher had ruined that...

Mei Xue Yan wanted to burst with rage.

The entire Xuan strength stored in her body exploded in all directions, and brought about a crazy pressure. The entire sky was filled with thunder as a result. In fact, it seemed as if the end of the world was rushing towards Jun Mo Xie.

Jun Mo Xie jumped startled at this sudden change. [This woman's strength was so great?! None of the experts I've faced in

the past can match this Mei Xue Yan!]

Jun Mo Xie saw that this terrible attack was descending unto him. And, he knew that it would be a fatal strike. Therefore, he shouted in a moment of desperation, "Stop! You've lost, and yet you don't admit defeat! Do you have no shame?"

That terrible attack stopped when he said those words.

Mei Xue Yan's face was brimming with murderous intentions as she landed right in front of him. She was looking at him in a way that made it seem as if she was near-ready to turn him into mincemeat.

Her eyes were full of a murderous rage, but her face was blushed from ear-to-ear. Her previous immortal-like elegant and tranquil countenance had disappeared; it had vanished altogether. Instead, it had been substituted by the expressions of an angry and embarrassed young girl.

In fact... she was seething in anger!

But, Jun Mo Xie was in a good mood. The expressions on his face were those of decency and earnest, "Young Mei, victory and defeat have already been decided. I won by a fluke. So, I must apologize to young. Also, it's late now. So, I must bid you farewell!"

[Are you still haggling at that insignificant matter of victory and defeat?]

[Now that it comes to it... this brat acts like a hoodlum and plays with me! You just want to take advantage, grope ass, and leave?!] Mei Xue Yan had already forgotten the real purpose of the fight by now. She felt so ashamed that it seemed as if she had been pushed into a sewer. And, that had resulted in her bizarre rage.

"Victory and defeat has been determined? How has it been determined? And, how come I don't know about it? You think you can walk away after doing something so cheap!" this statement was proof that Mei Xue Yan had truly lost her head. It was important to

know that Mei Xue Yan was a peerless power. She was open and honest, and she would never try to cover-up for her defeat. But, the circumstances were quite different now. The strangely pleasant sensation she had felt when her chest had been kneaded was still lingering in her mind. In fact, her heart had been left to pound and stir by that unfathomable feeling. She felt as if her entire body had started to heat up with a fever. She wanted to rid herself of that feeling of embarrassment and shame. So, she raised her hand and yelled, "Let's see how you escape from me now! The World Cage!"

Young Master Jun's face had a serious look on his face. However, his heart had been yelling with satisfaction; [Awesome... so wholesome!]

Hatred must be avenged. However, his hatred had been avenged with an extra rate of interest applied. Therefore, he was secretly feeling pleased with himself. However, this was when his bodily movements came to a sudden stop. Even his spirit sense had been sealed-off!

[Fuck!]

He wasn't unfamiliar with that so-called World Cage. This technique was the only one which could suppress him successfully in this world. In fact, he couldn't even cheat and escape to the Hong Jun Pagoda once under its effect. He had suffered this secret method at the hands of Tian Fa Forest's Venerable Mei. [This woman can also use this technique! Shit!]

He didn't need much else to explain his predicament. In fact, this realization had come to Jun Mo Xie's mind in an instant. Even calling it a spark of electricity or a spark from a flit wouldn't be an exaggeration. Consequently, any other ideas that the Young Master's mind had been thinking suddenly came to a screeching halt.

However, one couldn't blame him from not thinking of anything

at this time. After all, Mei Xue Yan's fists and legs had started to rain down on him without mercy...

Jun Mo Xie was only thinking... [This is the same as... tyrannizing me...]

"Bang!" He was punched in the eye.

"Bang!" He was hit again.

"Bang!" His posterior had been turned into a sandbag.

"Bang!" His back, thighs, shoulders, chest... nothing was spared.

Jun Mo Xie floated in the air like a dead leaf during autumn. He moved up and down, but didn't land on the ground. The various "Bangs!" were echoing like drumbeats. He didn't even get any time to recover. He had been struck a thousand times in a blink of an eye. And, his eyes now resembled a panda's. His head had become swollen. As for his posterior — even a naked eye could see how fast it was swelling...

"Bang!"

The Young Master finally fell to the ground. In fact, he had dropped on all fours. He was visibly in a very difficult situation.

Then, Mei Xue Yan's slender foot stamped heavily on the Young Master's chest. She then looked down arrogantly, smirked in anger, and asked with the pleased countenance of a victor, "Who is the victor in this fight?"

Mei Xue Yan had panted faintly as she had spoken those words. So, her chest had slightly moved up and down. After all, the strikes she had delivered a moment ago had stifled her breath. Moreover, she had refrained from using her Qi while fighting hand-to-hand for so long, and that had drained her body's physical strength. Therefore, it would be a lie to say that she wasn't tired.

She was very tired, but it had been worth it. After all, she had avenged her hatred. In fact, his hatred had been avenged with an

extra rate of interest applied. Therefore, she was happy! She was very satisfied!

Mei Xue Yan's mind felt rejuvenated at the moment.

However, she would obviously need to undo the World Cage while interrogating Jun Mo Xie. Otherwise, how would that boy speak?

But, Mei Xue Yan had made a mistake — a grave mistake. She had been too careless. She shouldn't have undone the World Cage!

Chapter 485: Assaults Mei Xue Yan Indecently

The World Cage was the technique Jun Mo Xie was most afraid of. In fact, it was perhaps the only thing he was afraid of. However, Jun Mo Xie would be like a dragon returning to the ocean in case the fetters of this World Cage were removed. Perhaps he'd be like the tiger that had returned deep into the mountains. And, he would never give her a second chance to do this.

Mei Xue Yan's seemingly slender right foot was many tons heavy. It seemed like an entire mountain was pressing down on Jun Mo Xie's chest. She retracted the World Cage once she finished talking. And, Jun Mo Xie suddenly disappeared the instant this happened. Consequently, only thin air remained there the moment he disappeared. Mei Xue Yan was feeling very complacent at this moment. However, she suddenly felt emptiness under her foot, and lost balance as a result.

Who was this Mei Xue Yan? She would've adjusted her posture if she had gotten a single second to react. But, she didn't get that opportunity in this instance! A man's foot was raised the moment she lost her footing. How could she have thought that the person she had pinned to the ground would turn the tables in this manner? Consequently, she fell to the ground in a state of astonishment. And, the sturdy and muscular body of a man also landed above hers. Her right foot was somehow raised to land next to her face as this happened. And, her left foot ended on the other side of her face. In fact, she had become a rather unconventional horse that was lying belly-up on the ground.

Then, crisp "Pop! Pop! Pop!" sounds echoed in the vicinity. Any outsider would feel that these crisp sounds were being made actions of cat-calling... The beautiful Mei Xue Yan couldn't think of one part of her body that wasn't hurting in the moment. Moreover,

her fleshy posterior had already been beaten thousands of times in the blink of an eye.

She had settled her debts with this man a moment ago. Therefore, she had been feeling very pleased with herself. However, it seemed as if the tables had been overturned once again...

Mei Xue Yan became violently mad. In fact, she was unable to control her fury anymore. Her eyes reddened as she shouted in anger, "World Ca..."

"I'll show you the world! I'll crumble your world!" Mei Xue Yan suddenly felt her mouth go warm. Then, the fervent breath of a man affixed itself to her lips. Consequently, her lips were sealed off the moment she was about to unleash her attack. She was pinned to the ground at this time. The strong body of a man was pressing down on hers. Moreover, her legs were raised above her head. In fact, she was literally lying on the ground in splits. Consequently, her lips had no choice to meet his... [Oh god...]

She wanted to struggle and break free with everything she had. But, this was when she felt an extremely nimble and greasy tongue slipping into her mouth. In fact, this tongue turned out to be so greasy that it somehow slipped into her sandalwood-like mouth by force...

However, this was instinctual; this had been purely instinctive on Jun Mo Xie's part. After all, he had accidentally kissed the fragrant lips of such a beautiful woman. Therefore, their sweet and wonderful taste had transmitted back to his nervous system. Consequently, his tongue had decided to move in a spontaneous fashion. But, it wasn't intentional in any way...

Mei Xue Yan suddenly felt as if her head was becoming dizzy. She fluttered about at her wit's end for a moment. In fact, she even stopped struggling to some extent...

However, this moment of hesitation didn't last long. In fact, it

was perhaps one-thousandth of a second. Then, Mei Xue Yan's willed herself to resist the Young Master's special offensive. She then breathed out, and slashed her hands in order to get out of this space...

The World Cage was put into effect once again!

However, it was a pity that she felt her body becoming light right before she used the World Cage; Jun Mo Xie had disappeared yet again...

She had again suffered a massive loss. And, no wonder medicine could cure the effects of this...

Mei Xue Yan stood up with a 'whooshing' sound. She circled around ten times in the blink of an eye. The lady went frantic as she searched everywhere for any sign of Jun Mo Xie. But, that was when a foot suddenly appeared out of nowhere, and kicked her delicate and beaten posterior.

That kick made Young Lady Mei stagger forward. In fact, she nearly fell down. She became extremely angry as a result. There was a "Bang!" sound as the power of her entire body exploded everywhere to protect her. Mei Xue Yan had suddenly recalled that she could use her Xuan strength to protect her body...

Jun Mo Xie was in the midst of raising his leg for another attack while being in a state of invisibility. However, that powerful blast sent him flying away.

It could be said that his stealth technique wasn't a perfect measure for every scenario.

"Jun! Mo! Xie!" Mei Xue Yan roared out. Her face had quickly reddened to the extreme. She could feel that her posterior was painfully swelling up in a very rapid pace. However, her face was clearly more heated up. In fact, she felt as if it would burst into flames.

"Come out you brat! Come out if you have guts!" Mei Xue Yan

continued to roar.

The Snake King was hiding in the underbrush. Her face was covered in colors of shock; her eyes were filled with them too.

[Damn! I haven't run into a demon, right? What did I just see? A man was philandering with Elder Sister a moment ago...? He was behaving in an immoral manner with her... He even kissed her! Good heavens! I'm not dreaming, am I?]

Jun Mo Xie gnashed his teeth while he remained in hiding. He was also caressing his round posterior since it had become sore. [That hurt very badly, girl! You loathsome girl! Try becoming smug again! Try beating my ass again! Humph, the tables have turned! You got a taste of retribution this time, didn't you?]

[Mei Xue Yan's intentions have been very obvious from the start. She only wanted to teach me a lesson; she had never intended to kill me. Why else would she have only given me a violent beating when I was trapped in that World Cage? After all, only half of her strength was enough to kill me when she had gone into that maddened rampage.] Therefore, Jun Mo Xie wasn't doing this for his personal gains. He was only doing it to avenge his posterior.

[I'll beat your ass if you beat mine! This is fair and reasonable!]

[And, that kiss can be considered as repayment of interest. Moreover, there was nothing else I could do at that time!] After all, that woman was about to use the World Cage at that time. But, Jun Mo Xie hadn't been able to take his revenge by then. So, hadn't made any preparations to escape...

That rogue method was perhaps the only way to shock someone as strong as her...

Mei Xue Yan took deep breaths. And, she finally suppressed the urge to go berserk while bursting from anger. The beautiful woman slowly became calm as a result. But, her face had been becoming increasingly red...

She thought it over for a second, and she couldn't help but smile. [I have trained for so many years. Yet, I still haven't been able to break away from the chronic problem of competitiveness. The difference between Jun Mo Xie and my Xuan strengths isn't small. In fact, the difference is that of earth and heaven! However, I still went crazy while facing such a tiny human. In fact, I even discarded my strength so that I could compete with him in a hand-to-hand fight...]

[This is a typical short coming of mine. I meet the enemy on equal footing, and suffer for it afterwards.]

[Could he defeat me by relying on his own strength even if he was more agile than me? So, it doesn't make sense to argue with him.]

[This tendency of mine has left me to suffer this loss.]

Mei Xue Yan's posterior still felt fervent and painful. And, her face was blushing exceedingly. She then redirected her primal energy to heal the inflamed area. Then, she took a deep breath and spoke-up, "Come out Jun Mo Xie. There's an important matter that we must discuss!"

Mei Xue Yan was more powerful than the Great Masters at the end of the day. So, she could control her emotions more easily as well. She had felt very embarrassed a moment ago. But, she had a feeling of being 'stronger than before' now...

Jun Mo Xie's lips curled into a grin while he remained in that state of invisibility. He circulated the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune in his palms, and exerted his strength to rub his "old friend" while ignoring Mei Xue Yan's calls.

[I'm not going to trust anything you say, woman!]

[And, I'm especially not going to trust a woman who has beaten my ass! Moreover, she's the woman whose ass I've beaten, and whose lips I have forcefully kissed! After all, she's probably like a volcano which may erupt at any time!]

[I'll be annihilated in case she blows up and hits me.]

[How could I ever be foolish enough to get trapped in such a situation? How can I run into a volcano upon listening to a few sweet words from you? You keep shouting. And, I'll rest for a moment before escaping away. I can clearly see that you don't mean to mess with my family! So, why would I care about you anymore?]

Mei Xue Yan waited for some time, but Jun Mo Xie didn't reappear. She was aware that Jun Mo Xie mistrusted her, but she still stayed a bit longer on her own accord. Then, she slowly took two steps to get to a blue stone that was there at the side. She used her hand to dust it. And, she leisurely sat down on it after she had brushed the dust away.

Each one of her movements had reverted to seem elegant and relaxed. And, she again looked like a fairy that had descended to earth. Mei Xue Yan looked extraordinarily beautiful at this time; no one could've guessed that such a great beauty had been involved in a fierce hand-to-hand fight a moment ago.

"Come out, Young Master Jun. We both know that neither of us harbors any feelings of hatred and malice towards each other. In fact, we should be cooperating in the true sense on the contrary. You should also have understood that both of will benefit greatly if we cooperate. What happened before was a nothing but a joke!"

Mei Xue Yan continued calmly, "I'm sure that you won't bring about your doom by taking this to heart. And, I also won't bring down a calamity on you. So, be at ease, and show yourself..."

Jun Mo Xie inwardly clicked his tongue. He had acted like such a rogue, and this woman was still calm. This was the first time that he was seeing such a thing.

[But where was the joke in what happened a moment ago? This woman has clearly gauged my true strength!]

"Of course, the Young Master can appear thirty meters away if he still harbors any misgivings in his heart. Our conversation won't be affected even if we stand apart at that distance. However, the Young Master possesses that marvelous skill. So, I'm certain that I won't be able to do anything to you even if I use the World Cage."

Mei Xue Yan spoke insipidly, "I have nothing more to say to Young Master Jun if he still has doubts. So, I request the Young Master to suit himself."

She turned her head after saying that. She then spoke-up, "You can stop hiding as well. Come out, Green Hunter. I'm sure that Young Master Jun has also discovered your presence like me."

The Snake King appeared from behind a tree in a ghostly manner.

Even Jun Mo Xie's figure quickly reappeared at that moment. But, he didn't appear thirty meters away. Instead, he had suddenly appeared right in front of Mei Xue Yan. Then, the Young Master smiled and said, "Young Mei talks about cooperation even with that temper."

Young Master Jun's spirit was connected to the Hong Jun Pagoda at this time. So, nothing would happen to Jun Mo Xie even if Mei Xue Yan suddenly launched the World Cage. Therefore, there was no harm in showing off and appearing right in front of that beautiful woman.

Mei Xue Yan had expected Jun Mo Xie to reappear. But, she was still a bit surprised even though she had been expecting this. A flash of embarrassment appeared on her face as she spoke in a dull voice, "You're not a good man, Young Master Jun."

Chapter 486: I Will Follow My Own Desires

"This Young Master has never claimed that he's a good man, right? But, we're on the same boat. After all, Young Mei isn't an angel herself." Jun Mo Xie smiled. He then asked inquisitively, "If I may dare to ask — how are you related to Tian Fa's Venerable Mei?"

"Venerable Mei?" Mei Xue Yan rolled her eyes. She cursed herself in her mind for being a fool. She then smiled and said, "He's my elder brother."

"I see." Jun Mo Xie's thoughts became gloomy. [No wonder they have the same technique! Damn it! This Young Master has suffered so much because of this World Cage technique. It turns out that they are siblings. They are the damned "Mei" siblings!]

It wasn't surprising that Jun Mo Xie would think that way. After all, the tyrannical Venerable Mei had seemed like a real man when he had appeared in the Tian Fa Forest that day. Everything had made him seem like a real man... whether it was the voice or the fighting style. But, this Mei Xue Yan had appeared in the form of a woman before him. And, she was easy on the eyes. In fact, she was extremely beautiful. The impressions of these two personas were worlds apart.

Jun Mo Xie's imagination was certainly very wild. However, even he wouldn't be able to imagine that beautiful woman whose posterior he had made swell was that Venerable Mei who had mistreated him at the Tian Fa Forest the same way as she had done here...

"Jun Mo Xie, you humans have a great saying, 'Bright people don't speak dark words.' So, I'll tell you right now... that we were looking for you to get to your master. And, you should probably know what it is for. It could be even said that we people from Tian Fa may seem narrow-minded. Hehe... but, it seems that your

master is a profound mystery. He's like that dragon whose tail can't even be spotted!" Mei Xue Yan spoke in a tranquil manner, "Therefore, we wish to know your master. It's fine even if its for a short while. So, I request the Young Master to inform his master that I would like to discuss an important matter with him."

"Oh?" Jun Mo Xie tilted his head.

"But, I would understand if the Young Master finds this inconvenient," Mei Xue Yan smiled and withdrew in order to make headway. The Scared Fruit's importance to the Xuan Beasts of Tian Fa couldn't be explained in words. This was why Mei Xue Yan had decided to follow Jun Mo Xie first even though she had come out to experience the human world. And, her main reason for doing this was derived from the fact that she wasn't very assured about this matter.

"Ah, that would be extremely inconvenient. So, many thanks for your consideration, Young Mei," Jun Mo Xie grinned and spoke-up.

"..." Mei Xue Yan was left angered in a bind by this reply. A long time passed before she spoke-up, "You're genuinely not a noble person, Jun Mo Xie." She had proclaimed two evaluations of Jun Mo Xie by now — It was 'not a good man' at first. And, 'not a noble person' now...

"Young Mei's words seem confusing. I admitted to not being a good man a moment ago. And, I obviously can't be a noble man since I'm not even a good one."

Jun Mo Xie shrugged and sniggered as he spoke, "Good men are very easy to hurt. And, a noble person is too restricted. So, you can treat me as a hoodlum or an evil tyrant. You can even treat me as a scoundrel or a demon. But, never treat me as a good man or a noble person! You'll suffer if you do that... hehe..."

"You... you... what are you saying? Don't humans wish to be good? Don't they want to boast of being noble? I don't understand

why you don't want to be a good man! Is it possible that you humans have abandoned the morals which have been passed on through the millennia? Or maybe I don't understand the current moral standards of you humans...?"

Mei Xue Yan had spoken this in a bad mood. She had encountered and dealt with innumerable troublesome characters over the course of her life. But, she simply couldn't deal with this mischievous Jun Mo Xie she was now faced with.

Jun Mo Xie laughed heartily at first. Then, he said, "This can't be generalized. I'll tell you a story to demonstrate — There were two people once upon a time. They lived amongst seven or eight other families. One amongst these two people was a notorious scoundrel; he was a proper rogue. However, the other one was a well-renowned good individual. The scoundrel was feared and hated. But, the good man went out every morning to draw water. He would then fill each family's jars with the water he'd get. He helped his neighbors whenever they needed. In fact, he would leave no stone unturned to help people. Therefore, everyone was fond of him. And, everyone was relieved to have him at home.

"Then, something happened one day. The scoundrel was returning from a robbery. But, he wasn't able to choose a proper route due to panic. He accidentally ran into another person, and knocked him down as a result. In fact, he knocked him down and killed him. However, the man who had been knocked down was another scoundrel. And, this second scoundrel had been gearing up to act rudely towards an innocent woman. That scoundrel of a robber had done this unintentionally, but he had still done a good deed. Therefore, everyone praised him. In fact, they spoke of him as a savior, and a man who had suddenly repented for his sins. The authorities even considered him a model citizen. So, everyone praised him, and forgot about the misdeeds he had committed in the past."

Mei Xue Yan couldn't understand what he was trying to say. So,

she obviously didn't understand why he was telling her that story. But, she figured that he must have a point at the end. So, she listened to him calmly, and didn't interrupt. The Snake King also listened calmly while sitting beside her.

Jun Mo Xie laughed, and continued to speak, "Then, that well-renowned good man fell seriously ill one day. He couldn't get out of the bed that morning because his fever had made it very difficult for him to do so. He didn't have any strength in his body. And, he was extremely thirsty as well. He wanted a sip of water. But, his jar didn't have enough water. He called out, but nobody was home. Therefore, he forced himself out of his bed, and went out to fill water. But, he was very tired and had no strength left. So, he could only fill water for himself before he went back to bed.

"The neighbors returned home in the afternoon. They were accustomed to the good man filling water for them. They had returned home tired and thirsty. But, they found that their water jars were empty. They immediately got angry, and went to the good man's home to criticize him. But, they saw that the good man was drinking water while lying down. Consequently, they became enraged, and started to curse him in their state of rage, 'You're a selfish man! You feign illness and goof off at home. You want to eat your food alone?!' And thus, this good man found himself alienated from everyone. In fact, everyone said that they had been cheated by him for a long time. After all, they felt that he was an extremely selfish man in reality."

Jun Mo Xie sneered as he finished the story. He then laughed and said, "What is a good man? And, what is a bad man? They're nothing but a narrow view point of foolish men and women. It's very similar to how people look at government officials. Let's assume that there's a very honest and upright official. He speaks the truth, and remains untainted by corrupt practices. In fact, righteousness drips from the sleeves of his robes. But, the people under his jurisdiction don't even have a belly-full of food to eat.

Therefore, everyone will call him a wretched man. They will say that he's an official with no knowledge of governance. However, let's assume that there's another government official. And, this one acts like a leech. He wants to gobble up the people's money. In fact, his greed for wealth is as insatiable as a bottomless pit. And, even the deities from the ninth heaven can't set him on the right path. But, the people under this official are satisfied with their lot. They have enough to eat, and they live very comfortably. So, they will say that he's an extremely good official who cares for the well-being of the people... This is the true morality of the masses nowadays!

"So, why should I live according to the opinions of others? What are the benefits of being a good man? What good outcome is there in that? Moreover, what's the harm in being a bad man? I'm Jun Mo Xie! I'm me! Let's say that there's something that I wish to do. And, the entire world says that I shouldn't. But, I still wish to do it. So, I'll do it! And, that's only because I want to do it! Now, let's say that everyone wants me to do something, but I don't want to do it. They will say, 'You'll earn name and fame if you do this. So, you should do it. You must do it!' But, I still won't do it! And, that's only because I don't want to! I have a simple philosophy in my life. Nothing is as easily reversible as the division between good and bad. After all, right and wrong aren't set in stone! It's only a matter of perspective..."

Jun Mo Xie laughed heartily and said, "So, I will follow my own desires!"

Mei Xue Yan was stunned by this. A long while passed. She then shook her head and smiled as she said, "There's one thing that I don't understand even after hearing this fallacy of yours... you're either far-sighted or a bigot... But, what you've said is correct. Perhaps this is a common problem with you humans."

"Your words aren't entirely correct. It doesn't mean that all humans are like this. Aren't you Xuan Beasts the same? Everyone

despises a bad apple, and looks down on them. In fact, everyone secretly feels that they're much better than that individual. Therefore, everyone suspects this bad person in case he or she has a change of mind and tries to mend their ways. And, everyone is accustomed to the help of a good man who is conscientious and helps everyone. In fact, everyone is grateful to him. However, everyone invariably thinks that he's better than them. But, let's assume that this good man suddenly makes one mistake. Then, the criticism from others is several times more severe than what a normal person would have to face. And, that originates from that feeling of being inferior. Consequently, the masses are unforgiving towards his mistake. It's almost as if they feel a depraved pleasure by bringing down a God from his altar. 'Ah, he is no better than us at the end of it...'"

Jun Mo Xie continued calmly, "Therefore, I believe that being a good man is a very tiring job. Moreover, you first have to be a good man in order to be a noble person. Therefore, it's even harder to be a noble person! Then, there's the so-called 'heroes' as well. But, you're required to be a good man and a noble person for that. That isn't tiring — that's plain miserable!

"Therefore, I'd rather be a bad man. In fact, I want to be a bad man!" Jun Mo Xie continued in a calm manner, "I only wish to become powerful. I never think about being a good man or a bad one. But, I find it strange that you people from Tian Fa are so attached to the notion of a good or bad person. Don't you people give seniority to the strong? Don't tell me that your notions have changed?"

Mei Xue Yan was startled by this. [It's true that the Tian Fa Forest's fundamental doctrine is to give seniority to the strong. But, why did I get entangled in the notion of who is a good or a bad person if that's the case? Whether a person is good or bad... doesn't hold any meaning for me. Are we like humans as well?]

[Or have I been accepting the human standards of morality

because I've taken on a human form?]

"The Young Master speaks correctly. It seems that I had been attached to it very strongly," Mei Xue Yan smiled as she ridiculed herself.

"Perhaps it's not about you being strongly attached to it. Maybe it's my view that's too open," Jun Mo Xie smiled calmly, "Maybe people like me are fitter to live in Tian Fa Forest instead of this outside world of mortals."

"That's not it. And, that's because of your nature. You will inevitably find a way to be a bad man no matter where you go and live. After all, you are you. And, you will always be you," Mei Xue Yan cracked a rare joke.

"Of course! This Young Master is an expert at benefitting at others' expense. I'll give everything I've got to take advantage of people. And, I'd rather die than lose!" Jun Mo Xie snorted. He then rubbed his fingers and smelled them. The smile on his face indicated the triumph of teaching a lesson. And, the twirling of his fingers and the smack of his lips clearly acted as a recollection of the cheap advantage he had taken a while back.

Mei Xue Yan snorted. Her beautiful face suddenly became a bit red as she seethed in anger. [This vulgar guy can't even hear two words of praise without getting haughty about it!]

Chapter 487: Any Condition!

"Anyway... You had mentioned about cooperating..." Jun Mo Xie smiled mischievously, "But, I don't understand what your proposal means." He thought; [Your Tian Fa's Beast Kings are already cooperating with me, and you still don't know about it? Silly girl!]

"That's right! Let's cooperate!" Mei Xue Yan's expression was solemn, "Tian Fa Forest needs to increase its strength. We need it for the fierce fight between the Three Holy Lands; we need more strength to compete. But, it'll be too late if we follow the normal speed of advancement. Therefore, we must make use of external forces to enhance our strength."

Mei Xue Yan's expression was dignified as she gave Jun Mo Xie a profound look, "The supplement from our Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit is an example of that! But, there will only be one per person. And, that isn't enough for us. Moreover, we can't make such medicines on our own. But, your master can refine them. I've heard that he has already refined divine pills which can increase Xuan strength by ten years. Moreover, these pills don't have any side-effects. We want such miraculous things. But, an increase in strength by ten years seems too little for us."

Jun Mo Xie frowned, "You mean to say that... you want more number of pills once they've been refined from the Sacred Fruit. And, they should obviously have no side-effects either. Then, you also want other such pills. After that, you intend to use these pills to upgrade strength as quickly as possible. You wish to get the Xuan Beast Kings across the bottleneck. Then, you want to give them the other pills to get going towards the next bottleneck. So, you're basically saying that you want the Beast Kings to have to successive breakthroughs so that they can rise two ranks in the shortest possible time. Is this what you mean to say?"

"That's correct! Intelligent people speak intelligent words! That's exactly what I meant." Mei Xue Yan's eyes filled with satisfaction.

She remained calm as she spoke further, "But, I couldn't find your master. So, I came to search for you."

"I find your thought process ridiculous, Young Mei! In fact, it is excessively fantastical. I'm sure you're aware that your request will create many problems for us. Let me tell you something — you are doomed to fail in this fight even if Master comes out with such a miracle."

Jun Mo Xie frowned, "You will realize this once you see the pills refined from the Scared Fruit. First, you need a good amount of luck when it comes to the refining of such pills. Secondly, you need lots of medicinal ingredients at your disposal. Moreover, the medicinal herbs required for such pills are top-notch. Thirdly, refining these kinds of pills takes a lot of time. And lastly, the refining process demands a huge consumption of energy. However, the final outcome still depends of the heaven's will even if these four requirements are fulfilled. The probability of success or failure in refinement is always very hard to predict...

"In addition, the medicines that improve your strength have some limitations as well. And, this point stands true without exception. It is often noted that one's body builds resistance to the stimulant provided by these pills after your strength increases under its effect. This means that you won't be able to use the pills the second or the third time. Think about it... the Ten Years Pills increases strength by ten years. So, shouldn't an individual be able to increase their strength ten-thousand times by taking those pills continuously? But, that's not possible. So, I can only tell you that your thought process is downright impractical!

"You ought to understand one thing if you wish to increase strength that quickly. You will need three kinds of pills during this period of time! And, each pill must provide thirty years' worth of strength upgrades. Moreover, none of the pills can be the same as the other. This is the only way you can reach your bottleneck targets. The pills from the Sacred Fruit of Tian Fa will be able to

help you in making the breakthroughs only after these basic requirements are met!

"This is like saying that my master can't do anything else for a long time. He'll only be refining pills for you this entire time. Didn't you feel that this is too excessive when you asked for it? Do you think that my master is someone you can order-about as per your will?"

"I know that this is too much to ask for! And, I don't even know what kind of a person your master is! But, we have no other choice!" Mei Xue Yan continued calmly, "After three years... No... it should be after two years and nine months... The Three Holy Lands will fight after two years and nine months. And, it wouldn't matter which one of them we face if things continue this way. After all, the Elusive World of the Immortals, or the Great Golden City, or the Boundless Ocean of Blood — each of them will easily defeat Tian Fa Forest if we go on as per our current strength! Our Tian Fa has maintained its status for nine-thousand years. And, the consequences would be too horrible if I... if my elder brother loses this status!

"We Xuan Beasts have always been discriminated against in this big continent! We've only been able to squeeze our ranks amongst the Three Holy Lands by relying on our fiercely overbearing strength. However, the Tian Fa Forest wouldn't remain Tian Fa Forest if we lose this status!"

Mei Xue Yan had a somewhat pained and self-deprecating expression on her face. And, Jun Mo Xie could tell that the situation would've crossed the point of desperation if someone as strong as Mei Xue Yan had such an expression on their face. [It seems that... they have nowhere to go...]

Jun Mo Xie frowned, and paced several steps. His heart was gripped in endless hesitation. Jun Mo Xie knew that he was sure to have a lifelong ally in Tian Fa Forest if he helped them with this. Therefore, the Jun Family would be well-placed. Moreover, the

lifespans of these Xuan Beasts was very long. And, this meant that even their descendants won't need to worry about any troublesome situations long into the future. In fact, it'll be a boon for generations-after-generations of his descendants!

And, it would only cost him a few divine pills!

It sounded simple, but it had to be said that he could presently refine only one kind of pill that met their requirements. And, others could only be possible after he had advanced to the fourth and fifth level inside the Hong Jun Pagoda. Moreover, he needed to be at the sixth level to refine the pills from the Thousand Evils Ten Thousand Poisons Fruit — or what these Xuan Beasts called as Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit. However, that heavenly treasure would turn into ash if he hadn't met the necessary conditions and capability standards.

[Can I break through to the sixth level within two years and nine months?]

Jun Mo Xie had no assurance regarding this. Jun Mo Xie was well-aware of the difficulty in advancing one level inside the Hong Jun Pagoda and advancing with the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune.

It hadn't even been a one year since he had come to that world. But, he had already advanced by leaps and bounds. In fact, he had crossed three levels in this short period of time. But, this achievement corresponded to three starting levels. However, he would require an increasing amount of time to make each breakthrough as he would go higher up. In fact, the requirements might even multiply many-folds.

"I know that this is a bother for you and your master. But, our Tian Fa will arrange any medicinal herb you require to concoct those pills as long as you and your master agree to cooperate with us! It doesn't matter if they're at the bottom of an ocean, or at the top of a snowy mountain. It doesn't matter whether the place is too

hot, or it's too cold — we'll give our all to assist you!" Mei Xue Yan put her hands behind her back. "Moreover, we'll agree to any conditions you set — no matter how unreasonable or irrational. Any conditions!"

Jun Mo Xie's heart thumped when he heard this.

[Any conditions?]

It was Jun Mo Xie biggest dream to build himself an estate in the Tian Fa Forest. After all, he wouldn't have to worry about the problems of the outside world once he had done so. Moreover, the Young Master Jun was quite fond of the Beast Kings of Tian Fa Forest.

Their temperament was very much to Young Master Jun's liking. He had planned to help even if he wouldn't benefit out of it. But, it now seemed that he could also benefit from it. Moreover, his benefits would be huge. This was an irresistible temptation for him.

Jun Mo Xie clenched his teeth. [Damn it! Power can't be achieved without pressure! Isn't it only the sixth level of the Hong Jun Pagoda? This Young Master can cross three levels in half-a-year. So, why can't he cross a further three in around two years?]

[Let's do it! This is only a matter of forcing myself to train harder; that's all! And, I will get equally good dividends in terms of enhancement of strength and extra benefits!]

"Well, I personally think that there's no issue with this matter. But, I need to consult my master. After all, the success or failure of this depends upon my master's desire. But, you be at ease. I'll try my best to facilitate this cooperation. However, it's better if we discuss the subject of our conditions a later date. After all, I can't speak for my master. In fact, I suppose that Young Mei wouldn't believe me even if I said that I do. Isn't that right?" Jun Mo Xie changed the topic in a blink of an eye. After all, he knew that he couldn't reveal his hidden cards at this time. [If I let these people

know now that I'm that mysterious and unrivalled black-clothed master...]

[The consequences would be too horrible!]

[All powerful enemies will flock to me. In fact, many people will try to destroy me in my formative years even if they don't have any enmity with me. Therefore, this secret that I don't have the strength to override the world can't be told to anyone; not even if the said-individual is very dear to me!]

"I understand. Many thanks, Young Master Jun!" Mei Xue Yan's lips squirmed as she spoke in a low voice.

"But, what are these so-called Three Holy Lands? Could Young Mei possibly clear this doubt of mine?" Jun Mo Xie had finally gotten the opportunity to ask this question. It must be mentioned that this question had been bothering Young Master Jun for a long time now.

It was possible that most common folk didn't even know of existences like the Silver Blizzard City and Xue Hun Manor. There were only a few Xuan families in the society at large. However, even these Xuan families regarded the Silver Blizzard City and the Xue Hun Manor as the top entities of the world.

Even Jun Mo Xie hadn't thought that there would be anything above the Tian Fa Forest.

But, he had then found out that there was an even taller mountain in existence; this was when he had learnt of the extremely fierce Three Holy Lands. The Tian Fa Forest was known to everyone as the most dangerous entity in the world. So, what were these Three Holy Lands?

It seemed like that these existences were even higher than the Silver Blizzard City. And, this was enough to shock even Jun Mo Xie. In fact, he had been wondering whether there were entities that were even higher than the Three Holy lands...

[What level are those people at if they exist...?]

[But, the main question remains the same — why are there no legends about these places?]

"The fierce Three Holy Lands... originated over nine-thousand years ago. Everyone was vying for supremacy at that time. The continent was in chaos as a result. So, it was only natural that increasingly stronger entities were emerging in such an environment. After all, times of trouble often give birth to many heroes. And, the heroes also created specific circumstances," Mei Xue Yan forced a smile as she slowly explained.

"However, an extremely unforeseen event occurred in the continent at the most opportune moment." Mei Xue Yan took a deep breath. "Have you ever heard of the 'Pillars of Heaven Mountains', Jun Mo Xie?"

Chapter 488: The Battle for Seizing the Heavens, and the Fierce Trinity

["Pillars of Heaven Mountains...?"](#) It's the tallest mountain in Xuan Xuan Continent, right? It's located on the southern-most point of the continent. And, it's said to be an extremely huge mountain. People say that it rises towards the heavens for thousands of kilometers, and shoots straight into the sky. It's also said to be very wide. It ranges across from one side of the continent to the other. Legends say that it reaches till the end of the sky! No man or animal can fly over it; even eagles are no exception to this. It has no signs of human inhabitation, and it's said that no one can conquer it. The Pillar of Heaven Mountain reaches to the gods. Even the deities and devils can't climb it!"

Jun Mo Xie knew about this mountain range. In fact, he was quite interested in it. [How would this mountain range fare against the Kunlun Mountains on Earth? Moreover, these Pillars of Heaven Mountains are supposed to be taller than the tallest ranges back on Earth. Plus, their highest point is so astounding that it is even higher than Mount Everest. Also, they stretch across an entire continent. They ought to be a wonder of nature.]

Therefore, the Young Master Jun had planned to scale it and take a look for himself.

"Yes, these mountains had suddenly started to crumble for some reason at that time. Flames had risen to many kilometers in height. Massive stones had been sent flying to dozens of kilometers. And, the millions of people who lived near these mountains were turned into corpses. Even Spirit Xuan Experts weren't able to escape alive. The entire land had shook. A strange and hot liquid had rushed out from the land underneath. This liquid was so hot that it could even melt gold. That incident was a calamity which had affected the entire human world. And, the

death-toll of the Xuan Xuan continent had surpassed tens of millions after that cataclysm. Even the peaks around 'Supporting the Heavens' Mountain had suddenly crumbled by more than half in height...

"No one was capable of scaling those mountains before this incident. Even birds couldn't fly over. However, they had seemingly been cut down. People still couldn't go over it even though the size of these mountains had been reduced very significantly. After all, these mountains were still many kilometers tall. But, people soon discovered something startling because of this... the Xuan Xuan Continent didn't end at the 'Supporting the Heavens' Mountain! There was another world beyond these mountains!"

Mei Xue Yan's voice had become heavy. And, Jun Mo Xie had guessed that the calamity at the mountains must've been caused by a massive earthquake and volcanic eruption.

"However, two grotesquely-shaped things suddenly crossed over to this side after the peaks crumbled. Or it should be said that they were grotesque-looking men," Mei Xue Yan continued to speak, "Then, these two grotesque-looking men had a fierce battle with the people on this side of the mountains. In fact, it got so bad that the Great Masters of that era were forced to join hands in order to kill them. But, that area was soon crawling with many more of those men..."

"Even the Great Masters of that era couldn't face so many of those strange men. But, those strange men possessed great strength, and they could've caused unspeakable destruction if they were able to invade the rest of the continent. Therefore, all the Xuan experts of the continent were concentrated to the north of the 'Supporting the Heavens' Mountain. These people then tried to stop those men with everything they had. That was termed as the first 'Battle for Seizing the Heavens'!"

Mei Xue Yan sighed deeply.

"The entire continent had stood together like an impenetrable wall. And, they had succeeded forcing those strange beings to retreat. But, everyone gradually understood one point from this battle... It was a wasteful sacrifice to send anyone weaker than a Great Masters to deal with those men. In fact, even the experts at level-four Spirit Xuan peak couldn't hurt those grotesque beings despite using the full extent of their strength. Therefore, these battles came to be fought between the strongest Xuan warriors of both sides. And, those who were weaker than Great Masters were told to disband and return. After all, there was no need for pointless sacrifice.

"Four of greatest forces were formed inside the continent at that time. The purpose of these forces was to deal with those invading forces in an effective manner. These forces comprised the Elusive World of Immortals, Great Golden City, and the Boundless Ocean of Blood. Even the strongest Beast Kings fought in that battle because this war would decide the fate of the entire Xuan Xuan Continent. Moreover, our force was entirely self-contained. Tian Fa Forest's strength was the mightiest amongst those four at that time. In fact, it could be said that Tian Fa's strength was greatest in the entire universe!

"The three great lands... the Three Holy Lands started to screen the human Xuan experts. And, people could go into the Three Holy Lands if their Xuan strength reached the realm of the Great Masters. They would then wait for the next 'Battle for Seizing the Heavens'. These people would undergo rigorous Xuan training during this time. In fact, they wouldn't even be allowed to go out. That's because any slack could result in a catastrophic defeat in the 'Battle for Seizing the Heavens'. And, a defeat in that battle would result in the greatest of calamities for all humanity. Therefore, the Three Holy Lands became like concentration camps for the continent's greatest strength. And, only the genuinely powerful would get the chance to enter the Three Holy Lands.

"Our Tian Fa Forest's force is naturally composed of Xuan Beasts. Humans would never join hands with us. So, the Three Holy Lands started to become increasingly prosperous as time passed. However, the Tian Fa Forest got stuck with its limitations, and remained the same as before. Consequently, Tian Fa started to decline even though it was once the mightiest force.

"Each one of the Three Holy Lands selected extremely harsh environments in order to check the invasion more effective. But, those environments resulted in great benefits when it came to the matter of strength advancement. Hence, the Three Holy Lands gradually faded away from the sight of the society at large as time went on. They would occasionally come out to search for Great Master level experts who would be willing to join their ranks. But, these three lands maintained no other kind of presence in the society. Thousands of years came to pass, and they were gradually forgotten by the society. But, the Battle for Seizing the Heavens never came to a stop!

"This is the origin story of the 'Fierce Trinity'," Venerable Mei was leisurely gazing into the horizon.

"So, that's what it is about." Jun Mo Xie's reply had sounded a bit vague. In fact, it had seemed as if he had accepted this without thinking. However, his heart was brimming with admiration. [There are people who're protecting this continent in secret. They're fighting there in silence. They're making sacrifices in silence... these places are worthy of being called 'Holy Lands' because of this one point alone!]

"Therefore, I was somewhat flabbergasted when I saw that someone with a Xuan strength as powerful as your master's was moving around so freely and unfettered," Mei Xue Yan slowly shifted her gaze and looked at Jun Mo Xie.

"Ah, that's probably because us master-and-disciple live a simple life, and don't relate ourselves with troubles of the society. So, we don't reveal ourselves in the public very easily," Jun Mo Xie

laughed out.

"That's possible I guess. However, the Fierce Trinity has been fighting openly over the past millennia. And, they seem to have forgotten their original aim and significance! It can be presumed that there are many powerful and disillusioned individuals over there these days. And, the Three Holy Lands aren't "Holy" lands anymore," Mei Xue Yan sighed for a while. Then, she continued to speak.

"You see... fighting and keeping surveillance everyday was an extremely exhausting task. Therefore, the trinity eventually decided to put forth the proposal of pre-decided decisive battles instead. After all, that meant that they could come over to the mainland from time-to-time, and live the life a world-renowned individual could lead. Besides, the weather in the Supporting the Heavens Mountains is extremely cold and no individual can lead a comfortable life over there. Therefore, they decided to summon those freaks with the intention of proposing their idea of decisive battles. Those freaks came over to discuss. But, those freaks obviously wanted to damage the trinity's interests. After all, they were filthy, disgusting, mean, and utterly disrespectful. So, they neither agreed, nor disagreed to this proposal.

"However, the decisive battles started taking place at regular intervals of ten years thereafter. In fact, it had become a custom. But then, they felt that ten years was too short a time period. After all, they couldn't recuperate in that amount of time. So, they changed the time-gap to a hundred years. But, the strength of the Three Holy Lands had increased very considerably in the time span of the first hundred years. So, they destroyed the enemy's forces in the decisive battle that followed. The strength of those outsiders had been damaged very badly in that war. So, they didn't invade again after the next hundred years' time span passed. In fact, they often didn't arrive until two-hundred years had passed. However, they'd recover and become stronger in that time frame. But, they

were always stopped and pushed back by the power of the Three Holy Lands no matter how fierce they'd become. Thus, the time frame between two successive wars continued to increase. And, it's already been five-hundred years since the last attack."

Mei Xue Yan sighed, "The time frame between two successive wars has continued to increase. And, it has now reached to five-hundred years from the original ten. Increasing this ceasefire period bring only advantages to those outsiders. After all, their main objective is to get out of the harsh conditions they live in. So, they continue to work hard for the sake of their prosperity. But, five-hundred years is an extremely long period of time for those of on this side of the mountains. In fact, generations can change in such a long time. Consequently, we've already forgotten the terror and aftermaths of those wars. The Fierce Trinity still exists. But, they haven't been able to remain the Three 'Holy' Lands in the true sense. Moreover, I don't know when it happened... but it seems that their people have secretly entered the common society and have started to pull the strings of Imperial Powers from the dark...

"Their transformation has gone from bad to worse. In fact, the Three Holy Lands have secretly begun to contend for power over the last hundred years. This state of affairs has become rather lamentable. I still don't understand this. After all, the Three Holy Lands are now beyond anyone's reach. So, why would an entity of their status try meddle in worldly matters?" Mei Xue Yan spoke in a somewhat melancholic tone.

"And, what's more tragic is that the Three Holy Lands have started to fight over internal rankings now! They wish to see who is ranked above whom! Hah! I don't even know how much strength they've squandered over this strife! It's a pity... And, the time for the decisive battle must be within these few years! However, things don't look too good for the first time in over nine-thousand years... I'm very worried about this..." Mei Xue Yan's beautiful eyes were filled with sadness.

"I'm a Xuan Beast; not a human. But, I still feel myself a part of this Xuan Xuan Continent. Successive generations of Tian Fa have died fighting in these decisive battles over the last nine-thousand years. We've lost a huge number of our brave warriors while the Three Holy Lands have been fighting for supremacy. In fact, these battles have become the mission of our existence. And, we've already lost a lot of blood in these Battle for Seizing the Heavens. It's true that I've always looked down upon your meagre humanity that inhabits this huge continent. But, we will still guard it. We don't do it for you filthy humans that live in this continent. We do it because it's our duty to guard this land. After all, the Tian Fa Forest is our responsibility, and we can't run away from it! Therefore, the flourishing reputation of Tian Fa can't be lost from my hands since I carry the name of 'Mei'!

"So, we need to increase our strength this time. It's important that we pull all the stops, and make Tian Fa more powerful as fast as possible. After all, we'll have to take the task of pushing those invaders back in case they break past the humans of the Trinity. Things may turn for the worst. But, we'll at least be able to take them down with us!

"Therefore, we must participate in the Battle for Seizing the Heavens. However, we must be ranked at par with the Three Holy Lands in order to participate in that battle. Otherwise, they'll rescind our qualifications to fight in the decisive battle!"

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but feel deep veneration when he heard that.

He had said that he wasn't a good man or a noble person. In fact, he had even disdained those so-called chivalrous heroes. But, he had always admired the true heroes in his heart!

General Yue Fei from the history of his previous world had been one such individual.

Similarly, he had come to admire General Jun Wu Hui in this life!

Mei Xue Yan was only a Xuan Beast in human form. But, her persistence and open-minded nature was enough to make all humans feel ashamed.

Pillar of Heaven Mountain is the literal translation for Mount Tian Zhu. It's a real place. The Kunlun Mountains is one of the longest mountain chains in the Asia.

Chapter 489: Horrible People of the Strange Race

"The situation you've described makes it seem that things get more conspiratorial as the time between two successive battles increases," Jun Mo Xie solemnly considered the matter for a while before he spoke-up, "It was fine when the ten years' period was extended to a hundred years. After all, you Xuan Beasts would easily be able to live through a time span of hundred years. Moreover, even the extremely strong humans would be able live that long. In fact, they might even be able to take part in two... or maybe even three or four Battles for Seizing the Heavens! But, that short time period has been extended to five-hundred years now. So, the Xuan Beasts are still fine. But, this plan takes a sinister turn when it comes to us humans."

Jun Mo Xie raised a finger, "Everyone knows that an individual can extend their lifespan by drawing support from their Xuan Qi if their Xuan cultivation crosses the Earth Xuan Level. And, an individual can live up to a hundred-and-fifty to two-hundred years if they reach the Spirit Xuan Realm. And, they can prolong their life even further if they go a step further and reach the cultivation level of a Great Master. But, they won't be able to extend it beyond the limit of three-hundred-and-fifty years," Jun Mo Xie had learned this from the Solitary Falcon. However, even Solitary Falcon didn't know about the levels above that of the Great Masters.

"Actually, there are humans who are stronger than the Great Master Level. And, those people can have lifespans ranging from four-to-six-hundred years. I'm sure that your master's cultivation should've reached such a level. In fact, the records in my Tian Fa suggest that one can even go beyond this level. Humans can become even stronger, and can extend their lifespans even further. But, such people are very few in number. And, that's because there

have been very few people in the past thousand years who have reached such a high level.

"Those who had participated in the last Battle for Seizing the Heavens will have added another five-hundred years to their age by now. So, it could be said that a vast majority of them would have no chance of participating in the next decisive battle! And, that's because one needs to train for at least two-hundred years in order to become strong-enough to qualify for participating in the Battle for Seizing the Heavens. However, the next battle will take place over five-hundred years after the last one. Therefore, the lifespan of humans wouldn't allow them to participate in the upcoming battle since it would take place after five-hundred years. Even the most talent and extraordinary humans would be bound by the limitations of human lifespan. Therefore, they would only be able to blossom for one decisive battle. Consequently, the only way for them to fight the Battle for Seizing the Heavens is to pass the torch onto future generations," Mei Xue Yan sighed deeply. "After all, those who live for over a millennia due to their Xuan strength only exist in myths and legends.

"Every Battle for Seizing the Heaves is tragic and catastrophic; it's a miserable calamity. Every strong expert that goes to fight in it must go only upon embracing the notion of certain death; no matter how unreasonably powerful they are. And, it's the same for their disciples. After all, the disciples have to stand aside and watch their masters sacrifice their lives to those savage outsiders. This is the way they've been able to pass-on this torch from generation-to-generation..."

Mei Xue Yan's beautiful eyes seemed somewhat pained as she spoke, "I was fortunate that the-then Lord of Tian Fa had taken me to watch the Battle for Seizing the Heavens in those days. I was still a very small seventh level at..." she didn't speak further. She only let out a deep sigh.

"Every Lord of the Tian Fa Forest has always stated that the

extension of these timespans between each consecutive Battle for Seizing the Heavens is clearly a conspiracy of those strange men from the other side. They lay waiting for five-hundred years. They are willing to do that. But, we can't. Those people also go through generational changes. But, the conditions over there are extremely horrible. Their lifestyle is based on eliminating the poor. Survival of the fittest is their most important principle. So, each of their generation sees the rise of countless powerful beings in their ranks. But, this side of the continent is riddled with many faults. This time period is too long for us. Moreover, it's very easy for humans to forget things and get comfortable instead. And, this is an even bigger enemy to a person's fighting spirit than the wear and tear of continuous fighting."

"Why don't we just cross over the mountains and kill those outsiders? Won't it be better if we get rid of these future problems?" Jun Mo Xie frowned.

"Do you take all the countless extremely strong entities from earlier as fools? Your blabbing would've been a reality if it were possible! In fact, this solution has already been tried by many powerful experts. However, it is extremely difficult to cross over. There are some very powerful experts who are able to cross over to the other side. But, only a very few of such people are present throughout the continent in each generation; maybe around ten at best. However, there are countless powerful beings waiting at the other side. In fact, they are patiently waiting as if we're their prey. Moreover, there are millions of them over there. And, they live extremely scattered. So, how can we kill them all at once?"

"We'll probably be killed to the last man if we hastily rush over. The Pillars of Heaven Mountains aren't merely a moat for those creatures on the other side. They are also a moat for us people on this side!"

Mei Xue Yan sighed and continued, "Ending it once-and-for-all would obviously be great. But... it's impossible! Look at current

circumstance... we're hardly able to maintain the capability to withstand their invasion! So, what attack can we speak of? Moreover, the environment at our enemies' side is extremely harsh. The conditions over there are so harsh that humans can't even be guaranteed of their survival. Even Xuan Beasts can't be assured in this regard! So, we simply can't talk about carrying out a huge slaughter!"

Jun Mo Xie became silent for a while, but he continued to calculate in his mind. [This is a very difficult matter. Moreover, it has tons of hard-to-negotiate problems. We have the Three Holy Lands on one hand. They are planning the vicious fight for supremacy, and can't work towards one goal anymore. Moreover, we don't have enough strong fighters in our ranks. We'd need a few hundred Great Master Level fighters for something like this. Moreover, these said-fighters would need to be consolidated under one command. Such a team could easily cause a great deal of damage to the opposition's forces even if they don't succeed in destroying them in one fell swoop. It is true that the enemy eliminates the weak amongst them, and preserves only the strong. They surely follow the 'survival of the fittest' rule. But, it's unlikely that all of them would be extremely strong.]

He couldn't help but think of the troops under his own command — Heaven Destroyers and Soul Devourers. [If they...] Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but shake his head as their thought crossed his mind. [My household guards aren't strong enough yet. Even the strongest one is too weak; he's only at the Earth Xuan first rank at this time. I fear they won't even be able to cross Supporting the Heaven Mountain's passes. But... if this was to happen after a few decades...]

He shook his head. It was too late.

If you wish to kill a real man — you must do it when he's immature. It's never easy to kill a man once he has grown up. It's possible that the man might not be able to achieve much in his

lifetime. However, they will certainly have gained experience once they've matured...

"There's something I find a bit odd. The Xuan Xuan Continent has always been tolerant to the co-existence of Xuan Beasts and human. So, why can't we accept those people as well? Moreover, they can be considered as 'human'. So, shouldn't they resemble humans in some ways? Those outsiders... how are they different?" Jun Mo Xie asked since he was still confused, "Moreover, they're quite strong as well. So, why can't they be accepted and assimilated into the population here?"

"Ah, you haven't seen those outsiders. So, you don't know how horrendous they are. Moreover, you don't know what filthy and disgusting condition they are in. And, that's why you have this childish and naive way of thinking!" Mei Xue Yan looked speechless. It seemed like she felt disgusted. In fact, it appeared that she found this entire issue so filthy that she felt the filth even while discussing it.

"Oh?" Jun Mo Xie seemed quite interested on the contrary, "What do they look like?"

"The appearance of that tribe... how does one properly describe it...? Their appearance consists of dual body features. They somewhat resemble those deformed human twins who are born conjoined. But, one half of the body can't survive after the loss of the other half. In fact, countless senior experts in the past had figured this to be these outsiders' primary weakness. But, their disadvantage is also their advantage. That's because their bodies consist of two individuals. Moreover, the meridians inside their bodies can complement each other. And, they can cover any insufficiencies of the other half in this way. So, their techniques display twice the effect even with half the effort. Their appearance is also very repulsive, and their conduct is even crueler. It can be said that they aren't humans! Therefore, it would be inaccurate to say that they have no human qualities. But, that's because they

can't even be considered as humans in the first place!" Mei Xue Yan frowned as she spoke.

"Moreover, the tribes of these conjoined people have extremely strange and bizarre techniques. They can hide themselves in the shortest of time period. They can merge into trees and water. In fact, you could say that they can transform their forms. And, this can cause a huge headache," Mei Xue Yan muttered to herself irresolutely.

"Conjoined people? All of them are conjoined?" Jun Mo Xie stared wide-eyed. He had often heard that being conjoined was a defect. But, he had never thought that there would be an entire tribe of such people. However, he then heard Mei Xue Yan describe their techniques... [Doesn't that sound familiar?]

"Their techniques appear similar to the wondrous techniques you had used earlier," Mei Xue Yan muttered to herself for a long while before she finally spoke-up.

"What do you mean by their techniques appear similar to ones I displayed? You can see that this Young Master is a real man – a truly handsome youngster! How can you even compare me to those shitty deformed people?!"

Jun Mo Xie had been listening carefully, and with keen interest. But, that statement from the extremely beautiful Mei Xue Yan left him feeling very angry. [The techniques used by those conjoined people can at most be considered as a 'Five Elemental Escape' technique. And, that's an extremely lowly technique! How could that compare to the incomparable Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune? Or the Yin-Yang Escape? This is too big an insult!]

"Don't get mad, Young Master. I know what you're trying to say. Your techniques had a hint of similarity with theirs. But, I obviously know that the two are too far apart when it comes to the quality of it. In fact, it is like the difference between heaven and earth! You can't speak of them in the same breath. However, my

World Cage technique is the greatest nemesis of their techniques. After all, I merely need to raise a hand in order to kill the greatest of enemies. My technique can even imprison you. But, it can only do so for a short while. In fact, I reckon that you might be able to break away if you put everything into disabling my imprisonment. Moreover, I guess that I can restrain you only because your cultivation is still very low. However, I'd be surprised if my World Cage worked against you once you've reached your master's cultivation."

Mei Xue Yan's words came rather unexpectedly for Jun Mo Xie. After all, Mei Xue Yan had intentionally placed Young Master Jun at the top while placing herself beneath him.

Jun Mo Xie couldn't help but feel elated at Mei Xue Yan's flattering words. But, Jun Mo Xie continued to question even when he was swimming with pride, "What kind of weapons are these people adept at? And, how good are they with them?"

"Those outsiders seem to use only long and slender blades. Their blades have evolved over the millennia. Moreover, they know extraordinary ways of slashing and stabbing. And, they also have this habit of shouting a chant while using their blades. But, the culture and language of the rest of the continent is very different than theirs. So, we can't understand their chants. In fact, it becomes very annoying..."

"These people may be conjoined. But, they're still people, right? Is that image so very strange? Don't tell me..." Jun Mo Xie blinked. His eyes were filled with a daring and inquisitive color. In fact, he had a great urge to go and capture one of those outsiders right now so that he could examine them.

"Ahem..." Mei Xue Yan coughed. She seemed a bit uncomfortable. The beautiful woman hesitated to open her mouth for a while. However, she eventually steeled herself and spoke-up, "You don't know these conjoined people... Each one of them are one man and one woman joined together as one person."

Chapter 490: Indignant at Injustice

"So, brothers and sisters share the same body..." Jun Mo Xie exclaimed. Then, he thought of something and spoke, "It seems like the body structure of these outsiders is like this due to their very genes. But, how do they reproduce if their bodies are like this? Let's say that a man goes out to find a wife. However, he would also have to see his own younger sister and his wife's elder brother... wouldn't he? That would be embarrassing. And, that would certainly go against the accepted boundaries of human relations..."

It was natural for Jun Mo Xie to believe that the conjoined pair of a man and a woman from the same parent would make them brother and sister...

Mei Xue Yan's face became red. She seemed was anxious and embarrassed. She didn't know how she was supposed to answer this. So, she glared at Jun Mo Xie for a while. Then, she closed her eyes and spoke, "Our ancestors would've tried to accept these conjoined people if they knew what the boundaries of proper human relations were. And, that would've been great. However, those filthy creatures... don't look for mates. Those conjoined siblings... are couples..."

"Later on, some people of the Fierce Trinity decided to give these outsiders a name since it was awkward to call them strange race or conjoined twins. They were eventually termed as 'Wolf-men' since the viciousness of their characters was similar to that of wolves!" Mei Xue Yan finally finished her brief.

"Wolf... Men! Hah...! So, there are such lowly existences in this world! Those ###... ah..." Jun Mo Xie was stunned. In fact, he had blurted this out since he had been left flabbergasted. After all, he had never even dreamt that he would burst onto such news...

"What...? You, you, you are a Young Master from a noble family!

Why can't you be a little more refined in front of a lady? Do you have to use those obscene words?" Mei Xue Yan's pretty face became deathly white; her extremely beautiful eyes were opened wide, and her finger was pointed at Jun Mo Xie. She stood up with a 'whoosh' sound, and was almost ready to storm off.

Mei Xue Yan had lived an experience-rich life. But, she had never expected that someone would use such obscene imagery in front of her. Those words' meaning was extremely nauseating and disgusting. In fact, she nearly fainted out of embarrassment when she thought about it...

It must be said that it was highly appropriate for Jun Mo Xie to think of those words. But, his choice of term was too graphic! Therefore, the images one would imagine while using those words... would appear extremely repulsive...

"Fu*k that shit!" Jun Mo Xie felt the anger in his very spirits being provoked. His face was full of wrath and disdain. He made threatening gestures as he sprayed saliva, "I wish their ancestors were more cultured! This Young Master has hated those shameless devils his entire life! Those lowly little dipshit ###... they've even dared cause trouble on Xuan Xuan Continent's lands! They've dared to wage these Battles for Seizing the Heavens?! Seize this goddam*it! This injustice makes my heart fill with indignation! I declare that I will strive to mortise them my entire life! In fact, I will chop off my little master if I'm not able to eradicate the very roots of that gang of ###."

The lovely faces of the two beautiful Xuan Beast ladies became red. The two women felt extremely embarrassed as they saw the Youngster jumping up and down while spewing out these unbearable obscenities.

[This is too aggressive. I had only spoken about those outsiders; that's all. So, why is this Young Master so full of resentment? It seems like someone has dug up his ancestor's grave or something...]

[Moreover, one look at him is enough to tell that his anger isn't fake! It genuinely comes from the bottom of his heart!]

How would those two understand where that anger in Jun Mo Xie's heart was coming from? After all, someone from their cultural heritage and history could never understand where Jun Mo Xie's resentment had stemmed from.

These wolf-men weren't the same as those outsiders. However, they had still succeeded in mobilizing the nationalist sentiment of hatred which had been buried in the deepest abyss of his heart. And, this was the reason why he had decided to behead those shameless people!

Moreover, their Xuan strength and numbers... had made the similarities more striking...

It seemed as if the Young Master had decided to eat the dog since he couldn't find the rabbit. Consequently, Jun Mo Xie's resentment was quite a heartfelt one.

"Are you alright, Young Master Jun?" Mei Xue Yan's face had remained reddened for a while. Therefore, she had asked this in a tone full of disdain. After all, the Young Master had just given vent to his feelings. But, his manner of doing so was entirely contrary to what one would expect of a Young Master from a noble family.

"I'm fine. What would happen to me?" Jun Mo Xie rolled his eyes and roared, "You don't worry! I'll make your request come true! I'll back it to the hilt! You have my absolute and full backing in this matter! We must eliminate those outsiders before they become a bigger threat! We must resolutely implement the policy of eradicating those outsiders. We must eradicate this problem forever! This Young Master will personally participate when the time comes. I will kill them all. I'll wreak havoc in their world! Such filthy and shameless creatures don't deserve to live in this peaceful world!"

Young Master Jun made a fist and thumped his chest. His eyes

looked straight ahead as he assumed an oath-making pose. Then, he spoke-up while trembling with energy, "This Jun Mo Xie will guard this Xuan Xuan Continent since I'm a part of it. I swear on my honor that I won't shirk. I will sacrifice myself and spare no effort to kill them. Their blood will soar glittering in the light. It will turn into an all-round bloodbath! I will kill their entire kin. I will feed them to the dogs!"

Mei Xue Yan laughed and said, "I admit that your skills are marvelous, Young Master Jun. But, your strength is still quite shallow. And, the Battle for Seizing the Heavens is almost upon us. So, you won't be of any use in that decisive battle even if the speed of your advancement increases two to three times. Your heart is laudable, and I can sympathize with your emotions. Hehe..."

Jun Mo Xie snorted and replied, "That is yet to be seen."

"What is yet to be seen? You think that you're extraordinary because you're strong enough to crack rocks right now? Your divine sword can cut gold and dissect jade. That light and wondrous skill can transform your body and redouble your power. But, do you think that turns you into a never-before-seen hero of this world? We're all friends here now. So, I'll take the responsibility of telling you even though it might hurt your confidence. You wouldn't be able to match up to a genuine expert with your current strength. In fact, you'll pose no threat whatsoever!"

The Young Master Jun glanced at Mei Xue Yan, "A genuine expert? For example...?"

"Any supreme expert can take you down with ease. It wouldn't even matter whether they're one of the Eight Great Masters or a Beast King from Tian Fa — you'll be nothing more than an ordinary man in front of them," Mei Xue Yan said in a dull tone.

"Ah. And, this means that you two sisters could also do the same?"

"Of course it includes Green Hunter and me as well. I only need to use five percent of my strength to send you to your doom. In fact, it wouldn't matter how wondrous your agility or martial technique are. You must never doubt this fact!" Mei Xue Yan gave a gentle smile as she looked at Jun Mo Xie, "So, you must train properly, Young Man. You'll understand somethings once you grow up."

Jun Mo Xie became dizzy with madness. [You think that I don't know the difference between our strengths? You feel that I don't know that I can't contend against your strength? But, that tone of yours resembles that of an age-old person who is preaching the ways of the world to an extremely young person. Or like a mother comforting her young son...]

[How can this Young Master speak of being a real man of great stature when he's being considered so lowly?]

Green Hunter was standing on the side. And, she was also stunned. In fact, she had opened her big and beautiful eyes wide. [How can Elder Sister say that? Moreover, this tone isn't her usual one. In fact, it is almost as if she's trying to appear strong when she's feeling weak inside...]

Mei Xue Yan's expressions had showed no change, but she was quite frightened inside. She had been shocked by his words and deeds. And, she was already on guard against him as a result.

However, it wasn't the kind of guard one would put up while facing an enemy. Instead, it was a guard against a man — a woman's guard against a man!

There had never been such a man for many years who had made her raise her guard like that. And, that was because they weren't much in her eyes. But, this youngster had given rise to this feeling inside her.

[What am I scared of?]

"I might surprise you," Jun Mo Xie responded in an extremely

calm manner.

"Oh? The Young Master has admittedly surprised me to a fair degree. But, you're talking about an unprecedented feat if you're claiming that you will go from a mid-level Sky Xuan Expert to becoming at least as strong as a Great Master in these insufficient three years. In fact, this would seem like the fancies of a lunatic! I'm only telling you the truth. And, I hope that you don't take offence," Mei Xue Yan replied insipidly.

Some truths needed to be mentioned with regards to Mei Xue Yan's words. Many great heroes had been born in the Xuan Xuan Continent ever since these Battles for Seizing the Heavens had started. After all, times of trouble give rise to great heroes. Therefore, many individual with frightening talents had come up in the past. And, they had achieved miraculous feats.

However, even those who had achieved the greatest of levels at wondrous speed had always reached the Great Master Level after forty years. And, there had never been an exception to this. Baili Luo Yun was already a rare talent with respect to the past thousands of years. After all, he had reached the Earth Xuan Level at the mere age of twenty-five. But, even this genius was nothing compared to the talents this continent's long history could boast about. In fact, Baili Luo Yun wouldn't be able to reach the level of Great Masters before the age of sixty. However, even that was a rare achievement!

Young Master Jun was certainly a once-in-a-millennia rarity for reaching the Sky Xuan Level at the age of sixteen or seventeen. But, there had been around eight-or-ten people like him in the past. But, a young genius doesn't always evolve into an old genius. And, many of those who had reached the Sky Xuan Realm below the age of twenty hadn't reached the level of Great Masters before they had turned hundred despite training without breaks for their entire lives. So, Mei Xue Yan wasn't entirely mocking Jun Mo Xie when she had called his words the 'fancies of a lunatic'.

"Young Mei's words are jewels of wisdom. So, how could this Young Master mind them? But, there are many strange things in this world. And, they are rarely ever achieved by people. Everything depends on the individual. Young Mei is perhaps speaking of things she couldn't do. But, it doesn't mean that others can't do it. After all, the frogs peering into the sky from the well don't know the extent of the stars in the sky; do they?" Jun Mo Xie coldly replied.

Green Hunter was standing on the side. However, she couldn't help but lash out when she heard this, "How dare you have the gall to call us frogs in the well, Jun Mo Xie?"

"Did I say that? Don't tell me that the two of you are such people? I apologies to Young Mei if you've taken that seriously," Jun Mo Xie replied in a calm and collected manner.

"Stop, Green Hunter. The Young Master must have something up his sleeves if he's boasting so deliriously. And, perhaps we are frogs peering out of a well," Mei Xue Yan's speech seemed worded to scold Green Hunter. But, anyone who'd listen to her tone could tell that she clearly talked of Jun Mo Xie overestimating his capabilities.

Chapter 491: A New Wave Rises Before the First One Settles

The corners of the Young Master's mouth curled haughtily. He spoke slowly, "Jun Mo Xie was nothing but a debauchee and a wastrel half a year ago. He was only at Xuan Level Three. He was at the insignificant Jade Xuan Level before going to Southern Heaven City. Jun Mo Xie might not have become as strong as the Tian Fa's Xuan Beast Kings by now, but he has still reached the Sky Xuan middle-level. Young Lady Mei has experience of uncountable years. So, she is very far-sighted. But, how can she judge that I won't be able to reach the level of the Great Masters in these two years plus that will follow? Or an even higher level...? Moreover, you could be calling tomorrow's fact as the ravings of a lunatic!"

Mei Xue Yan was left stumped after she listened to Young Master Jun's "Ravings." [He has transformed from a 'nobody trash' to a Sky Xuan middle rank expert in half-a-year! This transformation isn't something an ordinary person can pull-off. So, why can't he make more breakthroughs in the next two years or so?]

Young Master Jun's voice again rang inside the ears of the stunned and beautiful Mei Xue Yan, "Nothing in this world can stop me from doing something if I want to do it. Even the heavens are no exception!"

The tone of Jun Mo Xie's wordings had been very dull. But, the heroic spirit contained in them had stirred both the women.

Mei Xue Yan narrowed her eyes slowly and absentmindedly. That was because she had found herself believing Jun Mo Xie's arrogant words for some mysterious reason. In fact, she believed them wholeheartedly.

She was someone who possessed a firm and resolute mindset. So, it could be said assumed that his words must've been extremely terrifying to bring about such a change in her.

"I heard that your Aristocratic Hall is auctioning a legendary Bone Tempering pill?" Mei Xue Yan smiled lightly. But, she was circulating her Xuan strength to calm herself as quickly as she could; she was doing this in order to tranquilize her pounding.

"Ha ha, legendary? It's merely an insignificant plaything. Is Young Lady Mei also interested in it?" Jun Mo Xie replied with a smile.

"Insignificant? Young Master Jun speaks very daring words! This 'insignificant plaything' may not be very useful for us Xuan Beast Kings. But, it can make a world of a difference in the Xuan strength of you humans! In fact, it is akin to getting a new lease on life! Hasn't your master told you even this much? Moreover, you've even managed to put them up for auction! I have no choice but to admire the immensity of your courage!"

Mei Xue Yan flashed a slight smile at first. Then, she put on a dignified expression, "I believe that even the Three Holy Lands will send their people to the auction once the authenticity of your pills have been confirmed. After all, pills that can temper one's natural bone structure... something as divine as these pills have never occurred in this world!"

"The Three Holy Lands will also send people? Isn't that impossible? These pills can only make the bones of an ordinary human very compact; that's all. But, the experts in the Three Holy Lands have been consolidating their strength for centuries. So, why would they be interested in this?" Jun Mo Xie was somewhat stunned.

"How is that impossible? You think those pills are ordinary? And, you dare call yourself a Xuan expert!? Don't you know that the human body always remains be a bit uncoordinated? This fact doesn't change even if the individual is a heavenly genius who has trained extremely hard. Consequently, an expert can't make one after another. Therefore, the martial skills of Xuan experts have relative defects. And, we usually call such defects, 'break points.'

Moreover, the speed of their movements is directly related to their bones, muscles, and veins.

"A large number of human experts exhaust their natural capacity. They continue to strive hard in order to increase their strengths. But, they fail to make their breakthroughs."

Mei Xue Yan continued helplessly, "However, most experts can easily make their breakthroughs if they have these kinds of pills in their hands. And yet, you've put these pills up for auction... You know... even experts stronger than the Great Masters can only train in accordance to their natural bone structure. Even they have no means of changing that. But, these Bone Tempering Pills will enable such people to increase their strength a step further since they'll be able to alter their very bone-structure. In fact, even the smallest of transformations would wield results. And, you should know how difficult it is for such strong people to go even a step further in their cultivation..."

"It seems that... I've been negligent in this matter!" Jun Mo Xie pondered and nodded, "It seems that I've been going about this matter in a simple manner."

Jun Mo Xie looked up and said, "Young Lady Mei, many thanks for telling me about this. You two are obviously very strong, but living here must be inconvenient for you. It'd be better if you come to my place. And, you already know Guan Qing Han. Moreover, it'll also be easier for us to have any discussions that way. In fact, we can refer with each other as per convenience."

Jun Mo Xie was already making calculations for the future. [Asking these two pretty chicks to come to my home is akin to getting two extremely powerful defense-type amulets for the Jun Family! These two women are as beautiful as heavenly fairies. And, their strength is even more heavenly!]

[And, they can seriously turn into demons when messed with!]

[This Mei Xue Yan is much stronger than the Great Masters. And,

Green Hunter is as strong as the Great Masters. Moreover, Solitary Falcon is already sitting at home... Our family can easily defend itself against the entire Tian Xiang Empire's Imperial strength with this kind of strength. In fact, all the remaining Great Masters wouldn't be able to do anything if they joined hands. We could even withstand against the strength of the Three Holy Lands if they tried to invade. There are many people around me who can't defend themselves. But, even they will be protected in this manner...]

[I can finally lay down my worries and pay a visit to the Dongfang Family. Then, I can make that long journey to the Silver Blizzard City in order to settle that long-fermented debt.]

The crumbling of the Sword Snow Mountain, and the fulfillment of his third uncle's love — these were the two things that Jun Mo Xie was presently striving to achieve.

[I must train crazy hard whether they stay at my house or not. I must, and I must. I will train hard to break through the levels of Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune and the Hong Jun Pagoda! A breakthrough is the only way in which I can gather more power!]

"Good! Then, we'll shamelessly accept your hospitality. I'll also take this opportunity to have a proper interaction with your master in the hope that we can deepen our cooperation," Mei Xue Yan hesitated for a moment. However, she finally agreed to it.

Jun Mo Xie was left to rejoice.

Therefore, the three people started to move towards the Tian Xiang City. Jun Mo Xie asked a question out of curiosity while they were on route, "Young Lady Mei, you had said that those Wolf-Men roar a chant every time they make a move. What chant was that exactly?"

Mei Xue Yan's pretty eyebrows shot up. She pondered for a while before she spoke, "It was 'Tyrant Crush'... something... I had heard it a very long time ago during the last battle... So, I don't

remember it clearly."

Jun Mo Xie became extremely angry when he first heard those words. He gnashed his teeth and cursed, "Tyrant crushes everything along the path!"

"Ah, yes... that's what they'd say... how do you know...?" Mei Xue Yan wobbled her head a few times before she was able to recall it. However, she then looked at Jun Mo Xie with extreme amazement, "How do you know this? Don't tell me that your master participated in a Battle for Seizing the Heavens!"

"..." Jun Mo Xie remained silent, and started to walk faster.

Jun Mo Xie brought the two women to the Jun Household. He then arranged for them to stay with Guan Qing Han. After all, the women already knew each other. Then, Jun Mo Xie started his unrelenting training. He received a pile of invitations in the days that followed. In fact, these invitations had stacked several feet in height. There were invitations from the Three Princes, and every powerful family of Tian Xiang. Even the Xuan Families while hailed outside the city had come looking for him...

However, Jun Mo Xie had ignored all of them. After all, he had no time to waste on such trivial matters and insignificant individuals while in training.

Tang Yuan had been extremely busy during this period. He had to set up the auction for the Bone Tempering Pills on one hand. And, he also had to deal with the Huang Family on the other. However, he did everything in a very swift and decisive manner.

Fatty soon realized that the upcoming auction wouldn't be an easy affair. It at least wouldn't be like any of the easy auctions he had conducted in the past. But, this auction couldn't be altered even after he had realized that.

The unluckiest was the Golden East City's Huang Family. Their son had left for Tian Xiang City. And, they had been dreaming that

he would return with good tidings. They were even hoping for him to return with a promise of marriage from the Dugu Family. After all, this would make their desires for a rise in the Huang Family's strength come true. They had been waiting and waiting for great tidings... But, they received the grievous news instead...

Their son had suddenly been killed. Moreover, Dugu Zong Heng was extremely angry with them. And, he even wanted to have a tough word with them. The Huang Family obviously began to panic when they heard of this...

The Huang Family hadn't even dealt with Old Man Dugu about that matter when their affiliated businesses were pushed into an all-round crisis. Most of their business partners left overnight and cut any-and-all affiliations with them. Moreover, their main businesses were being suppressed to a point where they couldn't even recover. In fact, they were suffering huge losses on every transaction.

These issues hadn't even subsided when hooligans suddenly started to smash into their venues in order to extort them every few days. Moreover, their family's people couldn't even go out without getting beaten up. In fact, most of them would return covered in bruises.

Some of the local government officers used to sit and chat with their Family's old lord over a bottle of wine under usual circumstances. However, the offices of these officials had suddenly turned into hell for the Huang Family. For example, let's assume that a normal procedure would require three days for completion. However, it could be done in half-a-day for the Huang Family in the past. But now... not even one-third of those procedures were completed in half-a-month. And, they still couldn't complain... That's because the procedures would come to a complete standstill if they did so. This obviously meant that they'd have to go through the entire process again...

As the matters stood, the Huang Family could be called 'stupid' if

they didn't realize that they had offended a powerful entity. Old Man Huang personally went to the Dugu Family. However, he wasn't treated well. In fact, he was able to see his daughter only after going through many difficulties. It was then that he had found out that his grandson had genuinely died. He also learned of the entity his deceased grandson had offended. It turned out that the youngster had offended a family their Huang Family couldn't afford to offend. Plus, the offense was also one they could never afford to commit...

Moreover, this offense was the reason which had led to the youngster's death!

Old Man Huang's legs went weak after he heard the real reason everything that had been happening. In fact, he nearly fainted. He couldn't help but let out violent cries. [Boy, I would've never objected if you had wanted to fight a rival for your love. But, couldn't you have first considered your own standing in front of him? You acted with jealousy towards the Tang and the Jun Family's heirs... And, you even plotted to kill them...? Your heart was cursedly bold!]

[I naturally hate them since they've killed him! But, this hatred seems negligible when compared to the interest of the entire family's survival. After all, there are hundreds of people left in the family. And, all of them still have to eke out a living! And, these issues are more important than that sole boy's life! Much more important!]

The family's wealth had been decreasing at an increasing rate. In fact, it was declining at an extremely alarming rate. Therefore, Old Man Huang decided to discard his dignity and beg forgiveness of Young Master Tang. However, the Huang Family's situation suddenly took a turn for the better just before this happened...

And, this unexpected turn of events made Old Man Huang doubly confident about his situation. He forgot about his plan to apologies. Furthermore, he also decided to make them suffer

instead. [I'll make that Fatty Tang and that Debauchee Jun kneel while begging for forgiveness! I won't let them off easily!]

In fact, Old Man Huang had openly declared, "My Huang Family won't submit to force. It doesn't matter who has offended us — they will pay the price! And, whoever has committed the offence of killing my grandson will repay this debt with their life!

"It doesn't matter who you are!"

"One must pay with their life if they kill someone! This is the heaven's law!"

Old Man Huang gnashed his teeth, and announced the 'truth' of this whole matter, "We had an agreement for marriage with the Dugu Family. But, they've reneged on that agreement in order to get their daughter married to that brat from the Jun Family! They've sold their daughter for glory! And, my Huang Family holds their actions in contempt! But, the engagement has been fixed. So, it must not be altered. My boy has certainly died. But, the Dugu Family's girl will still marry into my Huang Family in accordance with the wedding contract!

"The Heavens are watching the actions of men! Truth and false will be differentiated when the heaven spread their light!"

Old Man Huang was even more unyielding towards Tang Yuan, "My boy accidentally pushed you into that latrine pit since he thought that it was a 'bath', didn't he? And, you refused to forgive his mistake? You kill him at first. But, you didn't stop there. You then used those malicious methods to deal with us! How is this the heaven's law? How is this justice?"

This created a huge uproar. After all, everyone had now learnt that Fatty had fallen into that pit. This made Old Man Tang extremely angry. And, Fatty Tang obviously suffered several times the humiliation and pain once the matter became public. However, it could be said that Fatty Tang had smashed his own foot with the rock that he had picked. After all, these patrons of the Huang

Family might not have appeared if it weren't for the auction of those Bone Tempering pills. Therefore, they would've never learned about the death of that youngster...

Then, the Huang Family also took a meticulous aim at Young Master Jun, "You are the greatest debauchee and wastrel of Tian Xiang? You think that you can do whatever you want because of your master's backing? Do you think your family is super-strong? You ignore the laws, and oppress the people with tyranny! You stole another man's beloved. And then, you even had him killed! What sort of malice is this? How can this behavior be tolerated? Moreover, the girl you're trying to snatch is still my Huang Family's future daughter-in-law! You're courting death!"

The Huang Family also sent out many experts to beat up the low-lives who had caused so much trouble for them a few days ago. They even had the non-cooperating merchants beaten up. And, they only stopped once the grievous howls of pain had started to echo everywhere.

The Huang Family had taken a clear stand — they had vowed to fight against these three powerful and shameless Families. They would never surrender.

The Huang Family was filled with wrath!

All levels of society were shaken and sent in uproar as this new spread. [Who would've imagined that the insignificant Huang Family could be so crazy?! They even have the guts to take on the Dugu, Tang, and Jun Families! And, that too at the same time! Have they eaten something bad and lost their minds?]

[Was that Old Man Huang's head kicked by a donkey? Has his head filled with water? Has he gone insane after his grandson's death? He's provoking the Dugu, Tang, and the Jun Families at the same time. These are the actions of a lunatic! Calling his action 'completely crazy' won't be an exaggeration!]

Countless people were watching these events unfold from a

detached point of view. Most of them thought that the Huang Family was done for.

Then, there were others who speculated that the Huang Family had some backing. After all, how else could they do something like this? How could they even dare to?

Chapter 492: Three Great Pills

However, every family seemed to have smelled different flavors. They continued to watch in a detached manner whilst minding their own business. But, the strangest reaction had come from the Emperor. He had ignored all matters — whether serious or not — ever since the army had returned from the Southern Heaven City. He sat on the throne like a calm fisherman sits on the shore when the sea is enveloped in a storm. [I'll act deaf and mute. It doesn't matter what you do. It doesn't matter what noise you make. Why should any of this affect me?]

However, his obscure behavior had set even more tongues wagging...

....

The news of the Bone Tempering Pill's astonishing strength spread far and wide. And, the Tian Xiang City instantly became a very popular place. A new chariot would enter the city almost every day. It would usually be carrying members from the various Xuan Families. The carriages would leave deep ruts in their wake. This symbolized that they were transporting heavy stuff. Many of them also seemed to be carrying something yellow and white.

There were many people who had arrived as lone travelers. But, they too had brought huge amounts of paper money with them. And, they would start converting them into gold and silver once they had entered the city. Every bank in Tian Xiang had filled with paper money in a few days' time, while all the gold and silver had been transferred into the guest houses and taverns.

And, the people were still endlessly streaming-in from far off places ...

Jun Mo Xie had stepped into the Hong Jun Pagoda the moment he had gotten a second's time after returning home that day. He would absorb the heavenly aura, convert it into energy, and would

then put it to use...

Everyone knew that Jun Mo Xie was at the Jun residence. But, it seemed as if no one had seen him there. And, there were no exceptions to this...

Jun Mo Xie had been training like a madman during this time. However, he was also examining the 'Book of Folk Remedy' more frantically than ever. [Tens of millions of medicinal recipes are recorded inside the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune. So, don't tell me that these millions of recipes don't contain a single one which I can use to improve a person's strength at this time...]

Jun Mo Xie couldn't believe that.

But, it can sometimes be very difficult to find something even if one believes that they exist. He looked everywhere, but still came up empty handed.

However, it wasn't very surprising that his research was turning out this way. It must be mentioned that the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune was supposed to be the most astonishing Xuan art. And, a mere mortal should've never dipped his finger into a pool of such marvelous strength. After all, it contained the ultimate methods for Xuan cultivation. One could explain this better by drawing an analogy — Let's say that a scholar opened the greatest encyclopedia, and tried to search for elementary knowledge in it. One could skim through the entire book, but they'd only obtain superficial knowledge. It wasn't that the level of the book wasn't enough... it was just that the said-scholar's level wasn't enough to read this great encyclopedia...

Jun Mo Xie was unfortunately stuck in a similarly embarrassing situation. The Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune recorded some excellent folk remedies in it. However, it was a pity that he either couldn't refine those pills... or couldn't use those pills if refined. There were some pills which he could refine and use. But, his body was likely to explode after taking even one such pill.

Consequently, he would die...

[This is a super-encyclopedia. So, it is unlikely to leave me disappointed. For example, the Ten Years' pill was an exception to all this. And, I'm sure that there are other 'exceptions' in this encyclopedia. I only need to search some more. I'm sure I'll find something!]

It needs to be mentioned that Young Master Jun had built up great reserves of pills such as the Ten Years' pills during this time. In fact, he now had hundreds of bottles of them. He had also made reserves worth dozens of bottles when it came to the Bone Tempering Pills. So, he was certain that he had enough for his requirements. He had done so because he knew that the Xuan Beasts would only be interested in these pills, and any other pills would've entirely wasted on them...

That's because strength was the most important thing in the eyes of the Xuan Beasts! Strength was also the second most important thing to them! And, the third most important thing was also... strength.

This is what they wanted. This was their sole pursuit.

Young Master Jun had collected hundreds of legendary raw materials in the Tian Fa Forest. Jun Mo Xie had originally collected those materials in order to increase his own strength. And, he certainly had a lot of these divine materials in-store when it came to his own needs. But, he still didn't have enough when it came to the most suitable set of required ingredients. And, most of these would go waste because of this reason...

In fact, he could easily increase his strength over a short period of time if he were start absorbing the efficacies of these medicines. But, there would still be long-term repercussions. Let's take that hundred-year-old ginseng as an example. He could easily increase his strength if he were to take that ginseng; his Qi's quality would also improve...

However, the result wouldn't be too effective. After all, that ginseng had accumulated the efficacy which suited its own composition over these hundred years or so. But, this didn't mean that it was a hundred-percent suitable for human use...

There was a saying that 'every medicine has its side effects'. Therefore, taking only one kind of medicinal herbs would only result in poor results. Moreover, this practice would also bring about an imbalance in his Yin-Yang attributes. After all, something like a ginseng was rich in the masculine Yang attribute, but lacked the same amount of feminine Yin aspects. However, it must be said that the consumer's strength would increase. It was similar to the case of a doctor's first choice medicine when it came to the treatment of a patient who was in dire need. The said-doctor would usually choose the medicine which can deliver the most extreme degree of the urgently required essence. Consuming the ginseng would certainly bring about the needed Yang effect to nourish the consumer's strength. However, it would also create an imbalance by inducing a lack of the Yin attribute in the user's body.

The Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons fruit he had collected in the Tian Fa Forest could serve as another example. This item was extremely precious for the society at large. But, it was insufficient in its independent merit when it came to the top-notch recipes recorded inside Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune. Therefore, he would need an abundance of other high-grade materials to complement its nature. But, Jun Mo Xie still held this item in high regards. And, this wasn't because its grade was higher than that of other items. Instead, it was because Jun Mo Xie could use it as an important ingredient to concoct an exceptional pill once he had entered the sixth layer.

The attributes of the Thousand Evils and Ten Thousand Poisons fruit were very extreme when regarded from the perspective of human use. In fact, they were extremely dark and extremely

demonic. One could certainly attempt to eliminate a great amount of its poisonous nature if they had enough time. However, the immense power of the medicine would still be too much to endure for a regular person. The Xuan Beasts' physiques were absolutely different. But, even they may not have been able to endure it. They would naturally be able to breakthrough their bottlenecks if they were successful in bearing the burden. And, their cultivations would advance exponentially as a result. But, their bodies would explode if they weren't able to handle that burden. And, this would only mean a certain death for them.

Tian Fa Forest's Xuan Beast Kings were well-aware of this danger. But, they were willing to fight through this life-threatening situation in order for their pursuit of strength. This was somewhat like a divine path in the Young Master Jun's eyes. After all, the heavens do extort a price for everything.

This obviously didn't mean that it wasn't a legendary herb. After all, one's strength would increase by leaps and bounds if they were able to consume it... However, this didn't mean that this medicine's properties could be exploited under exception circumstances. One such way was to use to make high-level divine pill. The successful refining of those pills would increase the effectiveness. Moreover, its effects would reach a higher number of individuals. Could such a herb be recklessly squander? Let's take the example of a millennia-old mushroom that can increase a person's strength by a hundred years upon consumption. It needs to be mentioned that mushroom would only be used by one person in its raw form. However, it could be used to give a hundred year worth of strength to ten people in case it was to be refined into a medicinal pill.

The distinction between ease and importance is often ignored. And, the Tian Fa's Sacred Fruit was also an item that made a reluctant addition to this list. The Xuan Beast Kings from Tian Fa wouldn't be the only ones to gain the benefits of this fruit's

properties if Jun Mo Xie was able to refine a pill with it... many other people could also benefit from it.

Therefore, this had to be thought about in a proper manner. Else, it would only be superfluous.

Jun Mo Xie's Xuan cultivation increased unceasingly as the days passed. So, he was already in the midst of breaking through the Sky Xuan middle ranks in accordance to the regular Xuan strength parlance. This effectively meant that he was inching towards the Sky Xuan peak.

Jun Mo Xie would be immersed in considering how he could refine the legendary medicine when he wasn't practicing his cultivation. He had been researching the Book of Folk Remedies very carefully during this time. And, Jun Mo Xie's relentless efforts were finally beginning to pay off. After all, he had finally short-listed some recipes from the massive list of pills that were listed therein.

The "encyclopedia" admittedly had sparse elementary knowledge. But, it didn't mean that the said-knowledge was absent from its text. Moreover, the scarcity of such knowledge also meant that only the extraordinary ones of the said-category were listed therein. It was similar to the case of the Thousand Evils Ten Thousand Poisons fruit. It was a legendary medicinal source for the society at large. But, it was still something they couldn't use without the fear of a negative reaction from it. However, the sixth layer of the Folk Remedies could achieve this feat.

Jun Mo Xie would only read the name and steps of refining the medicines in the past. However, he had now started reading the side information and detailed notes of the same as well.

He had fished out many other kind of pills besides the Ten Year' pills when it came to the category of supplements that could increase one's strength. In fact, he had found seven to eight more kinds of recipes in his hunt for the needle in the haystack.

Moreover, the effects of each of these pills were extraordinary. And, this discovery had obviously given Jun Mo Xie a nice surprise.

However, he had ignored the first and the second level pills. After all, he was at the third level now. So, he obviously wanted to learn to refine the pills of that level.

He had found three such pills — the Vitality Linkage Pill, the Vitality Congregation Pill, and the Heavenly Vitality Pill.

Jun Mo Xie had spent a tremendous amount of effort in short-listing these three pills. In fact, he felt as if sorting through the myriad of the recipes listed in that book was more research than he had ever done in his previous life.

Jun Mo Xie even believed that the entire syllabus of the Beijing University would've been on his fingertips if he had shown such concentrated zeal in his previous life. The language of each country would've been nothing more than a matter of dusting his hand. Even obtaining doctorates or masters of every prestigious university wouldn't have been anything for him. This would've obviously meant that he would've never had to pretend being anyone...

The Vitality Linkage was a divine pill which promoted the speed of the flow of aura through a person's meridians. Moreover, it could be used for Xuan Qi of a normal human and the Primary Qi of Tian Fa's Xuan Beasts. This pill certainly couldn't advance someone's Xuan strength. But, it would greatly advance the speed at which the aura would work inside them.

Let's imagine the speed of water's flow inside a three meter wide river. The speed of water in that river is quite even... neither fast nor slow. And, there's another river of the same breadth. But, the water in this second river is surging with greater speeds. Wouldn't the force of the second river be much greater?

And, the effectiveness of this pill wasn't limited to this

comparison alone! Let's assume that the meridians of a regular person were like a brook. Then, their meridians would resemble a high altitude waterfall after they had taken this pill.

The river would remain the same river. But, its essence would be completely different.

The aim of the Vitality Linkage Pill was to turn a plane river into a mountain waterfall.

Let's assume that a certain expert was able to strike three times in one breath. Then, this person would be able to launch nine strikes in the same time after they had taken this pill. And, there was much more to it. After all, a person's lethality would increase by ten-fold if their battle-efficiency were to increase three-fold in a decisive moment of the fight. Consequently, this minute difference would result in a massive deviation in the final outcome. And, this was especially true for Tian Fa's fast and powerful Xuan Beast Kings. In fact, this pill was almost tailor-made for them. It could even be called the most auspicious potion in the whole world.

Even Jun Mo Xie felt that such an astonishing change was frightening! However, good rewards are often accompanied by high risks. And, this pill also came with its fair-share of dangers. One needed to be above the Spirit Xuan Realm in terms of strength. Still, those without tough and flexible meridians would end up impacting their own meridians in a negative way by using this pill. Then, their entire bodies would burst apart from the negative impact of this pill's efficacy. And, there would be no hoping of saving a person if something like this happened.

The Vitality Congregation Pill...

This medicine was the similar in nature since it couldn't increase strength directly either. But, it could quicken the speed of congregation of the physical strength, spirit strength, primary strength, and Xuan strength inside the body. Moreover, the dantian would also service the rest of the body a hundred times

better; the same stood true for the various vessels connected to it. It could also increase the absorption and transformation of the Qi in the surroundings. Moreover, the speed of training would also increase by leaps and bounds after ingesting this pill. In fact, the previous speed of cultivation would only seem tortoise-like in front of this newly-attained one.

Chapter 493: Concocting Pills

And, the restrictions were the same as the Vitality Linkage Pill. Basically, great rewards are always accompanied with high risk.

It has to be said that anyone could've easily realized that Jun Mo Xie was being an idiot. After all, he hadn't realized that the Vitality Congregation Pill was pretty much the same as the Spirit Amassing Pills from the previous level. However, its effectiveness was far more than that of those pills from the previous.

The Heavenly Vitality Pill...

This pill could be used to increase strength; but, it had no other benefits. It could be said to be an upgraded version of the Ten Years' Pills. Taking one of these pills would increase the strength by fifty years. However, its restrictions were greater than that of the Ten Years' Pills. It couldn't be taken by anyone. Only those at Sky Xuan Realm and above could take these.

Jun Mo Xie was going wild inside the Hong Jun Pagoda. He was laughing and cursing. He yelled out; [Hard work always pays off. This instance proves that one shall get to reap the harvest if the plough the field in a diligent manner. This Young Master has worked so diligently, but he has finally found these three kinds of pills. This is like finding some measure of hope after exhausting oneself rugged whilst being at the edge of desperation.]

However, the Young Master still had some doubts. After all, strength had always been of paramount importance in his mind. Consequently, he believed that the Heavenly Vitality Pill was better than the Vitality Linkage and the Vitality Congregation Pill. After all, it could increase strength by fifty years. [Why would something as amazing and terrifying as the Heavenly Vitality Pill have such a low-level restriction?]

[Moreover, the other two pills are restricted for use until the Spirit Xuan Realm and above. But, the Heavenly Vitality Pill's

restriction is only at the Sky Xuan Level. The disparity between these two is far too much, right? This doesn't make any sense...]

People would've probably beaten him up if they had heard of the doubts he harbored. In fact, the said-individuals would've turned his face into a peach blossom. Those eyes of his' would've puffed, and he would've been left to see stars hovering around him. His head would've resembled that of a pig... or maybe an elephant's posterior. However, they would've at least told him why they had beaten him red... And, it could be assumed that he would've only vomited blood even if he would try to roar in anger afterwards...

He was idiot — a thorough and true idiot! Such a divine level of idiocy would even leave the gods speechless. However, the Young Master was still favored by such amazing fortunes! How could such a great thing fall into the hands of such a big idiot? It seemed as if an excellent cabbage had been awarded to a pig which had dug the earth with its snout...

Jun Mo Xie had seemingly taken permanent residence in the Hong Jun Pagoda. And, he would only do one of two things — He'd either refine the pills, or he'd practice his martial arts. He'd often feel thirsty or hungry. But, he would simply eat some of the "common" ingredients he had stored there. It was a bit of a waste, but it could satiate his thirst and hunger under the circumstances. Moreover, these "common" herbs would also give him energy. He obviously had a huge stock of them in his reserves. So, he didn't bother himself much with them since only a short amount of time was left at his hands.

It was clear that these things weren't of much importance to Jun Mo Xie anymore since he had started to compare these 'mere' materials to the greatest herbs available. Consequently, Young Master Jun was being extravagant and wasteful with them. In fact, he was wasting them recklessly. Any other family of this Xuan Xuan Continent would've held these items in the highest regard. They would've taken rebirth to live a life of extreme torment even

if they had died... but they wouldn't have allowed these herbs to slip out of their hands.

After all, these were top-notch raw materials which came from the very depths of Tian Fa! In fact, these herbs could be considered the accumulation of the many years of horrors in the Tian Fa Forest. After all, how many people in the world were capable of safely reaching the very core of Tian Fa? Even the Eight Great Masters would fear losing their lives if they were to enter the Tian Fa Forest...

Even a hundred-year-old herb would be considered a treasure if it were to be put out in the open market. However, Jun Mo Xie was treating the thousand-year-old ones as carrots... In fact, he was even sighing... [It's tasteless. It doesn't even have salt's taste. It tastes like I'm chewing wax. It's not tasty at all... This Young Master is being mistreated...]

Many old and grey-haired men from the divine medicinal families would've been left striving to get here if this information had gotten out. In fact, they would've fought and smashed each other's heads to rush here first. [I... I... I beg you... I beg you to let me endure this mistreatment instead... I beg you... my whole family of eight generations begs you to allow us to endure this in your place... lets us be mistreated...]

Then, there was that Fatty Tang... A money-grubbing miser like him would've come yelling and crying, "Elder Brother! You're my elder brother! Why don't you bully me instead! I'll take it ten times, a hundred times, whatever you want! But, stop eating these. It's like you're eating a mountain of silver or gold! Mistreat me as much as you want, but stop this..."

Young Master Jun's face would redden once those thousands of years old herbs had reached his belly. Energy would surge through his body, and he would have no place to vent it. So, he'd first circulate his energy smoothly and steadily throughout his body. Then, he'd roar and practice his skill for a long time. After that,

he'd snigger and snort. Then, he'd practice his sword play for a bit. And, he would begin refining the pills again once he was done with this...

Jun Mo Xie was already quite experienced in refining the pills. After all, it could be said that he had gained a fairly rich alchemic experience from frantically refining the Bone Tempering and Ten Years' Pills in the past. However, Jun Mo Xie was confronting the research on these three new pills. And, he rightly believed that he should start with the pill of the lowest level. He would wait till he had garnered more experience before he'd begin to refine the more troublesome and higher-valued Heavenly Vitality Pill. After all, squandering such top-notch ingredients would be a huge waste...

Therefore, his first choice was the pill which was comparatively simpler — the Vitality Linkage Pill.

The Young Master Jun was in high spirits. He assumed a balanced stance to start. It was a most eye-catching stance. After that, he started mumbling the chants he had learnt, "Om... ma mi... ma mi... hong... hong... ma mi... hong..."

Then, he pointed his finger like a sword.

The 'Furnace of Good Fortune' started to whiz. It rose into the air, and started to rotate. It started emitting various vapors and lights of ten-thousand hues along with its rotating motion.

It slowly started to flame-up as the black 'Flame of Primal Chaos' silently leapt up. The flame then rushed up with a loud "Bang!", and covered the furnace. The black flame was moving like thousands of ghostly tongues. The blaze had begun to combust within the furnace. And, the black color of the flame had illuminated the multi-colored 'Furnace of Good Fortune' in a splendid manner...

Jun Mo Xie flashed a prideful smile; he was brimming with confidence. His empty right hand grabbed towards around twenty herbs he had prepared in advance. And, they floated forth very

slowly as a result. In fact, it seemed as if an invisible string was pulling them along. These herbs then entered the furnace one by one... like moths drawn to a flame.

Jun Mo Xie made several fluctuating finger movements. He then heard a "Bang!" as the lid of the furnace flew up. But, it only flew up for a second before rejoining the main body of the furnace. Then, there was another explosion as the Flame of Primal Chaos soared. And, the entire furnace was surrounded by it in an instant as a result.

Jun Mo Xie moved his limbs in accordance to the requirement for the refining of the pills. He moved around the black flame as his fingers made many gestures. Consequently, energy surged from within his body to support the combustion of the Flame of Primal Chaos.

Time passed quickly. However, Young Master Jun suddenly felt that something was wrong.

[Damn! I've been refining these pills for a long while now. In fact, I guess that I've already spent at least ten-fold the time I've ever spent on any of the pills I've refined in the past. So, how come I haven't witnessed any activity yet? I would've taken the pills out of the furnace by now if these were the Ten Years' Pills. But, there hadn't been any development in the case of these pills! What's going on...?]

A good while passed, and Jun Mo Xie started feeling that his energy had drained. He felt his mental strength waning, and he was on the verge of passing out. His legs felt weak, and his body had become damp from the excessive sweating. The Young Master's energy was nearly bottoming out. However, there hadn't been any activity from the dark flames surrounding the furnace.

[I must stand firm! This is a very crucial moment! I can't screw up! I must stand firm!]

Jun Mo Xie clenched his teeth, took out a Ten Years' Pill, and

threw it into his mouth. [It can't increase my strength anymore, but it can still restore my energy.]

....

The Goddess of Fortune favored the Young Master once more when he was completely exhausted, and wasn't able to continue any further... There was a sound of a gong from the furnace, and its lid flew into the sky with a gentle sound resembling that of birds. The Flame of Primal Chaos silently withdrew, and slowly crumbled into a small heap inside the furnace.

"Heavens be damned! It's too difficult! How can it be so difficult? It isn't like the Bone Tempering Pills or the majority of other pills! How can it be so difficult? This process nearly killed this Young Master!" Jun Mo Xie panted hoarsely. He was sweating very profusely. His legs shuddered like noodles for a moment. Then, they eventually buckled. And, he was forced to sit as a result. It was like he had done a lot of work throughout many nights without rest. He was like a horse which had run thousands of miles without a moment's rest. His tongue poked out as he continued to pant and shake for a long while. He then stood up with difficulty, and stretched his neck to look into the furnace.

"How could this be?" Jun Mo Xie exclaimed in shock. He couldn't believe what he was seeing. Consequently, the Young Master rubbed his eyes, and stared at it again.

A heap of black ash quietly lay in the furnace...

Jun Mo Xie felt like an inflated balloon that was leaking air; he felt paralyzed. His body's reserves had been depleted in their entirety. His energy had been pushed beyond the limit. And, his confidence had suffered a crushing blow. [I wasted so much energy, and I still failed! Fu*k me! How could it be so difficult?]

"Fu*k! I don't believe this evil sorcery! I will sort you out. Don't think that I can't bring you under my control just because I've failed once!" Jun Mo Xie's expression was fierce as he jumped up

and raised his finger to the sky. Then, he closed his eyes and initiated the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune once more with the entirety of his strength.

His dantian warmed up, and started palpitating. Then, a stream of pure energy flew out, and rushed through his meridians. The divine aura inside the Hong Jun Pagoda violently started moving towards Jun Mo Xie like tornados on a sea.

A long and immeasurable period of time elapsed. Jun Mo Xie's eyes suddenly emitted a sharp radiance as they opened. His physical stamina and energy had been restored to its optimum. But, further investigations made Jun Mo Xie realize that his 'energy overdraft' limit had surprisingly increased from its previous limit.

This increase in overdraft limit was a great step towards the next level inside the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune. In fact, he could clearly feel that his ability to absorb aura had increased by three or four times.

"That's strange!" Jun Mo Xie scratched his head. Then, he got out into his courtyard, and realized that his effort in refining those pills had taken no less than a full day and a night if the subsequent recovery of his strength was also taken into account.

He had stayed in the Hong Jun Pagoda for over ten days if everything was to be taken into account. His originally snow-white gown had become so filthy that it couldn't even be looked at. His hair was disheveled and dirty. In fact, it appeared like he had been into a chicken coop. His face had many black marks, and his sweat was flooding the floor. He'd look like a beggar... even to beggars.

Jun Mo Xie quickly gave a few orders to make arrangements. Then, he hurriedly slipped into the large bathtub, and scrubbed himself clean. And, he also thought about what had happened as he did so...

He didn't even know how lucky he was that he hadn't chosen the

pill which was even more difficult. He had only chosen the second-tier Vitality Linkage Pill. He would've been in a much worse-off condition if he had picked the Vitality Congregation Pill instead. However, things would've been different if he had chosen the easy Heavenly Vitality Pill. In fact, it was possible that he would've been done with the refining by now...

Chapter 494: Treacherous Countermeasures

However, someone was of the Young Master's level of idiocy was obviously ignorant of this fact. In fact, his failure in refining these pills had led him to believe that these super-pills were extremely difficult to refine and master. He believed that the Heavenly Vitality Pill was the most effective pill in this list of three. And, he also took it to be the most precious one as well. Therefore, he assumed that its refining process must be even harder than this Vitality Linkage Pill...

Jun Mo Xie intended to go back into the Hong Jun Pagoda for another round of struggle once he had bathed and rested.

Little Ke's face small face had become red with embarrassment while she waited upon him on the side. She looked at the Young Master's fair, robust, and strong body. She felt that his body was glistening with a mysterious glitter of gems. Subsequently, her small face became redder, and her body became warmer. The little girl's heart was beating wildly. Her pretty eyes were wandering about to dodge the sight of it. But, she still couldn't control her urge to peak every now and then...

[He is so good looking! How can he be so good looking? The Young Master is a real man...] The little girl was thinking to herself.

"What? The Third Young Master has returned? Let me in... why? Why won't you let me in? I'm his brother! A good brother, do you know? He's taking a bath? Damn! We're both men! So, what difference does it make if I go in while he's taking a bath? You think I'll rape him? Get the fu*k out of my way!" a resentment-laced yelling was heard as Tang Yuan tried to enter the Young Master's bathing space.

Tang Yuan entered through the door with a "Bang!" The door of

the Young Master's bathroom was very narrow. So, the Fatty had to force himself through the door. Jun Mo Xie was resting in his bathtub with eyes closed. However, he instantly opened his eyes and stared blankly. Tang Yuan had seen all of him. So, how could he not feel angry?

"Third Young Master... I'll die of anger... I'll genuinely die of anger!" Tang Yuan raged in front of Jun Mo Xie. In fact, he nearly spewed fire, "There's this matter... that Huang Family... that Huang Family doesn't understand their place! They want me to pay with my life for their lowly "treasured" son! They still want to hold their dead kid's marriage! They want the Dugu Family's Xiao Yi to marry to their son's memorial tablet. They're very repulsive! They even want you — Third Young Master Jun — to go and kneel in front of their son's memorial tablet as an apology in admission of your 'mistakes'! What in the world is happening!? This is like a fu*king rabbit trying to threaten a wolf!"

"What happened, Fatty?" Young Master Jun closed his eyes, frowned, and reclined backwards in his bathtub. He was getting impatient. [I'm butt-naked here. It would've been one thing if we were in a public bath since everyone else would've also been naked. So, the environment would've been one of trust and comfort. And, I too would've had no problems in that. Moreover, I've got an amazing body. So, I would've even left you feeling inferior. But, I open my eyes to find you covering my bathtub with saliva whilst being fully dressed... This is so embarrassing for me...]

"Elder Brother, you don't know what has been happening. I don't what has happened with that Huang Family. They've suddenly become bold and aggressive now... In fact, their aggression is even worse than a mad dog's!" Tang Yuan was jumping up and down. There was an air of maliciousness to him.

"They had put out a strong statement in the public. They were acting extremely recklessly, and I couldn't stand them. I had decided to send some troops to exterminate them. But, I don't

know what's going on with my grandfather. My grandfather sent a messenger to the Aristocratic Hall, and he warned me against taking any reckless actions. Even the Dugu Family has decided to hold their troops back for now. I'm fu*king depressed right now. Don't tell me that this insignificant Huang Family can somehow flip the heavens?"

"Huang Family? They're acting arrogantly?" Jun Mo Xie had been training and refining pills over the last few days. So, he was left baffled for a second. He gradually gathered his thought, and quickly sat up with a splash of water. However, the Young Master's face had a serious expression now.

And, that's because Jun Mo Xie had suddenly remembered the time when he had ordered Huang Shu Liu's execution... Dugu Wu Di's second wife had said something. And, it must be mentioned that she also hailed from the Huang Family, "One of my relatives is a member of the Boundless Ocean of Blood."

And, Mei Xue Yan's words had also appeared inside his mind at the same time, "That pill of yours is truly miraculous. I believe that this auction for the Bone Tempering Pills could likely draw people from the Three Holy Lands as well."

Jun Mo Xie frowned and thought to himself; [Don't tell me it has genuinely drawn a move from the people from the Boundless Ocean of Blood amidst the Three Holy Lands? And, is there a chance that the Huang Family's relative is also involved in this instance? But, this is too great a coincidence, isn't it?]

"Don't worry, Fatty! Worrying won't do fart! Tell me everything in detail; what happened when you started taking those actions... And, don't omit a single thing!" Jun Mo Xie closed his eyes again, and returned to his reclining position. But, his mind was working at a great speed as he pondered over Tang Yuan's narration. In fact, he didn't allow any words of Tang Yuan to slip from his notice.

That's because he wanted to glean some sort of truth from those tiny clues.

Tang Yuan was also a man with an extraordinary temperament. He had certainly been fired up and enraged a moment ago. However, he too had realized that something was up. There was a flash in his mind, and he didn't dare continue with babbling his nonsense. Instead, he honestly talked about the various matters which had taken place. Moreover, he narrated matters in extreme detail, and to the best of his ability.

He believed that his elder brother Jun Mo Xie was someone who was afraid of nothing. [Have I ever seen such a cautious expression on his face? Don't tell me that this matter is genuinely very serious? Is a terrifying and amazing person hiding amongst the Huang Family's people?]

Jun Mo Xie listened to the words Tang Yuan spoke — The Huang Family didn't have the strength to fight back in the beginning. They were even ready to ask for forgiveness. The entire family was extremely alarmed, and was at a loss to do anything. They were like the spirits of the dead at that time. But, they suddenly underwent an unexplainable transformation over the last few days. They went from bowing and begging... to becoming extremely arrogant and unyielding.

Moreover, the many demands they had put forth couldn't be accepted by any of the three powerful families. The Huang Family clearly wanted to embarrass all of them. In fact, it seemed as if they wanted to establish themselves above the might of these three big families...

[How can the Huang Family dare to do this? Let's look around at the powers of the world... Even the help of the Imperial Family... or other powerful families around the world wouldn't be enough to act as assurance. So, how can they dare to do this?]

Jun Mo Xie pondered over that issue. [The Huang Family's

decision can't be one of stupidity. After all, they had readied themselves to compromise in the beginning. So, it is unlikely that they would wish to play with the lives of their family's people.] Therefore, this sudden and massive change in their attitude had left Jun Mo Xie to draw the final conclusion...

[I believe that the Huang Family's relative has suddenly returned from the Boundless Ocean of Blood. Otherwise, the Huang Family would've never dared to court disaster in this manner even if they were very gutsy. And, that's because they know that they wouldn't have any means of retreat once they had taken this stance...]

[But, this matter will take an entirely different turn if the Huang Family's relative from the legendary Boundless Ocean of Blood has returned to support them. After all, the Huang Family can challenge the Jun, the Tang, and the Dugu Family with the help of the Boundless Ocean of Blood. In fact, they could even challenge a colossal like the Silver Blizzard City.]

[However, the Huang Family has been thundering so ferociously for many days. But, the thunderous clouds haven't rained thus far.] This made Jun Mo Xie even more certain about what Mei Xue Yan had said — These people had come for the Bone Tempering Pills!

"Tang Yuan, keep calm." Jun Mo Xie de-emphasized the problem and spoke, "Is the insignificant Huang Family worth making such a fuss about? I'll be a bit busy over the next few days. So, let's leave this matter aside for the time being. Anyway, revenge can get even more pleasurable if its extracted little by little."

Fatty was stunned by this. He wasn't going to oppose Jun Mo Xie's statement. After all, oppressing someone little by little was indeed very pleasing. But, the issue was the manner in which Jun Mo Xie was behaving right now.

"Moreover, the Bone Tempering Pills can't be stored inside the Aristocratic Hall anymore. I'll ask Solitary Falcon to go with you in order to retrieve them. It's safer for them to be kept here with me,"

A cold light flashed in Jun Mo Xie's eyes. [You want to mess with me? You want my Bone Tempering Pills? You think that things can get so easy in life? I don't care whether you're the Boundless Ocean of Blood or anyone else! What can the Three Holy Lands do? You must be prepared to be destroyed by my hand if you wish to fight me! So, you think that you have enough to hoot at this Young Master...? This Young Master has decided that he won't kill you in one shot. I'm going to kill you after I've slowly tortured you!]

It was an extremely safe bet to send Solitary Falcon to retrieve the Bone Tempering Pills. After all, he'd fare fine even if the remaining Great Masters attacked him together. Solitary Falcon would certainly be no match for them. But, he could fly away in retreat with ease...

"Ah, that's also good. There has been a lot of activity around the Aristocratic Hall at night-time in the recent days. Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang have been keeping watch. But, even that has yielded very little results. I was beginning to get scared..." Tang Yuan acted like he was wiping off cold sweat. Song Shang and Hai Chen Feng would've cut his flesh off if they had heard this.

They had been dealing with this night-time activity every night. And, they were left half-dead every night. In fact, the Aristocratic Hall would've been torn down by now if it weren't for those two. Meanwhile, Tang Yuan's snores had been shaking up the entire Tian Xiang City during the night hours. In fact, it was possible that his snores had reached five kilometers beyond the city's perimeter. So, to say that he was scared and on the edge...

"Ah. And, there's no need for you to put your life at stake in case someone captures you in order to interrogate about the whereabouts of these pills. You will even tell them that those pills are in the 'Elegant Fragrance Courtyard' of the Jun Family's residence. Moreover, you will tell them that the ones stored here are the best ones," Jun Mo Xie had said this in a very serious manner.

"Why?" Tang Yuan asked puzzled. "The Elegant Fragrance Courtyard...? But, that's where Sister Qing Han lives! What would happen if anyone bursts into that place? It wouldn't be good for Sister Qing Han as a woman, right?"

"That'll be fine! That'll be completely fine!" Jun Mo Xie was all smiles as he spoke, "You don't need to worry about those trivial details. You simply tell anyone what I told you to if you get captured. Listen to me, and don't worry!"

[Fatty, you only know that Sister Qing Han lives there. But, how could you know that she has been joined by two tigresses now? Bah! They aren't even tigresses! They're much fiercer! Those two are queen-tigresses!]

[It won't matter who these people are... They'll die a miserable death as long as they believe you and go there to steal those pills! In fact, it would be like someone lighting candle light at a barrel of gunpowder; they'd get blasted into pieces. The result will be the same no matter how someone goes about it...]

And, this couldn't be called a lie either. After all, Young Master Jun had given some pills to Mei Xue Yan, and had requested her to examine them...

[He he he... This is a death trap. It's a death trap which can't be broken through...]

Tang Yuan nodded in a daze. He didn't know what Jun Mo Xie meant by it, but he chose to believe him. The matter had been more-or-less discussed. And, the water in Jun Mo Xie's bathtub was getting cold. Therefore, Jun Mo Xie opened his eyes and glared, "Haven't you seen enough already?"

Fatty Tang was left to stutter, "Huh? Haven't I seen enough?"

"You've seen enough, but you're still not hurrying out! Get lost! Quickly! I have to get dressed!" Jun Mo Xie spoke ferociously, "You're a grown man staring at another grown man while he's

naked! I didn't know that you take pleasure in this!"

Chapter 495: Tian Fa Sends a Batch of Herbs

"Hang on! Do you think I want to see your naked ass? I used to avoid looking at your body even when we used to take hot baths. Brother, you're so thin that it's nauseating!" The corners of Tang Yuan's mouth twitched in disdain. But, those twitching corners appeared to be a smile because his face had many layers of fat on it. He stood up and patted his extremely huge posterior. Then, he went out the door.

"Fatty, you broke through my door! I'll cut five-thousand coins from your share to compensate for it..." Fatty Tang had talked rudely. He had even ridiculed Jun Mo Xie's majestic body. Young Master Jun couldn't help but get mad, "...and those will be gold coins!"

A 'plop' sounds came from outside as Tang Yuan tumbled to the ground; [Five-thousand... gold coins? What kind of a door is that expensive...?]

Jun Mo Xie slowly dried the wet spots on his body. Then, the red-faced Little Ke helped him get into dry clothes... It had to be said that coming over to this world had done a lot of harm to Jun Mo Xie. After all, the assassin used to be self-sufficient in his previous life. However, he had now gotten accustomed to a lifestyle wherein he relied on others to even get his clothes for him. This is what genuine depravity is about...

Young Master Jun got into his gown. He again looked neat and charming now. Then, Jun Mo Xie lightly pinched Little Ke's cheek. And, this made her pout in a playful protest. He laughed at that, and quickly went out to look for Solitary Falcon so that he could get him to retrieve those pills from the Aristocratic Hall.

Jun Zhan Tian and Jun Wu Yi were making preparations to go over the important rituals required to recognize Guan Qing Han as an adopted daughter. However, there was another jobless old man

in the Jun Family's residence these days — Dugu Zong Heng!

Dugu Zong Heng would come over to the Jun Family's residence every day ever since he had heard that Jun Mo Xie could heal his injuries. Both these powerful families were already acquaintances. Moreover, they would soon be related by marriage. So, Dugu Zong Heng didn't feel like an outsider over here. However, everyone in the Jun residence was always frantically running around since they were very busy. Also, Jun Mo Xie didn't seem to have any time on his hands over the past few days. Dugu Zong Heng waited with patience for a few days. But, he eventually started to get resentful. Thus, the Old Man Dugu's frighteningly loud voice was frequently heard around the Jun Family's residence. In fact, it was like a thunderbolt in the clear sky. It was much like Tang Yuan's nightly snoring which used to startle people even four to nine kilometers outside the city's walls....

This made the servants at the Jun residence realize that they were blessed to be serving Jun Zhan Tian instead...

It was then that Jun Mo Xie rushed-in with his divine medications, and quickly treated Old Man Dugu. There was nothing to treat when we come to speak of it. After all, the Young Master was merely required to insert a few needles into Dugu Zong Heng's fleshy posterior, and circle his aura through Old Man Dugu's meridians via the Art of Unlocking the Heaven's Fortune.

This process didn't take much effort, but Dugu Zong Heng suddenly felt as if most of his body had lightened up. Consequently, the Old Man roared that Young Master Jun was a divine doctor! However, that roughened Old Man was quite shrewd by nature within. He had carefully recorded what-and-where Jun Mo Xie had given him during the acupuncture treatment. He had even muttered to himself in doubt. [There's nothing in that area besides meat. Do acupuncture points genuinely exist over there? How can the mere usage of needles on my ass show such results?]

[This is very strange!] This also led Dugu Zong Heng to consult the many other 'divine doctors' inside the capital's premises. But, he only rained curses at each one of them afterwards. That's because these doctors' caliber was identical to each other. They had inserted the needles in the same places. Even the pain he had felt as similar when it comes to the intensity. However, the effects weren't similar to Jun Mo Xie's treatment in any manner. The Old Man couldn't help but lament at this. [It's not surprising that there's such a dearth of doctors who can cure this problem...]

Old Man Dugu had often trusted these doctors for the treatment of his now-cured injury in the past. So, how could he not rain curses at them? [Your treatment is very ordinary! Your ordinary treatment causes nothing but pain! You are good for nothing!] Several of the doctors had nearly gone insane after facing the Old Man's wrath.

He had only been through one session of the treatment. So, it hadn't rooted out the problem yet. But, Dugu Zong Heng was still very satisfied. After all, he hadn't felt such a relaxed, pleasing, and comfortable sensation for many decades. He crossed paths with Jun Zhan Tian the same evening. And, he drank a lot that evening. In fact, he drank enough to lose his bearings. He had drunk so much after so many years... So, how could he not get high on it?

Jun Mo Xie returned to the Hong Jun Pagoda in the midst of this chaos, and began his struggle again. But, he soon discovered that his skills and capabilities could see a major enhancement upon being replenished after reaching a state of full-fledged exhaustion.

....

In the far south...

Two large men were vigorously riding northwards. Their mounts could've been called 'horses', but they had horns on their heads. Moreover, their heads weren't as long. They could be called 'deer', but their hooves were circular. Moreover, one could see white hair

underneath their hooves when they were raised. In fact, it seemed like they were wearing some sort of hoof mittens. But, they moved with lightning speed. It was needless to talk about regular horses... because even the legendary warhorses couldn't compare with them.

However, it was even more strange was that these men weren't riding on any saddles. They weren't using any reigns, or stirrups either; nor were they shouting commands at their mounts. But, those strange steeds were still able to detect the routes by themselves. Moreover, the expressions of those two men made it seem as if this was a perfectly normal thing...

There was a huge package at the back of each of those two steeds. These packages were terrifyingly big in size. And, it was evident that they were of considerable weight.

These two men had come upon many people with shining eyes and drooling mouths all through their journey.

That was because those two packages were emitting the smell of medicinal herbs. In fact, they smelled like first-rate medicinal herbs! No! Even top-notch rarities couldn't describe the preciousness of those herbs. So, calling them 'legendary treasures from the heavens' was more appropriate...

Their scent was enough to attract anyone! An individual wouldn't even need to consume them — the said-individual would feel extremely energetic and refreshed even if they were to sniff these through their buttocks.

It was obvious that such herbs would attract the attention and intentions of many people.

Therefore, the journey of these two men couldn't be considered peaceful by any means. Countless pharmacists had approached them to buy those ingredients at great prices. Countless medicinal families had come up with some plans. And, the small-time thieves and robbers who had tried to steal those ingredients were many

more in number.

However, these two big men had fearlessly continued onwards with their journey in a brazen manner. They had hardly paid any mind the whole journey. They moved calmly and peacefully. Even the successive waves of the robbers didn't seem to affect them. In fact, they didn't pay any attention to anyone...

They were already half-way to their destination, and hadn't been delayed in any manner. Moreover, their long gowns were still bright and neat... not a speck of dust had dirtied them.

In fact, the two men had been chatting throughout the journey... as if they were on a pleasant picnic.

"Fourth Elder Brother, this journey is long, but it's still quite pleasant... ha ha!" This large man wore an embroidered gown. He had large hoops around his tiger-like eyes. Vivacious whiskers were jutting outwards from his cheeks. These whiskers seemed similar to that of a young dragon. In fact, it felt as if they were made of strips of iron. This person's stature would only leave a person to think of flattering words like... Majestic! Valiant! Mighty! Lofty! Robust! Elegant! Sturdy!

"Ah, Old Ninth... you said... you said... Ah... this Fourth Elder Brother of yours doesn't know what he must say about you... Why did you insist on coming along... I would've rode on Third Elder Brother's back if it hadn't been for your shameless persistence. And, we would've been there by now in that case. But, here we are right now..."

The other person was of the same body-type. However, he was even more tall and sturdy. He was very big. In fact, he genuinely resembled a bear. But, his tone was nevertheless one of complaint, "There was no need to bump-about on this extremely long road. I'm truly unlucky. Your Fourth Elder Brother has suffered a lot because of you. I could've spent this time doing..."

"Fourth Elder Brother, he he... you also know that I haven't come

out to play for so many decades. I never get such an opportunity. He he... And this is a good journey. This road is very good. Take a look at all this enchanting scenery! We can do so many things on this road! This is the happiest day of my life! It's like a mythical day!"

The sturdy big man in the embroidered gown smiled as his eyes filled with satisfaction. He smacked his lips and spoke, "The only pity is that I can't help but break these people so easily... One small tap and they go lying on the ground. That's no fun in any way! Tell me, can some Spirit Xuan or Great Master Level robbers come to rob us...?"

"Bullshit! I spit on your face! What bullshit are you spewing? How many people in this world can withstand a hit from you — the Golden Tiger King? And then, you even want some Spirit Xuan or Great Master Level robbers to come and way-lay us like lowly thieves...? What are you thinking? Someone with your intelligence should never say that you know me! I'm so wise and far-sighted, but I can't lose this image!"

The big and burly man unhappily rolled his eyes, and gave a long sigh, "Damn, that Third... Old Crane is too much! He didn't come himself, but he didn't even allow the Falcon King to drop the two of us off! He's so heartless to make us go on this journey like this! Once I return..."

"I don't think going slow is a bad thing," The Golden Tiger King — Earth Cracker — scratched his head. He seemed somewhat embarrassed, "I have a fear of heights."

"That's the reason I call you a burden!" The big and burly Bear King — Big Bear — berated without a trace of gentleness. "I didn't want you to come, but you wanted to come! Things would've been better if you had let Third Brother come instead! Just take a look at how much trouble we've provoked the entire journey? You've been slaughtering people the entire journey!"

"He he he..." The Tiger King gave a flattered smile as he cracked his knuckles. "But, isn't this so much more fun, Fourth Elder Brother? But, these people have no good supporters behind them. It would've been nice even if they had the support of some Spirit Xuan person. It is such a disappointment..."

Big Bear gave him an unhappy look, and sighed deeply. He seemed to be very depressed.

"Ah, Fourth Elder Brother... this opportunity to go to the Tian Xiang City is very rare! We can play around for many days!" The Golden Tiger King's face was painted in shades of greed, "Merely delivering these ingredients isn't satisfying enough. It's not as good as staying there for a few days, and searching for people who can play some matches with us. I'm guessing that there are bound to be a few such people in Tian Xiang. Or maybe, we'll come across that mysterious Senior again. Maybe he'll quench our light thirst, he he..."

"You pig-headed idiot! Haven't you quenched your 'slight thirst' enough?" Big Bear started to rain curses, "Alas... How can I have a sworn brother such as you? Don't speak to me! I feel frustrated the moment I look at you! I can't wait to meet the others. I want them to know that I'm thinking of disowning you as a younger brother of mine!"

"He he... Calm down Fourth Brother, calm down... you must seriously calm your anger..." The Tiger King smirked. The Bear King had no option but to slap his head with a sigh. This was like when he was with Long Crane and moved about with him regularly. Big Bear could clearly understand how Long Crane must've felt at that time... It was the feeling of wanting to raise his leg, and kicking that shameless idiot besides him to death...

[Brother Crane must've wanted to kick me to death then!] Big Bear snorted. [Damn it! I'll settle these debts once I get back! This ought to have been his payback for the countless times he must've wanted to kick me to death in the past!]

Chapter 496: Huang Family's Supporter

[This is too much to handle. But, a brother is a brother.] Big Bear remained silently thought. He then rebuked and gnashed his teeth as he looked at the Tiger King — Earth Cracker. Then, he suddenly felt a sense of sympathy the next moment...

[Everyone has a character-trait worth being kicked to death over...]

These two big men were obviously carrying out the agreement they had made with Jun Mo Xie while he was disguised as the Mysterious Master back in Tian Fa. The first batch of the herbs was being delivered to the Tian Xiang City from Tian Fa by these two Xuan Beast Kings.

The Xuan Beast Kings had done nothing else after Jun Mo Xie had left. They had urgently tasked all the Xuan Beasts to search for the legendary medicinal herbs. And, they had collected them till they had enough to make one batch. Then, the Beast Kings had decided to deliver those herbs without delay...

The situation between the seven Beast Kings had nearly devolved into a fight when they came to deciding which two would escort the consignment. After all, 'trips' like these very rare to come by. In fact, it was basically like an 'all expenses paid' trip. Moreover, there was a chance that they might get some extra rewards from that Mysterious Master... So, who wouldn't wish to go on this trip?

The Bear King and the Tiger King fought hard, and won the right to escort the material in the end. After all, Long Crane was obviously required to stay back and preside over the forest. Big Bear had believed that — [I obviously won't stay behind and take command in the present conditions. Tian Fa would become a place for daily high-stake duels if I stayed behind and oversaw things. There even might be another Xuan Beast uprising...]

Long Crane had been confronted with the annoying menace of

these shameless rascals. Therefore, he had no choice but to wrinkle his nose, and admit defeat. But, he set one rule before the two selected Beast Kings left — [You two will have to travel on foot! I won't allow the use of any flying beast!]

Would the flying Xuan Beasts dare to move out once the Crane King had given that order?

Henceforth, Big Bear felt wronged throughout the journey.

However, the Tiger King hadn't left the Tian Fa Forest in several decades. So, everything he saw seemed refreshing to him. He had been happy and excited throughout the journey. And, this had made Big Bear so resentful and sullen that he had no option but to vent those feelings out...

The Tiger King wasn't as learned as his companion. So, this trip had been a very pleasant and unique experience for him. In fact, he felt that his cheeks had somewhat stiffened from smiling too much. But, the look on his Fourth Elder Brother's face had made it obvious that the latter was brimming with resentment down to his very belly.

They had been attacked regularly by robbers. And, those robbers had become the target-vents for their resentments. Else, it could be assumed that Big Bear would've lectured Earth Cracker into a depression over the course of the journey.

The two Beast Kings were getting increasingly closer to the Tian Xiang City as they leisurely went-on with their journey. In fact, they seemed to be enjoying the attacks they had been facing their entire journey. Could those common-robbers rival these two Beast Kings? Those greedy folks were obviously being used for target practice...

The Golden Tiger King had been playing around the entire journey. He would first expose his aura into the surroundings in attempts to lure competition. Then, he'd sling a bag of those hundred-year-old herbs over his shoulder for everyone to see.

Consequently, the robbers would come rushing like bees to honey...

He had even proposed out of excitement, "We don't need to fly the next time either if we're sent to do something like this, Elder Brother! Damn! Flying over isn't half as much fun! But, this is too great..."

Big Bear rolled his eyes unhappily, "You think you're getting a chance the next time? I've got nothing to say to you if that's the case. And, let me tell you something for your own sake — don't try to worm your way into getting on my good side. I don't want to be around you..."

The Tiger King smiled in a silly manner. He continued to flatter his counterpart... And, these two men continued onwards like this their entire journey...

.....

Golden East City... The Huang Family's residence...

A purple-robed old man slowly settled onto a chair in the middle of the drawing room. He had grey and white hair, and his grey eyebrows were slanted upwards. He seemed to be giving off a very fierce aura even though he was motionless. But, his cheeks were exceptionally rosy and glossy. The grey and white hair on his head seemed very unique but mutually incompatible in their two shades. This man's facial features strangely appeared similar to someone who was around thirty to forty years old. In fact, he gave off a feeling of youthful appearance despite his age. His eyes were slightly narrowed, but the light flashing in them seemed to carry substance. He hadn't spoken anything, but his personality seemed as vast as the oceans. There was no way anyone could see through, or even read him. He was sitting so calmly that it seemed as if he had already integrated into the surroundings.

It seemed as if he had melted into the vast ocean of the universe!

This man seemed one with the nature!

This purple-clad man had already surpassed the level of Great Masters.

Five to six people were seated beside him. They didn't look very young either. And, they were also adorned in purple clothing. Each of these calmly seated people had grizzly hair. Everyone seemed to be wearing the same kind of clothes at first glance. But, a discerning eye could tell the difference. The collar and cuffs of the purple-robed old man were resplendent gold. But, those of other purple-robed people beside him were embroidered in silver. Silver and gold — this distinguished their status in the hierarchy.

There was a middle-aged man amongst them. He seemed about thirty-to-forty years old. However, his robe also had golden collar and cuffs. He had dense eyebrows, but a pair of slender eyes. This purple-robed middle-aged man seemed to be the youngest in this group. But, it seemed that his hierarchical status was at par with the golden-cuffed purple-clad old man seated beside him.

The eight people were drinking tea in silence. In fact, they hadn't made any sounds in a long time.

Even the portraits of the Huang Family's people couldn't match up to these people. One pretty black-clothed maid was pouring warm water into the tea leaves. And then, there was the Huang Family's family lord — Huang Jun. A smile of flattery was spread across his face. He was seated so cautiously that solemnly that his buttocks had only occupied half the seat. His second younger brother — Huang Ri — was seated opposite to him. His countenance was even worse than his elder brother's. His face had turned deathly pale, and he was nearly trembling with fear. But, his expression conveyed an unspeakable excitement as well.

"What happened regarding that matter?" the old man in purple clothing asked. He was the one who was seated in the center; he hadn't even moved his head when he had asked this.

"The news has been spread far and wide. I'm sure that those three powerful families must've heard of it by now. However, our ancestor and all these seniors are here. So, I'm sure that we have victory in our grasp. I'm sure of it! The Jun, Tang, and Dugu Families may be the top families of this world. But, they are still people of this mortal world. And, ancestor and all these seniors are gods in comparison! So, there's obviously no comparison! He he he..." Huang Jun lowered his back as he respectfully replied.

"This Old Man hasn't visited this mortal realm in seventy-nine years, but I had never expected to find such enormous changes!" The purple-clad old man snorted. His eyelids didn't even rise as he continued darkly, "My Huang Family may not have been considered a Great Family in those days. But, no one would ever dare to provoke us. But, you unworthy children have ruined the family prestige left by your ancestors! This pains me greatly! This Old Man would've slapped you brothers to death to avoid tarnishing this family's name if you two didn't have the Huang blood running through your veins."

He suddenly changed the topic and opened his eyes wide. They shone as they looked at Huang Jun, "And, you're particularly degenerate, you bastard! You were being humiliated so greatly, and you still accepted all that humiliation...? You accepted it! They've killed your grandson and destroyed a great part of your family! Yet, you were willing to go and plead them? You would plead with them to let this family off lightly? This is an enormous joke! Don't you know that one can control their destiny with hard work? It's fortunate that this old man has arrived at this time! Otherwise, you degenerate children would've led this family to absolute ruin!"

"Yes! Yes! Please calm down, Ancestor! Your great-grandson is incompetent! I've disgraced the family's name..." Huang Jun shed a rain of sweat from his face. Then, there was a "Thud!" sound as he fell to his knees.

"Ah, it seems that you still have some sense of shame. Get up!

Who kneels so easily? Are you a kowtowing insect?" The purple-clad old man narrowed his eyes. "A mere group of three insignificant families has dared to insult my Huang Family! They genuinely don't know the limits of their own strength! Hehe... they're courting death! Wouldn't it be too easy for them if they don't learn a timeless lesson?"

"Can this descendant dare to ask what the ancestor means?" Huang Jun was somewhat anxious. He was already over fifty. But, this ancestor obviously didn't treat him as such. Instead, he treated him like a three year old child.

"The conditions are the same as the ones I had set before! Only, I'm sure that those three families won't accept such harsh conditions. So, we have a justifiable reason to make a move on them, and bring destruction as long as they don't accept our terms. And, what's with calling them three 'powerful' families? My ears find it very unpleasant when you call them three 'powerful' families. So, do that only if you wish to offend this Old Man! No one in those three families will be able to survive this disaster!"

"Yes!" Huang Jun smiled inside. This is what he was eager for. [Cut the roots of the weed you wish to get rid off. We can surely act arrogantly as long as the Ancestor is here. But, he'll have to return at some point of time. And, who knows when he'll come back here. Thus, I fear that my Huang Family will be finished even if one of those three families still exists by the end of it!]

[So, we must erase those three families from this world... once and for all!]

"Senior Huang... I think this matter requires some consideration... the Lord has sent us here to examine those Bone Tempering Pills. They are being auctioned at the Aristocratic Hall. And, the Aristocratic Hall is run by the Jun and the Tang Family. Moreover, the Jun and the Dugu Families are future in-laws..." A silver-cuffed purple-clad old man smiled. His smile was one of deliberation, while his words were of caution.

"That's only natural. After all, the Young Lord has arrived here along with the rest of you. Therefore, this Huang obviously won't take this decision on his own accord," the Huang Ancestor gave a dark snigger and continued, "We must obviously obey the Young Lord's opinion when it comes to the course of our actions."

Everyone's gaze turned to the youngest of the purple-clad people.

That middle-aged man was the Young Lord of the Illusory Ocean of Blood! It was surprising that he was at equal-footing with the Huang Ancestor even though he was so young!

The middle-aged man's heart was in a tangle. He thought; [You've already been extremely clear about this matter, Senior Huang. Can I even disagree with you in this case? Wouldn't you lose face if I were to disagree? And, wouldn't that lead to a potential internal strife? After all, you have a high standing at the Boundless Ocean of Blood, Senior Huang!]

[Wouldn't you flip out if I were to overrule you in front of so many people? And, what's to be done about the Bone Tempering Pills if we are to follow through with your ideas? Killing a few people of the regular society is naturally not a big deal. But, these people are related to those Bone Tempering pills! And, those Bone Tempering Pills are an object of priority for our Illusory Ocean of Blood. In fact, they relate to our rankings with the other two Holy Lands!]

The Young Lord had automatically omitted the Tian Fa Forest from his consideration...

He muttered to himself for a while before speaking out, "Senior Huang's family has suffered much bullying and humiliation. We naturally can't ignore it. Otherwise, wouldn't people belittle our Illusory Ocean of Blood? So, it's only natural that we declare our hatred! It's natural that we let out our rage!"

Chapter 497: Interrogation

The Young Lord spoke till here. And, a gratified expression swept across the Huang Ancestor's face. In fact, he even smoothed his beard and smiled. But, the Young Lord again spoke-up, "However, we need to divide these matters into two main parts. Our main aim is the Bone Tempering Pills. We mustn't fail at this. The second is the Huang Family's enmity. We have to take revenge for them as well. Therefore, we must balance this. But, I'm sure that Senior Huang has a plan for this...?"

His words were so sleek that no one would be offended by them. But, he had still managed to point out that they couldn't fail when it came to the task of the Bone Tempering Pills. That was their most important objective.

The Huang Ancestor muttered for a while at first. Then, he spoke up, "We've determined that the Bone Tempering Pills are related to the Jun and the Tang Families. We can question them about the whereabouts of the Bone Tempering Pills if we move now. We could also ascertain the identity of the individual who has refined those Bone Tempering Pills. Perhaps we can get the recipe for those pills as well. Then, all our problems will be solved, and we can forge ahead. And, we can slaughter without misgivings after that happens — it wouldn't even matter whether it is the Jun, Tang... or even the Dugu Family."

"Senior Huang is absolutely correct. But, we can't make a move against those three families before the matter regarding the Bone Tempering Pills is settled," the Young Lord spoke calmly.

"That's obvious. However, it would be impossible for us to find out those Bone Tempering Pills' whereabouts if we were to rely on the current strength of the Huang Family. I fear that we require a few people from our side to make it a sure thing," The Huang Ancestor looked at the several purple-clothed people, and flashed a dark smile.

The Young Lord nodded slightly.

Those people cupped their fists, and said, "We won't shirk from our responsibility. We'll do it for the sake of the Illusory Ocean of Blood!"

The Huang Ancestor snorted and said, "There's no time to lose. We'll make our move tonight!" His gaze underwent a transformation. And, his glare shot out like two sharp arrows from his eyes. They contained an unparalleled murderous aura...

....

It was a windy and moonless night. Murder and arson had pervaded the skies.

Jun Mo Xie's predictions were about to come true. Tang Yuan was constantly cursing. [Damn him and his inauspicious remarks! His words are coming true! Things are about to get very bad!]

Everyone at the Aristocratic Hall was jittery and paranoid. They treated anything suspicious as an enemy. Many high-level experts had charged roaring, and had left screaming. Waves after waves of them had been coming. In fact, there was almost no time for rest.

This night had been particularly busy.

The two Sky Xuan experts — Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang — had already dealt with three or four waves of attacks. And, one of those waves had been rather tough. In fact, they had to strive with their entire strength in order to repel it. They were extremely tired and sleepy, and were thinking of washing up and resting. But, this is when another wave arrived. The two men became extremely angry. [Dammit, you still won't let us go sleep!]

Consequently, the two men charged out somewhat crazily. They chased the attackers with red eyes till none of them were left alive. They had been sulking about their ordeal the entire time. They eventually returned victorious to the Aristocratic Hall, but found out that Tang Yuan was done for...

The window in Tang Yuan's room had noiselessly opened when Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang had rushed out. Two men had entered the room like floating clouds. Tang Yuan was on his bed at this time. In fact, his snores were loud enough to shake the heavens...

The two men saw that huge monster on the bed, and looked at each other. Then, they shook their heads...

[This one is too fat!] They had planned on dragging him out the room before setting about the interrogation. However, they saw the elephant-like size of that man. And, both of them dispelled their initial idea on the spot.

[Flying away while carrying this huge and obese man would be an extremely difficult task. In fact, even the prospect of getting him through the Aristocratic Hall's door could be challenging. After all, the target is too big. Moreover, it would extremely difficult to find a place to hide him if needed.]

[This amount of effort would be akin to a test of strength for us. And, just look at him... He looks extremely fat and greasy.] Merely looking at him was disgusting for them! What could one speak for the idea of carrying him away...? Anyway, couldn't they get right to the point and interrogate him there itself?

It had to be said that growing fat wasn't a good thing. But, it would turn into a blessing for Fatty Tang whenever he'd run into such matters. In fact, it was an excellent thing! Heavens knew how much he would've suffered if he was kidnaped by those two men. In fact, he may not have returned even if he had told them everything.

This situation was a great illustration that even a single peck of the grain can provide help when everything seems lost...

The two men floated to the bedside. One of them extended their hand, and patted Tang Yuan's forehead. But, Tang Yuan turned to the other side. His muscles continued to palpitate, and he kept

snoring...

The two men were stunned by this. They had never expected him to be so unvigilant and at ease. [He didn't wake up even after his head was hit.]

Then, there were two "Bangs!" as they slapped Fatty twice on the face. However, he was still in deep sleep. One of the men got mad. He grabbed the collar of Fatty Tang's night clothes, and forced him to sit up on the bed. Fatty's huge and elastic belly covered his legs as this happened.

Tang Yuan's hands drooped, his head tilted, and saliva streamed out of his drooling mouth. Even his snoring hadn't ceased...

"Damn!" One of the two black-clothed men had a good sense of humor. He found this rather funny. He gave a long sigh, "This Old Man has lived for nearly two-hundred years. But, this is the first time that I'm seeing someone who can sleep like this! Didn't this guy get any sleep in his past life? We've beaten him so much, and he still hasn't woken up. This is simply legendary!"

"Let's make it a little more painful for him. He'll surely wake up after that!" the other man suggested.

"We can't do that. This Fatty will wake up the entire nine heavens if he starts bawling! The sound will be very loud. And, that won't be good for us," The black-clothed man who held Tang Yuan's collar sighed. Then, he extended his other hand, and pinched the Fatty's nose to a close. However, the slimy and greasy feeling made him feel like he was holding the uncooked intestine of a pig.

That man resisted his nausea, and continued to pinch the Fatty Tang's nose close.

The sleeping Tang Yuan suddenly felt that his breathing had been forcefully obstructed. He opened his mouth to gasp some air in while he fiercely tried to tug-in air from his nose. However, he

eventually opened his eyes in bewilderment whilst coughing. And, huge amounts of spittle darted out of his mouth as a result.

The black-clothed man who was holding Fatty's nose close couldn't believe that this guy was the Young Master of a noble Family. [This guy has no class...] The assailant had never expected such a reaction. So, he wasn't able to evade it. But, he felt extremely uncomfortable and nauseated since his neck had gotten covered in spit now...

He wiped his neck in a flustered manner. Then, he snarled in a lowered tone while seething with anger, "Fatty! Don't fu*king move! This Old Man will choke and break your fat neck if you make a single move!"

Tang Yuan was shocked upon the sudden realization that he had landed himself in a very dangerous situation. His eyes became wide and round. He was about to cry out in alarm when he heard that threat. But, he choked and stifled his cry when he heard the threat. Consequently, his throat issued a sound similar to that of a hen laying eggs; it was unspeakably pathetic.

"Where are the Bone Tempering Pills? Quickly hand them over to me! I'll let you live if you obediently hand them over!" the masked black-clothed man asked fiercely. He was a man of many years' worth of cultivation. And, he usually never got mad so easily. But, things had gotten miserably out of hand in this instance. He had resorted to the use so much strength on a mere Fatty. And, that too a pathetic Fatty who couldn't even fight back! But, the spit on his neck had filled his mind with enough anger that he didn't care about these points anymore.

"Bone Tempering Pills..." Tang Yuan was in a gaze after being woken up. He blinked and cried out, "Jun Mo Xie... you're the kind of person who makes the inauspicious happen with mere words!"

"You shut up! Don't you want to live?" The black-clad man nearly thought of running away at first. He then got hold of Tang Yuan's

fat, and twisted it while he covered the Fatty's mouth with his hand.

Tong Yuan shouted in pain, but the sounds got choked inside his throat. So, he was only left to tremble from the pain...

"Bone Tempering Pills! Where are they? Who refined those pills? Where's the recipe for it? Fatty... I will slowly draw out that greasy fat from your body if you don't tell me where it is!" The masked black-clothed man fiercely threatened.

"Hey... hey... I'll... I'll speak..." Tang Yuan was wise-enough to know not to fight this. So, he surrendered, "Ow! But... let me go first... breasts... nipples... ow!" It turned out that the masked man in black clothes had grabbed and twisted a part of Fatty's chest...

The masked man was stumped at first by those last few words. But, he became angry a moment later, "You... call that a breast...? Bullshit!" He found himself grabbing the chest. So, he couldn't help but curse while letting it go. But, he still felt a bit awkward... [Damn it! This Old Man has built his reputation over hundreds of years, but this Fatty has ruined it. People will say that I grabbed a man's tit... This Fat Man is too obese!]

"Speak quickly, you brat!" The old man was beginning to lose his mind.

"I don't know... who refined those pills." Tang Yuan hissed for air as he quickly replied, "And, I don't even know about the recipe. I'm just the junior partner for auctioning them."

"I do your mother! You dare to play with us?!" The masked man angrily tightened his grip on Fatty's throat.

Tang Yuan's eyes were rolling, but he respected his mother the most. He was about to surrender more information, but he became extremely angry when he heard her being abused by that masked man. And, he suddenly forgot the dangerous situation he was in. He then struggled and cursed, "I... do your mother! I... I... I wasn't

done talking, you bastard! But, you dared to insult her?! I... won't... spare... your life...!" The grip on Tang Yuan's neck became tighter. So, the Fatty quickly returned to his main principle of knowing when not to fight and begged for forgiveness instead.

Tang Yuan's mouth was once again covered as two slamming sounds echoed. The pain was accompanied by soy bean-sized sweat drops dripping from his forehead. He had been put through that suffering a second time because of the sentence he had just spoken...

"Continue talking; and speak honestly!" the masked man said in a bad mood.

Tang Yuan decided to open-up about everything once he had suffered for a long-enough period of time. He spoke anxiously and quickly, "The Bone Tempering Pills are not here with me. They are extremely valuable. So, they are kept at the Jun residence. Those things will be secretly moved here before the auction. After all, they're very precious. So, keeping the pills at the Aristocratic Hall isn't safe! Moreover, I'll be killed if they're lost! And, I can't afford that!"

"The Jun residence...?" The two masked men looked at each other. Fatty's explanation made sense. They had analyzed the situation along similar lines as well.

"Which part of the Jun residence? Bastard! The Jun residence is huge! How will we find it? You're useless, you brat! You can go to hell!" The masked man snarled fiercely in a lowered voice.

"Don't kill me... I'll tell you... those are... in the Elegant Fragrance Courtyard!" It appeared as if Tang Yuan was losing his head out of fear, "Spare my life... I told you everything... now don't kill me..."

"What a craven and cowardly piece of trash! Elegant Fragrance Courtyard...? Isn't that where Jun Mo Xie's mistress stays?" The two men looked at each other and nodded. They seemed to have a

good understanding of the Jun residence.

"Yes, yes, yes! It's there!" Tang Yuan nodded like a hen pecking grain.

"Elegant Fragrance Courtyard... okay... It's got to be there," The two masked men gave Tang Yuan a look of despise, "It is said that fat people are the most cowardly of them all. It seems that this saying isn't false!"

Chapter 498: Knocking at a Widow's Door at Night

Tang Yuan arrogantly cursed in his heart; [I'm not afraid of dying! I'm only fooling you idiots into throwing your lives away!] However, he was begging on the outside, "Oh... two heroes, great heroes... I... I tell you... I'm a hardworking low-level employee... I don't have any standing in the Aristocratic Hall. Oh, two heroes, have pity on me. I have an eighty year old mother. My poor child will be left crying piteously for food if something happens to me... You will take mercy on their plight, right? Right...? How wouldn't anyone?"

He hadn't even finished speaking when the two similarly dressed masked men shivered in cold. [This one is absurdly shameless! This Fatty is begging for his life in the most shameless of ways! Eighty year old mother... pitiful child... Damn... You're only engaged, aren't you? And, our intelligence suggests that your mother isn't even forty years old yet! So, where did that eighty year old mother of yours come from...?]

[Only your grandma will pass for being eighty years old!]

These two were men of great status. So, they didn't even wish to touch the fat man after watching him do this. Anyway, that fat man still had relevance in the matter. It wouldn't be good if they killed him and couldn't find the pills later on... [This Fatty is the auctioneer at the end of the day. So, he can't die right now.]

The figures of the two men flashed as they fled into the darkness with great speeds. After all, they might have died from nausea if they had stayed around that Fatty for long.

Tang Yuan's eyes remained closed as he continued to beg for mercy for a long time. However, he realized that his interrogators had long disappeared by the time he re-opened his eyes. Consequently, this entire incident seemed like a dream to him... as

if it never happened...

He resolutely pinched himself. But, it hurt so much that he gave a loud and wailing shout. He trembled as he crawled towards the lamp's light. He saw that there was a purple spot in his hand. There was mark on his neck from the strangling, and it hurt badly. Fatty remained in a daze for a while. But, he eventually recovered.

Then, a very frightened, sharp, and pained voice echoed; it sounded like the voice of someone who had lost his parents or spouse, "Come here! Quickly come over here... Someone... Something big is going on..."

The voice was loud and clear. And, it was at a very high octave as well. The voice spread into the night's sky. It obviously affected those at the Aristocratic Hall. Even the other people in the Aristocratic Hall's vicinity were woken from their sound sleeps with a shock.

This voice was extremely loud and incisive!

The two masked men were quickly flying away in the distance. However, they stumbled when they heard this. In fact, they nearly fell down. The two men recalled that they hadn't hurt that Fatty much. So, why would he be screaming so miserably?

Tang Yuan was trembling with fright while sitting on his bed by the time Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang returned. He was panting, seemed confused, and his whole fat body was trembling uncontrollably.

"What's the matter? What's going on?" The two men burst into the room like tornados.

"What's the matter? You two are asking me 'what's the matter'?" Tang Yuan finally came to himself. He sprayed saliva as he ranted with indignation, "This Young Master's fat would've been drawn and used for sky lantern if I had waited for you two return and ask me 'what happened'! Damn it! Why did they have to threaten me

like that? Who says these things?! Are sky lanterns that amusing? Should the fat man always be guilty? Bah!"

Tang Yuan roared in indignation. But, he saw that even Hai Chen Feng and Song Shang had disappeared by the time he was done with it...

"Ignore me altogether! Excellent! Excellent! Come on! Set up a meal for the frightened auctioneer! I want a lot of pork, stakes, and steamed buns!" Tang Yuan roared. He had realized that his belly had started rumbling because of the scare he had just gotten. Therefore, he impatiently wanted to stuff himself...

It seemed that reducing this Fatty's weight was going to be a genuine problem.

....

Mei Xue Yan and Green Hunter had already gotten along well with Guan Qing Han on the journey from Southern Heaven City. They admired and sympathized with her when they had met. And, these three people were living together again. So, the environment was obviously very amiable. The three of them had independent rooms. And, Guan Qing Han's was at the center. The three women were talking late into the evening before going to sleep... as was their usual...

The faces of Mei Xue Yan and Green hunter had sweet and understanding smiles as they heard of Jun Mo Xie's debauchee-like behavior from the days gone by. After all, the three women believed that Jun Mo Xie had been pretending at that time. So, they felt that it must've been very difficult for him to pretend as such. After all, how could it have been easy to pretend being the top debauchee wastrel of Tian Xiang? [The fickle heart can be very forceful. So, it must've been very hard for him to disguise himself as such a vile character...]

Guan Qing Han was still nervous even though the difficult crisis had passed over. However, she had suddenly found herself living

with two people she could talk to. And, this had helped in unburdening that load from her heart. The company of those two women had helped her get rid of the past's shadow to some extent. And, she had become a bit more cheerful as a result. Otherwise, she would've been beset with serious worry like she used to be in the past...

The three women had parted moments ago, and each had returned to their respective rooms. They were getting dressed to sleep at this time. But, this was when Mei Xue Yan's eyebrows suddenly twitched. She quickly blew out the lamp on her table. She could clearly feel two formidable auras. And, they were coming straight towards her direction. Moreover, these two individuals were genuinely very powerful...

Green Hunter had also sensed it. She knocked on the window. Mei Xue Yan exhaled slowly, and indicated that they remain calm. Then, a cold light flashed in her eyes amidst the darkness of the room. [Who would dare to break-in while we're here?]

These people may be considered strong in the eyes of ordinary men. But, could they ever have the standing in the eyes of the Tian Fa Forest's Lord?

The Snake King motioned with her eyes in understanding. Then, she quickly hid her aura, and stood calm and still.

The night was extremely dark.

Two figures — darker than the dark of the night — arrived quietly at great speeds while gliding like bats. They made next-to-no sound as they descended in front the courtyard's gate. The eyes of the two men flicker as they looked at the main board in front of the courtyard.

Elegant Fragrance Courtyard.

[This is the place.]

The two men looked at each other, and saw a sense of certainty in

each other's eyes.

[It seems that this worldly family wasn't worth the attention we had given them.]

The two men seemed as light as feathers as their figures flitted in order to enter inside the courtyard. Then, they flitted again, and reached the front gate.

"It seems as if the ground had shrunk beneath while the moved. That's nearly the best agility this human race is capable of achieving!" Mei Xue Yan's eyes contracted. Hadn't she thought of sneaking into the Jun residence like this? But, these were two Great Master Level experts!

The cultivation of those two men weren't inferior to that of the Solitary Falcon in any way.

These two men had covered their faces, and their features couldn't be distinguished. But, Mei Xue Yan had already determined that those two men were from the Great Golden City or the Illusory Ocean of Blood... if not the Elusive World of Immortals in the first place.

There was no other place in this world except for those three which could send Great Master Level experts to steal something at night in this manner. It is possible that other forces may have similar intentions and the courage to do it. However, those other forces didn't have the capability to send two Great Master Level experts.

The two men had arrived at the gateway in the blink of an eye. They attentively checked for any sign of movement inside. Then, they finally selected their target, and they came straight to where Mei Xue Yan was residing. This had happened because Mei Xue Yan had deliberately made sounds resembling that of a person sleeping. In fact, she had mimicked the breathing sound in a very uniform manner. And, this had led those two Great Master Level experts to decide upon moving there.

Tang Yuan's revelations had filled them with incomparable confidence and hope. How could they have ever thought that the fat coward who was so scared of death would lay such a refined death trap for them?

Therefore, the two didn't have any misgivings as they arrogantly moved forward to steal.

One couldn't blame those two for being careless. Everyone in the world knew that the Jun Family had an exceptional expert in their support. In fact, everyone believed that the mysterious expert behind the Jun Family was a legendary and unrivalled powerhouse in the present era.

This news might've scared everyone else around the world. But, it was nothing more than a joke for those at the Illusory Ocean of Blood.

[Unrivalled? Who dares to consider themselves as unrivalled? More so, someone from this common world is calling himself 'unrivalled' in the face of the Illusory Ocean of Blood from the Three Holy Lands? This is a bit too much even for a joke!]

Anyone who had reached the bottleneck of the Great Master Level was recruited by someone from the Three Holy Lands. The name itself was divine. Moreover, they were working for the continent's future and peace. No one had ever had any reason to decline fighting in the Battle for seizing the Heavens. Therefore, it could be said that no such thing as an 'unrivalled master' was present in these common man's lands as far as the people from the Three Holy Lands were concerned.

There was obviously a possibility that one or two such Great Master Level experts couldn't leave for the Three Holy Lands since they were required to take care of some trivial matter in the common man's realm. However, even these individuals would agree to set a joining date for the future. And, they would go and report to one of the Three Holy Lands once they had settled their

matters.

Consequently, all the powerful men of this world were in their ranks...

[We'd like to see this 'unrivalled master' of the Jun Family...] Eight of the Illusory Ocean of Blood's experts had arrived in Tian Xiang. And, all of them had been peak experts in the past. Moreover, all of them were at the Great Master Level. So, how could this so-called 'unrivalled master' be anything in their eyes?

Therefore, the two black-clad men were quite confident there would hardly be anyone in the regular mortal world who could give them trouble. Hence, they moved freely... as if they were at their own homes, and thrust forward. They then came before the door, and knocked on it in a polite manner.

It had to be known that this area was Guan Qing Han's residence. The Jun Family still hadn't declared her new status as their adopted daughter to the world. So, she was still considered their daughter-in-law. And, she was still Jun Mo You's widow!

She was still commonly known as his widow.

And, these men had knocked at a widow's door at midnight!

The two experts from the Illusory Ocean of Blood were capable of doing something like this...?

A gentle and cold voice came from the inside, "Who is it?"

The two men looked at each other somewhat awkwardly. Neither of them was young in age. In fact, both of them were over a hundred. Their strengths and statuses were certainly great. But, the matter at hand still wasn't pleasant. However, this woman's voice was enough for them to determine that the person inside was none other than Guan Qing Han. After all, they had been informed about the rumor that this beautiful woman's speech was very cold...

Therefore, the two masked men decided not to reply after

confirming the identity of their target. Instead, they decided to make their move and leave as quickly as possible. One of them moved his palm, and the door silently churned into dust. Then, their figures flitted, and they entered without leaving any traces. It was evident that their agility skills had reached the pinnacle.

The two of them were standing inside the room in a wink of an eye.

They looked around in the room, and they saw an elegant lady in a white dress; she was sitting calmly at the table. She was looking at them, and her eyes appeared as cold as the distant stars. Both the men exclaimed in their hearts at the sight of that woman's appearance. [This Jun Mo Xie's luck with women is indeed amazing!]

Chapter 499: Knocks Into a Big Plank

She was very beautiful. Her countenance was like that of a flower, and her face was like the moon. Her unmatched beauty was capable of bringing down empires. Her eyes were like a calm lake, and her eyebrows were like jade. No words could describe her good looks and incomparable grace...

It could be reckoned that one wouldn't be able to find another woman like her in this mortal world.

"Don't panic, Young Guan. We're not bad people," The two masked men unexpectedly found themselves restrained while facing the shining face of a beautiful woman who could bring down empires. They even cupped their hands and made apologetic gestures.

[Not bad people...] These two people nearly made Mei Xue Yan laugh out. [You two men entered a woman's room at night without taking her permission. And yet, you two somehow have the gall to say that you aren't bad people... Do you think your actions can be considered chivalrous?]

"Oh? The two honored guests... say that they aren't bad people. So, why did the two of you stealthily enter my room in the dark of a starry night...? The two of you did knock the door a moment ago. But, I never opened it to welcome you. In fact, the two of you gate-crashed without giving proper consideration to norms; that isn't proper, right? It's very hard for a young girl to believe you after witnessing this behavior of yours. Would the two of you please give an explanation to this young girl?" Mei Xue Yan had spoken these words with a smile.

The eyes of the two men brimmed with embarrassment. They hesitated for a while, but were unable to speak up in the end.

Both of these men were peerless experts. They had planned on moving quickly, and escaping after they had acquired the pills. So,

they shouldn't have been facing such a situation. But, who were they facing right now? They were confronting the present-day Lord of Tian Fa! And, she was on equal-footing with the Lords of the Three Holy Lands!

She was an expert whose skills had ascended to the peak of the ninth heaven!

Mei Xue Yan had concealed her aura in advance. Therefore, her body was giving out the aura of an ordinary woman at this time. But, she had resided in a high position for a long time, and had looked down arrogantly on the world. So, how could she have concealed the temperament she had acquired whilst ordering-around millions and millions of Xuan Beasts over the course of her life?

She was sitting calmly, and she hadn't used any of her Xuan strength; nor had she moved even an ounce of her primary power. But, her presence had automatically induced a powerful and incorporeal field of aura around her. And, this had thrown the minds of the two men into confusion.

This was the reason these two men were acting so strangely.

It was like a group of mice had entered a cat's territory. The cat hadn't appeared; nor had it made any sounds. But, the rats had involuntarily felt their blood running cold...

"Both of us feel very uncomfortable since we're disturbing the young girl at night. But, both of us will go back as soon as the young girl hands over the Bone Tempering Pill. We won't dare to trouble you afterwards!" One of the masked men continued amiably, "You're a smart young girl. You don't expect us to return empty-handed, do you?"

"Hehe, Bone Tempering Pills?" The expression in Mei Xue Yan's eyes changed. She faintly smiled, and tilted her head. She then replied in a calm manner, "And, what happens if I don't hand them over? Will the two of you use force?"

[What happens if you don't hand it over?] That sentence made the two experts somewhat angry. [We've given you enough respect, little girl! You're nothing more than an ordinary woman; that's all! But, you still intend to stamp on other's pride for your own...?]

"Those pills relate to the safety and the future of the world! They can cause big trouble. We don't intend on harming you. But, we'll be left without any options if the young girl would insist on not handing them over. After all, we're doing this for the sake of the common people," One of the masked men sighed regretfully. He felt very uneasy at the thought of raising his hand on a beautiful girl. In fact, he had started to develop protective feelings towards her...

"Safety and future of the world...? For the sake of the common people...? That is such an amazing excuse! I can't shoulder such a big blame! And Oh... harm me? How... do you plan on harming me? This young girl would like to ask how you two powerful men would go about harming me," Mei Xue Yan smiled lightly. That smile was like a mild wind. In fact, it seemed that spring had returned to the earth. The tips of her brows... every silky hair of her head gave rise to an amorous feeling. It looked very titillating for a moment...

"We... uh..." The eyes of that masked man were fixed. This person was at the Great Master level. And, he was very aged. But, his gaze was fixed at her, and his hair was standing. It was evident that Mei Xue Yan's beauty and charms had reached a one-of-its-kind level.

"Be careful!" The other black-dressed masked men suddenly retreated to the doorway. His palms had crisscrossed. In fact, his stance made it seemed as if he was faced with a very powerful enemy. "You... who are you?"

He had finally realized that something was wrong with that place. Mei Xue Yan's aura had begun to leak when her powerful charms had started to drift in the atmosphere. And, this had

suddenly woken him up to a realization that something was wrong. In fact, his entire body had quickly drenched in cold sweat.

[What kind of person would she have to be to defeat two Great Master Level experts with a few words alone?]

[This was a very terrifying matter.]

The disoriented masked man also woke up and came to himself as soon as he heard his companion's warning. The luminous gazes of these two men looked towards Mei Xue Yan. But, their eyes were filled with a color of extreme caution now...

Mei Xue Yan lazily stretched her body. She looked even more beautiful as she yawned. Her small and beautiful white hands covered her mouth. She then spoke-up in a manner which made it seem as if she was still half-asleep, "But, I don't know if the two of you are from the Elusive World of Immortals? Or, maybe from the Great Golden City...? Perhaps... the Illusory Ocean of Blood? I can't be mistaken about you being from one of these three Holy Lands. Otherwise, you would've never been so grand with your speeches. Otherwise, you would've never opened your mouth to talk about the world's safety and future."

Mei Xue Yan fiercely placed her hands on her waist after she spoke those words. She then opened her eyes wide, and the two men suddenly felt as if her sharp and incisive gaze had enshrouded their very being.

The limbs of both the experts became ice-cold in an instant.

In fact, her glaring eyes left these two men to feel as if her gaze could see through their bodies. But, the most frightening thing was that those two men realized that they couldn't even move under the effect of her glare.

They couldn't move! In fact, they couldn't even dare to move! That's because they would reveal some flaws if they moved. And, a flaw is a flaw. In fact, even small flaws are still flaws at the end of

the day. And, they felt that they would be dropped to the ground by that woman if they revealed the slightest of flaws. After all, the disparity in strength between them was too great.

[This woman is surely an expert. In fact, she's an expert amongst experts.]

[We've knocked against an iron plate this time. But, where did this... iron plate come from?] This was too unexpected!

"You! Who are you? How do you know about the Three Holy Lands? Moreover, you dare to oppose us even when you know that we've come from the Three Holy Lands?" The mask of one of the men's face had become drenched in seconds. In fact, beads of sweat were flowing from his face like a river.

"The Three Holy Lands? They are very terrifying...? Why can't we dare to oppose them?" A lovable laugh came from outside as a green-clothed girl entered in a leisurely manner. Her beautiful smile highlighted her bright eyes and white teeth. Her black hair was drifting like the clouds in the same manner the willow is braced by a gentle wind.

The person who had entered was none other than the Snake King — Green Hunter!

The muscles on the backs of those two men stiffened. [This green-clothed woman is at least at the Great Master level! She isn't weaker than either of us in any way! In fact, she may even be stronger!]

Such experts appeared very rarely in the mortal world. But, they had met two of them in that room on this night. Moreover, one of them was clearly more terrifying than the other...

They had come this late at night, and had walked into an ambush. And, the fact that they were ambushed wasn't terrible in itself. The 'terrible' part was the fact that they had been ambushed by two heavenly women. Moreover, these two men weren't

capable of dealing with these two heavenly women!

Both those men thought of a plan at that moment — [We'll scuttle back to the Aristocratic Hall, and fiercely torture that Fatty. Then, we'll draw every ounce of fat from him, and make sky lanterns from it.]

[We'll make that Fatty suffer for real this time!]

However, those two men were still top experts of their generation. So, they quickly calmed down and started to laugh. Their laughter was hoarse and unpleasant to the ears. But, it was still laughter, and not weeping. However, the sound of such laughter was more-or-less the same as that of weeping...

"Ha ha... young ladies... neither of you are Guan Qing Han, right?" the man on the left laughed as he calmed down. But, his eyes were flickering with a trace of bitterness, "We brothers admit defeat today, but you don't know what you've gotten yourself into!"

"You still haven't replied to my question!" Mei Xue Yan slightly lowered her eyes at first. Then, she slowly continued, "I don't like repeating my questions. And, I'm not accustomed to waiting either."

"This matter can stop at this stage. But, is the Young Lady telling us that she still wishes to get in a fight with us... and oppose the Three Holy Lands by doing so? Does she wish to leave no room for preventing such a situation from occurring?" one of the black-clothed masked men asked in an awe-inspiring voice.

"You're wrong! The both of you hail from only one of the Three Holy Lands. So, I'll at most be against one of those factions if I oppose you. I won't be facing all three at the same time," Mei Xue Yan smiled coldly. "Moreover, I have nothing to fear even if I have to face the Three Holy Lands together.

"Also, I'm trying to give you face by letting you answer me. So,

don't you dare to squander my painstaking efforts!" Mei Xue Yan spoke very slowly, "Every person from your Three Holy Lands has a symbol on their clothes. So, this behavior of yours only reflects your stupidity... After all, I will find out where you've come from once I've removed those black clothes of yours. This girl isn't doing it right now since she wishes to allow you some honor. But, that doesn't mean that I won't do it... Do you genuinely wish to die for not replying to my questions? Don't tell me you think I'll let you get away like this...? I'm not as kindhearted as I look!"

"Who the hell are you?!" The two men retreated a step while looking at Mei Xue Yan in shock. [This girl is very familiar with the customs of the Three Holy Lands! But, how come we're not able to think of anyone who she might be?!]

"Humph!" Mei Xue Yan was sitting upright and motionless. Her expression was unchanging and cold. But, she suddenly emitted a dense, cold, and pure aura from her body. This aura moved in the air like a snake. There was a tearing sound, and that pure aura had already reached the two masked men. In fact, it had even torn down the front of their black clothes to expose their silver-bordered purple robes.

The masks of the two men had also flown out to expose their densely wrinkled face, their grizzly white hair, and alarmed eyes...

The black-clothed men had tried their hardest to dodge that pure aura, but they were unable to do so in time.

"Ah, so you're the silver-gowned law-keepers from the Illusory Ocean of Blood. That's not a low grade status..." Mei Xue Yan looked at them in a dull manner, "But, you two are very raw. They couldn't have chosen you from this common man's mortal world... Ah... Are you the born natives of the Illusory Ocean of Blood?"

"You...?" The two men were dripping with sweat.

"Is Huyan Tian Feng that old?" Mei Xue Yan asked gently, "That he needs to send the two of you to steal the Bone Tempering Pills?"

Chapter 500: Chops a Great Master in One Strike!

"The Old Lord is..." one of the black-robed men blurted out under the pressure of her formidable aura. But, he quickly realized that opening his mouth would be akin to surrendering information. So, he hastily shut it. This was no different than burying his head in the sand...

"The Old Lord...? So, that Old Man Huyan Tian Feng has positioned himself behind the scenes now. So, the New Lord... is his son?"

Mei Xue Yan gave them a cynical glance, "...has that Old Huyan become that arrogant? Your Three Holy Lands were anyways despicable, and this one has even handed-over the leadership to his own son. He has even forgotten the tradition of abdicating the post to the most worthy individual. The Three Holy Lands had always relied on meritocracy for succession of leadership. But, your Illusory Ocean of Blood has made this a matter of inheritance... That Old Huyan has made his third-rate son the Lord of the Illusory Ocean of Blood? I'm genuinely amazed by this!"

"Humph! Which one of the Three Holy Lands doesn't follow hereditary succession? You girl, you speak such big words of insult and vilification about the Leader of our Holy Land! You've become an enemy of the entire Illusory Ocean of Blood. Our Illusory Ocean of Blood won't let you off! But, I will ask the Lord to forgive you if you agree to apologize and hand over the Bone Tempering Pills!" The face of the old man on the left was painted with anger. He had even raised his finger like a weapon, and had pointed it towards her. His face showed that he was diabolically angry, but his heart still feared her. It was classic case of 'a sheep in a wolf's clothing'. However, his inner feelings were clear as day...

"You two haven't experience much of the society at large; have

you?" The corners of Mei Xue Yan's mouth curled into a cruel sneer, "An individual becomes a seasoned and experienced expert once they've braved the society on their path to the level of Great Masters. Do you think such an expert will lose their emotional balance in an unexpected situation while confronting an enemy? One look at you is enough to tell that the Illusory Ocean of Blood has raised the two of you to the Great Master Level. You may have the acquired the strength of the Great Master Level in this leisurely manner, but you don't possess the bearings of a Great Master. Moreover, you don't even have the experience of a Great Master Level Expert. Pieces of trash like you are no better than a regular Spirit Xuan expert from this common man's world! And, you still dare to strut-around like that in front of me?! In fact, you even plan to coerce me into giving you the Bone Tempering Pills? You're becoming too big for your own boots!" Mei Xue Yan's tone became increasingly disdainful.

Their hair stood on an end when they heard these words of blatant insults!

Those two old men from the Illusory Ocean of Blood screamed in anger, and suddenly jumped while crisscrossing each other. They soared into the air at the same time. Their palms then seemingly grabbed cold and incisive winds, and fused them together. They had only come halfway, but they had already turned into multifarious terrifying phantom images. Their momentum had reached an extremely dreadful extent!

Mei Xue Yan snorted as her pretty and delicate-looking arms spread wide. She then shouted in an awe-inspiring manner, "You are foolishly conceited about your strength! You've invited dishonor to yourselves! World Cage!"

A large, formidable, and incorporeal field was suddenly formed; it isolated that area from the rest. The angry old man on the left froze on the spot, and was left incapable of moving his body in any manner. In fact, his body had even maintained his 'prancing'

stance in its present state of absolute immobility.

The other old man turned pale with fright when he saw this. Then, sharp screams were heard; they were entangled with sounds of slamming. Mei Xue Yan had already landed three palms to the old man.

Three strikes of her palm!

Mei Xue Yan's complexion didn't change in the slightest. She slowly retracted her palms, and glared coldly. The chair beneath her had broken with a light sound. But, she had made no other sound apart from that.

However, that old man's shade didn't look so good. Instead, his body appeared like a silver ingot as he rolled away like a ball for a distance. However, he suddenly turned around, and exerted his strength to stabilize his unbalanced body. He then opened his mouth wide, and something similar to an arrow of blood shot towards the Green Hunter's face. The old man's body didn't come to a halt either. Instead, it continued to dart away in a swift manner.

[There's nothing I can do here!]

[It's prudent to leave early! This is a shocking and unexpected event! So, informing Senior Huang and the Young Lord takes top priority! Who could've thought of this? Who could've imagined that this insignificant Jun Family would be concealing such an unrivalled expert?]

Therefore, he had made a prompt decision — [Escape!]

Even the exchange of a few blows can determine the life and death in a battle between experts. The outcome of this battle had been decided in this brief moment.

They had only exchanged a few strikes. But, the attacks of that unnamed woman were as fierce as thunder. And, the power contained therein was unmatched. She had given him dozens of

injuries by merely raising her hand. Moreover, she had damaged each of his major internal organs!

But, that old man was still at the Great Master Level. He was able to resist vomiting his blood out there-and-then. In fact, he was also able to use it as a sharp weapon against the Snake King once he had turned around.

It must be noted that his ability to deal with contingencies was rather exceptional. But, it was a pity that he had run into the Snake King of the Tian Fa Forest. She had earned the name of the King of Poisons for herself due to her treacherous and murderous use of venoms. How could she be deceived by that little trick?

The Snake King hadn't intended to interfere in the fight since Mei Xue Yan had taken the lead. But, that old man had provoked her. So, nothing could be said about it now. In fact, there was nothing to be said. After all, he had raised his head, and had shot an arrow of blood towards her. His then hands slammed against the ground, and his body changed directions to rise into the sky. However, the Snake King congealed a tremendous amount of power under her feet at this time, and shot resolute kicks at the escaping old man's calves.

These feet had appeared out of nowhere. And, they hadn't come from a usual kicking position either. These factors had made it next-to-impossible to guard against them. In fact, it could be reckoned that the old man's legs would be crippled if those kicks were to connect. He was certainly a Great Master. But, he still wouldn't be an exception to this result.

That old man became even more alarmed at the sight of the Snake King's incisive kick. However, his mind hadn't spiraled into confusion even though he had been frightened by this move. He quickly brought his palms upwards from the ground, and slashed them like blades towards the Snake King's ankles at a tangential angle. His legs also became blurry at the same time, and he escaped further away.

His escape was certain as long as the woman behind him didn't do anything.

The Snake King snorted coldly. She raised her legs. She dodged the resolute attacks from the old man's palms. Then, she drove one of her legs towards the old man's chest in an even more resolute manner. Meanwhile, her other leg fell further to attack his knees with the tip of her toes.

Those two attacks were extremely sinister in nature. Moreover, that old man could evade only one of them at his current strength. He would be a cripple throughout his life if he were struck on his knee. But, his life would be in danger in case his chest was struck!

Both these individuals were at the Great Master Level in terms of strength. So, the difference in their strengths hadn't been very massive at first. But, the old man had faced Mei Xue Yan, and had suffered injuries in the process; and, serious internal injuries at that! Consequently, he had lost at least thirty percent of his fighting strength.

More importantly, the Lords of the Three Holy Lands had cultivated these people behind closed doors. Therefore, it was very difficult to guess the disparity in the quality of battle experience they had acquired when compared to the Great Masters who had emerged from the ordinary society. But, it was certainly nothing compared to that of the Xuan Beast Kings of the Tian Fa Forest. And, this was the reason why this old man had fallen into such a disadvantageous situation so early in the battle.

"Forget about it. Let him leave," Mei Xue Yan snorted coldly at first. She then continued, "That Illusory Ocean of Blood is nothing to me. So, you might as well let him return and spread the news. What's the worst that could happen? Anyway, he'll try to threaten us with that Illusory Ocean of Blood's reprisals if you finish him right now."

The Snake King heard that. So, she turned back her waist, and

quickly retracted her attacking legs. That old man was almost done for by the tip of her toes. But, he was able to fly outside as a result of her retreat. He then jumped towards the perimeter walls in order to fly away as he continuously vomited blood whilst in mid-air. His Xuan Qi was in motion. In fact, it was cycling at an overloaded capacity. And, that had intensified his internal injuries.

His emotions had particularly left him with a desire to die here-and-now. After all, death ends all of one's troubles.

[Such disgrace!]

[I fought with everything I had. I even risked my life. But, I was only able to escape like a mere pawn who was at the mercy of the opposite side!]

Mei Xue Yan had certainly allowed him to leave. But, this didn't mean that the other people would too...

A brightly glittering sword suddenly appeared in the sky as that old man was attempting to cross the wall in midair!

This glittering sword's rays were extremely bright. In fact, they were like streaks of lightning in the sky.

The sound produced by the lightening-fast speed of this sword made it seem as if the sounds of thunder had exploded.

It was going to hit him midair!

That old man couldn't go up, and couldn't go down either. Moreover, he had started to believe that he had escaped this situation. So, he had started to rejoice, and this had led him to slack off to some extent. Also, the serious internal injuries he had suffered mustn't be negated from the equation. After all, the internal injuries suffered by his organs had seriously depleted his strength. Consequently, his aura had nearly dissipated by this time, and his strength hadn't returned. And, this meant that he was at his weakest at that point.

The timing of that glittering sword's appearance had been

extremely clever; it was clever beyond an equal. In fact, the timing of that sword attack had attained perfection! It must be known that even a top-rated hitman wouldn't have been able to capitalize on such a fine moment of landing a sure-shot strike against a Great Master Level expert!

The sword's rays filled the air with murderous aura. And, the beard and hair of the old man were dyed jade-green under its reflection. Terror, extreme shock, and despair filled his face at this moment. But, he didn't even get the time to open his mouth in order to shout before it was all over...

That sword's rays shrouded the entire sky as it slashed down into the old man's right shoulder. However, the sword didn't stop there. Instead, it continued to cut forth like a knife through butter. Only a 'slashing' sound was heard as it cut down to his left rib. It radiance a bright luster as it again came in contact with empty air. Then, it issued a sword cry which sounded similar to the roar of a dragon. After that, it disappeared as swiftly as a dragon does when it enters the seas!

The Divine Sword — the Blood of Yellow Flame!

A white-clothed youngster quickly appeared outside Mei Xue Yan's room. But, his speed had made it seem as if he had been riding the very winds.

That place was no less than twenty meters away from the spot where he had attacked the black-clothed old man!

That black-clothed old man's body was still moving forward due to its momentum. But, his eyes resembled that of a dead fish. The upper-half of his body — including his shoulders, arms, and head — separated from the lower part of his body as he fell down. The upper-half of the body smashed into the wall first with a Bang! And, the lower-half followed after it with another Bang!

A blood of rain poured down from the sky!

The matter had been concluded!

The white-robed Jun Mo Xie had a warm and gentle expression on his face. He didn't even turn his head to look back as he entered the room in a leisurely and confident manner. He then smiled as he spoke, "This is very embarrassing. This Jun Idiot's unsuitable protection must've left the two ladies startled..." Anyone would've considered this Jun Youngster to be a very innocent man if they hadn't witnessed that scene...

Young Master Jun had been busy with training and refining those pills for the past few days. In fact, he had been working himself to the point of blacking out. It was unknown whether it was due to his skill or pure luck... But, he had finally succeeded in refining the Vitality Linkage Pill. So, he was quite happy and excited about it. In fact, he was so happy that he had nearly emerged breathless from the Pagoda. However, that was when he had suddenly felt the two men moving towards Guan Qing Han's courtyard at a lightening-fast speed.

[It seems that my plan has been effective!] The Young Master had felt rather proud of himself at first. But, he then suddenly thought; [How are things with Tang Yuan? They wouldn't have...] He had quickly made his way out when this thought had crossed his mind.

He possessed the tactical sensibility and experience of a top-class assassin. So, he obviously knew when the best time to make a move was. So, he hid himself at the sidelines, and started to fry the pan hot with his cold hands. He managed to take advantage of the situation in the end, and his sharp sword ended-up slashing a Great Master Level expert into two halves!

Table of Contents

[Otherworldly Evil Monarch](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 401: Help Me a ‘Little’ if You Aren’t in a Rush?](#)

[Chapter 402: Good and Evil Will Eventually Be Distinguished! The Heaven’s Justice Can’t Be Escaped!](#)

[Chapter 403: I Will Never Shirk Away!](#)

[Chapter 404: I Will Protect My Woman Myself!](#)

[Chapter 405: Everyone has their own Issues](#)

[Chapter 406: The Truly Divine Weapon](#)

[Chapter 407: The Blood of Yellow Flame](#)

[Chapter 408: Old Man Jun’s Extreme Joy turns to Sorrow](#)

[Chapter 409: You’re Our Kin?](#)

[Chapter 410: The Matter Is Something like This](#)

[Chapter 411: The Earthquake at the Dugu Family...](#)

[Chapter 412: The Two Military Families Join Hands](#)

[Chapter 413: Xiao Han’s Madness](#)

[Chapter 414: Peerless Magnificence!](#)

[Chapter 415: My Toilet is known as the Silver Blizzard City!](#)

[Chapter 416: Is There Still Room for More Bad Luck in this Situation?](#)

[Chapter 417: Jun Mo Xie’s “Misery”!](#)

[Chapter 418: A Suspicion of Ten Years](#)

[Chapter 419: It’s a Good Sword! It’s a Cheap-o!](#)

[Chapter 420: It’s Not True!](#)

[Chapter 421: Jun Mo Xie Fights Xiao Bu Yu](#)

[Chapter 422: Exactly What Was Desired From The Game!](#)

[Chapter 423: To Threaten the East, and Strike the West Instead](#)

[Chapter 424: Cruel!](#)

[Chapter 425: I’m Not Even Close to Being the Demon That You Are!](#)

[Chapter 426: The Spirit Xuan Expert Falls Apart!](#)

[Chapter 427: The Great Spirit Deterrence Method!](#)

[Chapter 428: Extreme Humiliation!](#)

[Chapter 429: Keeping a Promise!](#)

[Chapter 430: The Stunning Sword Attack!](#)

[Chapter 431: I’m a Kindhearted Person in Reality](#)

[Chapter 432: My Name is Mei Xue Yan](#)

[Chapter 433: Guan Qing Han's Suspicion](#)
[Chapter 434: Bone-Tempering Pill!](#)
[Chapter 435: There's No Way to Survive This Day...](#)
[Chapter 436: Which Side Do You Take?](#)
[Chapter 437: Jun Mo Xie's Weakness](#)
[Chapter 438: The Thunderous News from the Southern Heaven!](#)
[Chapter 439: Shocked to the Core!](#)
[Chapter 440: Jun Family's Influence](#)
[Chapter 441: His Unrivalled Prestige!](#)
[Chapter 442: Conscience!](#)
[Chapter 443: Difficulties the Entire Journey](#)
[Chapter 444: Returns to Tian Xiang](#)
[Chapter 445: You'll Be A Grandpa...](#)
[Chapter 446: Trouble Arrives](#)
[Chapter 447: I'll Give You Two Choices](#)
[Chapter 448: Cruel Methods](#)
[Chapter 449: Let Me See Your Purity!](#)
[Chapter 450: Bloody Events along the Entire Way; Slaughters along the Entire Way!](#)
[Chapter 451: Makes a Strong Entry to the City!](#)
[Chapter 452: Abandon?!](#)
[Chapter 453: The Cat's Out of the Bag](#)
[Chapter 454: Leave Everything to Me!](#)
[Chapter 455: Advancements and Suspicions](#)
[Chapter 456: Dropping-in to Murder](#)
[Chapter 457: You Will Bring Great Sufferings for the Common People!](#)
[Chapter 458: How Can A Rosy-cheeked Hero Solve the Problems of Lasting Importance if He Can't Shed His Sentiments!](#)
[Chapter 459: Not One Will Get Away With It!](#)
[Chapter 460: Tian Xiang is Filled with Blood!](#)
[Chapter 461: What is True, and What is Not](#)
[Chapter 462: A Battle of Certain Death](#)
[Chapter 463: Three Assassins](#)
[Chapter 464: The Consequences of Being Forced to Loose Weight](#)
[Chapter 465: Tang Yuan's Agony](#)
[Chapter 466: Ye Gu Han's Epiphany](#)
[Chapter 467: Visiting the Dugu Family](#)
[Chapter 468: What is Pagoda Suppresses?](#)
[Chapter 469: Old Lady's Persecution](#)

[Chapter 470: This Is the Way to Go About it](#)
[Chapter 471: I Can Cure This Illness!](#)
[Chapter 472: A Joke... Or A Set-Up?](#)
[Chapter 473: No One Can Insult My Brother!](#)
[Chapter 474: A Despicable Conspiracy](#)
[Chapter 475: Brothers!](#)
[Chapter 476: Only Blood is Capable of Washing Away this Humiliation!](#)
[Chapter 477: Tang Yuan's Romance](#)
[Chapter 478: Throw Away the Nine-Hundred-Million, But Don't Forfeit Conscience!](#)
[Chapter 479: Tracking and Reverse-Tracking](#)
[Chapter 480: Sees the Two Pretty Women Again](#)
[Chapter 481: Mei Xue Yan's Reaction](#)
[Chapter 482: Threatened You; So What?](#)
[Chapter 483: Fights Mei Xue Yan!](#)
[Chapter 484: Takes Advantage and Suffers Losses](#)
[Chapter 485: Assaults Mei Xue Yan Indecently](#)
[Chapter 486: I Will Follow My Own Desires](#)
[Chapter 487: Any Condition!](#)
[Chapter 488: The Battle for Seizing the Heavens, and the Fierce Trinity](#)
[Chapter 489: Horrible People of the Strange Race](#)
[Chapter 490: Indignant at Injustice](#)
[Chapter 491: A New Wave Rises Before the First One Settles](#)
[Chapter 492: Three Great Pills](#)
[Chapter 493: Concocting Pills](#)
[Chapter 494: Treacherous Countermeasures](#)
[Chapter 495: Tian Fa Sends a Batch of Herbs](#)
[Chapter 496: Huang Family's Supporter](#)
[Chapter 497: Interrogation](#)
[Chapter 498: Knocking at a Widow's Door at Night](#)
[Chapter 499: Knocks Into a Big Plank](#)
[Chapter 500: Chops a Great Master in One Strike!](#)